thore Virgin
1950

XLV. a. 9

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2012 with funding from
Boston Public Library

http://archive.org/details/memoirsofsieurde00pont

MEMOIRS

OF THE

Sieur De PONTIS;

Who ſerved in the Army Six and fifty Years,

UNDER

King *Henry* IV. *Lewis* the XIII. and *Lewis* the XIV.

CONTAINING

Many remarkable paſſages relating to the WAR, the COURT, and the GOVERNMENT of thoſe Princes.

Faithfully Engliſhed

By *CHARLES COTTON*, Eſq;.

IMPRIMATUR,

July 7. 1693. *Charnock Heron.*

LONDON,

Printed by *F. Leach*, for *James Knapton*, at the *Crown* in St. *Paul's* Church-yard, MDCXCIV.

DC121
.8
.P6A4
Folio

Acc. 2005-1
Gift: Roger Hooper

MEMOIRS

To His GRACE

THE

Duke of ORMOND.

May it please your Grace,

IF a Present so mean as this Book, were worth a Dispute of Title, none could pretend to so good a one, as YOUR GRACE. The Subject, and Character of the Person, are suitable in some, though a much inferiour degree, to that Generous Gallantry and Exemplary Courage, by which you have attracted the Esteem and Admiration of all Mankind; and so Eminently and Early signaliz'd your self; as not only to Answer, but Exceed what the World expected from a Person so descended. For it is an Honour peculiar to YOUR GRACE, that as No Man ever received more Lustre from Noble Ancestors, so None ever reflected it back again upon them, with greater Advantage.

But that, MY LORD, which gives You an Inherent Right to these *Memoirs*, is, that they were put into our own Language, by the particular Choice, and Recommendation of Your Illustrious Grandfather; And therefore the Heir of His Honours and His Virtues may so justly challenge this Address, that it were a Rudeness at least, if not a Robbery, to appropriate it to any other Person. The Sieur *de Pontis* therefore

for

ſor himſelf, and I for the Tranſlator (my deceaſed Father) beg leave to plead Succeſſion and Deſcent. And I am very ſenſible, that after the Approbation of one ſuch great Perſon already, there remains no farther poſſible Addition of Honour to theſe Writings, but only to have that Judgment confirm'd, by YOUR GRACES Acceptance and Protection.

Theſe Conſiderations, My LORD, give me the Confidence to hope, that YOUR GRACE will pardon a Man, who preſumes to lay at Your Feet, what is upon ſo many accounts your own; and who, in ſo doing, is proud to tell the World, that he is

My LORD,

YOUR GRACE's moſt Obedient

and moſt Devoted Servant,

Beresford Cotton.

THE

THE

Publishers Preface.

THat the Reader may have no scruple left upon him, concerning the following Papers, I shall beg his leave to remove two Objections, which it is not improbable may be raised against them.

The first relates to the subject of the Book it self, which perhaps may suffer in some peoples esteem, because the Person whose Life is described, attained to no higher a Post, than that of a Captain in the Guards, and Commissary General of the Swisse *Troops. This, tho it may seem a reasonable disadvantage, yet, when well examin'd, is what men should rather be asham'd to pretend: For the bottom of it all is that vulgar Error, that Titles and Preferments are the only marks of Merit; as if a mans Accomplishments and his Valour, were not to be measured by any instances of Wisdom and Gallantry in his actions; but by the Rewards and Advancements he hath met with, in consideration of them. Which is in effect to make unsuccessful Vertue none at all; and to set up Chance and Partiality, a lucky Hit, or a powerful Interest, for the only Standard to judge men by. Upon these terms indeed, the Sieur* de Pontis *is like to find but little respect; but if True Courage and Conduct, inviolable Fidelity, and generous Friendship, be still Characters of any figure in Story, these* Memoirs *may have the advantage of many more pompous Writers. And it would be a double hardship, that not only his Fortunes, while he was living, but his Memory now too, should suffer for those disappointments, which were chiefly owing to his Vertue and Constancy, and the*

Spightful Reſentments of an Arbitrary and Intriguing Stateſman.

I own that Perſons of the firſt Quality are more entertaining ſubjects, as their Vertues and their Vices commonly bear proportion to their high ſtation. They have it moſt in their power to be eminently Good or Bad; and conſequently ſuch relations fill our minds with greater and more ſurprizing Ideas. But ſince the principal Benefit of Hiſtory is to preſent us with Examples, proper to be imitated, or to be declined, thoſe of a middle ſize muſt needs be exceeding uſeful, becauſe they fall more within the compaſs of mankind. The actions of perſons a great deal above us, are matter of Contemplation rather than Practice; for when we have done all we can, mens Virtues are ſuited and peculiar to their Conditions in this World. We muſt be content with the things in our own Sphere, and conſequently are beſt inſtructed by Examples that come within our Imitation. We may admire and gaze at thoſe that ſtand higher, and ſhall do well to make their good Qualities our Patterns, becauſe there is no ſuch inequality in Souls; but if we hope to exert them in the ſame manner, and make their way of Living and Management a Rule for our own behaviour, while we want their Fortunes and their Advantages, we may as well pretend to fly without Wings. Our Ruine in this caſe will be as certain, and our Folly as ridiculous, as the Frogs in the Fable, which ſwell'd, and would fain have come up to the bigneſs of the Ox, but burſt in the vain attempt. There muſt go ſomething more than Nature to the making a very great man; Juſt worth is therefore to be duly regarded where-ever we find it; and a noble Soul is not the leſs, but really the more ſo, when it ſhines by its own light, without any of that borrowed luſtre, which is ſo often owing to Greatneſs and Fortune.

Theſe,

These, and possibly some other and better Considerations, might incline some persons of Great Quality, and particularly One, whose Judgment all the World knew, and whose Memory they will ever honour, to propose the putting this Book into our own Language: and it were unreasonable to doubt the good acceptance of a Work, recommended by so Judicious a person, and performed by so known, and so faithful a hand.

But because this performance too may be called in some question, I will here give a very brief account of the Translation it self; which is the other Objection I suppose these Papers liable too.

Mr. Cotton *began it some six Months before his Death, and at his leisure hours had made so considerable a progress, that some of the first Part was transcribed fair for the Press. The Papers, left in the Hands of one of his Children, lay neglected for some Years; till at last, a Relation happening to read some of them, undertook to see them corrected, and perfected for the World, as you now have them. Had the Author himself been living, they had appeared long ago; or had Good Fortune directed to the perusing them sooner, there had been no place for an objection, of coming out five Years after the Author's Decease. I know what injuries Men receive sometimes from Posthumous Pieces, and were not this genuine, the most part now by me, under his own hand, and such as I know to have been certainly intended for the Publick, I durst not have made bold with his Memory and his Name. I would not have done it with any Man's, but especially not with his; which hath suffered too much already, by the indirect Publication of another Piece.*

The only thing I shall say, (though not the only one that deserves to be said) on this occasion, is, that if the Person, who disposed of those Poems to the Booksellers, had consulted Mr. Cotton's *Relations, as he ought to have done, both his Memory and*

the

the World had been much more obliged to him. For by theſe ungenerous Proceedings, he hath obſtructed the publiſhing of a Collection very different from that; and well choſen by the Author, with a Preface, prepared by himſelf, and all copied out for the Preſs. This digreſſion I thought due to the Character of a Perſon, whoſe other Performances have been ſo well received, who knew how to diſtinguiſh between writing for his own Diverſion, and the Entertainment of others, and had a better Judgment, than to thruſt any thing abroad, unworthy himſelf or his Readers. I only beg pardon for being in one ſenſe very unſeaſonable; for in truth, the World ought to have been undeceived in this point a great deal ſooner, and by an Advertiſement very different from this.

MEMOIRS

MEMOIRS
OF THE
Sieur De PONTIS.

PART I.

BOOK I.

Containing what paſt during the time that the Sieur De Pontis *was a Cadet in the Regiment of Guards. He is forc'd to retire into* Holland, *from whence he returns, after having run a great hazard of his life. He comes back into* France, *and ſuſtains a Siege in the Caſtle of* Savigny.

I. BEing grown up to fourteen years of age, and my Father and Mother being both dead, I found in my ſelf an extraordinary inclination to a Souldiers life, and preſently reſolved to begin to learn the Trade. I accordingly ſerv'd a year in the Regiment of *Bonne*, where I carried a Carabine, the Musket being as yet not there in uſe. After which I returned back to *Pontis*, to try if my elder Brother, who (according to the cuſtom of the Country, had the whole eſtate of the Family) would be diſpoſed to do ſomething for me, and ſtay'd ſome months with him; where, finding that he would only employ me in the care of Husbandry, a thing that I found my ſelf very averſe to, and unfit for, I took up a reſolution to go to *Paris*, there my ſelf to labour my own Advancement in the World, as well as I could. I therefore entreated of my Brother ſo much as was neceſſary for me in order to this deſign: but his coldneſs compell'd me to ſeek out to my other Relations, and particularly to addreſs my ſelf to an Aunt I had, who had a great affection for me. From her I received all I could deſire for my Journey; and from an Unkle, who alſo lov'd me very well, a little Horſe; and with this younger Brothers equipage, after having taken leave of my friends, I ſet forward for *Paris*. Going by *Grenoble*, which is two days Journey from *Pontis*, I thought

my ſelf oblig'd to go wait upon Monſieur *de L'Ediguieres*, to whom I had the honour to be a-kin; I was by him receiv'd with great demonſtrations of bounty and favour; and he was pleas'd to ask me what was my deſign in the Journey I had in hand; I made anſwer, That I had a deſire to learn to become an honeſt man, and to render my ſelf fit to make him a tender of my ſervice. He was pleas'd with my anſwer, and being willing to ſerve me in my deſign, gave me a Letter of Recommendation to Monſieur *de Crequy*, his Son-in-law, who was then in treaty about the Regiment of Guards, to receive me into them, as a Kinſman of his, and a young Gentleman for whom he had a particular eſteem. But Monſieur *de Crequy* did not ſo ſoon conclude his bargain, which hindred him from executing the order he had receiv'd. In the mean time, the violent deſire I had to enter into the Regiment of Guards, as the beſt School wherein to learn the Trade I had ſo great a paſſion for, puſht me on to go and preſent my ſelf to Monſieur *de Grillon*, who was Camp-maſter of it; of him to entreat the favour, that I might be there receiv'd. But Monſieur *de Grillon*, who would not allow that any one ſhould enter ſo young, told me that he could not admit me; he accompanied his denyal nevertheleſs with the greateſt teſtimony of friendſhip that it was poſſible for him ever to give; promiſing that he would entertain me a year in his own houſe, till I ſhould be ſtrong enough to enter the body. And accordingly he fail'd not ſome time after to receive me into it, with a particular affection, which he alſo continued to me ever ſince, as in the progreſs of theſe Memoirs I ſhall make appear.

II. Seeing that Acts of Generoſity ought to be recorded for example to other, I think my ſelf oblig'd in this place, to give an account of one, which Monſieur *de Vitry*, Captain of the *Guards du Corps*, practic'd in my favour, at the time when I was a Cadet in the Regiment of Guards under King *Henry* IV. Being one day at *Melun*, I went a hunting, with three of my Comrades in the Forreſt of *Fontain-bleau*. At the entring into the Forreſt we were aware of a great Stag, that came running directly towards us. The ardour of the Chaſe tranſported me ſo far on the ſudden, that without demur, or giving my ſelf the leiſure to conſider whether this Beaſt was priviledg'd or no, I preſently diſcharg'd my Fuſee upon him, and laid him dead upon the place. I preſently charg'd again for fear of ſurprize, and immediately we heard the Hounds that were in chaſe of him, and ſaw a Cavalier, who was Monſieur *de Vitry*, galloping towards us, who began to cry out to us, So-ho, Cadets, down with your Arms: but ſeeing we were not diſpos'd to obey him, he drew his Piſtol, and I preſenting my Fuſee againſt him at the ſame time, call'd out to him to approach no nearer, and not to compel me to fire upon him. It had been a great raſhneſs in him to have advanc'd, and he took the wiſeſt courſe, which was to turn about, and go make his complaint to the King. In the mean time, as it was not ſafe for us to ſtay any longer there, we retired as privately as we could to *Melun*; and very well believing that this affair might have ſome ill conſequences, I askt leave of my Captain, Monſieur *de Briſac*, to make a little Journey to *Paris*, where I pretended to have ſome buſineſs. My three other Comrades alſo found out one way or other to abſent themſelves from the Company. So that the King having given order to the Officers of the Regiment, to make a review in the preſence of Monſieur *de Vitry*,

Vitry, that he might take notice of the Offenders, he could never diſcover any one of us. Yet was I, for all that, under ſome ſuſpicion, by reaſon that I was known to be a little eager of the Chace; but having obtain'd my leave in due form, they could not well conclude me abſolutely guilty: and ſo at laſt this affair paſt over, without much more talk of it.

About three months after it fell out, that I being upon Duty before the Gate of the *Louvre*, Monſieur *de Vitry* paſſing by, knew me again, and immediately applying himſelf to me, O ho! Cadet, ſaid he, you are my man! Do you remember the Stag at *Fontain-bleau*? In good earneſt I was very much ſurpriz'd at his Complement, eſpecially in the poſt I then was, which I was by no means to quit; ſo that having no other way left me but that of entreaty and ſubmiſſion, I ſaid to him, in the moſt humble and moving Accent that I could form my voice to, Ah Sir, would you ruine me? Have compaſſion upon a poor Cadet as I am. He anſwer'd me after the moſt obliging manner in the world; 'Tis enough that I know you, ſaid he, and I am ſo far from being the cauſe of your ruine, that I reſolve to ſerve you: Come ſee me, I give you my word, upon the faith of a Gentleman, no harm ſhall befall you. In the mean time, ſo ſoon as he was gone from me, I not yet having the honour to know him, and the apprehenſion wherein I was, not permitting me to repoſe too much confidence upon his word, I made my Corporal believe that I had ſome inconvenience upon me, that would not ſuffer me to continue any longer upon my Poſt; and withal intreated, he would put ſome other in my place, which he did, without ſuſpecting any thing, and I kept my ſelf afterwards upon my guard. I deferr'd three or four days going to wait upon Monſieur *de Vitry*, fearing always, and not being able, after the fault I had committed, to preſent my ſelf before him; but at laſt I reſolv'd to go one morning, and took two or three of my Comrades along with me; we found him abed, and being enter'd the Room, I made him my Compliment with a thouſand excuſes, for the misfortune that had befaln me; aſſuring him that I was extreamly troubled, that I had carried my ſelf ſo like a Beaſt, towards a perſon of his quality, and one to whoſe generoſity I ſtood obliged for my life. He was pleaſed to receive me with great teſtimonies of affection, and embracing me, told me, with the greateſt civility in the world, that he was extreamly glad to be acquainted with me, and that he would make uſe of me upon occaſions; and ſuppoſing rightly, that I might ſtand in need of Money, he preſented me with ſome Piſtols, and compell'd me to receive them, telling me that a Souldier ought to refuſe nothing.

III. About the ſame time, I had a Conteſt of an extraordinary kind, with a friend of mine, and was very near bringing my ſelf into a ſcurvy circumſtance, by inſiſting upon the punctilio's of generoſity and friendſhip, in his behalf. His name was *Eſperance*, and he was the natural Son of the famous Monſieur *de Grillon*. This Gentleman having fought a Duel, after a very ſevere Edict of the King, that expreſsly Interdicted all Duels, he was ſeiz'd, and condemn'd to be ſhot to death. He, according to the cuſtom, conjur'd me, being his intimate friend, to be his Godfather, (as they call it) and to give him his firſt ſhot: but I, who could not ſuffer my friendſhip to be govern'd by this cruel, and falſe Cuſtom, plainly told him, That for the very reaſon, that I was his

intí-

intimate Friend, I would not be his Executioner; and that abſolutely I could not kill the man I lov'd. He ſtill urg'd me to do it with great earneſtneſs and importunity, and gave me ſeveral inſtances to induce me to give him that laſt teſtimony of friendſhip; telling me, that it was a Cuſtom, and practic'd by the moſt faithful friends: I reſolutely reply'd, that I did not follow the faſhion in my Friendſhip; and that it was in vain to preſs me to do an act, I could not think on without horrour, and that I would never do it. Our Lieutenant-Collonel, Monſieur *de Sainte Colombe*, and Monſieur *de Briſac*, my Captain, did both of them command me to do what my friend requir'd; but I roundly anſwer'd them, That the friendſhip I had for him would not ſuffer me to do it: They then proceeded to threats, telling me, That if I did not obey Juſtice, I ſhould be executed in the Criminals ſtead. I made anſwer with the ſame conſtancy, That I could not obey in this particular, and that I was ready to dye in my friends ſtead, rather than ſet my hand to his death; and thereupon was preſently committed to Priſon, and went without regret, for ſo good a cauſe. But they were ſatisfied in the end, that my refuſal in this affair, did not proceed from humour, or obſtinacy, but a true foundation of friendſhip, which will not permit a generous man to take away the life of his friend, in obedience to a falſe and ridiculous cuſtom; ſo that I was ſoon ſet at liberty; and tho the rules of military diſcipline oblig'd the Officers to reprimand me for my diſobedience, they made it notwithſtanding appear, that they had me not in leſs eſteem upon this account, but commended the reſolution I had manifeſted in this affair.

IV. I had after this an opportunity to be known of the King, and ſome of the greateſt men of the Court, by an accident, which though very inconſiderable in it ſelf, was not however diſadvantageous to ſuch a younger Brother as I. King *Henry* IV. being at *Fontain-bleau*, had ſome jealouſie of one of the principal Lords of his Court, about a Lady then in the Caſtle, and ſuſpected that he went privately to her. But he making thoſe viſits with ſo much circumſpection that he could never be diſcovered, after the King had contriv'd the means by which he might be ſurprized, he concluded at laſt to chooſe out a perſon that was faithful, ſubtle, and bold, to execute his deſign, and to deliver him from the diſquiet he was in upon that ſubject. He gave order therefore to Monſieur *Belingan*, one of the principal Gentlemen of his Bed-chamber, and the great Confident of all his Intrigues, to find him out two ſuch as he deſign'd, to plant upon two Avenues, where they might ſtand as Spies upon him, of whom his Majeſty had the ſuſpicion. Monſieur *de Belingan* having accordingly ſpoke to Monſieur *de Sainte Colombe*, Lieutenant Collonel of the Regiment of Guards, he immediately commanded the eldeſt Corporal of his own Company, to chooſe him out two Souldiers, ſuch as were capable of executing the Kings deſign. The lot fell upon me, and the Corporal having choſen me for one that was to be preſented to his Majeſty, he carried me to his Lieutenant Collonel, who brought me to Monſieur *Belingan*, who told me, that an occaſion preſented it ſelf very advantageous for me, ſuch as was likely to make my fortune, and bring me to the knowledge of the King, in doing him a conſiderable ſervice. 'Tis believ'd, ſaid he to me, that you neither want Courage nor Conduct to carry on this affair; and it very much concerns you to make it appear that we are not deceived in our choice.

How

How well disposed a young man as I was must be, when I heard talk of the Kings service, and my own fortune, I leave every one to judge. I return'd Monsieur *de Belingan* my most humble thanks, assuring him, that I should never forget the favour he did me in procuring me so advantageous an occasion of making my fortunes; assuring him in the mean time, that I would faithfully acquit my self of the commands he should please to give me. He thereupon acquainted me with the Kings pleasure, which was, that I should at night post my self Centinel in some part of the Gallery, where I could not be seen, and from whence I might see him, who his Majesty suspected, about eleven of the Clock would go into a certain Chamber of the Castle: That I should dog him every where, till he came back to the Chamber where he lay, to the end one might be certain who he was; and because he might open and shut several Doors, to hinder me from following him, he deliver'd me a Key that would open them all; adding to his Instructions, That I should satisfie my self with following him, without saying any thing to him; but be sure never to lose sight of him, till he was return'd into his own Chamber: I again assur'd Monsieur *de Belingan*, that he might wholly rely upon me for this affair, and that I soon hop'd to give him the satisfaction he desired.

I went upon that instant to look out the post most proper for my design, and having chosen it, return'd, expecting the hour that I was to go thither, which was, when the King went into his Bed-chamber, where I was told this Gentleman usually was. I return'd then about eleven of the Clock into the Gallery, and posted my self in an obscure place, where I could not be perceiv'd. About an hour after, I heard my Gentleman come, but being there was no light, one could not know him. I gave him not time to enter into the Chamber, whither he was going, because I follow'd him, and he hearing me, turn'd off into another Gallery, into which he slipt so softly, and so quick, that I had very near lost him in the dark. This oblig'd me to mend my pace, that I might follow him closer, and made him doubt that he was dogg'd; so that entring into the Stagge Gallery, he shut the door after him, hoping there to give me a stop. But he was very much astonisht to hear the door presently open again behind him, and to see himself follow'd, as before. To disengage himself then from him by whom he was so closely pursu'd, he took a hundred turns in the Courts and base Courts, and at last whipt on a sudden into the Garden; the door of which he clapt hard to, thinking by this means to escape from me, and to hide himself in some place or other from my sight. His design succeeded well enough at first, for having convey'd himself into a great and thick Pallisade that cast a great shade, and conceal d him from the light of the Moon, I saw no creature when I came into the Garden. I began to fall into great fears, and ran up and down the Garden like mad, without being able to discover any thing at all: but when I was almost in despair, and enrag'd at my self, that I shonld let him escape so, returning towards the Garden-door, and prying into the thickest of the neares Pallisadoes, I there espied him; and resolv'd, that I might lose him no more, to follow him close at the heels. He perceiving himself to be thus discover'd, in a great rage came out of his corner, making as though he would walk a great pace, but on a sudden turn'd about, saying aloud; *Ha! this is too much!* and at the same time made an offer to draw his Sword. I stopt, and stood my ground without speaking a word, as I had been commanded.

And withal gave him to underſtand by my poſture, that I was reſolv'd to defend my ſelf, if urg'd to it. This Lord judging by my countenance, that I was not of a humour to ſuffer my ſelf to be ill us'd, took ſome few turns more in the Garden, after which he came into the Gallery again, and from thence retir'd into his Chamber; at the door of which I remain'd, as if upon Duty. But I was not long alone in this place, for about two hours after midnight, Monſieur *de Belingan* came to ſeek me out, to know what diſcovery I had made: I began to give him a relation of all that had paſt, when the King himſelf appeared at the end of the Gallery, in his Night-gown, with a little Lanthorn in his hand. We immediately advanc'd towards him, when, though I had never before had the honour to ſpeak to the King, I endeavour'd to give him the beſt account of my Commiſſion I could, and related to him, without any confuſion, all the walks I had had, and all the turns and returns that I had caus'd this Lord to make; and when I repreſented to him in downright terms, the fury with which he ſally'd out from the Palliſade, and had made a ſhew of drawing his Sword, the King interrupting me askt, But what wouldſt thou have done, Cadet, if he had faln upon thee? I ſhould have defended my ſelf, Sir, ſaid I, for your Majeſty had commanded me not to ſpeak, 'tis true, but not that I ſhould not defend my ſelf; at which his Majeſty burſting out a laughing, ſaid I believe thou wouldſt, by what I ſee in thee. After which he would have me more particularly act before him both the poſture and action of this Lord; which I alſo attempted to do, after the moſt lively and pleaſant manner that I poſſibly could; and that I thought would beſt pleaſe him. Which little Farce being ended, he told me that he was perfectly ſatisfied with my ſervice, and promis'd me that he would bear it in mind. From thenceforward Monſieur *de Belingan* had a particular affection for me, by reaſon of the manner after which I had receiv'd, and executed the propoſition he had made to me; and that he might have more room to ſerve me with the King, he askt me if I had not had Relations, that had done his Majeſty ſome conſiderable ſervice. To which I nam'd to him, amongſt others, an Unkle I had, call'd *d'Eſtoublon*, who had brāvely ſignaliz'd himſelf in the Wars of *Provence*; from whence he afterwards took occaſion to tell the King, ſpeaking of me, that this Cadet began to follow the ſteps of his Unkle, who had done his Majeſty very particular ſervices, and whoſe name was *d'Eſtoublon*. The King ſaid he remembred him very well, adding, that he was a very brave man, and had done him great ſervices; and gave Monſieur *Belingan* order at the ſame time to give me a hundred Crowns. Monſieur *de Belingan* took the liberty to tell him that I deſerved ſo much every year, upon the account of the good ſervices of my friends, and that which I had done his Majeſty in my own perſon; which the King with great bounty immediately conſented to: and thus was I on a ſudden provided for by the State, having a penſion from the King. Going the next day to Monſieur *de Belingan*, I there found the hundred Crowns ready told out; and he promis'd me withal to ſollicit the Patent for the penſion, which alſo in few days he obtain'd. I found my ſelf ſo ſenſibly oblig'd by the generous faſhion, wherewith he ſerv'd me upon this occaſion, that I have all my life ſince ſought opportunities of manifeſting my acknowledgment, as well towards his own perſon as his Sons. For, though what he had procur'd for me was very inconſiderable in it ſelf, I rather valued it from the heart, wherewith he had done it, than from the value of the thing; and I can truly

truly ſay, that I had even then a great averſion for intereſted friendſhips, which are proportion'd according to the ſervice a man hopes to receive from his friends, and not by the mutual confidence and union of hearts. I thought, having receiv'd this money I ſpeak of, that I could not better gratifie the choice my Corporal had made of me, than by giving him a ſhare with me. And being willing others ſhould alſo ſhare in the Kings bounty, I lent ſome to ſome of my Comrades, who ſtood in need enough.

V. I continued yet ſome years in the Guards, till I was forc'd to leave them by a wretched affair, which I ſhould be aſham'd to ſpeak of in this place, were it not to ſhow, with how great wiſdom the King hath caſt a ſcandal upon Duels, which paſt before for honourable, though ſo contrary to all, both Divine and Humane Laws, and that they were the ruine of the *French* Gentry.

A young Cadet, like my ſelf, call'd *Vernetel*, receiv'd a box of the ear from another Gentlemen, whoſe name was *Du Maſ*, who was of the ſame Company, and who, having fell'd him with the blow, ſpurn'd him under foot, and went over his belly. This outrage put him out of all temper, and in the unhappy neceſſity, wherein he thought himſelf engag'd, by the falſe honour of the world, either to revenge himſelf or to periſh, being deaf to all propoſals of accommodation upon this account, he addreſt himſelf to me, who was his particular friend, and entreated me to aſſiſt him in the recovery of his honour. I, who at that time was corrupted with the ſame Maximes, thought I could not deny him that ſervice, and conſequently embrac'd the motion. I had much ado to ſpeak in private to *Du Maſ*, by reaſon that his action having made a great noiſe, he had many eyes upon him. But at laſt, about fifteen days after, all the Regiment being at *Argenteuil*, and the Officers being all at a Council of War, to ſentence a Souldier who had robb'd, I came up to him, and told him that *Vernetel* ſtay'd for him about the thing he knew of: He made anſwer, that he had two friends, from which he could not diſengage himſelf; I thereupon entreated him to content himſelf with only expoſing one of them in his ſervice, becauſe there was none but I with my friend. But, ſeeing I could not perſwade him, I went away, only telling him, that I would preſently bring him more news. A Cadet that overheard us, came and told me, that he ſaw very well what we were about, and threatned withal to diſcover me, if he might not make one; ſo much the fury of theſe ſenſeleſs Duels paſt in theſe days for an Heroick action. I then did all that in me lay to undeceive him from this ſuſpicion: but not being able, with all I could ſay to perſwade him, I ſaw my ſelf conſtrain'd to confeſs to him the true ſtate of the caſe: to which he coldly anſwer'd, The cauſe is too good, a man cannot periſh in it. The bargain being thus agreed on both ſides, we went over by Boat into an Iſland, which was the appointed place, and bound the Water-man, that no body might get over to us, as alſo that we might get back again after the Combat: which was ſo bloody, that of ſix, five were very much wounded, whereof one was left upon the place, and within four and twenty hours died, and another about three weeks after.

It happen'd that we were perceiv'd at laſt by the Officers of the Regiment, who were all along by the water ſide: Theſe immediately took Boats to come over to us; but we having had ſo much leiſure as to re-

cover

cover our own, we got over to the ſhore before they could reach us, from whence every one made the beſt that he could to ſave himſelf. I for my part, being very much wounded, by him of whom I had had the advantage, I was taken before I could get to the place where I hop'd to ſecure my ſelf, and carried to priſon in the *Fauxbourg St. Jacques*, the very ſame place where now ſtands the Abby-Royal of *Val de Grace*, which was then the priſon for the Souldiers of the Regiment. There were alſo ſome others of us taken, but I was the only man committed to priſon, not having found ſo much favour as they. A few days after, they prepared to bring me to my Tryal, of which the iſſue could not doubtleſs have been advantageous to me : but upon *Whitſunday*, by all good tokens, whilſt the Jaylor and his Wife were at Church at their devotions, ſome of my Comrades undertaking ſome means to ſave my Life, as well of their own good will, as that of Monſieur *de Grillon*, who had hinted to them, that he ſhould be glad it could be done, found means to let me down a Rope by a Chimney, by which I got up to the top, and eſcap'd over the Tiles; I was diſcover'd and purſu'd, but I got into a Cellar of the Caſtle of *Biſſetre*, where I lay conceal'd. Thus was God pleas'd doubly to ſave my life, as well from him againſt whom I had fought, as from Juſtice, which I could not otherwiſe have eſcap'd. I then made a very ſerious reflexion upon the action wherein I had been ſo lately engag'd, and indeed it appear'd to me ſo bloody and inhumane, that, tho I could not as yet abſolutely wean my ſelf from thoſe they call the Rules of Honour, I did nevertheleſs from that very inſtant make a firm reſolution, to try all arts imaginable never to be again engag'd in ſo unhappy a neceſſity.

Seeing my ſelf then no more in a condition to appear, and enforc'd to withdraw till this affair ſhould be huſht up; I reſolv'd in the year 1602 to accompany ſeveral Gentlemen, who were going into *Holland*, and there to paſs away all the time of my diſgrace. And accordingly thither we went all together, and continued there ſome ten months.

VI. At the expiration of theſe, we reſolv'd to paſs into *Germany*, and thence into *Muſcovia*; but our Journey was cut ſhort, for about three days Journey from the *Hague*, we were taken by ſome Light Horſe belonging to the Prince of *Orange*; who, looking upon us as Run-aways from the Army, carried us to the next Town, where we were all clapt up in priſon. The Juſtice that uſually paſſes upon Deſerters being very quick, they did not long deliberate upon our Sentence; but they conſider'd the number of us, and thereupon order'd that we ſhould be decimated, and that every tenth man, upon whom the lot fell, ſhould be hang'd. In the mean time, chance being uncertain, every one was equally in fear for himſelf, and all of us intereſted our ſelves in a misfortune, that nevertheleſs could only fall upon a part. A Prieſt came to viſit us in the priſon to comfort us, and to prepare us for death, which induc'd ſome of us to confeſs our ſelves to this good father: but I for my part muſt acknowledge that I was in ſo great an aſtoniſhment, and ſo affrighted at ſuch a kind of death, that I could not take any care of my Conſcience.

At laſt the immediate danger wherein we ſaw our ſelves involv'd, open'd our underſtandings, ſo that we entreated one of our Companions, who had a great deal of art, and was a good Scholar, and that above all was very perfect in the *Latin* Tongue, to write a Letter to the

Prince

Prince of *Orange*, by way of Apology, to try if that might not ſo move him, that we might obtain our pardon. He did it with marvellous facility, repreſenting to his Highneſs, That we were ſeveral Gentlemen, who after that our curioſity and ardour for War had made us leave our own Country, to come and bear Arms in a foreign State, to learn the military exerciſes there, by practice; we were in ſome meaſure excuſable, if the ſame curioſity had prompted us to go on further into other Provinces, that we might the better know the different cuſtomes of diverſe Nations, and ſo of every one to cull out the beſt. That this inclination was more natural to *French-men* than to all other people; and if we had committed a fault upon this occaſion, in not firſt obtaining leave, we hop'd his Highneſs would have the goodneſs to pardon us, and to excuſe the hot humour of the *French* youth: that there had been no malice in the proceeding, but only a little of the levity natural to the Nation; that it was becoming his Grandeur to make a difference betwixt offenders, and to diſtingniſh the quality of offences, by the natural diſpoſition of thoſe who did commit them. In fine, he couch'd this ſhort Apology in ſo elegant *Latin*, and did illuſtrate it with ſo many Reaſons, borrow'd from a Military Rhetorick, which the fear of preſent death did very much animate, that it was impoſſible for the Prince of *Orange* to reſiſt ſo juſt, and ſo ſoft a violence; ſo that he immediately granted our pardon: but upon condition nevertheleſs, that we ſhould yet ſerve ſome time in his Army. And thus, contrary to all expectation, we eſcap'd from ſo great a peril.

VII. After we had ſtay'd ſome months longer with the Prince of *Orange*, according to the injunction he had laid upon us in granting our pardon, we reſolv'd to return into *France*; and accordingly came all together to a Kinſmans houſe of one of the company call'd *L'Angliſe*, who was of *Picardy*; where I was entertain'd by a pure effect of the generoſity of Monſieur, and Madame *L'Angliſe*, as if I had been one of their own Sons. After having ſtaid a month there, I reſolved to return to the Guards, there being no Wars abroad at that time; and that Regiment being the ordinary School for young Gentlemen who follow'd the exerciſe of Arms. But, being the occaſion upon which I had gone out, could not permit me to re-enter into it, and that nothing had been ſaid about that buſineſs all the time of my abſence, it was neceſſary that I ſhould keep my ſelf private for ſome days, during which Monſieur *de Grillon*, who expreſt the affection of a Father to me, obtain'd my Pardon, but upon condition notwithſtanding, that I ſhould give my ſelf up Priſoner for two or three hours only, in obſervation of the ordinary forms. I did ſo, but being the Court of the *Provoſte de l'Hotell*, where I was to be quitted, could not ſit that day, I was very much ſurpriz'd to ſee my ſelf ſhut up four and twenty hours without hearing a word. I believ'd that they play'd foul play with me, and fearing ſcurvy conſequences of this delay, I began to fall into one of the greateſt anxieties I had ever been in the whole time of my life; looking upon my ſelf every moment as a man condemn'd to dye. I made thenceforward a firm reſolution, never again ſo to commit my ſelf to a voluntary Priſon, from whence a man cannot go out when he would; and where a man is continually in fear of being taken out, to go whither he would not. I was nevertheleſs ſoon after deliver'd from this fear, being the next morning releaſed out of Priſon, and at the ſame time admitted

into the Guards, according to my own desire. I here continued some years, where beginning to be weary of doing nothing in *France*, by reason there was no War there, I resolv'd to go into *Savoy*, with one of my Comrades, an intimate friend of mine, whose name was *St. Maury*.

VIII. The War began in that Country about the year 1604, and I understood that *Rose*, the Duke of *Savoy*'s Embassador, levied underhand some Souldiers at *Paris*: I went to wait upon him, and promis'd him that my Comrade and I would raise him 40 men, provided he would assure us of the Commands of Captain and Lieutenant, and furnish us with so much Money as was necessary for the raising, and conducting them to the confines of *Savoy*. He granted what I desir'd, and I was as good as my word. But, not daring to march our Souldiers together, because the King would not allow that any one should make levies of his Subjects to go serve another Prince, I sent them several ways, being very well assur'd they would not fail me, because most of them were Souldiers of the Regiment of Guards whom I knew, and in whom I did absolutely confide. Some of which went by the way of the *Swisse* Country, and others which way they could; as for me, and my Lieutenant, who would needs serve in that condition, we took the way of *Lyons*, where a Guard was kept to stop such kind of people, that they might not pass. The Guard having stopt us at the Gate, I told them that it was a Gentleman who was travelling that way; and that I belong'd to him: for I being more known than *Sainte Maury*, I rather chose to pass for his Servant, that I might be the less taken notice of. But for all that, we were carried before the Governour, which was Monsieur *d'Alincourt*, that we might have his Pass; we there met with several of the Court, one of which remembring my face, askt me if he had not seen me in the Guards? whom I answered after such a manner, that he thought himself mistaken. We were however a little watcht; but they by whom I had been known, being busie about a quarrel, thought no more of us, and so we got away, and went to meet our Souldiers, who attended us at the Rendezvous. There we found them increased in number, having pickt up some others by the way, which made our Company fifty men; who were receiv'd by the Commissary of Monsieur *d'Albigny*, who was our Camp-master. They had some Money distributed amongst them, and quarters assign'd to refresh themselves in, till they should have Orders sent to march away to the Army.

But these Orders were so long in coming, that the Countrey where we lay had time to be weary of us, and sent us word that we should presently retire, or that otherwise they would fall upon us; so that we saw our selves on a sudden oblig'd either to disband our Company, or to stand our ground, and stiffly to defend our selves, by all the ways we fairly could. We resolv'd upon the last as the most honourable, and began to make War for our selves, till we should be call'd to do it for his Highness of *Savoy*. In this design we judg'd it necessary to have some Cavalry to sustain our Foot; and in order to it, accommodated our selves with some Horses of a Town, the Inhabitants whereof made shew to fall upon us. With this small number of Souldiers, consisting of forty Musqueteers, and twenty Horse, or thereabout, we kept the field, and found we were in a condition to defend our selves against all those that intended to attack us. Of which Monsieur *De Bois-pardaillan*, Gover-

nour

nour of *Bourg* in *Breſſe*, upon the Confines of *France* and *Savoy*, was the firſt, who forc'd us to withdraw from his territories, to re-enter thoſe of *Geneva*; where we liv'd a good while, and got ſome booties, till the news of us being carried to *Geneva*, the Republick ſent ſo many Troops againſt us, that we were compell'd to retire to the Confines of *Breſſe*.

Monſieur *de Saint Chaumont*, who was Governour of the Country, having notice of our march, would keep the Paſs againſt us; and to that purpoſe drew together above five hundred Gentlemen, with whom he ſet out to meet us. I had intelligence of it, and found my ſelf in a great perplexity, with ſo few people as I had, having not above fourſcore at the moſt, and of them the Cavalry very poorly mounted. Seeing my ſelf then in no condition to make head againſt ſo great a body, I conceiv'd it requiſite to think of retreating, and that with the ſooneſt. There was no Country for us ſo ſafe as *Savoy*, by reaſon that we march'd under his Standard. But the difficulty was how to get thither: For we were to paſs the *Rhone*, which was two long leagues march from us, which appear'd to be impoſſible, no Boats being there. So that, not daring to ſhow our ſelves, in the aſſurance we had of being charg'd, I bethought me of concealing my men in a Wood, and in the mean time to ſend out to ſeek a Boat upon the River, to be brought to the place where I deſign'd to paſs. But this requiring a great deal of time, I thought it requiſite to amuſe Monſieur *de Saint Chaumont*, in laying him an Ambuſcade with our Horſe only, to the end that we might in the interim file off our Infantry towards the River, and have them all ready to paſs; and the more to fortifie this Ambuſcade, I kept the Drums with the Trumpets to make the greater noiſe. The knowledge I had of the Map of the Country made me gueſs, that Monſieur *de Saint Chaumont*, who fear'd nothing, would certainly paſs through a little Wood, that lay betwixt him and us; and accordingly poſted my ſelf there, with my Horſe, my two Trumpets, and my two Drums; I lay ſtill till the Enemies Forlorn ſhould advance. About midnight they fail'd not to fall directly into our Ambuſcade, when we ſallying out upon them, with a great rattling of Drums and Trumpets, when they leaſt expected any ſuch thing, put them into ſo great a fright, that they all run away, without firing ſo much as one Piſtol; and went to carry news to Monſieur *de Saint Chaumont*, that the Enemy was in the Wood, and had ſo many Trumpets and Drums, that they muſt of neceſſity be much ſtronger than had been reported to him. This news did a little ſtartle him, as well as the reſt, and put them upon a long deliberation of what courſe they ſhould take: where it was at laſt reſolv'd, that they ſhould ſtay till it was day, that they might not raſhly engage, without firſt diſcovering the Enemies poſt and number.

This was juſt as much as I expected, or deſir'd; for by this means we had time ſufficient to recover the River, where we found the Boat coming back from paſſing over our men, in which I ſhipt our Cavalry, that were to paſs over firſt, and ſtay'd my ſelf the return of our Boat, into which at laſt I went, with the reſt of our people. We were ſcarce got to the middle of the River, when we diſcover'd all Monſieur *de Saint Chaumont*'s Cavalry, and himſelf at the head of them, marching a ſoft trot, for fear of engaging himſelf too far: I leave every one to judge of the ſatisfaction he had to ſee us in ſo little number, and himſelf not able to get to us, eſpecially after having been ſtopt by ſo ordinary a ſtratagem, put upon him by ſuch a company of young fellows as we were;

were, and that he was aſham'd he had not the judgment to diſcover. So ſoon as we were landed, I ſaluted him at diſtance, and took my leave, being careful to keep the Water-man on our ſide, leſt he ſhould carry over his Boat; and went to poſt our ſelves upon the firſt little Eminence of the State of the Duke of *Savoy*.

From thence I ſent to give an account of all theſe tranſactions to our Camp-maſter, and to demand his Orders; which I expected with great impatience, finding my ſelf no longer in a condition of making War at my own expence: But was very much aſtoniſht at his anſwer, which was, That the Peace being already concluded, he ſtood no longer in need of our Troops. For having got all the advantage he pretended to, which was, by his authority to render himſelf conſiderable with the Duke, he eaſily conſented to the order the Duke gave him to disband his Regiment; and coming after to ſee me, to acknowledge the great obligation he had to me, he told me, to give me a more particular teſtimony of his gratitude, that if I did not think of returning into *France*, I ſhould oblige him in ſtaying with him, and depending upon the ſame fortune with his own. I receiv'd his offer with the reſpect I ought to do, aſſuring him that I was ſorry no occaſion had preſented it ſelf, wherein I might have made it appear, that I was not altogether unworthy of the honour he had done me; and ſo took my leave. I gave the Souldiers Money, that they might return to *Paris*, after the ſame manner they had come from thence; and *Sainte Maury* and I took poſt to return thither alſo. Our way was to go back again by *Lyons*, where we had an affair of conſiderable importance; which was, there to receive the remainder of our Pay, upon the account of our Company. But though two Treaſurers of the City had jointly engag'd to ſee us paid, we had much ado to get the Money, being at the firſt demand roundly anſwer'd, That we were come too late, and that they had order to pay no more, becauſe all the Troops were disbanded. Yet, when I gave our Money for gone, I was happier than I thought; and by the mediation of a Commiſſary, obtain'd that which I could not do by applying my ſelf to the Treaſurers. We continued our Journey, and being arriv'd at *Paris*, from a Captain as I was lately, I ſaw my ſelf reduc'd once more to the condition of a private Souldier.

IX. I had a kinſman, Monſieur *de Boulogne* by name, who was of *Provence*, and that had the Government of *Nogent* in *Baſſigny*, together with a Company in the Regiment of *Champagne*. He had a great deſire to provide me ſome command in his Company, or in his Government; but there being none at that time vacant in either, I could not prevail with my ſelf to ſtay and lye idle, but choſe rather, as I ſaid before, to enter again for ſome months into the Guards, into which Monſieur *de Crequy*, who was Collonel, receiv'd me with great kindneſs.

I was ſcarce entred into them, when he employ'd me in a very dangerous affair, and from which I had much ado to diſengage my ſelf. Monſieur *de Monravel* had married a Siſter of Monſieur *de Crequy*, who for her fortune was to have an Eſtate call'd *Savigny*, near unto *Juviſy*, which Monſieur *de Crequy* diſputed with him, and whereof he was in actual poſſeſſion. Monſieur *de Monravel* attempted to ſurprize the Houſekeeper, and did effectually, though with much ado, put him out of the place. To keep this Caſtle, which he had thus got the poſſeſſion of, he made choice of three Souldiers, who had ſerv'd under his command;

giving

giving them charge to keep this Houſe, as a Fort of War, and not to ſuffer any perſons whatever to come in, without firſt very well knowing who they were. Monſieur *de Crequy* being very much vexed at this affront, reſolv'd at any rate to recover the poſſeſſion of his Caſtle. He thought he might employ me in this enterprize, and accordingly entreated me to ſerve him in it, to the beſt of my power. He ſaid nothing to me of the means of executing it, but wholly relied upon my conduct; aſſuring me, that he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary, and which was of much greater importance; that he would powerfully juſtifie and ſuſtain me in all things, as he was oblig'd to do. I told him, that he did me a great deal of honour in chooſing me to do him this ſervice, but that the buſineſs appear'd to me ſomething hard to perform, ſeeing that, being very well acquainted with the ſituation of the houſe, I knew it to be environ'd with a deep Moat, full of Water, that could not be paſt but over a Draw-bridge, which could not be let down, being guarded by Souldiers: but that however I would attempt the enterprize; that being he would not have me lay a formal Siege to it, I had no need of many people, but of two or three men only, which I would chooſe out of the Regiment; and that I begg'd the favour of him to bear me out in the conſequence, as he had done me the honour to promiſe he would. He again aſſur'd me that he would, and with this aſſurance, taking three good Souldiers along with me, I went about my buſineſs.

Being come to *Savigny*, I made a ſhew of ſhooting with one of my Comrades, and being acquainted with the chiefeſt of the three Souldiers that were in the Caſtle, I call'd to him from the end of the Bridge, which was down. As he was coming to me, I told him that my ſport had brought me thither, and then ſpeaking to him of a Mall, that was hard by the houſe, askt him if he were not in the humour to play a Game with us. He then askt me on the other ſide, if I would not come in; and I anſwer'd him with ſuch indifferency, as took from him all cauſe of ſuſpicion. One of his two Comrades was already out of the Caſtle, and as he alſo was coming out, whilſt he was yet upon the Plank, which had no Rails, I took him by the hand, and pull'd him a little roughly to me, which he reſiſting, his foot ſlipt, and he fell into the Moat. I preſently threw him a pole, to help him out of the Water, and at the ſame inſtant, my two Souldiers, who had conceal'd themſelves at ſome diſtance, to ſee how matters would go, came running, and with us made themſelves Maſters of the Bridge. We then pull'd up the Bridge, and I bid him who had faln into the water, Go, and dry himſelf; and that as he had entred this place by ſurprize on the behalf of Monſieur *de Monravel*, he ought not to take it ill that I ſhould enter by the ſame way for Monſieur *de Crequy*, who was the true proprietor. The third Souldier, who had remain'd in the Caſtle, ſeeing us four againſt him alone, made no manner of reſiſtance, but ſuffer'd himſelf to be turn'd quietly out, as well as ſeveral women, who were in the place. I immediately gave Monſieur *de Crequy* an account of all that had paſt, and he preſently ſent us two Horſes laden with proviſion; writing to me withal, That we ſhould maintain what we had got againſt all the world; aſſuring us anew, That he would uphold us to the laſt, and would therein rather engage his whole authority and eſtate, than that this difference ſhould not end to his honour. I thought my ſelf with this Letter in an abſolute aſſurance, but I did not yet know the ordinary courſe of

the affairs of the world, nor the ways of proceeding of great men, as I have done ſince.

X. A few days after, they came and told me, that there was at the end of the Bridge an Uſher of the Parliament, who commanded me, by virtue of an Arreſt, immediately to open the Gates, and reſtore the Caſtle into the hands of Monſieur *de Monravel*; or otherwiſe there would be a Decree againſt us, and the neighbouring Provoſts and Commoners would be order'd to bring us alive or dead. I confeſs I was ſurpriz'd at ſuch a Complement, not having dreamt that I ſhould have the Parliament to diſpute againſt; I believ'd the ſolemn promiſe that Monſieur *de Crequy* had made to uphold us againſt all pretenders, did abſolutely ſecure us. In the mean time I imagin'd that he might know nothing of this proceeding, and that till he could be inform'd of it, I might return the Uſher this anſwer, That I knew him not, and that he muſt bring me a Letter, under Monſieur *de Crequy*'s own hand, who had put me into this Caſtle. The Uſher return'd to carry back my anſwer to Madam *de Monravel*, who had ſent him, and who ſollicited this affair with the Parliament, with ſo much heat, that immediately ſhe went to demand of them, that ſince the Garriſon had not thought fit to obey their Arreſt, they would pleaſe to ſend a Councellour, for whom doubtleſs we ſhould have more reſpect. Her requeſt was granted, and the Court appointed a Commiſſary to come preſently to us.

Now I having taken a reſolution to ſtay for Monſieur *de Crequy*'s order before I would deliver up the Caſtle, return'd the ſame anſwer to the Councellor that I had done to the Uſher; telling him withal, That I was infinitely ſorry I could not obey him, in the extreme neceſſity wherein I found my ſelf of executing my Collonels commands. The Councellour was offended to the laſt degree, to ſee that we ſhould thus refuſe to obey him, and in that heat preſently commanded a Boat to be brought from *Juviſy* to ſet over men to ſcale the Walls. This Order was immediately executed, by reaſon that Madam *de Monravel*, who had provided for all things, had made ready for it before-hand. The firſt Provoſt who came to the place, commanded one of his Archers to mount the Ladder; but this Archer having made a little too much haſte, had no ſooner clapt his hand upon the top of the Wall, but that he was made to quit his hold, and tumble headlong into the Water. This accident put all the party into a very great fury; and another, who would be braver than the reſt, having ſaid, that give him but a Piſtol, and he would take order that they ſhould not ſerve him ſo, mounted reſolutely, with his Piſtol in his hand; but when he thought himſelf already Maſter of the Caſtle, one of my Comrades and I, who lay conceal'd behind the Wall, ſo ſoon as ever he put up his head, caught him by the collar of his doublet, ſtrongly pull'd him in to us, and having held him down below, bound him and clapt him in priſon.

After this ſecond adventure, none of the Aſſailants had the courage to mount the Wall, ſo that Madam *de Monravel*, conceiving it was neceſſary to have more company, call'd in yet another Provoſt, with all the Rabble of four or five neighbouring Villages; and of all theſe people gather'd together, made ſeveral *Corps de Guard*, which blockt up the Caſtle. She caus'd the Draw-bridge to be under-propt, that the beſieged might not let it down and eſcape, when they found themſelves too nearly preſt; and ſent to *Paris* for Cannon to force us, reſolv'd to take

take us alive or dead: For ſhe was perſwaded that we were above fifty, by reaſon that every night we ſet out above fifty light Matches upon forkt ſticks, that held ten or twelve apiece, every one plac'd at the due diſtance of Musketeers. We moreover plac'd others at the corners of the houſe, and mov'd them from time to time, to make them believe that we reliev'd the Centinels. In the mean time, ſeeing our ſelves thus deſtitute, and hearing no news of Monſieur *de Crequy*, we found means to let him know the condition we were in, and the night following he commanded two hundred men of the Regiment of Guards, under the command of ſome Serjeants, to go betimes in the morning to *Savigny*, to charge all the beſiegers, and afterwards to enter into the Caſtle. But this Order could not be ſo private, but that Madam *de Monravel*, who was return'd to *Paris*, had notice of it, which made her come away in an inſtant; and ſhe made ſo great haſte, that ſhe kill'd two of her Coach-horſes. She came but juſt before the relief, and having plac'd her Coach juſt before the Bridge, ſhe being on foot, told the Serjeants of the Guards, who commanded the two hundred men, that they ſhould not paſs but over her; and therefore they were to conſider whether they would deſtroy her or no, for ſhe was reſolv'd not to ſtir from the place. This diſcourſe did ſo confound the Commanders, that they alter'd their deſign, having reſpect to a Lady of her quality, and the Siſter of him for whom they had undertaken the Journey. So that they only try'd to put ſome men into the Caſtle by a little Bridge on the backſide of the Houſe; but it was ſo rotten that it broke under ten or twelve that were upon it, and there were but two that could recover the door; of which one was the *Valet de Chambre* of Monſieur *de Crequy*. All this relief ended there, and the reſt retir'd, without having done any other thing, than to give us at leaſt ſome little comfort in the reiterated word of Monſieur *de Crequy*, who aſſur'd us afreſh, that he would bring us off with honour whatever came on't.

XI. But a whole day being paſt, and we ſeeing all the Machines making ready, and every one preparing himſelf to come on to the Aſſault, we began with good reaſon to apprehend, that in longer expecting the effect of our Collonels promiſes, we ſhould be forc'd, and reduc'd to the neceſſity, either of dying with our Swords in our hands, or to undergo the ſeverity of an offended Parliament. Yet before we would reſolve in this ſtrange extremity wherein we ſaw our ſelves, I plac'd a Centinel, to look if he could not diſcover any Troops coming to our relief: but inſtead of Troops, he ſaw only one man appear on the top of a little eminence cloſe by, who making a ſign to him with his hand, threw him a ſtone wrapt about with paper, wherein I read theſe words:

I am at my wits end: Save your ſelves as well as you can; for it is not in my power without periſhing my ſelf to diſengage you; but if you can get out, come forthwith to Juviſy, *where you will find in the Inn Horſes ready, and all things neceſſary.* De Crequy.

This Ticket put us into no leſs deſpair than our Collonel, to ſee our ſelves ſo far engag d upon his word, ſo oft reiterated, and yet that he would not keep it with us. Nevertheleſs we were to think of getting out one way or another; and ſeeing we muſt of neceſſity periſh if we ſhould ſuffer our ſelves to be forc'd, we reſolv'd to prevent an Aſſault,

not

not deſpairing but that we ſhould be able to open our ſelves ſome way to eſcape. I contriv'd then the night following to cauſe a great noiſe to be made behind the Caſtle, to draw the beſiegers to that part, and I was buſie in the mean time, as ſoftly as I could, in unnailing the plank of the Draw-bridge, to make us way. Having at laſt drawn it to me, I let down from the top of the Wall a Ladder by a Rope, and made the lower end reſt upon the frame of the Bridge : I ſtay'd that end from ſlipping back, and with a Rope that was faſtened to the upper end of the Ladder, I let it fall gently upon the other end that ſupported the Draw-bridge, when it was let down. This Ladder thus reſting the two ends upon the two firm parts of the Bridge, that we might walk upon it, I laid over the plank I had taken out of the Bridge, and having thus made a Bridge of the Ladder, we all ſix ſally'd out with our Swords in our hands, and immediately fell upon the firſt *Corps de Guard*, where, by making a mighty noiſe, and crying out Kill, Kill, we put them into ſuch a fright, that they gave way and let us paſs, as if we had been a great number.

But all was not yet done, and we were to make wonderful great haſte to gain the River, before the Archers of this Guard had recover'd their wits, and could mount to Horſe, to come and fall upon us. Alſo having recover'd *Juviſy*, where I knew that Horſes were ready for us at the Inn, I would not enter into it, for fear leſt ſtaying to go take theſe Horſes, we ſhould be all on a ſudden ſurpriz'd ; but we ran to get into a Boat, where we got over the River. We immediately perceiv'd on the other ſide of the River that we had quitted, the Archers that purſu'd us, and who attempted not to paſs, by reaſon that the Foreſt of *Senac* came down to the River on our ſide. We entred into it to repoſe our ſelves, and there remain'd all day, having ſent a Country fellow for ſomething to eat, as if we had been Hunters.

XII. The night following we went on our Journey, and came to Monſieur *de Crequy* to *Paris*, who receiv'd us as perſons whom it went to his Soul to have engag'd, and that he ſaw had eſcap'd beyond all manner of hope. But though his houſe was our refuge for the ſpace of ſix weeks, that we lay conceal'd there, becauſe they had decreed againſt us ; yet was it no great ſatisfaction to ſee our ſelves depriv'd of our Liberty, and that he upon whoſe account we had loſt it, was not able to reſtore us to it. I then found that I was to work for my ſelf in an affair that ſo nearly concern'd me, and to diſengage my ſelf from the hands of Juſtice, after having eſcap'd from thoſe of the Beſiegers. Which alſo I effected happily enough, in making uſe of a little foreſight I had had, at my firſt entring into the Caſtle. I had taken an Inventory of all I found there, being unwilling any one ſhould accuſe me of failing in the leaſt punctilio of my duty. The chiefeſt member of this concern was a Chamber, in which there was a great quantity of Plate, I had taken care to lock the Chamber up, after having brought into it whatever was moſt conſiderable from the other rooms of the Caſtle, and had taken the Key, ſo that not a Soul entred into it of all the time that I was there, neither could any the leaſt thing be imbezled. I took occaſion from this exact care of mine to preſerve what appertain'd to Madam *de Monravel*, to make my peace with her ; and I thought it beſt to addreſs my ſelf immediately to her, without employing any Mediator, hoping that out of generoſity ſhe would be juſt to herſelf, in pardoning a man, whoſe good

good conduct would make it appear to her, that the sole command of his Collonel had forc'd him to maintain the Castle against her.

I ventur'd therefore to write to her with all possible civility and submission, *That I was extremely concern'd it had so faln out, that the duty of my place had compell'd me to appear against her: But I assur'd her Ladyship withal, that if I had been faithful to her Brother, I had also been so in her concerns, in preserving with a particular care all I had found in the House, of which I had taken an exact Inventory, which I took the boldness to send her. I humbly besought her to consider that the sole duty of obedience having made me undertake this action, and not the prospect of any interest, which I was infinitely far from, it would redound to her own honour, to pardon a fault she herself would have justified in another, that had committed it on her behalf: that had I had the honour to have belonged to her, as I did to Monsieur* de Crequy *her Brother, I should have serv'd her with the same zeal, and by a like service should have thought to have merited her esteem; which gave me reason to hope, knowing her generosity, that she would less consider her self upon this occasion, than the obligation of my Duty: and in this assurance I durst make her Ladyship, who was my Party, my Judge, and commit my Cause absolutely into her hands, thence to expect the Grace which she only had the power to grant.*

This Letter, together with the truth of the fact, prevail'd so far with Madam *de Monravel*, that instead of prosecuting any further against me, she spoke in my favour; and having first pacified her Husband, who was irritated to the last degree, and after that, having easily obtain'd the Abolition that I desir'd. Thus she, who had depriv'd me of my Liberty, restor'd it to me again; and that which had so cruelly incens'd her against me at first, became a favourable occasion to me in the Issue of receiving from her all the testimonies of a most sincere Friendship.

The End of the First Book.

BOOK II.

The Sieur de Pontis *enters into a Regiment of* Champaigne. *A great Accident that befell him in the Forreſt of* Beaumont. *He is made the King's Lieutenant in the City of* Nogent, *during the War of the Princes. He goes to force a Captain of Light Horſe in a Caſtle, and brings him as a publick Incendiary to his Trial, notwithſtanding the Oppoſition of all the Gentlemen of the Country. How he made an end of all the Quarrels he had with the Gentry there. He makes Head in the open Field with* 200 *Foot, againſt* 600 *Horſe commanded by the Cardinal of* Guiſe. *And goes to the Seige of* St. John d'Angely.

I. SOme months after this affair I had had with the Parliament, about Monſieur *d' Crequi*'s concerns, Monſieur *de Boulogne*, that I mentioned before, procured me the Enſigns place of his own Company, which was to me the firſt ſtep by which I began to enter into Command; not reckoning the ſhort employment I had had in *Savoy*, for any thing at all: But in the time that I ſerv'd in this Commiſſion, there hapned to me a rencounter, which well deſerves to be mention'd in this place.

About the Year 1611, our Regiment, which was that of *Champaigne*, finding it ſelf very much ſtreightned in *Verdun*, where we lay in Garriſon, entreated leave of the King that they might quarter in *Mont-Faucon* too, which is a very pretty Town, ſome Leagues diſtant from *Verdun*. Monſieur *de Ville*, at that time Governour of *Verdun*, writ about it to Court, and obtained of the Queen Regent the favour we deſired, ſo that his Majeſty writ to Monſieur *de Nevers*, who was Governour of the Province, that it was his pleaſure it ſhould be ſo; and ſo ſoon as the Letter was writ, I was choſen out to carry it to *Caſſine*, the ordinary place of Monſieur *de Nevers* his reſidence, and ſo to bring back his Orders for the Quarters. I accordingly went, and finding that Monſieur *de Nevers* was gone to *Montaigu* in *Flanders*, I went after him thither, and had from him all the ſatisfaction I could deſire. But I was not ſo happy in my return.

II. When I was ſome ten leagues off *Verdun*, at a Bourg called *Raucourt*, about three or four in the afternoon, and I was preparing to continue my Journey through a Forreſt, which I muſt of neceſſity go over, I had warning given me at the Inn, that they would by no means adviſe me to travel alone through this Forreſt, becauſe there were a great many High-way men there, and that it was better for me to ſtay till the morning, that they might provide a good Guide, and that there might peradventure be ſome body in Town with whom I might paſs with more ſafety. I thought it convenient to take this Counſel, and

not

not to ſtand upon the punctilio of Bravery, and ſo raſhly to expoſe my ſelf, where there was no Duty to engage me. I ſent therefore to the Inns to enquire whither there was any body that was to go over the Forreſt. It hapned luckily that a Canon who was returning to *Verdun*, being in the ſame concern that I was, ſent at the ſame time to my Lodgings to make the ſame enquiry. About eight a clock in the morning we ſet out with a Guide, of whom they gave us a very good character. Being advanc'd into the Forreſt we met a man a foot in red Breeches, and a blew Doublet, with a Fuſee upon his Shoulder; I askt the Guide the meaning of that odd kind of habit, who made anſwer, that it was a Countryman that was ſhooting. The way we rid was very troubleſom, by reaſon the branches of the Trees hung down ſo low, as forc'd us continually to ſtoop, which made me tell the Canon, that we were better to alight, and lead our Horſes in our hands; and this little foreſight ſerv'd not only to eaſe us, but moreover to ſave our lives, ſeeing that we could very hardly have eſcap'd in the rencounter that preſently after befel us, had we not been alighted from our Horſes. Being then a little further advanc'd in the Forreſt, we met with three men laid down by the road ſide, with Fuſees lying by them. As we paſt by they roſe up and complimenting us, God protect you Gentlemen, ſaid they, whether are you travelling after that manner? and we had need indeed that God ſhould protect us from the conſequence of ſuch a Compliment. We replied that we were going to *Verdun*. We will bear you company, ſaid they, very civilly, if you pleaſe, for we are going thither too. I, who thought it not convenient to tye our ſelves to ſuch Company, and that abſolutely concluded them to be Rogues, made anſwer, though civilly enough too, That it appear'd a little hard we ſhould travel far together, and that they could not well keep pace a foot with us who had Horſes. They, who deſir'd nothing more but to begin a quarrel, preſently made what I had ſaid an affront of honour, and brutiſhly replying, What! Gentlemen, ſaid they, becauſe we are a foot, are we leſs men of honour, and leſs honeſt men? I reply'd again very civilly to this huffing return, That I was very far from undervaluing them, and that it was not my humour ſo to do. Upon this, inſtead of taking notice of what I ſaid, they grew hotter, and proceeded to rage, when three or four more at the inſtant ruſht out of the Wood, asking their Comrades what was the matter? and almoſt before they could give them an anſwer, were all upon us with fury, crying out, Kill, Kill. I had no more time at the inſtant, but to ſeize on our Guides Quarter-ſtaff, who ran away in a moment, with all the good teſtimony had been given us of him; we let go our Horſes, and clapping my ſelf back to back to the Canon, who I ſpoke to not to forſake me, but to defend himſelf on his ſide as well as he could, I began to lay about me with my Quarter-ſtaff with all my force and art, and I ſtood in need of it all in this rencounter. The great blows and thruſts I made at them kept them at a diſtance, and hindred them from approaching too near: They preſently made ſome ſhots at us, with which the Canon was only wounded in the Thigh; but the heat of the Combat made him that he did not feel it: for he defended himſelf on his ſide with incredible ardour, having about him a girdle of 300 Piſtols, which made him fight like a Tyger.

After this manner we defended our ſelves above a quarter of an hour without intermiſſion, againſt all theſe fellows, arm'd with a Halbert, Fire-

Fire-arms, and Swords. They made but little uſe of their Fuſees, he that had the Halbert made mighty attempts to get in to us; but being I had a continual eye upon him, and that the furious blows I every moment dealt amongſt them with my Staff kept them in awe, they could do us no harm, and durſt not venture too far. The braveſt, or the moſt furious amongſt them, was a young red-headed Rogue, who preſt very hard upon me, and that I found always upon the attack. But beginning to feel my ſelf weary with ſo long and ſo rough a Combat, I made a final effort, and having as it were muſter'd all my forces together, and made a kind of a *falſifie*, I reacht this young Rogue ſuch a rap, as made him immediately retire forty paces, and ſit down upon the ground. Never were people ſo aſtoniſht, to ſee us ſo obſtinate, not to yield our ſelves to ſo many as they were; and I aſſure my ſelf that could they have foreſeen ſuch a conſequence of their firſt Compliment, they would have ſav'd both themſelves and us ſo much fruitleſs labour. In the end, ſeeing the ſtouteſt of their company hurt, they began by little and little to ſlacken their ardour, and to talk amongſt themſelves: which made us judge that it was time to think of a retreat, and accordingly we threw our ſelves back together into the Wood, and got away in the ſtrangeſt equipage that ever eye beheld, having neither Cloak, nor Hat, nor my Sword, which was alſo loſt from my ſide: and being out of breath, and almoſt quite ſpent, we reſted our ſelves a little in the Buſhes. Our Horſes, which at the firſt firing of a Fuſee had ran away, ſtay'd for us about a league off, as much out of breath as we; we found them too in ſo ill equipage, that their Bridles and Girts were broken, and the Piſtols batter'd; but however we made ſhift after the beſt manner we could to get to a Bourg call'd *Beaumont*.

The noiſe of our adventure being ſpread abroad, the Judges of the place came to ſeek us out, and compell'd us againſt our wills, to ſtay a day or two, by reaſon that they had orders the next day to raiſe the Country, and ſearch in the Forreſt, to ſee if they could find out theſe Robbers, of whom ſo many perſons made every day publick complaints; and they hop'd that peradventure we might know ſome of them. It hapned indeed the next day that the young Rogue that I had hurt was taken, not being able to get away: I knew him as ſoon as ever I ſaw him, and he was himſelf conſtrain'd to confeſs the truth. In the mean time we took our leaves, and departed, leaving the miſerable wretch upon the point to be hang'd, and came to *Verdun*, with the Orders from Monſieur *de Nevers* for the Quarters at *Mont-Faucon*.

III. The Lieutenant of our Company having been kill'd, I ſome time after had his command, and return'd the Colours into the hands of Monſieur *de Boulogne*. I remain'd in Garriſon in *Nogent* upon *Marne* at the time when the Princes rebell'd againſt King *Lewis* XIII, and began to raiſe Forces, having many of the Gentry of *Baſſigny* on their ſide, which was the reaſon that *Nogent* was beſet round with enemies. Monſieur *de Boulogne*, who at that time had buſineſs at *Paris*, entruſted the place to me, with the quality of the Kings Lieutenant, which he procured for me.

IV. Some time before this War, a Gentleman within two leagues of *Nogent*, call'd *Guyonnel*, was ſo out of order in his affairs, that there was a Decree granted for the ſale of his Houſe of *Bonnecourt*; which Mon-

Monſieur *de Boulogne* having bought, this man was ſo enrag'd to ſee himſelf turn'd out of his Houſe, that he lookt upon this War as a happy opportunity to revenge himſelf, and by ſiding with the Princes, by force to get into poſſeſſion again; but Monſieur *de Boulogne* having as it were foreſeen his ill deſign, had plac'd ſome good men for the guard of the Caſtle.

Guyonnel had alſo a kinſman call'd *Aurillot*, who was in the Princes party, and had rais'd a Troop of Light Horſe, with which he reſolv'd to force and pillage *Bonnecourt*. He came therefore demanding to Quarter there, and ſeeing himſelf deny'd, fell to plundring the Village, ſaying that he would preſently do as much by the Caſtle. He accordingly advanc'd towards the Caſtle, as if to enter by force, but the Souldiers that kept it, ſhewing a reſolution ſtill to defend it, and beginning to fire upon him, he was fain to retire. The ſpite of this diſappointment made him ſet fire to the *Baſſe-Court*, and animated him to ſuch an exceſs of barbarity, as there to burn the Farmer, his Wife, and Children; whom he cruelly repulſt when they attempted to ſave themſelves through the flames. *Bonnecourt* being near to *Nogent*, the news of this was preſently brought thither to us; for beſides, that we had heard ſhooting, and ſeen the flame, ſome of the Inhabitants came crying out that they put all to Fire and Sword. I was ſurpriz'd, and afflicted to the laſt degree at hearing the leaſt violences; but I found my in a ſad perplexity, having but a very few men in the Garriſon, and fearing to expoſe the place, ſhould I go out with my Souldiers.

I contriv'd notwithſtanding to cauſe the young people of the Town to mount to Horſe, and with them to command fifty Muſqueteers of the Garriſon. Having drawn them together ready to march, I aloud laid before them the cruelty that had been exercis'd upon the Inhabitants of *Bonnecourt*, and gave them to underſtand that they were to revenge it; aſſuring them upon my word, that I would poſt them ſo, as that they might charge the enemy without danger: whereupon they all promis'd me to do wonders, and they kept their words as I did mine. I plac'd them in an Ambuſcade, where they had all manner of advantage without peril; for having caus'd a falſe Alarm to be given at one end of the Village, which made the Country go out at the other, they there met with our young people, who had march'd all night without their knowledge; and who on a ſudden gave them ſo briſk, and ſo unexpected a Charge, that they all fled without any manner of reſiſtance, leaving their prey behind, with ſome of their own men, who were all either kill'd or taken. I reſtor'd to every one of the Inhabitants what was properly his own, caus'd the fire to be put out, and put courage and life into theſe poor people again.

After this I return'd to *Nogent*, to put the Inhabitants of the Town out of the pain they were in about their Sons, whom they thought dangerouſly engag'd with the Enemy. The joy they were in to ſee them all ſafe return'd, with the glory of having ſo bravely reliev'd their Neighbours, made them forget the fear they had been in of loſing them; and as oftentimes there needs but a very light occaſion to acquire either the affection, or the hatred of a people; this little Action procur'd me ſo abſolute a credit with the whole Town, that I needed but to ſay the leaſt word to be obeyed in a moment, and they call'd me the Conſervator of their Country.

V. *Aurillot*, vext to the ſoul to ſee himſelf thus baffled and put to flight, reſolv'd to be reveng'd at any rate, and having ſeveral Perſons of Quality of his Kindred, as the Marqueſs *de Creance*, *de Clermont*, and others, who were of the Princes Party, as well as himſelf; he aſſembled them all together, to acquaint them of the affront he had receiv'd from me, and the reſolution he had taken to recover his reputation; entreating them to joyn with him to this end, and all together to ſwear a mortal War againſt the *Gaſcon*, for ſo it was that in contempt they were pleas'd to call me. Theſe Gentlemen made no great difficulty of conſenting to his requeſt, and conſequently openly declar'd a War againſt the King's Lieutenant of *Nogent*.

Having intelligence of this practice I gather'd together ſome Horſe, and put my ſelf into a condition, not only of defending my ſelf, but of attacking them upon ſeveral occaſions, wherein my chiefeſt aim was to take *Aurillot* Priſoner, to make him repair the horrible crime he had committed in *Bonnecourt*, not being able to forget ſo great a barbarity. To this end I ſent out ſeveral Spies on all ſides, to bring me certain intelligence of the ſeveral places to which he went, and where he ſtayed, that of them I might make choice of that which was moſt proper for the executing my deſign. One of theſe Spies one day brought me word, that *Aurillot* was that night to lye within three Leagues of *Nogent*, at a Caſtle call'd *Perſe*, or elſe in another call'd *Perſigny*, which was but half a League from the firſt, in order to a deſign he had to go out with a party the next morning towards *Langues*, which held out for the King. Upon this intelligence I immediately ſent in all poſt haſte to tell Monſieur *de Franciere*, who was Governor of *Langues*; to Monſieur *de Rheſnel*, Governor of *Chaumont*; and to Monſieur *de Saint Aubin*, Governor of *Montigny*; which were three places united to *Nogent*, and which had all promiſed mutual aſſiſtance againſt theſe Invaders, that if they would ſend me ſome Troops, I did aſſure them the next morning to take *Aurillot* Priſoner; that it was of moment to the publick quiet, ſince it was he almoſt that diſturbed the whole Country.

Monſieur *de Rheſnel*, and Monſieur *de St. Aubin*, ſent me forthwith ſome Horſe, and Monſieur *de Franciere* would come himſelf in perſon; but he came a little too late: for the very moment that the men from the two others arriv'd, having no time to loſe, I made thoſe men I had, which were about 60 Horſe, and as many Foot, ready to march; and with them ſet out about midnight, and came to inveſt the Village of *Perſigny*, into which *Aurillot* was retir'd. I plac'd *Corps de Guard* on all the Avenues, and with the reſt of my men without any noiſe went to ſtorm the Houſe; yet could I not do it ſo ſoftly, but that thoſe within heard us, and did what they could to oppoſe us: but we made our ſelves Maſters of it, and having forc'd the doors, we ſtruck ſo great a terror into all thoſe within, that they made little or no reſiſtance. *Aurillot*, ſeeing no poſſible way to eſcape, barricado'd himſelf in a Chamber, and having a Piſtol in his hand, cry'd out, that he would kill the firſt man that advanc'd, and that he would dye before he would ſurrender himſelf to me, being conſcious without doubt that he was guilty enough, to know that he was not to have any very good compoſition from me. He enquir'd at the ſame time, whither there was no other Commander; to which he was anſwer'd, that Monſieur *de Franciere* was juſt arriv'd, and that if he had a deſire to ſurrender himſelf into his hands, I was willing

willing to consent to it. *Aurillot* took the course, and so became a Prisoner; as also were all the rest of his men, some few excepted, who by the favour of the night escap'd into the neighb'ring Houses, and there conceal'd themselves.

VI. Monsieur *de Franciere* and I, were of opinion, that we ought to carry our Prisoners to *Langues*: and being accordingly about to enter the Town, we were very much surpriz'd to see all the Citizens come out of the Gates to meet us. The joy wherein they were, to hear that we were bringing in *Aurillot* Prisoner, would not give them leave to stay till he came within the Walls of their City; and one of them, more foreseeing and zealous than the rest, fearing lest he should compound for his Ransome, as he might have done, had he not committed that barbarity at *Bonnecourt*, thought it best, in good time to prevent it, and fir'd a Musquet at him; but was so ill a Marks-man, that instead of his Head, he hit mine, the ball cutting my Hat-band in two, and graz'd upon my Hat, yet without any other harm to me at all. This heat did a little surprize us, and made me tell Monsieur *de Franciere*, that there was no safety there for *Aurillot*, and that it was better to carry him to *Nogent*; but he made answer, that he would go and speak to the people, and going immediately up to them, he there gave them to understand, that if they would permit Justice to have its course against this publick Enemy, they should have all satisfaction; but if they would make use of violence, he should be constrain'd to convey him to some other place. This remonstrance stopt their fury, and they past their words, that they would do him no harm, wishing much rather to see him dye upon a Scaffold; and so they brought him into the Town, and clapt him up in Prison.

VII. This news of taking *Aurillot* made a mighty noise in the Country; all the Gentry mounted to Horse, and sent to Monsieur *de Franciere* that he might be ransom'd, as being a Prisoner of War. Monsieur *de Franciere* return'd them answer, that it was I who had taken him, and that he being my right, they were to apply themselves to me; but that if he was absolutely at his disposal, he could not treat him as a Prisoner of War, having been taken not only as an Enemy to the King, but as a Destroyer of the Country, and a publick Incendiary; who had burnt Men and Villages, and committed Outrages that were not according to the ordinary Rules of War. To which the Nobless return'd answer again, that all this could be no other but an occasion of inhancing his ransom, that due satisfaction might be made; and therefore did humbly beseech him to set his rate, and to consent, that every Gentleman amongst them might have a particular obligation to him for the favour. Monsieur *de Franciere* found himself in a very great straight, being unwilling to fall out with all the Gentlemen of the Country, and very well foreseeing all the consequences of this affair, told me, that he thought he should not be able to detain this Prisoner any longer; and that therefore I was to consider whither or no I would take him into my own Custody, for that otherwise he should be compell'd to deliver him upon Ransom. I for my part, who thought I ought not to prefer any consideration to my duty, made answer, that I would take the charge of him upon me, and would keep him safe enough; and accordingly two hours before day in the morning, I took him, and with

my

my Horſe convey'd him to *Chaumont*, where I ſecur'd him in a good ſtrong Priſon.

Monſieur *de Franciere* at the ſame time ſent to acquaint the Nobleſs, that he had him no longer in his power, not having been able to deny him to him by whom he had been taken, and to whom he did of right appertain. This news troubled them very much, not doubting but that I was reſolv'd to proceed to the laſt, as I had begun. The only remaining comfort they had, was that being condemned at *Chaumont*, he might appeal to *Paris*, and that in ſo long a way, they might find ſome means or other to reſcue him. They ſent nevertheleſs to demand him of me, and upon my refuſal ſaid, that I ſhould make haſte then to bring him to his Trial, hoping for the forementioned reaſon, to procure his deliverance ſo much the ſooner. They had the ſatisfaction they deſir'd; for in a few days he was condemned to have his Head cut off; and to make reſtitution to all thoſe he had undone.

He appeal'd from this Sentence to *Paris*, demanding to be carried thither, and withal gave notice to all his Friends, that if they would reſcue him now was the time to do it: His Relations hereupon drew all their Friends together, and mounting to Horſe, came to place themſelves in Ambuſcade upon the way by which they thought he was to paſs: but I eaſily put the change upon them, for having ſent to take up an Inn at *Bar-ſur-Aube*, which was the great road to *Paris*, for the next night; all theſe Gentlemen who had had intelligence of it, made themſelves ſure upon the orders I had given, and not doubting of any thing elſe, poſted themſelves in the place I named before. In the mean time I ſent *Aurillot* away the ſame day by eight of the clock in the morning, in the ſight of the whole Town; having put him into a cloſe Waggon, and order'd Thirty good Souldiers for his Guard, of which Twenty four, after having conveyed him three Leagues return'd; and the ſix others under the command of a Serjeant carried him, not by the way of *Bar-ſur-Aube*, which I had commanded them to quit, but by another which was all wood, and the concealing them there kept them in abſolute ſafety. And thus all this rout of Gentlemen were deceiv'd; not imagining that any one would have taken a way that was 30 Leagues about; and after having continued four days on Horſeback retir'd, and gave over their deſign. The Convoy convey'd their Priſoner to *Paris*, where Monſieur *de Boulogne* expected him with great anxiety and impatience, knowing that ſo many Gentlemen had taken the Field to reſcue him. He caus'd him to be put into Priſon, and purſu'd his proceſs with might and main.

In the interim the Peace of *Lodun* was concluded, and an Act of Oblivion was paſt without exceptions; which Monſieur *de Boulogne* having notice of, he preſently took Poſt and went to Court, where he mov'd, that Incendiaries at leaſt might not be comprehended in the Pardon, as having committed actions too black, and too cruel to be forgiven. His requeſt was granted; and there was a particular Article inſerted in the Treaty to that effect.

VIII. Whilſt Monſieur *de Boulogne* was buſie at *Paris* in purſuit of his Proceſs, I had no leſs to do at *Nogent*, to maintain my ſelf againſt all this Nobleſs, who were furiouſly enrag'd againſt me for the affront they conceiv'd I had put upon them. Of which ſome proceeded ſo far as out of bravado to ſend me word, that if I durſt come out of the

Gates,

Gates, they might ſee what I was in the Field, where a better Judgment might be made than within the Walls of a Town. Thus it fell out, that in doing my beſt for the King's intereſt and the publick peace, I brought a hundred inconveniencies upon my ſelf, from which I ſhould have had very much ado to diſengage my ſelf, had I inconſiderately abandon'd my ſelf to the heat of youth: But as I conceiv'd, that I ought not to recede in affairs that preſt upon me, ſo I thought it indiſcreet to make too precipitous advances: and alſo having created my ſelf ſo many enemies all at once, I muſt either have been forced to engage all my friends in the quarrel, which I have ever evaded as much as poſſibly I could, or I muſt have render'd my ſelf ridiculous, as the common mark of all the Bravo's in the Country. I therefore upon neceſſity choſe that way of proceeding which appeared to me the wiſeſt and moſt ſafe, which was as much as I could do to joyn prudence with conſtancy in the whole management of this affair, and I ſucceeded ſo well in it, that I put an end to ſeventeen quarrels I had upon my hands at once, without being oblig'd to draw my Sword: which I purpoſely ſet down, as conceiving that true honour does not conſiſt in a blind and brutiſh courage, and that all my life have been of opinion, that nothing was more worthy a truly generous man, than to conſtrain himſelf to gain his enemies by civil ways, and to overcome them by his moderation and wiſdom. Every one may make of it what judgment he pleaſes; but I can boldly ſay, that even they, of thoſe Gentlemen of whom I ſpeak, who thought themſelves the moſt offended by me, have ſince confeſt that they eſteem'd me the more for that manner of proceeding with them, and for having as it were compell'd them to be my friends; and it will not peradventure be unſeaſonable to give here one example, that what I ſay may be better underſtood.

IX. The King had order'd Monſieur *de Boulogne* to bring fifty Villages about *Nogent* under contribution for the ſubſiſtence of the Garriſon; which was no very new thing, but had been a great while in practice. I who acted for him in his abſence, ſent to theſe Villages to ſignifie to them the Kings order; but was a little ſurpriz'd when I was told that ſeveral of theſe Pariſhes belonging to one Lord, which was the Baron of *Clermont*, had made anſwer that they would pay nothing, and that their Lord had commanded them the contrary. I had moreover word brought me, that this Lord himſelf had ſaid, that if *de Pontis* found fault, and was not ſatisfied, it would be eaſie to ſatisfie him after another manner. To which I made no other anſwer, excepting, that I ſhould ſee that.

But though I felt my ſelf very ſenſibly toucht with ſuch a complement, I conſider'd nevertheleſs that I ought not to mix my particular intereſts with thoſe of the King; and that I was oblig'd firſt to try all civil ways to acquit my ſelf of my Commiſſion, and to make the fault lye at this Lord's door, that nothing might be laid to my charge. Some days after therefore I went to his Houſe, and ſent him word, that I was come to have the honour to ſee him; he was ſurpriz'd at the news, not expecting to ſee me there, and came to receive me; I told him at the firſt meeting that I was come to pay him my reſpects, and after ſome diſcourſe of indifferent things, it being dinner time, he invited me after ſo obliging a faſhion, that I could not refuſe to ſtay, and there was no body at Table but us two, and Madam *de Clermont*. Being riſen from dinner, I told him, that beſides the honour I was ambitious of, of kiſſing his

hands, I was come to ſpeak with him about the Order I had received from the King, to put fifty Villages under contributions, of which ſeveral belonged to him, and that I did beſeech him, he would pleaſe to command them to obey this Order, which withal I preſented to him. He return'd me anſwer, that this affair being of Monſieur *de Boulogne*'s buſineſs, and not mine, and he being upon no good terms with him, he could not conſent to it, but that had it been my own particular concern, he would have granted it with all his Heart. I reply'd, that having the Honour to be the King's Lieutenant in the Government of Monſieur *de Boulogne*, his intereſt was mine, and that I hop'd he would not ſeparate them; that on the other ſide it was the King's buſineſs, and not Monſieur *de Boulogne*'s; and that in ſhort, if he would not make his Villages contribute, I entreated he would ſign his refuſal under the King's Order, that it might ſerve me for a diſcharge. Being much ſurpriz'd at this, he anſwer'd me with heat, that he would not do it; neither would he make his Pariſhes pay contribution; and fairly added, turning towards his Page, give me my Sword; and to me, Sir, we had better go walk in the Garden. I underſtood his meaning well enough: but I fear'd nothing in performing my duty, and obeying the orders of the King.

He led me quite round the Garden, all the while diſcourſing of indifferent things, and after carried me into a great Park that was much more remote, and walk'd me quite round about it, all the while looking me in the face, and obſerving my countenance, which was ſtill that of a man that fear'd nothing in maintaining the intereſt of the King, and my own duty. At laſt, ſeeing that I was always equally firm and civil, he finally told me, that he had ſo much eſteem for me, that for my ſake, ſeeing I deſir'd to have it ſo, he would make his Tenants pay, but that it was not out of any reſpect to Monſieur *de Boulogne*. I replied, that I ſtood oblig'd to him for his civility, and that, provided he cauſed his Majeſties Order to be obey'd, it was all one to me in favour of whom it was granted: but that nevertheleſs I was oblig'd to tell him, that he ought to remember who Monſieur *de Boulogne* was, and not to forget the Friendſhip that had ever been betwixt their two Families; which alſo he ought not to break, when there was as much reaſon as ever to preſerve it, and that the advantageous qualities they were both Maſters of, ſeem'd to be a kind of new tye to unite them faſter: That as to the reſt, I did once more beſeech him to beleive, that Monſieur *de Boulogne*'s intereſt's were mine, and ought not to be ſeparated: I further intreated him to give me the order he was pleas'd to ſend to his Villages in writing, that they might not doubt of what I ſhould tell them, nor have any excuſe if I compell'd them to obey. He granted every thing I deſir'd, ſetting down in the writing that he commanded all his Villages to pay contribution, and entreated Monſieur *de Pontis* to compel them to it, in caſe they ſhould refuſe; and ſo at laſt we took leave of one another with mutual aſſurances of a true and ſincere Friendſhip, ſuch as in effect it has been ever ſince. And this example, that may peradventure be of ſome uſe to others, to retain them within the bounds of a temperate conduct and a regular courage, was alſo very ſerviceable even to me my ſelf, to put an end to a great number of other diſputes. For the iſſue of this affair made ſo great a noiſe in the Country, that all who were upon ill terms with me, began to conſider me after another kind of manner than they had done before; and even ſeeking means of accommodation

commodation with me, became moſt of them my Friends; prudently judging, that it was no diſhonour to live in amity with a perſon who had thus engag'd one of the chiefeſt amongſt them, from an enemy that he had been before, to become his Friend. I can alſo ſay, that this civil way of proceeding, which I practiſed as much as poſſibly I could upon all occaſions, did not only acquire me the Friendſhip of the Nobleſs, who at firſt were ſo violent againſt me, but moreover the affection of all the Inhabitants of *Nogent*, who in acknowledgment of the Friendſhip I manifeſted to them in all the Wars, ever after maintain'd the cuſtom of preſenting me with Wine, when ever I paſt through the Town, as if I had been ſtill the Kings Lieutenant there; which I ſay, not out of any vanity to myſelf, but only to let ſuch as are in employment ſee, how much moderation in all ſorts of Government is preferable to inſolence, eſpecially when ſupported by ſteadineſs and conſtancy.

To conclude this affair, which has put me upon ſaying all that I have ſaid, and the cauſe of moſt of the quarrels of which I have ſpoken; Monſieur *de Boulogne* ſo vigorouſly purſu d his proſecution againſt *Aurillot*, that he ſoon caus'd the Sentence of *Chaumont* to be confirm'd by an Arreſt, that condemn'd him to have his Head cut off in the open Market-place, and to carry a Writing upon his back, that ſet out the cauſe of his condemnation in theſe terms; *For burning Houſes:* which gave great ſatisfaction to all the Country, where he was lookt upon as a common enemy.

X. Two Years after the firſt War of the Princes they began a ſecond; when Monſieur *de Boulogne*, having ſent to me to come to him with a recruit of 200 men, that I had raiſed about *Nogent*; I prepar'd my ſelf to march them up to the Army, commanded by the Mareſchal *de Baſſompierre*, where our Regiment of *Champagne* was already arriv'd, and ſet out with my Recruit, having only a young Enſign with me called *Saint Aubin*. After two days march we had intelligence, that the Cardinal of *Guiſe* was at hand with 600 Horſe, that he had rais'd about *Metz*, which he brought up to join with the Army of the Princes towards *Pont de Sè*. The Match being unequal, I thought preſently to recover *Sezanne*, a little Town that held out for the King; but being I was to paſs a great Plain, I fear'd a ſurprizal there, and would have been very glad to have found ſome means to ſhelter my ſelf.

It fell out by good luck, that I met a great many Waggons of *Bar-ſur-Aube* laden with Wine, which I thought very proper to ſerve me for a retrenchment in caſe I ſhould be ſurpriz'd upon the Plain. I therefore told theſe Carters, that they muſt help to cover us if they expected that we ſhould defend them, promiſing them that they ſhould run no other hazard but what we would firſt be expos'd to our ſelves. The danger wherein they ſaw themſelves engag'd, together with the neceſſity of obeying me, prevail'd with them immediately to unlade their Wine, becauſe I would have them in a condition to make more haſte; and ſo of all theſe Waggons link'd to one another I made two Files, which I caus'd to march on the right and left of my Souldiers, of whom I form'd a Battalion, and gave order to thoſe at the Head and the Rear of theſe two Files, to draw up near one another ſo ſoon as they ſhould ſee the Enemy, that ſo they might wholly ſhut up the Battalion.

XI. We

XI. We had not march'd far in this order, but that being yet a League from *Sezanne*, in the open Field, we ſaw the Avant-Couriers of the Enemy appear upon the top of a little Hill that bounded one ſide of the Plain, and preſently after diſcovered the whole body, which conſiſted of ſix Squadrons, making full drive toward us. I caus'd my men to halt, who were at the ſame inſtant enclos'd by the Waggons, according to the order I had given; I there endeavoured to encourage them to the fight, aſſuring them, that if they would faithfully obey my orders, I would diſengage them from the danger wherein they were, but that if they would not do it their ruine was inevitable. I alſo gave them my word, that if it ſhould ſo fall out, as I deſpair'd not but it would, that they ſhould get any prize by the ſpoils of ſuch as they ſhould kill, it ſhould be entirely their own; and that I would pretend to no other ſhare, but only that of procuring them the Glory of the Victory, and in ſaving their lives, to enrich them at the Enemies expence. The preſſing danger in which they were, and the hopes that I gave them made them preſently obedient, and they all aſſur'd me that they would faithfully acquit themſelves of their duty. Having, as I ſaid before, form'd one ſole Battalion of all my men, I made them make a Front every way, to the end that on which ſide ſoever the Enemy ſhould fall they might be in a poſture to receive him. I only drew out twenty, which I plac'd ſome ſix paces without the Waggons in two ranks, conſiſting each of ten, that they might fire at greater liberty than if enclos'd; giving them order to kneel on one knee that they might be more ſure of their execution, and not to do it till they came very near, and when I ſhould give the word.

XII. The Cardinal of *Guiſe*, who was himſelf in perſon at the Head of theſe ſix Squadrons of Horſe, ſent a Trumpet to bid us throw down our Arms, being of ſo unequal force as not to be able to reſiſt him; aſſuring us at the ſame time of fair Quarter if we did ſo: but that if we refuſed to yeild, he would kill us every man, and cut us all to pieces. I made anſwer to the Trumpet, that I return'd the Cardinal of *Guiſe* thanks for the favour he offer'd us; but that we demanded no other Quarter, than what we could procure our ſelves by a good defence, for which we were all very well prepar'd; and that he ſhould return no more on the ſame errand, becauſe we ſhould no longer conſider him as any thing but an Enemy. So reſolute an anſwer made the Cardinal a while deliberate what he ſhould do, where he reſolv'd to ſend the Trumpet a ſecond time to try if he could fright us by new threats, but I made my men cry out that they would fire upon him if he approacht any nearer; and the betrer to ſhew him his danger, order'd them to preſent their Muskets againſt him. So reſolute a proceeding made him think better on't, and the Cardinal ſeeing we were reſolv'd to ſtand upon our defence, detach'd fifty Light Horſe with a command to diſcover our poſture. Theſe Cavaliers rid round about us at ſo great a diſtance, that I did not think fit to fire upon them, and returning to make their report, were immediately order'd to come and charge the Head of our Retrenchment; the Cardinal aſſuring them, that ſo ſoon as they had routed the firſt, he would come and fall on with all the reſt. They came up accordingly at a good round trot, and being come on within twice Piſtol ſhot, ſpur'd on to a Gallop, as if with deſign to break into our twenty Muſqueteers.

Muſqueteers. I let them approach till they were advanc'd within Piſtol ſhot, and then commanded thoſe of the firſt rank to give fire; which they did ſo reſolutely and diſcreetly, that they laid ſeveral of them dead upon the place, and the reſt wheel'd off, not daring to advance, by reaſon that the other ten Muſqueteers having immediately taken the place of the firſt ten that had given fire, were ready to have done as much. Being thus return'd fewer than they came to their main body, I ſent in the mean time to rifle their dead, about whom they found near a Hundred Piſtols, which I put into a Hat ſhaking them, and ſaying, Here my Boys, theſe are all your own, I pretend to no other ſhare but only to divide them amongſt you; this happy beginning preſages Victory; Courage! let us ſtand firm, and expect till they bring us as many more.

Theſe words, together with the ſight of the firſt advantage they had had, encouraged them to that degree, that they wiſh'd with impatience the Enemy would attack them again, in hopes of a greater booty. And they were not long before they had that ſatisfaction; for we preſently ſaw one of the ſix Squadrons advance a trot, till they came within Carabine ſhot, and there on a ſudden they ſeparated themſelves into two bodies, to fall upon both ſides of our Battalion; but the firſt rank making a front every way, they gave them from behind the Waggons ſo briſk a Volley at the Muzzel of the Muſquet, that ſeveral Men and Horſes lay dead upon the place, and ſome that were diſmounted were forc'd to get up behind the others to get off. After this they retreated towards their main body, and went to ſee if they ſhould receive a new order to come back to be knock'd o'th' head. I made theſe dead be rifled too, about whom we found ſome twenty Piſtols more, which encourag'd our Souldiers anew.

XIII. In the mean time the Cardinal of *Guiſe*, ſeeing the night draw on, and very well judging that he ſhould loſe a great many men, ſhould he attack two hundred deſperate men that were retrench'd, reſolv'd to encamp in a little Wood that was near at hand, and ſo to keep us as it were beſieged, till he could ſend for ſome more aſſiſtance. And, being he ſtood in need of Foot, without which he believ'd he ſhould not be able to force us, he ſent to ſome neighbouring Garriſons to ſupply him. But ſo ſoon as I had intelligence of his deſign, I thought it not good for me to ſtay till the morning, and that it would be neceſſary to attempt to eſcape away by the favour of the night. But the buſineſs was, how to decamp that the Enemy's Sentinels and Guards ſhould not perceive it; and to this end I thought fit to make a ſhew of encamping as well as they, and that I had no deſign of drawing off no more than they. I therefore caus'd a great fire to be made in our Camp, and order'd the Souldiers to make a great noiſe, as if they were merry and diverting themſelves; but gave them notice withal, that when they ſhould ſee another fire kindled at midnight, that ſhould be their ſignal to decamp, and they were then every man to follow his Leader in File without ſpeaking a word. I commanded the Waggons alſo not to ſtir from the place till we had recover'd the Wood, fearing the noiſe of the Horſes and the Wheels; and being aſſur'd by the knowledge I had of the Map of the Country, that we ſhould find a little Wood, in which we might march all the way under cover till we came to *Sezanne*.

This reſolution taken, the orders given, and midnight come, I caus'd the Fire to be lighted which was the ſignal, which every one was careful to obey, and in a very little time we recover'd the Wood I ſpoke of, without any ſign that the Enemy had in the leaſt diſcover'd our march, and at break of day found our ſelves under the Walls of *Sezanne*; where we were in abſolute ſafety. I then kept my word with the Souldiers, and divided amongſt them the Spoil of the Enemy, by which means the joy of ſeeing themſelves eſcap'd contrary to all appearance, was encreas'd by the ſight of the booty they had got, but much more, when within a few hours after we had intelligence that the Enemy had purſu'd us as far as to the Wood, but no further; being told that we were already arrived at *Sezanne*.

This action mightily pleas'd the Cardinal of *Guiſe*, who openly commended the valour of thoſe who had ſo dar'd to reſiſt him, and particularly enquir'd who was the Commander. It made alſo a great noiſe in the Country, in the Army, and as far as the Court, by reaſon of the great number of thoſe who had attacked us, and of the quality of him that was Chief. For the firſt rumour went, that two hundred Foot having been met with in the open Field by ſix Hundred Horſe, under the command of the Cardinal of *Guiſe*, had been all cut to pieces: but the truth was ſoon known, and they heard the whole thing as it paſt, with great joy.

XIV. Sometime after that we had join'd with the Army at *Pont de Sé*, the Peace was concluded; where the King having a mind to take a review of his Troops, commanded them to be drawn up in Battaille, and ſo Regiment by Regiment to march off before him. Here it was that the Cardinal of *Guiſe* manifeſted an extraordinary bounty and generoſity in my favour; for being return'd to his obedience, and reconcil'd to the King, and at that time about his Perſon, he deſired Monſieur *de Villedonné*, a Captain of the Regiment of *Champagne*, to ſhow him when the Regiment paſt by, an Officer called *de Pontis*, who was of that body. When I came to paſs, and that Monſieur *de Villedonné* had ſhew'd me to him, he came to me, and in the preſence of the King himſelf embrac'd me, and ſaid to me theſe very words, *That he would have me to be his Friend, having known me by that which paſt near* Sezanne; *that he thought himſelf oblig'd to love me after ſo particular a proof of my conduct, that he aſſur'd me no occaſion ſhould offer it ſelf wherein he might do me ſervice, but that he would do it with all his heart, and that he conjur'd me to employ him in whatever ſhould lye in his power, whether in himſelf, or towards the King, to ſerve me.* The extraordinary aſtoniſhment and ſurprize, wherein I was at ſo great a generoſity, did not hinder me from making anſwer with all acknowledgment and due ſubmiſſion; and from telling him that he highly reveng'd himſelf on me, in putting me into ſo great a confuſion before the King and the whole Army.

The King in the mean time was in pain to know the ſubject of this conference, and Monſieur *de Villedonné* having told him his thought, which was, that the Cardinal was doubtleſs talking to me, about what had paſt betwixt us near *Sezanne*; his Majeſty expreſt a deſire to ſee that Officer, to hear a particular account out of the Cardinal's own mouth, after what manner I had eſcap'd from his hands. The relation he then made gave me occaſion of being known to the King, and was,

as

as it were, the foundation and beginning of the great favour and bounty his Majeſty has manifeſted towards me ever ſince; as ſhall be made appear in the progreſs of theſe *Memoirs*. He very much commended the generoſity of Monſieur *de Guiſe* his proceeding with me in this affair, as indeed it was highly commendable, eſpecially in a perſon of his great quality and merit: and this Cardinal was always mindful of the promiſe he had done me the honour to make me, having expreſt ſo much kindneſs to me even to the end of his Life; as in the ſickneſs whereof he died at *Xaintes*, to ſend for me, and tell me with extraordinary favour and goodneſs, that I ought to regret his death, ſince I in him loſt one of the beſt Friends I had in the world, of which he would have given me proof, had he lived longer.

XV. The Army was after this ſent away to ſeveral Quarters upon the confines of the Kingdom; and we of the Regiment of *Champagne* had the little Town of *Oleron* in *Bearn* aſſign'd for ours. Our Company and another was lodg'd in a Suburb call'd *Mercadet*: and the two Captains being retir'd to their own Houſes, had left their Companies to their Lieutenants, of which I was the eldeſt, and conſequently commanded the Quarters. About a Year after the *Hugonots* began the War again, and to riſe in Arms. The Marqueſs *de la Force* was Governour of the Country, but being one of the greateſt zealots of the *Hugonot* Party, he abandon'd the King's ſervice, and laboured to raiſe all the men he could. Having one day ſent a Trumpet into the Suburb of *Mercadet*, to proclaim that all the Captains of the Religion were ſuddenly to repair to *Pau*, the Capital City of *Bearn*, where he made his ordinary abode, to receive his orders: I was ſurpriz'd at the noiſe, and ſtept to the Trumpet to demand of him what it was that he proclaim'd, and why he was ſo bold as to dare to ſound in my Quarter without my leave, ſeeing he knew, what was but too well known throughout the Country, that his Maſter had already manifeſted himſelf to be leſs affected to the King's ſervice, than that of his Enemies; and therewithal commanded him immediately to be gone, threatning him if he did not do it, to make him know, that I very well underſtood how to maintain his Majeſty's intereſts. Upon this he left the place where he had begun to ſound; but being got a little further off, fell to ſounding again. This ſo manifeſt contempt of the interdiction I had given him, in order to the maintaining the King's right, ſo far incens'd me, that coming up to him, and ſeeing that, relying upon the authority of his Maſter, he, to this firſt contempt of my orders added an inſolent reply; I ſnatcht his Trumpet from him, broke it over his ſhoulders, and beat him out of my Quarters; aſſuring my ſelf, that the King would not diſapprove my defending thus his intereſts againſt an Enemy of his Crown.

Nevertheleſs I went immediately to wait upon Monſieur *de Poyenne* the King's Lieutenant in *Bearn*, who was very affectionate to his Majeſties ſervice, and conſequently little belov'd by the Governour, and gave him an account of what I had done; who told me I had done well, and no more than my duty: But foreſeeing the conſequence of this affair, being well aſſur'd that Monſieur *de la Force* would never pardon this affront; and being moreover afraid, that ſhould the King come to hear of it before he was inform'd of the truth, his Majeſty might perhaps accuſe my zeal of ſome exceſs; I entreated Monſieur *de Poyenne* that when he writ to Court, as he frequently did, he would put

put in a word in my behalf, to prevent all the ill reports by which my enemies might have decry'd my conduct. He did accordingly, and so effectually withal, that the King to assure me he was satisfied with my service, gave me the Government of the Tower of *Oleron*, a little Fortress that commanded the Town; which, though a little thing in it self, and that no great revenue belong'd to it, yet was it of consequence that this Tower should be in the hands of a faithful person to keep the Town in its duty; and it was no less advantageous to me after the Act I had committed, that had made a great noise in the Country, that the King should publickly manifest his being satisfied with it, in giving me this Government; whilst Monsieur *de la Force* was making my process at *Pau*. For though it was not hard for him to cause me to be condemn'd there, to have my Head cut off, he did not find it so easie to execute the Sentence, seeing I was of his Majesty's Party, and under his protection.

XVI. The War breaking out still more fiercely, our Regiment of *Champagne* was commanded to the Rendezvous of the Army, which oblig'd me to think of divesting my self of my Government, being unwilling to be stinted to so small a preferment; I thought fit therefore to resign it into the hands of Monsieur *de Poyenne*, who had procur'd it for me: who, after having been very importunate with me to stay there, and giving me many assurances to procure for me something more considerable for the future; seeing me absolutely resolv'd to leave it, compell'd me however, whether I would or no, to name another in my stead. I therefore presented him a Gentleman call'd *Domvidant*, who was indeed a *Hugonot*, but who had always manifested so great a zeal for the Kings service, that I thought it impossible for him ever to fail in his duty. And because I would tye him yet faster to Monsieur *de Poyenne*, I gave him to understand, that he was oblig'd to him only for this Government. He on his part thought he could not better express his acknowledgment, than by entrusting me with his Son, whom he entreated me to receive in the quality of a Cadet, into the Company of which I was Lieutenant.

XVII. We went presently after to the Siege of *Saint John d'Angely*, which the King in person came to besiege, in the year 1620, of which Siege I shall only make report of one action, wherein I with several others underwent a very great peril, from which it appears we were only deliver'd by a kind of miracle.

Being upon the point to spring a Mine, I was commanded with 40 Men to charge into the breach so soon as ever it should be open, by that means to deprive the Enemy of the means to repair it. We were therefore of necessity to approach very near, and to have something to cover us, in case we should be forc'd to retrench our selves. I therefore desired Baskets instead of Sacks, which were commonly made use of upon such occasions, arguing that it would be much more easie to fill them that stood open, and stiff of themselves, than Sacks that did not so; and accordingly we had forty deliver'd to us, which serv'd us very much, but after another manner than we propos'd to our selves. We then advanc'd as near as we could to the Mine, which in playing had an effect quite contrary to what was expected: for instead of throwing the Earth into the Town, it threw it back upon us, the soil being lighter on our side,

ſide, and buried us under its ruines. But by the greateſt good fortune imaginable, having made all our Souldiers by my example carry all their Baskets upon their heads, that our hands might be at liberty to handle all our arms, they not only broke part of the force of the Earth, and Stones, and preſerv'd us from having our brains beaten out, but moreover ſerv'd to give us a little breath, in leaving us a little vacuity, that preſerv'd us from being ſtifled before we could be reliev'd. Monſieur *de Cominges*, who was at the end of the Trench, having ſeen ſome Souldiers hurt with the Stones that the Mine had blown about, and judging in what extremity we were likely to be, came running to aſſiſt us, and diſengag'd us from under the Rubbiſh, whilſt the Enemy were buſie in repairing the breach, without thinking of us.

In the mean time, that which by accident ſav'd our lives on this occaſion, was afterwards put into practice in other Sieges; and they have ſince often made uſe of theſe Baskets, as very proper to make quick lodgments, and ſpeedily to cover themſelves; which alſo made the King himſelf to confeſs, that I had herein done him a very conſiderable ſervice, which was almoſt all the recompence I had for having ran ſo great a hazard. My inclination for War, and the averſion I have ever had for all remedies, hindred me from cauſing my ſelf to be let blood, as I had been adviſ'd: but I found my ſelf ſo ill by having been ſo bruis'd and overwhelm'd by theſe ruines, and by having been more led by my own inconſiderate heat than the counſel of my Friends, that I had the Jaundice for a month together, to that degree that I was hardly to be known. But my better parts being ſtill in their vigour, and my heart always whole and good, I never excus'd my ſelf from my ordinary duty upon the Guard, in one of which I receiv'd a Carabine ſhot in the body, which entring but a little way, kept me but a very ſhort time in bed.

The End of the Second Book.

BOOK III.

What paſt at the Siege of Montaubon. *The great and ſtrict Friendſhip that was contracted betwixt the Sieur* de Pontis *and Monſieur* Zamet, *Camp-maſter of the Regiment of* Picardy, *who makes him his own Lieutenant of his Majeſty's Armies. The Sieur* de Pontis *withdraws all the Army from a very great Danger. The Siege is rais'd from before* Montaubon. *An excellent Diſcourſe of Monſieur* de Zamet *upthat Subject.*

1. THE City of *St. John d'Angely* having ſurrendred it ſelf to the King, his Majeſty went before *Montaubon* with an Army of four and twenty Thouſand men, or thereabouts, commanded by Monſieur *le Conneſtable de Luines*; and inveſted it the 17th of *Auguſt*, in the year 1621. The Conſtable had for Lieutenant Generals, his Brothers, Meſſieurs *du Maine*, *de Chevreuſe*, and *de Leſdiguieres*: Monſieur *de Schomberg* was grand Maſter of the Artillery, and Surintendant *de Finances*, and executed alſo in part the command of a Lieutenant General. Of theſe Forces, and of theſe Chiefs, the King made three Attacks, of which the firſt was his own, wherein the Conſtable and his Brothers commanded; the ſecond was commanded by Monſieur *du Maine*; and the third by Meſſieurs *de Chevreuſe*, and *de Leſdiguieres*. Monſieur *du Maine* attackt the *Fauxbourg de Ville-bourbon*, which was very ſtrongly fortified, and very commodious to the Enemy, both for the paſſage of Victuals into the Town, and a Commerce with their Neighbours; by which means this attack, though the moſt important, was of the greateſt difficulty and danger. That of Monſieur *de Chevreuſe* was call'd that of *Dumontier*, and was weaker than the other, which made Monſieur *de Schomberg*, Grand-maſter of the Artillery, plant his principal Batteries there, compos'd of four and twenty pieces of Cannon, and the beſt ſerv'd that ever any were, by reaſon that he himſelf was Overſeer of the Treaſury. The Regiments of *Picardy* and *Champagne*, of which he had a particular eſteem were encampt at this attack. He having a deſign to advance fourteen pieces of Cannon much nearer than they had been planted when we firſt ſate down before the place, had a mind firſt to know what this *Fauxbourg* of *Dumontier* was, which at diſtance appear'd ruinous and uninhabited, but he fear'd they might have poſted ſome Ambuſcade there, that might ſally out and nail his Cannon, ſhould he approach ſo near. He propos'd this doubt to the Generals, who preſently gave order that two Officers ſhould be commanded to diſcover theſe places; and Monſieur *de Cominges* and I, were appointed for this ſervice. The order being given us, I leap'd up behind Monſieur *de Cominge*, my own Horſe not being there, and we went in open day to ford a current of water call'd the *Teſcon*. So ſoon as we were over I alighted, and entred not only into the *Fauxbourg*, but into the ruinous houſes that remain'd ſtanding, and ſearch'd them one after another. Monſieur *de Cominge* on his

his ſide did the ſame, and when we thought we had ſeen all, we bethought us to examine ſome by-corners, where we conceiv'd we might make ſome new diſcovery, and found that in truth it was one of the moſt important places, and that men cannot be too exact upon ſuch occaſions. We return'd to make our report to the Generals, amongſt whom Monſieur *de Leſdiguieres* was he who judg'd the beſt of our exactneſs, by reaſon that he had particular knowledge of this place.

The Enemy having had notice, that ſome had been ſent to diſcover this Suburb, fear'd we would poſt our ſelves there to ſtraighten them the more; which prompted them to defend it by a lodgment, that they made in a little Iſland, which was at the head of this Suburb, and that was encompaſſed with the *Teſcon*, a Rivulet that was but narrow, but very deep. There was no Bridge over this Current, and to paſs over it they had laid a Tree acroſs, over which it was not eaſy to paſs upright on ones feet, but only by getting aſtride, and ſhifting forward by the help of ones arms, which made the Enemy not fear to be that way ſurpriz'd by the Foot: As to the Horſe they could paſs no way but over the ſame Ford where we had paſt in going to this *Fauxbourg*; and which being very open, was moreover ſo ſtraight that they could march but very few in a front. All theſe advantages prevail'd with them to place two Out-Guards at the end of this Iſland, one of fifty men neareſt to the Town, and the other of ten, which was almoſt half way betwixt the advanc'd Battery and the Town.

II. The Generals, and particularly Monſieur *de Schomberg*, were a little perplext, fearing very much for the Cannon, which might eaſily be all nail'd in a night; it was therefore reſolv'd in the Councel of War to fall upon the firſt *Corps de Guard*, though it was a very dangerous thing to attempt, by reaſon the paſſage was ſo ſtraight and difficult, by which they were to go and come: but the great importance of driving off that *Corps de Guard* ſo much advanc'd, made the Generals reſolve to hazard ſome men. For this ſervice the Officer of *Champagne* was nam'd, for ſo it was, that the King and Lieutenant Generals were pleas'd to call me, knowing me much better by that name than that of *de Pontis*; and I had orders to take with me fifty men to charge this *Corps de Guard*. Being that I came off the Guard that very day, and that according to rule I ought not to be commanded, Monſieur *de Schomberg* thought fit to make me ſome excuſes, and to them added, that this attack being of the laſt importance to him, he entreated me for his ſake to do as if it had been my turn. Theſe occaſions being as every one knows honourable, I told him that I found my ſelf very ſenſibly oblig'd in the choice he made of my perſon to perform this ſervice for him, aſſuring him withal, that if the thing was to be done, it ſhould not ſtick at us to procure him all manner of ſatisfaction. I choſe out fifty brave Souldiers, who all followed me with great joy, knowing me for a man who would not expoſe their lives, but when I expos'd my own, who always gave them their due praiſes upon all occaſions, and was ever as ſparing of them as poſſibly I could. With theſe men I came to the little Bridge of which I ſpoke before, which took us up ſome time to paſs over, by reaſon of the difficulty already obſerv'd, and afterwards falling all together upon the firſt *Corps de Guard*, without giving them ſo much leiſure as to obſerve how many we were, we gave them ſo brisk a charge, as forc'd them to retire with fewer of their number to the other *Corps de Guard*, which ſallied not out of its Poſt, for fear of laying themſelves

ſelves open, thinking that we had been more than we were. Their retrenchments were of Trees laid upon one another, and we were preparing our ſelves to aſſault them, when on a ſudden we heard a great noiſe of confus'd voices from the King's Army, who cry'd out to us to retire: but the diſtance hindring us from hearing diſtinctly what they ſaid, we were as much induced to believe that they encourag'd us to charge the Enemy, as that they admoniſh'd us to retire.

In the mean time Monſieur *du Maine*, who had planted himſelf upon a little eminence to ſee the ſucceſs of our enterprize, diſcover'd, when he leaſt dreamt of any ſuch thing, a great number of the Enemy, who being ſallied out of the Town, behind the *Fauxbourg*, march'd along by the *Teſcon*, and were coming to encloſe us. He preſently caus'd two little Field-pieces to be drawn by ſtrength of hand down to the Banks of the River, and to be levell'd to fire upon them; which ſucceeded ſo well, that their Battallion was ſhot through and through, and a great many of their men were laid dead upon the place. The reſt frighted at this execution, ſtood ſome time ſtill without advancing, or retreating, by which means, before they could come to themſelves, and take new meaſures, we had time, after having ſeen from whence theſe Cannon ſhot came, and perceiv'd the inevitable danger we were in, ſpeedily to return, and to recover the Bridge, as by thoſe great outcries our own people had given us warning to do. The Enemy had no ſtomach to purſue us, but return'd the ſame way they came, very much diſpleas'd that they had fail'd of their deſign. I loſt in this action but two men, and had but three wounded. For my own part I had no hurt at all, and had only my Hat ſtruck off by a Muſquet ſhot. Monſieur *de Schomberg* who was extreamly generous, thinking himſelf very much oblig'd by this ſervice I had done him, made me a very particular acknowledgment, and promis'd to ſerve me to the King. He effectually did ſo, and ſpoke ſo advantageouſly of me, that I was in the extreameſt confuſion at the praiſes he gave me for only acquitting my ſelf of my duty.

III. In the mean time I can ſay this, that by this publick teſtimony of his eſteem, he procur'd me the greateſt treaſure that I could ever have had; which was the Friendſhip of the worthieſt, moſt vertuous, and moſt generous man, that in my life I ever knew, I mean Monſieur *de Zamet*, at that time Camp-maſter to the Regiment of *Picardy*, who was preſent when Monſieur *de Schomberg* ſpoke publickly in my favour before the whole Army. What he heard him then ſay, join'd with what he already knew of me on ſeveral occaſions, made him reſolve to chuſe me for his Friend, and from that inſtant he wiſh'd, as he told me afterwards, to have me for his Lieutenant. He began to expreſs a very particular affection for me, and entreated me to come often to ſee him. It was by this then that the ſtrict Friendſhip which was contracted between us began, of which I can ſay the foundation was on one part built upon the knowledge I had of the merit and wiſdom of this great man, and the other on his own bounty to look upon me, as a man whom he thought not altogether unworthy of his Friendſhip.

The very particular obligation that I had to Monſieur *du Maine*, for having ſo ſeaſonably reliev'd me in ſo perilous an occaſion, prompted me for the future to ſeek out all ways whereby I might manifeſt my acknowledgment. For though he in this only follow'd the ordinary Rules of War, which oblige every one to ſuccour the King's Forces, when they ſee them

them expos'd as we were, nevertheleſs the manner after which he did it, gave me ſufficiently to underſtand, that it had been a particular effect of his own bounty. And I confeſs I was a little mortified, when thinking I had found a favourable occaſion wherein to return part of what I ought him, I was hindred from doing it, by him from whom I was to receive my Orders. Monſieur *du Maine* having a deſign to carry the *Fauxbourg de Villebourbon* by aſſault, commanded almoſt all his Foot to fall on, who puſh'd the Guards with ſo great fury and vigour, that three hundred men were already mounted upon the Wall, and held themſelves aſſur'd to remain Maſters of it. The Enemy ſeeing themſelves ſo forc'd, call'd in above two Thouſand Men to their releif, who being behind good retrenchments, beat our men off, and made them deſcend much faſter than they had mounted, but in leſs number, by reaſon of thoſe who were left upon the place. Being this fight could not be made, but that it muſt be heard to the other Quarters, where we had ſufficient notice both by the firing, and the noiſe that was made both on the one ſide and the other, I thought that Monſieur *du Maine* might very well be in a condition to admit of ſome relief, and therefore at the inſtant went to ask leave of our Lieutenant Collonel call'd *Pyolet*, that he would permit me to go manifeſt to Monſieur *du Maine*, to whom I was ſo much oblig'd, a part of my acknowledgment, in offering my ſervice to him, with fifty or threeſcore men of our body. Monſieur *de Pyolet* commended my deſign, but told me withal, that being but Lieutenant Collonel, he could not ſuffer what the King had forbid, which was, that no one ſhould go from one quarter to another. Thus was I afflicted to the laſt degree to loſe this occaſion, and might ſay methinks, that had I had but a part of that gratitude for the infinite favours I have receiv'd from Almighty God, that I had for Men; I had been as good a Chriſtian, as I was then remote from God, and all true Piety.

Monſieur *de Pyolet* having afterwards ſpoke to the Lieutenant Generals about this affair, had permiſſion upon the like occaſion to grant what I had deſir'd of him, provided the detachment ſhould conſiſt but of fifty or threeſcore men at moſt. Wherefore ſeeing one day a great fire at Monſieur *du Maine*'s Quarter, I ran thither with threeſcore men, in hopes that I might do him ſome ſervice, but I found it was only fire that had caught in the Huts. He, very much ſurpriz'd to ſee me there with my men, askt me the reaſon of it, which I told him; expreſſing withal, that I thought my ſelf extreamly unhappy in that I could not meet with an occaſion wherein to acknowledge the favour, for which I ſhould be eternally oblig'd to him. He thereupon took me in his arms, telling me publickly, that he was ſo much the more oblig'd to me, in that having done nothing for me but what was his duty, I did that for him which I was no way oblig'd to do; that he would never forget it, and that he entreated me to come often to ſee him, and to employ him as one of the beſt friends I had. But the protection of this Prince, that in all appearance might have been ſo advantageous, continued not long; for a few days after, Monſieur *du Maine* was kill'd with a Muſquet ſhot, which paſſing betwixt two Barrels, went firſt through Monſieur *de Schomberg*'s Hat, and thence into the Eye of Monſieur *du Maine*, by which he was laid dead upon the place. This conſiderable loſs made me remember the other I had ſuffer'd in the perſon of the Cardinal of *Guiſe:* but all this could not work ſo upon me, to think of any thing more ſerious and ſolid.

IV. To continue what befell me during this Siege; being upon the Guard at the Trenches, I was one day commanded by Monſieur *de Pyolet* to ſuſtain the Miner, who was at work under the Wall; and being of a little unquiet nature, I fancied, I know not for what reaſon, that the Enemy might very well countermine againſt our Work. I ſaid as much to ſome of our Officers, and to the Miner, who all laught at me; but judging nevertheleſs that the Enemy might very well do, what I ſhould have done had I been in their place, I thought to aſſure my ſelf further of the truth of the thing: I therefore call'd for a Drum into the Mine, of which I ſet one end upon the ground, and laid a Muſquet bullet upon the other, that at every blow the Counterminers gave, it might ſound upon the Drum, by the means of the Ball. This deſign took effect, and made us hear what I deſir'd. The Miner, a little aſtoniſht, laugh'd no more as before, but told us that we muſt immediately retire; whereupon I preſently made ready our men, and ſent to acquaint them at the tail of the Trench, with what we had diſcover'd. The Miner having afterwards examin'd the buſineſs a little nearer, aſſur'd me that there was but little Earth betwixt us and the Enemy; and that they would preſently ſtrike through into his Mine, and accordingly we preſently ſaw light, by which hole they fir'd upon us ſome Piſtol-ſhot, to which I made anſwer with one I had in my hand; commanding my Souldiers to beat back theſe Counterminers with their Halberts; which doubtleſs had been no hard matter to do, but that at the ſame time a great many men being ſallied by another way came directly towards the Trench, with a deſign to cut it off; and oblig'd me to retire fighting, and making good our Retreat, till the reſt of our Regiment ſhould advance to our relief. I found my ſelf much more perplext, when I ſaw at leaſt thirty Granadoes fly in the air, which the Enemy threw into the Trench. There were a great many Souldiers hurt, and all ſo daunted, that I was forc'd to withdraw, to make way for the whole Regiment, who came in freſh, and repell'd the Enemy. I was wounded in the Thigh with a ſplinter of one of theſe Granadoes, of which I was nevertheleſs preſently cur'd.

V. The ſecond time I mounted the Guard after this, my poſt was again to ſuſtain the Miner, upon whom, as he was at work at the Baſtion, they continually from above threw down Stones, and a thouſand other things to brain him; which made us contrive to cover this place with Beams, that he might work in ſafety. Dinner time being come, we withdrew from the Trench, and plac'd our ſelves in the mouth of the Mine, to be yet in greater ſecurity. This foreſight ſav'd all our Lives; for immediately after the Enemy threw down from above Pipes filled with the droſs of Iron that comes from the Forges, and which is ſo ponderous a thing, that theſe Hogſheads falling upon the forementioned Beams, broke them all, and ſo fill'd the Trench, that no body could paſs, ſo that had they made uſe of their advantage, they had certainly had a good bargain of us: but not knowing what had hapned, they gave us time to diſengage our ſelves, though with much ado. We did not get off ſo well afterwards, for as I was engag'd in ſeveral dangerous occaſions, and that my too much forwardneſs was the cauſe that I too frankly expos'd my life, one day as I was again ſet to guard the ſame Miner, the Enemy made a Sally upon the head of the Trench, which we

we at firſt ſuſtained vigorouſly enough, but by reaſon that, to make a better reſiſtance, and to ſtand more firm, we had drawn our ſelves up cloſe together, the Enemy, who came on another open ſide on the top of the Trench, having thrown down on a ſudden twenty great pots of boyling Pitch, put us in the moſt miſerable condition that ever poor men were in, being reduc'd almoſt to be burnt alive in our cloaths. Many of us died, and others eſcap'd by tearing off their cloaths; I for my part having rowl'd my ſelf to no purpoſe upon the earth to cool me, and finding my ſelf ſtill extreamly afflicted with the pain, I could think of no better remedy than to throw my ſelf into the River, where I began a little to breathe; and from whence nevertheleſs I came not out quite cur'd, for I had my Shoulders ſufficiently broil'd, as well as ſeveral others, which gave the Enemy occaſion to jeer us, in crying, *To the Grill, To the Grill*; and to ask us if we had not been pepper'd and ſalted enough. Adding, That they would take care we ſhould be better handled the next time.

VI. Monſieur *de Schomberg*, who has ever done me the honour to love me, and to make it appear he had ſome confidence in me in theſe affairs, ſent for me a few days after, and told me that he had a great mind to force a Half-Moon, that had kept it ſelf but too long; that he believ'd with Fire-works it might be brought to paſs; and that he remembred he had ſeen certain Fire-pots that plaid with great effect, but that he did not know any one in the Army, that either knew how to make them, or to make uſe of them. It hapned by good luck that I not only knew this ſort of Pots, but alſo how to make and uſe them; which made me tell Monſieur *de Schomberg* that I would be reſponſible to him for theſe Fire-works, and that he might rely upon me for the proviſion. But being there was great danger in the throwing them, he would not ſuffer me to throw them my ſelf; but only told me, that after I had made them ready, I ſhould make choice of ſome good Souldier, whom I ſhould inſtruct after what manner they were to be thrown. I prepared then theſe Pots, which were of Clay, and fill'd them as they ſhould be with Gunpowder, covering them very well, and tying them with good Packthread, about which were ſeveral ends of lighted Matches; to the end that the Pots being thrown, and breaking with the fall, ſome one of the bits of Match ſhould fall into the Powder, and fire it, which would break the Pot into a thouſand pieces, and make a terrible havock by reaſon of the broken pieces that flew on every ſide, and which in wounding and killing ſeveral people would ſtrike a terrour into the reſt, who were not accuſtom'd to that ſort of fire.

I then began to conſider of chooſing a perſon capable of throwing theſe Pots, and of doing it ſo dexterouſly, as to be ſerviceable to us; and at laſt bethought me of a Souldier that was very brave, and very handy, call'd *Montably*, who had long importun'd me to put him upon ſome ſervice, wherein he might ſignalize himſelf, and who every time he met me urged me to that effect; which made me think of propoſing this to him, that he might make himſelf be taken notice of by Monſieur *de Schomberg*. Having therefore ſent for him, I open'd to him my whole deſign, and made him withal ſenſible of the danger, that I might not deceive him: Which having done, I demanded his reſolution. He immediately with great joy embraced an occaſion he had ſo long wiſht for, telling me withal, that it would be the means either to puſh his fortune, or to

put

put him out of need on't. I then inſtructed him more than he deſir'd, in all things, deſigning at once to make our enterprize ſucceed, and to precaution him againſt the danger, and for my laſt order commanded him poſitively after he had thrown theſe Pots to retire, and let them fall on who were commanded to give the Aſſault. Had he taken my advice, I had been entirely ſatisfied in this affair; but this young man more generous than obedient, after the happy execution of what had been commanded him, could not forbear proceeding to what he was forbid, and to go with his Sword in his hand upon the Enemy, where he received a Muſquet ſhot that laid him dead upon the place; which gave me a ſenſible diſpleaſure in the midſt of the joy we had to ſee our Enterprize perfectly ſucceed. For the Pots I have ſpoken of, wrought ſo great an effect, and the Beſiegers puſh'd the Enemy with ſo great vigour, that without any conſiderable loſs, ſaving that of this brave young man, the Half-moon was forc'd and won.

VII. Some days after, as I was mounting the Guard, the Enemy made a great Sally, and they had already begun to nail two pieces of Cannon, when I was commanded to repel them with a body that I had rally'd together, in which there was a very brave *Swiſs*. The Enemy having at this time alſo thrown ſome Granadoes which made a ſufficient havock amongſt us, one that fell into a Barrel of Powder gave fire to't, and cut off both the poor *Swiſſe*'s Legs, blew the Heads of one of the barrels againſt my ſtomach with much force, that I thought my ſelf cut in two, and was ready to ſwoon; it put me to the greateſt pain that ever I had felt in all my life, but being come to my ſelf, and having examined my body all over, feeling no blood, and diſcovering no wound, I confeſs I was extreamly glad, becauſe I thought my ſelf a dead man; and though I ventur'd my life as freely as another, I had no mind at all to dye. That which ſav'd me was a Cuiraſſe I had put on that day, which reſiſted the blow, and which by the reverberation caus'd my pain.

VIII. Eight or ten days after this, mounting the Guard in a Trench, whilſt Monſieur *de Zamet* mounted another on the right hand which belong d to his Regiment, as the firſt of *France*, it hapned, that as he was advancing his work very far, the Enemy ſallied in ſo great number, and with ſo much reſolution, that they overturn'd the head of the Trench upon the tail, which alſo gave way. Monſieur *Zamet* having rallied ſome Souldiers ſtood firm for ſome time, and made good his ground with his own perſon, till being wounded in the Arm with a Muſquet ſhot, and out of condition of fighting, he was taken Priſoner, and led into a corner at diſtance, with ſeveral others of his Officers, where he was under Guard, whilſt the Enemy ſtill puſht the reſt of his Regiment.

In the mean time that of *Champagne* not being commanded, we had our own Trench to guard, and I ſeeing that of *Picardy* ſo handled and broken, and perceiving the groſs of the Enemy at diſtance drawn up in the corner, who there kept theſe Priſoners, without thinking that Monſieur *de Zamet* was of the number; I ask'd leave of Monſieur *de Pyolet*, to go and relieve our Companions, before they were carried away, aſſuring him that I would have but fifty choſen men to deliver them, and to drive away the Guard that kept them. He granted my requeſt, and immediately choſe out fifty men, that I knew to be very brave; but above twenty Serjeants out of generoſity took the places of ſo many Souldiers, I

ſent

ſent them back, and all the Regiment (the occaſion appear'd ſo honorable) would have been of the Party. I made them all take no other Arms but Halberts only, and took one my ſelf, being I had ever found it the beſt Weapon when men come to blows. After having concluded how we ſhould attack the Enemy, we march'd through a little cover'd way that wholly conceal'd us, till we were juſt upon them; and charging all together into the middle of this body that kept our people enclos'd, we ſo aſtoniſh'd them with this ſurprize, and unexpected attack, that thinking they had all the Army upon them, they made very little reſiſtance, but ran away, leaving ſome of their men behind them.

IX. But I was very much aſtoniſh'd to ſee Monſieur *Zamet* amongſt theſe Priſoners, which alſo made my joy the greater, though it was not without ſome mixture of fear, when I ſaw him cover'd all over with blood. I ask'd him where he was hurt, and he gave me comfort, by telling me it was only in his Arm. I conducted him back to his Regiment, where he embrac'd me ſeveral times, telling me, he would never forget this ſervice I had done him, of which, that he might give me further aſſurance, he entreated me to come ſee him the next day, ſo ſoon as I ſhould be reliev'd from the Guard, and I fail'd not to come according to his deſire. As ſoon as he ſaw me, he made me lean down upon his Bed, that he might embrace me, and told me with infinite kindneſs, that he would not only love me ſo long as he liv'd, but would publickly acknowledge that he ſtood indebted to me for his life and liberty; that he could not better manifeſt his gratitude, than by aſſuring me that I ſhould be Maſter both of the one and the other, as things that belonged to me, and to which I had acquir'd an abſolute right in preſerving them; that he would for the future divide with me both his goods and fortune; that he would have me from this time forward, look upon him as my Brother; and that being he could not confer upon me any command that could tye me nearer to him, than that of his own Lieutenant, he entreated I would accept the offer he made me, that I might begin to enter upon my ſhare of whatever belonged to him, that he might hereafter advance me, and change my Command according as he ſhould riſe himſelf, and advance his own fortune. To conclude, he ſaid all this to me after ſo tender and affectionate a manner, adding withal that he promis'd in the preſence of God to make all this good to me, that I cannot expreſs the diſpoſition I found my ſelf in, after ſuch an obliging diſcourſe.

I told him, to do Monſieur *de Pyolet* a good Office, who had entreated me to lay part of this obligation upon him, that I had not only done what I was commanded, and that it was in executing the commands of another, I had been ſo happy as to do him this ſervice; but that I ſtuck not from that moment to a man ſo worthy to be belov'd, to engage both my perſon and my life; ſo that from that very day there was ſo ſtrict an Union contracted betwixt us, as death it ſelf could not diſſolve, being I ſtill find it ſo firmly engraven in my heart, four and thirty years after the loſs of this Friend, that I cannot think or ſpeak of it without being mov'd to a degree that I cannot expreſs.

I began then from this moment to live with this incomparable Friend, not only as with a Brother, but as with my own Father, having for him the ſame reſpect, and paying him with all poſſible aſſiduity the ſame duty, and the ſame deference, as if I had really been his Son. For all my Duties upon the Guard, and the occaſions upon which I was commanded

excepted, I was continually by his Bed side; lying with my hand in the ſtatelieſt Union that can poſſibly be imagin'd; which alſo was much augmented upon a new accident, which I think my ſelf oblig'd to relate.

X. The Enemy having made another furious Sally, came and ſet fire to our Powder, lam'd the Carriages of two pieces of Cannon, to which they ſet fire alſo, and were endeavouring to nail the reſt, when I was commanded out with a body of threeſcore men to repel them; where I once more thought I ſhould have been ſcorch'd to death by a Barrel of Powder they gave fire to in their retreat. After having beaten them from this Battery, I retir'd with the reſt of our Regiment, which with great vigour beat the Enemy back even into their own Fort, though it could not be done without great loſs on our part. Amongſt the Officers that were kill'd in this action, there was one very brave man call'd Captain *Robert*; of whoſe death the King being inform'd, he preſently thought of the Officer of *Champagne*, to confer the command upon: for, beſides other occaſions wherein I had been particularly taken notice of by his Majeſty, he had heard of the ſervice I had done Monſieur *Zamet*, and the other Priſoners, in reſcuing them out of the Enemies hands. Calling therefore for Monſieur *de Puiſyeux*, he told him that he gave me the Company of Captain *Robert*, commanding him to diſpatch my Commiſſion, and to ſend it to me before I knew any thing of it. Monſieur *de Puiſyeux*, who thought himſelf highly oblig'd to me, for having without ſpeaking to him, or his having entreated me, preſerv'd a Country Houſe of his, that was near the Army, from being plundred by the Souldiers, by putting into it a Gurrd of ſix Muſqueteers, was exceeding glad of this opportunity of ſerving me to the King; and therefore taking the liberty to tell him his opinion concerning the choice his Majeſty had made, he ſpoke of me to him the moſt advantageouſly that he poſſibly could, ſo much as, unknown to me, to acknowledge the little ſervice I had endeavoured to do him. The Commiſſion therefore was diſpatch'd that night, and being deliver'd to me in the morning, without my having had the leaſt intimation of it, I confeſs I more valued the King's remembring me of his own accord, than I did my preferment to the Command; tho I did pretty much covet that too, not believing that the Lieutenancy of Monſieur *Zamet* could be conferr'd upon me ſo ſoon.

I went forthwith to carry my Commiſſion to Monſieur *Zamet*, who look'd a little coldly upon it, and ask'd me if I had rather have the Company than to be his Lieutenant; adding withal, that he very well knew, that in order and pay, a Company was worth more, but that he believ'd it was much more advantageous to me to be Lieutenant to a perſon who was ſo abſolutely my own, as he was, who aſſur'd me no leſs than his goods and fortune, and therefore entreated me to think on't before I accepted the Command. To this I made anſwer, that he very well knew, that I had already aſſur'd him, that I was entirely his, and that accordingly he ſhould be the abſolute Maſter in this affair; that as I had hitherto no hand at all in it, being meerly oblig'd to the King's bounty, who had thought of me of himſelf; and to the kind remembrance of Monſieur *de Puiſyeux* who had diſpatch'd the Commiſſion before I had heard a ſyllable of it, I could not better let him ſee how much I was at his diſpoſal, than by bringing him the Commiſſion to do with it as he himſelf thought fit. He then told me, that he had a great mind to inform the King of the particulars that paſt in that Sally of the Enemy I have mention'd before, where I reſtor'd him his liberty, and that

that being there was no one who had had so great a share in it as my self, I was able to give a better account than any one of that action, and therefore he should be glad I would go wait upon his Majesty in the afternoon, and present him a Letter that he would write. I did so, where after I had presented Monsieur *Zamet*'s Letter, and given an account of his health, which his Majesty enquir'd after, he immediately fell to speaking of the occasion, wherein I had rescu'd him out of the Enemies hands, commanding me to tell him the whole story, which I accordingly did as well as I could: I then took my opportunity to return my most humble thanks for the honour his Majesty had done me, in remembring me after a manner so much to my advantage, and of which I should retain a profound acknowledgment all the days of my life. But the King seeing I took no notice of Monsieur *Zamet*'s design, said to me, But you have not told me all this while that *Zamet* would have you for his Lieutenant? to which I made answer, That I was in the first place bound to let his Majesty know my sence of this very particular favour he had been pleas'd to shew me, when I least thought of any such thing; and as to the other, which Monsieur *Zamet* sollicited in my behalf, it was not for me to mention it to his Majesty, and that I should seem not to value the favour he had conferr'd upon me as I ought, should I at the same time I came to return my thanks for the one, make suit for another: But since your Majesty, said I, obliges me to answer to that affair, I can assure you, that I am ready with great chearfulness to do whatever your Majesty shall please to command, whether in accepting, or surrendring the Company in the Regiment of *Champagne*, for the Lieutenancy of Monsieur *Zamet*; which I confess to be to me much more considerable and desireable than many Companies, by reason of the tender Friendship I am happy in from a person of his merit, which is to your Majesty sufficiently known. Being then, Sir, to receive the one or the other from your Majesties hand, I with all my heart resign the Commission your Majesty did me the honour to send me, with an humble request, that your Majesty would be graciously pleas'd to make for me a choice, that I protest, I know not how to make for my self. At the same time I presented my Commission to the King, who very much surpriz'd at my complement, and the free manner wherewith I had referr'd my self into his hands for the choice of one of these two Commands, left me on a sudden to go to the other end of the room, where the Constable *de Luines* was, to whom he told all that I had said to him, and shew'd him the Commission I had return'd into his hands.

The Constable had not been very well satisfied with me in the beginning of the War, by reason of a little occasion wherein I had not manifested so great a complacency as is expected by great men, but notwithstanding he had alter'd his opinion of me upon further knowledge; so that what the King had then told him, having given him yet a better character of my conduct, he answer'd his Majesty, that it was not just to leave so generous an act without recompence; to which he added, Your Majesty expresses an intention to grant Monsieur *Zamet* the favour he desires of you, in giving him Monsieur *de Pontis* for his Lieutenant; but this Command being less advantageous both in respect of pay, and of the honour of Captain, which you have already conferr'd upon him; your Majesty may find a way if you please, to recompence both the one and the other, in ordering him Captains pay, and in adding to the Command of Lieutenant to the Camp-master of the Regiment of *Picardy*, which is the first Regiment of *France*, the new Title of Honour of eldest Lieutenant

in

in your Majeſty's Army. Nothing could have been more obliging, than what the Conſtable ſpoke to the King in my favour, and he needed to ſay no more to prevail with him to conſent to all things; for immediately Monſieur *de Puiſieux* had order to deliver me the diſpatches, which accordingly were brought me the ſame day.

After having return'd my moſt humble thanks to the King and the Conſtable, I went back to Monſieur *Zamet*, to whom I deliver'd a Letter from the King, wherein he left it to the bearer to give him an account how he had order'd his affairs; adding only, that he gave him to underſtand before hand, that the Officer of *Champagne* was now that of *Picardy*, as he had ſo much wiſh'd to be; and that he had been eaſily perſwaded to make him ſo, having found in him a perfect ſubmiſſion, and all poſſible eſteem and frieneſhip for him. Monſieur *Zamet* having read this Letter embrac'd me with all his ſoul, telling me that it was only to manifeſt to me, the ſtrict union he was reſolv'd henceforward to have with me; after which with a particular tenderneſs, he repeated to me what he had already proteſted; namely, that he deſired I ſhould now begin to ſhare with him both eſtate and fortune, as his Brother. I reply'd with the beſt expreſſions I could give him of my perfect acknowledgment, and of the paſſion I had to let him ſee by my future actions, that I was not altogether unworthy of the choice he had made of me.

XI. The next day having ſent for all the Captains of the Regiment, he told them, that he would acquaint them with a piece of news, that he knew would pleaſe them very well, which was that the King had given him for his Lieutenant, a man to whom he had before granted a Company in the Regiment of *Champagne*, and who had been ſo generous, and had ſo great an eſteem for the Regiment of *Picardy*, as to ſurrender it into his Majeſty's hands, that he might be his Lieutenant; that they all knew him particularly well, having often been with him in action, and that they could not chooſe but remember him, when they ſaw their Collonel wounded and abed, ſeeing that without the aſſiſtance of the perſon of whom he was ſpeaking, he had not now been with them; but in the hands of the Enemy: that therefore he aſſur'd himſelf they would receive me into their body with great joy, which had the rather mov'd him to ask me of the King; that he conjur d them to unite in the acknowledgment of the honour I did the Regiment, in preferring a Lieutenancy there, before a Company in that of *Champagne*, my ordinary Regiment. To which all the Officers gave a very obliging anſwer in my favour.

I preſently after came into the Chamber, not having been by when he had thus ſpoken to them, where, after having receiv'd extraordinary civility on their parts, I told them that I thought my ſelf very happy, that the King had receiv'd my reſignation of the Company he had given me, to honour me with that of the Lieutenancy of their Regiment. That though men did not uſually love to change a Company for the place of a Lieutenant; yet a man might do it with reaſon, when it was to enter into a body wherein were ſo many brave Officers; that I entreated them all to conſider me as a perſon abſolutely devoted to them, ſeeing that for the honour of ſerving in their Regiment, I quitted another with all its advantages. Monſieur *Zamet* had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing, that the jealouſy which ordinarily mixes in ſuch occaſions, had nothing to do here; for the Captains made me a thouſand kind expreſſions in his preſence, with ſeveral proteſtations of the joy they were in to ſee me united to their body.

And

And the next day the Regiment being drawn up, I took poſſeſſion of my Command of Captain Lieutenant to the Collonel's Company. Nevertheleſs two days after there hapned an occaſion of honour, which had like to have ſet me at odds with the whole Regiment.

XII. One of the Lieutenants diſpoſing himſelf to command in turn, I told him that as Lieutenant to the Collonel, I ought to paſs for youngeſt Captain; that in this quality I had right to chooſe occaſions of honour at my own pleaſure, and that I made choice of this. This Lieutenant took what I had ſaid to him very ill, and told all the other Lieutenants of the Regiment, who all together came to me, telling me that I had but my turn, no more than they, and that I ſhould not be Maſter of theirs.

To this replying a little roughly, that I very well underſtood my Command, that it gave me the ſame right it did the Collonel Lieutenants of all the old Bodies, and that I could not endure it ſhould be diminiſht in my hands; they anſwer'd me very briskly, that they were not afraid of my words, by reaſon there were a great many brave men in the Body; had I not believ'd ſo, Gentlemen, ſaid I, I had not enter'd into it, and tis that it may not be ſaid there are any Cowards, that I will maintain my right; ſeeing I ſhould be look'd upon as ſuch a one, ſhould I fail therein. This ſmart reply, no leſs civil than reſolute, made theſe Gentlemen at laſt to ſeek out ſome way of accommodation, which made them propoſe to me this condition; that ſince I would have the choice of all occaſions of honour, they askt, that they might rely upon me when they could not go to ſome Guards, where the fatigue was too great. The eaſineſs with which I conſented to their demand, ſaying aloud, that I promis'd it them with all my heart, by reaſon of the experience I had, that there is often more honour to be acquir'd in theſe perillous occaſions, put them into a new confuſion: but they could not go back, having engag'd themſelves into it of their own accord.

XIII. To return to what concerns the Siege of *Montaubon*, the Artillery being admirably well ſerv'd by the care of the Grand Maiſtre, who alſo was ſuperintendant of the Treaſury, the Battery of Meſſieurs *de Chevreuſe*, and *de Leſdiguieres*, which a man might alſo call that of Monſieur *de Schomberg*, he being almoſt continually there, wrought a great effect upon the Baſtion of *Dumontier*, ſo that the breach was thought reaſonable for an aſſault. But being they would firſt be very ſure of the true condition of the place, an Officer was appointed to go and diſcover. He did ſo, but with very little exactneſs, having ſeen almoſt nothing, either peradventure becauſe he was afraid, or that he did not advance ſo far as was neceſſary to make a full diſcovery. The diſtruſt they had of his report, made them ſend another, who at his return gave no better account than the firſt. The King then reſolv'd upon an Aſſault: he commanded that the Army ſhould be drawn up in Battaile, and ſhould go on to the attack, when upon the Hill of *Pillis*, which was his Majeſty's Quarter, they ſhould ſee him wave a Handkerchief upon the end of his Cane, which was to be the Signal.

All things were ready, and they only ſtaid expecting the Sign; when Monſieur *de Schomberg*, prompted by I know not what inſtinct, and ſuſpecting every thing, told the King, that he did not know, whether it would not be proper upon this occaſion, where his Majeſty's honour and the ſafety of his Army were in queſtion, to ſend a third time to diſcover

the Baſtion by ſome exact perſon, and of whoſe report they could have no reaſon to doubt, at the ſame time naming me; thinking he did me a great deal of honour in expoſing me to the utmoſt peril: The King approv'd of the motion, being of opinion, that in ſuch occaſions, a great many people ſee things but by halves, by reaſon of the extream danger, and of the little time they have to look about them. I was call'd for inſtantly, and Monſieur *de Schomberg* having acquainted me with the anxiety the King was in, and the little certainty they had of the true eſtate of the place, told me withal, that he had thought fit to name me to his Majeſty, and to propoſe that I might be ſent to diſcover again, by reaſon they could not think themſelves ſure, till I had made my report. Nevertheleſs having a particular affection for me, and knowing very well, that to perform this with the exactneſs requir'd, I could not chooſe but expoſe my ſelf to very great danger, he thought fit to tell me farther, that though this affair was of the laſt importance to the whole Army, he did not nevertheleſs pretend to engage me in it contrary to my own liking. I return'd him the ſame anſwer that any other man would have done upon the ſame occaſion, which was, That he did me wrong to doubt of the joy I was full of upon ſuch occaſions, to ſee my ſelf honour'd with his eſteem, and the good opinion he had of me; that I would go prepare my ſelf, and that I hop'd to return, and to bring ſo good an account, that nothing ſhould be found in my report that was not exactly true.

Having then put on a Cuiraſs, and a Cask, with a Piſtol hanging at my girdle, I eat a bit or two, and then ſet out in the ſight of his Majeſty, and the whole Army, who had their eyes attentively fixt upon me. Being come to the foot of the breach, I there kneel'd down, and pray'd behind ſome Stones that were tumbled down, and afterwards began to mount, creeping as well as I could upon my belly. Being got to the top, I had a mind to diſcover the place in the ſame poſture I had got up, that is to ſay lying upon my belly, that I might not be too open, nor too much expos'd to the Muſquet ſhot, that whisk'd round about me on every ſide: but this poſture affording me but little advantage of ſeeing what might be beyond the Baſtion, I ſtarted up on a ſudden, and expoſing my ſelf to a danger, from which God alone was able to protect me, I ran to the very brink of it, from whence I diſcover'd the bottom, which was a dreadful retrenchment, and in it a Battalion that ſeem'd to be of above two thouſand men, of which the firſt ranks were all Pikes, and the reſt Muſqueteers. At the very inſtant that I diſcover'd my ſelf, and lookt down, they made ſo furious a diſcharge upon me, that I have ever ſince lookt upon it as a Miracle that I could eſcape; and yet of all theſe great number of ſhots, I only reciev'd two upon my arms, which made but ſlight impreſſions, and of which I was not ſo much as ſenſible at that time.

Aſſuring my ſelf then that I had ſeen all, I return'd with all the haſte I could make, only obſerving an eminence near the Kings Quarter, from whence I thought I might poſſibly ſhew his Majeſty himſelf the retrenchment of the Enemy. After which I let my ſelf fall, on purpoſe that I might rowl down to the bottom, and be more out of danger of the ſhot: which made all the Army believe I was kill'd; and Monſieur *de Schomberg* turn'd his back, that he might not ſee a thing which gave him a great and real affliction, accuſing himſelf of being the cauſe of my death. But I came off at the expence of a great giddineſs only, out of which being preſently recover d, I gave God thanks upon my knees for having preſerv'd

ſerv'd me from ſo great a danger. After which I preſently call'd to mind what I had ſeen, and writ it down in my Table book, being ſecure behind the ſame Stones I mention'd before, and preſently appear'd again, when every one thought I was dead.

There may be peradventure ſome Bravo's, and eſpecially young men, who will look upon it as a weakneſs, that in ſo perilous an occaſion I ſhould rather have recourſe to God, than to give my ſelf up to a fooliſh confidence, that makes a man run brutiſhly, and as it were blindfold every where, where death is moſt terrible: but in my opinion in occaſions of this kind, where a man hardly diſcovers any poſſible means to ſave both his honour and his life at once, though he ſhould forget that he was a Chriſtian; to be a man only is ſufficient to make him think of him, who can take away not only his Life, but even Courage too, from the man that fancies he has the moſt. And having been for fifty years together in as many hazardous occaſions as any man perhaps of my time, I can witneſs this, that I have ſeen very many who have made a vanity of no Religion, as if their impiety ought to paſs for a mark of their Valour, whom I have often found to be rather great Braggadochio's than really brave, and that if the danger was on the right hand, would turn to the left; and that would make uſe of dexterity, where they ought to have ſtaked down their perſons, and by their actions to have made good their vaunting words.

XIV. After having in this manner eſcap'd ſo great a danger, Monſieur *de Schomberg*, as much ſurpriz'd as overjoy'd to ſee me, made me drink a glaſs of Wine, by reaſon I was almoſt quite ſpent, having taken extraordinary pains; I then made my report to him, which put him into a very great aſtoniſhment; and when he askt me over again, if I was very ſure of what I had told him; I made anſwer, that I would undertake to ſhew it him, and to aſſure both the King and himſelf by his own ſight, having taken notice of an eminence from whence one might diſcover what I had ſeen nearer at hand. The King being very impatient to know what I had diſcover'd, I got on Horſeback, and went with Monſieur *de Schomberg* to wait upon him at *Piccis*. Being there, and they having much ado to beleive me, the King would be ſatisfied by his own eyes, which made me guide him to the ſame place I had obſerv'd, and from thence with the help of a Perſpective, his Majeſty plainly diſcover'd the Retrenchment, and behind it the Battalion of which I had given him account. He was very much ſurpriz'd at it, and could not forbear declaring aloud the extream peril to which his Souldiers had been expos'd, without this foreſight of Monſieur *de Schomberg*, which had ſav'd the lives of a great many men. After which his Majeſty had the goodneſs to tell me, that I had that day done him a very great ſervice, and that he would remember it upon occaſion; I did not nevertheleſs percieve at that time that I was much remembred, and was accuſtomed to ſerve without any other intereſt than that of honour, which alſo ſometimes coſt me very dear.

I then return'd to find out Monſieur *Zamet*, who having believ'd me to be dead, cry'd out ſo ſoon as he ſaw me, I proteſt you ſhall go no more upon ſuch deſigns, and I will take very good order for the future, that you ſhall receive no more Commiſſions of this kind. For in truth, the thing which nettled him the moſt, and made him ſpeak after that manner was, that whether I was upon the Guard or no, they thus us'd to make me as it were the publick Victim in all perilour occaſions. He ask'd

me

me whether I was not hurt, and I assur'd him I was not, but only that Monsieur *de Schomberg* had shew'd me two shots upon my Arms.

XV. The Army upon this was drawn off, and they thought no more of an assault. Some days after, Monsieur *de Roban* who kept the Field with a little body of an Army for the *Hugonots*, was resolv'd to come and relieve *Montaubon*. In order to this design, he gave fifteen hundred men to a very brave Gentleman call'd *de Beaufort*, to try if he could put part of them into the place. Upon the intelligence his Majesty had of their March, he caus'd the Guards to be doubled, and reinforc'd in his Camp, which notwithstanding could not hinder *Beaufort*, being come up to his Quarter, from forcing the Guard, and getting into the Town with eight hundred men, the rest having been either kill'd or fled: Upon the arrival of these succours they two days after made such furious Sallies, as very much discourag'd our men, and gave his Majesty occasion to consider, that Winter drawing on, it was better to retire and preserve his Army for the next Campaign, by reason he would have lost too many men after this relief. Thus at the expiration of fifteen days, namely the first of *November*, 1621, we raised the Siege; order having been given throughout the Quarters, that upon hearing the first Cannon shot that should be fir'd that night, every one should be ready with his Arms to march where their Officers should lead them; and before they went, to make extraordinary Fires throughout the Camp. This order thus executed, made the Enemy expect some new thing, and rather a general assault than the raising of the Siege. Wherefore contenting themselves with causing their Posts to be well guarded, they never thought of commanding out any Troops to fall upon the Rear of our Army, that began to file off, about the dawning of the day.

Monsieur *Zamet* who had been cur'd a few days before, was order'd to make good the retreat, wherein he was not a little astonish'd to see the precipitation, not to say the flight, wherewith our Troops march'd away. I being with him, he made me observe this hasty retreat, that savour'd indeed of a pannick fear, for they made off as if they had seen the Enemy at their heels. And being so good a Christian, and a man of so much judgment as he was, he began to speak to me a language I had never heard before. *I assure you* (said he) *that reflecting upon the Order of Providence in the management of affairs here below, I manifestly discern, that the God of Justice is the God of Battels; that he gives the Victory to whom he pleases, and oftentimes to those that are against him, by reason that they who defend his cause do it so very ill, and so justly draw upon themselves his indignation by their own Crimes; that he punishes them by casting the disadvantage on their side, and filling their Armies with unreasonable terrors. Thus much is plain upon the present occasion, where our Forces run away without knowing any reason why. 'Tis visibly a stroke from the hand of our good God, that contrary to all humane appearances, we have not been able to take this place, which according to the ordinary course of Arms must have fallen into the King's Possession. His judgments are very different from those of men which stop at the outside of events, without penetrating into the secret springs of them. Our Enemies no doubt will be as much deceived as we; for they will magnify themselves for this advantage, without ever considering, that the Victory that God gives them will at length but render them the more unhappy, by a false assurance, that it is a mark of the Justice of their Cause; and he will at one time or other find means to make them sensible what loss they sustain, while they flatter themselves*

ſelves with a thought of winning all. Let us admire then and adore the Chaſtiſements he inflicts after ſo different a way, both upon the one and the other.

I confeſs I was marvellouſly ſurprized at this diſcourſe, having never, as I ſaid, been uſed to hear the like, and acknowledged the obligations I had to him, for the inſight he gave me into ſo great a truth. And I muſt alſo ſay, that I did not reckon this favour among the leaſt I received from him, and have ſince been ſenſible, that it was one of the firſt, God was pleaſed to confer upon me, in order to the giving me ſome ſenſe of Chriſtianity. The virtue and pious conduct that I obſerved in this great man, did in ſome ſort contribute to laying the firſt ſeeds in the bottom of my heart, and 'tis that which hath infinitely increaſed my acknowledgments to him, and value of his memory; eſpecially, ſince after abundance of miſtakes and wandrings I had the Grace to know how little to value the world, and abſolutely to renounce it.

The End of the Third Book.

BOOK IV.

The Sieur de Pontis *defends the Town of* Mouteſche, *which is attack'd by the Enemy. His Conduct towards an Officer of the Collonel, and of Monſieur* le Duc d' Eſpernon, *in a great Diſpute they had about the concern of his Command. The Siege of* Tonins. *The great Wound which the Sieur* de Pontis *receives, which reduces him to extremity. The Sack of* Negrepelice. *The Sieur* de Pontis *makes himſelf Maſter of a Fort poſſeſt by the* Hugonots, *and razes it; which begets him a great deal of trouble.*

I. THE Siege of *Montauban* being rais'd, the King return'd to *Paris*, and diſmiſt all his forces into their winter quarters. The Regiment of *Picardy* had a little Town of *Guyenne* aſſign'd for theirs, call'd *Mouteſche*, ſome ſeven or eight leagues from *Montauban*. Monſieur *Le Mareſchal de Saint Geran*, who ſtay'd to give the Orders, ſeeing that all the Captains of *Picardy* were gone home to their own houſes, gave me the Regiment in charge, and the government of the place, as the order was; telling me, that being ſo near to the Enemy, I ought to keep good guard, and that he rely'd upon my care. I told him he might do ſo, and that I would be reſponſible to him. Five or ſix hours after that the Mareſchal *de Saint Geran* had left us, he met a man upon the Road, who was coming to give him notice, that the Enemy were preparing themſelves to attack our Town the night following, intending to take it by aſſault; and that it was the Garriſon of *Montauban* that was to execute the deſign. Upon this intelligence, Monſieur *de Saint Geran* writ me immediately a Ticket, in which he gave me notice of what he had heard, and advis'd me to take very great care that I might not be ſurpriz'd. I hereupon preſently aſſembled all the Officers of the Garriſon, whom I acquainted with the news Monſieur *de Saint Geran* had ſent me, and the Orders he had given; entreating them that we might all together ſee which way we ſhould beſt prepare our ſelves to receive the Enemy; telling them withal, that for my part I thought it beſt that we ſhould preſently take a review of all our Men, of all the Arms, and of all the Ammunition, of the Gates of the Town, of all without, and to conſider of the means to fortifie the weakeſt places. They all approv'd my advice, and we went preſently about it.

II. Towards the evening one of them call'd *Baſtillat*, who was an *Aide Major*, thought fit to come and tell me that I very well knew he was my Servant and my Friend, and that therefore he was ſorry he was oblig'd to declare that he could not ſtay with me upon this occaſion, ſeeing that being *Aide Major*, he was an Officer of Monſieur *d' Eſpernon*, who was Collonel of the Infantry, and that therefore in this quality he could not obey me, being that I was but Lieutenant to the *Maiſtre de Camp*, of whom Monſieur *d' Eſpernon* would not in the

per-

perſon of his Officers receive Orders. Adding withal, that he was ſorry to find himſelf conſtrain'd to leave me in ſo brave an occaſion; but that rather chuſing to retire betimes, than to occaſion any trouble, by reaſon he could not obey me, he came to take his leave of me, and to bid me good night. I return'd him anſwer, That as his Servant and his Friend, I was alſo oblig'd to tell him that he was not now at liberty to retire; neither was it in my power to let him go, after he had receiv'd orders from Monſieur *de Saint Geran*, as well as the reſt; and that he had conſented to it as well as they in not going out then: That it was not to decide the pre-eminence betwixt the Collonels Officers and thoſe of the *Maiſtre de Camp*, to obey me upon this occaſion, ſeeing that in this there was no other thing in queſtion, but to follow the Orders of our General the Mareſchal *de Saint Geran*, who had at his going away committed to me the care of the Regiment, and the defence of the place, and yet more particularly by the Letter he had ſent me; and that I had ſhew'd him: And that therefore I entreated him to conſider that this was not a time for punctilio's of Honour between Officers, but that here the queſtion was purely the intereſt and ſervice of the King, to whom alone the Town did appertain; and who would be the only loſer if we did not unite in its defence, and make it appear to the whole Kingdom that we were not unworthy of the commands his Majeſty had been pleas'd to honour us with. This remonſtrance, tho very civil and very rational too, did not however ſatisfie this Officer, who could not prevail with himſelf to hearken to what he was reſolv'd he would not do; ſo that ſeeing the ſtiffneſs wherewith I oppos'd my ſelf to his deſign, he again urg'd the ſame thing in an accent civil enough; but perceiving me ſtill to perſiſt in my oppoſition with the ſame obſtinacy, he reſolutely reſolv'd to go, and told me with ſome vehemence flatly, that he would do it; which oblig'd me to anſwer him with ſome heat too, that he ſhould not do it; and that he ought to believe that I knew very well how to make my ſelf obey'd, where I was my ſelf to obey the orders of the King and the General: To which he reply'd in a great fury, that he could have wiſht I had ſpoke to him after that manner in a place where I had not been the Maſter; to which I made anſwer, that the buſineſs now in queſtion was to look to the defence of the place, and that it was not fit to mix perſonal intereſt with thoſe of the King; and it was my part in this occaſion to command him, and his to obey me. Upon which he turn'd very angrily from me, and went to his Quarters to make ready his equipage to be gone.

In the mean time I went to find out the Officers who commanded the guards of the Gates, and gave them expreſs order not to ſuffer any one to go out, though it were an Officer; adding, that it was juſt that every one ſhould partake both the danger and the honour of the ſervice the King expected from us on ſo important an occaſion. The two Officers, who were two Lieutenants, anſwer'd me after ſuch a manner as aſſur'd me I might rely upon them, and I return'd home. A little after, *Baſtillat*, follow'd by his man, rode to the Gate of the Town, where being ſtopt by the Centinel, he call'd the Lieutenant Captain of the Guard, who told him that he had receiv'd Orders to let no one paſs. What do you not know me? reply'd *Baſtillat*. Yes Sir, ſaid he, but my Orders extend to Officers as well as others, and therefore I beſeech you urge me no more to a thing I cannot grant you. *Baſtillat* nettled to the quick at this repulſe, rode back to his Quarters, and from thence

came

came to ſpeak to me again; but I prevented him, by ſaying aloud at the head of the Regiment, Sir, 'tis a thing concluded for this time, another time we will talk of it if you pleaſe, but for the preſent 'tis the order you muſt obey. Seeing then himſelf in an inevitable neceſſity that he muſt ſubmit, he told me, that I had a whole Garriſon on my ſide, and ſo was the Maſter, and therefore he would obey me; but that he would find another time when I ſhould not be ſo well accompanied. To which I gave him only this anſwer, that in the firſt place we were to ſerve the King.

III. At the ſame time I commanded him to draw up the Regiment in Battaile to ſee if the Companies were compleat; to viſit all the Army, to give out Ammunition to thoſe that wanted, and to acquit himſelf of all other duties of his command of Major, and he punctually obey'd. I then came to view all theſe things in general, and taking all the principal Officers along with me, of which he alſo was one, we went all together to viſit the advantageous poſts we were to defend, and to give out the neceſſary Orders, that there might be no confuſion nor trouble in the night. I divided the Regiment into three Bodies, the firſt and greateſt to be upon the Parade, and thence to ſend out relief to thoſe who ſhould ſtand in need; the ſecond, which was leſs, was commanded to guard the Gate of the Town, which I thought was likely to be attackt; and I again divided that into three, one of thirty men, which I poſted upon a little Van-guard, ſome fifty paces without the Town; the ſecond, conſiſting of a hundred men, were poſted in the Town-ditch, to ſuſtain the firſt; and the third, which conſiſted of about as many, were planted upon the Walls, to defend the ſecond *Corps de Guard*: The third body, which was the leaſt, was appointed for the guard of the other Gate, which was not eaſie to be attackt, and therefore did not require ſo great a defence. After I had plac'd all theſe Guards my ſelf, I ſent ſome hours after to have them again viſited by *Baſtillat*, who obey'd without any manner of reply, taking great pains, and ſhewing himſelf very zealous in the execution of all the Orders he receiv'd.

Night being come, I gave the Word and the Orders to *Baſtillat*, to carry to the Serjeant upon the Parade, telling him that at ten a clock I would give another, and that therefore he muſt come to receive it. Whereupon he told me that it was not an ordinary thing, and that this gave him occaſion to believe that it was peradventure to juſtle and provoke him to the utmoſt, that I proceeded after this manner. I made anſwer, that I was not capable of doing ſo ill a thing: that it was only for the greater ſecurity, and that men could not take too much care when they expected an Aſſault; that I was ſo far from any thought or intention of diſobliging him, that on the contrary I entreated he would come and ſup with me; adding that we muſt make proviſion of ſtrength and vigour for the labour of the night. He thankt me, and ſaid he would return at ten a clock to receive new Orders. He accordingly came at the hour, and being very weary with the great pains he had taken, I deſir'd him to lye down and repoſe himſelf a little till further news. For my own part, I went a third time to viſit all things, not thinking it ſeaſonable to ſleep, and be at reſt, when I had ſo muth reaſon to expect an Enemy.

IV. I

IV. I had cauſed a Horſe to be held ready, that I might ride up and down to every place at the firſt Alarm, which was not long before it came; for about two of the Clock after midnight, the advanc'd Centinel at the Gate which I had foreſeen would be attackt, heard a noiſe, and gave fire. I had notice of it inſtantly, and having rous'd *Baſtillat*, we went together to the Gate where the Alarm was. I found at my arrival that the firſt *Corps de Guard* had made their diſcharge, and that they were vigorouſly attackt by the Enemy. I enter'd into the ſecond, to which the thirty men of which the firſt was compos'd came to retire, fighting all the way they retreated, with very great bravery. I then caus'd a diſcharge to be made by thirty Muſquets of that *Corps de Guard* where I was, which a little aſtoniſht the Enemy, who did not expect to meet any other but the firſt; yet did they for all that continue to charge the ſecond *Corps de Guard*, when I commanded thirty more Muſqueteers of the ſame body to give them another Volley. I ſent *Baſtillat* at the ſame time to the other Gate of the Town, for fear the Enemy ſhould attack them both at once; and put a Lieutenant in his place, to carry the Orders, and to bring relief when there ſhould be need.

This choice that I made of *Baſtillat*, in giving him a place of honour which did not belong to his command, and ſupplying his by another, pleas'd him very much, and inſpir'd him with other ſentiments than he had entertain'd before of my diſpoſition towards him.

In the mean time the Enemy ſtill continu'd their attack, which was equally ſuſtained by our men; but they were ſoon out of heart, when I commanded all the Muſqueteers upon the Walls to fire continually; for being very well inform'd by this that we were too well prepar'd to receive them, and knowing that it would be ſomething hard to force men well reſolv'd to defend themſelves, they took the wiſeſt courſe to retire with the loſs of ſome of their men. The attack being over, I encourag'd, and highly prais'd the valour of all our men, who had ſhew'd themſelves equally zealous and obedient in this occaſion of honour, wherein they had fought ſo generouſly for the ſervice of their Prince.

V. The next day *Baſtillat* came to tell me, that he hop'd I would not deny him the liberty of going out of the Town, now that he had ſatisfied all I could demand of him. I made anſwer, that I conſented to it with all my heart, and that I would bear him teſtimony, as I had already made it appear, in placing him in the honourable poſt he knew I had done; that he had behav'd himſelf with all the vigour and reſolution of a man of honour; and that ſo I left it to his own diſpoſal to go out when he pleas'd, after he had done the King the ſervice, from which he could not honourably have excuſed himſelf. After this manner he took his leave, without the leaſt ſign of diſcontent; but going immediately thence to *Cadillac*, to make his complaint to the Duke of *Eſpernon*, where he told him that I had uſurpt upon his command, having compell'd him by force, as Governour and Maſter of a Town, to obey me, though he had declar'd to me that he could not do it, having the honour to be one of the Collonels Officers, who were not to receive Orders from the Officers of the *Maiſtre de Camp*; and that I had detain'd him by force in the place, which was to be attackt the next day; that being he could not help obeying me in this occaſion, where his Majeſties ſervice was in queſtion, and where he had not the liberty to do as he

would otherwiſe have done, he was come ſo ſoon as he could get out, to acquit himſelf of his duty in making his complaint to him, whoſe honour alone was therein engag'd, by reaſon of the priviledges of his command. Monſieur *d' Eſpernon* having only made anſwer that he would talk with me about it, ſent an expreſs meſſenger to me to come to him to *Cadillac*.

Really I was very much perplext and ſurpriz'd at this order, ſuſpecting what the occaſion was, and knowing the ſeverity with which Monſieur *d' Eſpernon* maintain'd the honourable priviledges of his command. I thought it would be convenient that I ſhould firſt ſee Monſieur *le Mareſchal de Saint Geran*, by whoſe order I had acted, to have his advice what I ought to do; and therefore went to wait upon him at *Caſtel-Saraſin* where he then was, and told him the occaſion of my coming. In good earneſt, ſaid he, this is a very ſcurvy buſineſs for you; for though your action was perfectly right and good, and though therein you have exactly obſerv'd the rules of military diſcipline, yet you will have much ado to defend your ſelf, being to give an account to Monſieur *d' Eſpernon*, who is not eaſie to be ſatisfy'd in things that reſpect the leaſt punctilio of his command. He ſaid moreover, that he apprehended they would put upon me ſome affront, and therefore doubted whether or no I ought to go to *Cadillac*. But Sir, ſaid I, if I do not go, can I ſecure my ſelf from his authority? Can I find any way to excuſe my ſelf from giving him an account of what I have done? for if that may be, I do not ſtick at not going thither, but being oblig'd in ſpite of my teeth to ſubmit to his order; and that he can, by vertue of the authority his command gives him, cauſe me to be laid by the heels; I think I ſhould make my cauſe worſe, or rather of a good cauſe I ſhould make a very ill one, ſhould I fail to obey him: for doubtleſs he would never pardon me a thing, that he would have ſome reaſon to look upon as a great affront done to him by ſuch a ſimple Officer as I. But if he will hear my reaſons, and when he ſees the Order I receiv'd from you, Sir, as my General, I hope he may be ſatisfy'd, if any thing can ſatisfie him. Monſieur *le Mareſchal de Saint Geran* having heard me ſpeak after this manner, ſeem'd to approve of my opinion, and offer'd me to write to the Duke of *Eſpernon*, to aſſure him that he himſelf had given me the Order to command in the Town; but I would not engage him in an affair, that I was much more willing to end alone; and therefore returning my thanks after the moſt civil manner I could, I told him that I had kept his Letter, which being the Order I had receiv'd from my General, would amply juſtifie me in what I had done.

I took my leave, and went to *Cadillac* about the time that the Duke of *Eſpernon* was going to dinner; when having ſent him word, that I deſir'd to kiſs his hands, he gave order to have me brought into the Parlor, where he was with above thirty Gentlemen with him. So ſoon as he ſaw me make him a profound reverence, he preſently turn'd his back towards me, and talking to a Gentleman, left me, without giving me one word. He askt all the reſt that were preſent to waſh, and ſit down to Table with him; but as for me, he was not pleas'd to ſhew me the leaſt civility, and us'd me no otherwiſe than he would have done a Serving-man. 'Tis true, I found my ſelf wounded to the laſt degree with this affront, which I receiv'd ſo publickly, for having ſerv'd the King, and perform'd the duty of my command; but I ſaw no remedy, having to do with a man that has been known throughout the Kingdom for the moſt

moſt imperious that ever came into the world ; and knowing of old, that it had been his cuſtom to uſe all Officers at this rate, by whom he conceived he had been any ways injur'd. Wherefore thinking of nothing at that time but how I might juſtifie my ſelf, which was the only end of my Journey, and not ſeeing how I could do it without ſpeaking to him, I addreſt my ſelf to one of my friends, who had great acceſs to him, which was *le Commandeur de la Hiliere*, and having acquainted him with the occaſion of my coming, entreated him to aſſiſt me to get out of this ſcurvy affair, in obtaining me the audience that was neceſſary for my juſtification : And thus matters ſtood for that day.

VI. In the mean time the Commander ſpoke to the Duke of *Eſpernon*, as he had promis'd me he would, and did it with ſo much zeal and friendſhip, that he obtain'd his requeſt. So that the next day Monſieur *d' Eſpernon* bid him go fetch his friend, telling him that he would hear what I had to ſay. So ſoon as I was enter'd the room, and had ſaluted him, I told him that I was come in obedience to his command ; that I very well perceiv'd Monſieur *de Baſtillat* had done me an ill office to him, and that I could not doubt but he had ſent for me upon the complaint that this Officer might have made of me, about ſomething had paſt at *Monteſche* ; but that I hop'd, that after his Lordſhip had done me the favour to hear me, and that I had given him a true and ſincere account of the affair, he would not condemn me ; that I aſſur'd him at leaſt beforehand, that I was come reſolv'd to ſubmit to whatever it ſhould pleaſe him as my Judge to impoſe upon me, if I did not make my innocence appear. I then gave him an account of the command the *Mareſchal de Saint Geran* had given me by word of mouth, to give all the Orders in the place, and in the Regiment. I ſhew'd him the Order in writing he had afterwards ſent me, wherein he gave me warning to prepare my ſelf well to defend the Town againſt the Enemy, who were reſolv'd to attack it. He took and read it, and ſeeming ſatisfy'd, gave me very well to underſtand that he had already chang'd his humour as concerning me. I continu'd my juſtification in telling him, that I had read the order to all the Officers, that Monſieur *de Baſtillat* had heard it, and ſubmitted to it, as well as the reſt, without any manner of oppoſition ; that it was true he afterwards came to me in the evening, and made ſome difficulty, telling me that he was afraid of doing a prejudice to the authority of the Collonel, ſhould he obey an Officer of the *Maiſtre de Camp* ; but that I had made him anſwer, that I did not pretend to violate it in any ſort, ſeeing it was not in the quality of an Officer to the *Maiſtre de Camp*, that I pretended to command an Officer of the Collonel ; but in the quality of Governour, and as appointed by the General to command in that place ; and that I had declar'd to him at the head of the Regiment, that neither did I pretend that this occaſion ſhould be drawn into a precedent upon the account of this diſpute, nor that I ought to draw from thence any particular advantage to my ſelf. That having thus ſecur'd the Honour of the Colonel, I thought my ſelf oblig'd at the ſame time to look after the Kings Intereſt, in making thoſe obey me receiv'd his Pay, in an occaſion where the defence of one of his Majeſties Forts was in queſtion : that I had given a very ill example to all the Garriſon, in ſuffering an Officer to go out, who askt leave to do it, upon a falſe pretence, in a time when it could not be ; that it manifeſted that I underſtood little of my buſineſs, had render'd me unworthy of my command, to have

have ſuffer'd my ſelf to have been ſurpriz'd by ſo poor an argument: that therefore, ſeeing the Kings ſervice and my own duty only concern'd in the thing, without the Collonels honour being any way engaged in it, I believ'd that I could not do leſs: That his Lordſhip himſelf would without doubt have been the firſt to have blam'd me if I had done it; and therefore I was bold to beg of him the juſtice that was my due, of protecting my innocence againſt ſo ill grounded an accuſation; and that I conſented with all my heart, to call all the Officers of the Regiment, and even Monſieur *de Baſtillat* himſelf, to witneſs the truth of what I ſaid; who knew very well, that after the provoking language he had given me, I forbore not for all that to give him a poſt of honour which was not his due, in intruſting him with the guard of one of the Gates of the City. The Duke of *Eſpernon*, very much ſurpriz'd at this diſcourſe, made anſwer that things had been much otherwiſe repreſented to him; that having carry'd my ſelf after this manner, inſtead of blaming, he very much commended me, for having acquitted my ſelf of my duty: that he ſaw by that, I underſtood my command much better than *Baſtillat* did his: That it was want of underſtanding to bring the honour and authority of a Colloñel in queſtion, in a thing where they were no way concern'd; and that he would rattle him, to teach him to inſtruct himſelf better in the right of his command, and not to fall any more into ſuch miſtakes.

This anſwer, ſo differing from the ordinary language of the Duke of *Eſpernon*, was follow'd by the effect; for having bid me go and take a turn in the Garden, he ſent for Monſieur *Baſtillat*, with whom he talkt ſo much more roughly about this affair, as he was ſenſibly nettled, to ſee himſelf by his fault thus to blame to a ſimple Officer. And after having been aſſur'd from his own mouth of the truth of all things, which he durſt not deny, and having reproacht him, that he by his ill conduct had been the cauſe that his Collonel had receiv'd an affront upon account of the firſt Regiment of *France*. He would not let him ſtay dinner, whereas he made me ſit down with great kindneſs, uſing me with as great civility then, as he had roughly repulſt me the day before. So ſoon as we were riſen from Table, he ſent for him up, where he told him before all the company, that he ought to have taken the action which he would have made a crime, after another manner than he had done; that the knowledge I had of the rights of the Collonel, and of my own command, had taught me to diſtinguiſh the truth from appearance, and how to maintain my own right, without intrenching upon that of others; that the very obliging manner which he himſelf confeſt I had proceeded in reſpect to him, ought to have made him judge more favourably of my intentions; that he could not poſſibly take any thing ill at my hands, and that he charg'd him to be my friend as before, entreating us to embrace, which we immediately did. This being done, having begg'd Monſieur *d' Eſpernon*'s order to return to the Regiment, that I had much ado to leave, being intruſted with the care of it as I was, I took my leave, after having receiv'd particular marks of his being very well ſatisfy'd with me, as he himſelf openly declar'd.

VII. The year following, which was the year 1622, the King did not go into *Guyenne*, and only ſent thither Meſſieurs *d' Elbeuf* and *de Themines* to command the Army, which conſiſted of about twelve thouſand men; the Prince who commanded the reſt of the forces, ſtaying about the perſon of the King. The Rendezvous for the Army was the Plain

of

of *Marmande*, from whence we went to ſit down before *Tonins*, which was a little, but ſtrong place, held by the *Hugonots*, and of which Monſieur *de Monpouillan*, Son to the Marquis *de la Force*, and a very gallant man, was Governour. The Generals order'd three Attacks, of which each of them commanded one, and the third, which was on that ſide by the River, was commanded by Monſieur *de Pontague*, who was *Maiſtre de Camp*. The Regiment of *Picardy* was of the Attack of Monſieur *le Duc d' Elbeuf*, who had the brave *Vignoles* for his *Mareſchal de Camp*. The Trench being open'd, the Enemy began every day to make great Sallies, particularly on that ſide where they had a Half-Moon of great advantage to them, by reaſon that it very much favour'd their retreat; and theſe frequent Sallies thus made with ſo much advantage, extreamly incommoded the Beſiegers, and made us loſe a great many men. The Generals therefore reſolv'd to attack this Half-Moon at any rate, tho they knew it could not be done but with great loſs: and only ſtay'd till the next day, when the Regiments of *Picardy* and *Navarre*, that always marcht together, were to mount the Guard.

Monſieur *de Vignoles*, to whom I had the honour to be particularly known, had a deſign to make uſe of me in this occaſion; and not having found me where he came to give order about this attack, he came to ſeek me in my Tent, where I had ſtay'd behind ſick. He askt me what was the matter with me? when having told him my indiſpoſition, he knew ſo well how to excite me in point of honour, and engag'd me after ſo obliging a manner to ſhare in the glory of the attack they were reſolv'd to make upon this Half-moon the night following, that I could not handſomly excuſe my ſelf. For he aſſur'd me that the Duke *d' Elbeuf* had made choice of me to lead on the men to this aſſault, and abſolutely rely'd upon me; to which he added, that this enterprize being of the greateſt importance, he hop'd I would do all I poſſibly could to be there; and that in the mean time he would ſend me a Quilt into the Trench, whereon to take ſome repoſe till the hour of execution. I made anſwer that I was very ill of an Ague, but that ſince Monſieur *d' Elbeuf* and he commanded me, I would do the utmoſt I was able to come. Night being come, Orders were given for the attack, which was to begin on both ſides at once. The firſt, which was on the right hand, fell to my ſhare; and the other, which was on the left, to an Officer of the Regiment of *Navarre*.

This Half-moon being not fortify'd as ſuch places us'd to be, and the Parapet which was wont to be made with Earth, being only of Cask, which the Cannon had ſeveral times beaten down, but that had been ſtill repair'd, I ſaw very well that we could not gain it, but by entring by force of arms. Wherefore, having taken my meaſures about this affair, after that I had lined the Trench with good Muſqueteers, that fir'd very thick, I went with fifty Halberdeers to hook the Casks towards us, and pull them down. The Enemy at the ſame inſtant making uſe of the ſame artifice, hookt them alſo on their ſide with other Halberts, by which means each ſide pulling thus towards them, we could not pull them down; when I bethought me, ſeeing the Enemy pull with all their force, to hinder us from overturning theſe Barrels; to make uſe of them themſelves, and of their own reſiſtance, to make them do that which they did by no means intend. I therefore made all our Halberdeers on a ſudden leave pulling againſt them, and inſtead of drawing the Casks towards us as before, they on the contrary puſht them the other way,

and did it with ſo much violence, that they were immediately overturn'd upon the Enemy, of which ſome were overwhelm'd with them. So ſoon as we had by this means made a breach, we mounted, and by dint of Halberts, made our ſelves Maſters of the Half-moon, and alſo of the perſon of Monſieur *de Monpouillan*, who being come into this place, without knowing any thing of the attack, found himſelf engag'd in the Fight; and trapt under one of the Barrels that fell upon him, and from which he cou'd not diſengage himſelf, till I got to him, and took him Priſoner.

But our firſt good fortune was ſoon follow'd by a misfortune, and a ſtrange reverſe; for as we all held our ſelves very well aſſur'd of the ſucceſs of our Enterprize, above ſix hundred men being ſally'd out of the Town, came all on a ſudden to fall upon us, and gave us ſo brisk a charge, that we were conſtrained to abandon what we had already taken, and to retreat with all the ſpeed we could, without being able ſo much as to take our Priſoner along with us: for the Officer of *Navarre* who commanded the other attack, having fail'd to enter on his ſide, as we had done on ours, we found our ſelves too few to withſtand ſo great a number of men. And yet the advantage we had got ſo far aſtoniſh'd the Enemy, that after having ſeen themſelves thus forc'd, fearing they might be ſo again, themſelves overthrew all that remained of the Half-moon, that might have done them a great deal of miſchief if taken from them; and abſolutely quitted that Poſt.

VIII. I was commanded a few days after, to go diſcover a kind of advanc'd Baſtion, and ſeparate from the Town, that had been very much batter'd by our Cannon, and that did us a great deal of miſchief. No body at that time appear'd in it, and we thought we might have poſſeſt it with great eaſe, which made me go to it, as to a poſt that was as good as quitted: but ſo ſoon as ever I was got up, and that I went to look into the place, I felt my ſelf ſtruck with a great blow of a Scyth that was laid upon me, and that gave me a cut on the left ſhoulder of half a foot long. I was as much ſurpriz'd as ſtun'd with ſo unexpected a blow: but by good luck having a very good Buff-Coat, the Coat was only cut, and having born all the force of the blow it ſav'd my life, and my ſhoulder from being cut off, ſince ſo much force had not been requir'd to the cutting off that, as to the cutting of the Buff; and this blow I reciev'd from a little *Corps de Guard* of Eighteen or Twenty men, that were cover'd and retrench'd in this poſt. Upon the report I made to the Generals, they concluded to force the Baſtion, but the frequent Sallies the Enemy made almoſt every night, gave them not leiſure to do it; and they reciev'd in the mean time a diſpatch from Court, wherein they had word ſent, that the King was very impatient of the length of the Siege, of which he laid the whole fault upon them; and that he would ſend the Prince to command there. This news nettled them all to the quick, ſo that from that time forward they reſolv'd no more to obſerve any meaſures, nor to make the beſt of any thing; but either to periſh, together with the whole Army, or to carry the place before the Prince ſhould come up to them. They accordingly aſſaulted the Baſtion, which they took; but when they thought to lodge themſelves in the ditch, they had word brought, that the Enemy had that very night ſhipt ſix hundred men in Boats, which were ſlipt down the River without being perceiv'd by the *Corps de Guard*, which had been poſted to ſtop their way. Thus were they

they forc'd to content themſelves, with keeping what they had already got, till the ſuccours that Monſieur *de Parabelle*, Governour of *Poitou*, had promis'd, upon the news of the Enemies approach, who were marching under the conduct of Monſieur *de la Force*, ſhould come up to them.

IX. The Generals having had notice, that the beſieged were preparing to make a great Sally, and to make uſe of the advantage they had recieved, by the relief of ſix hundred men that were got into the Town; redoubled their Guards, and made ready to receive them; I crawl'd as well as I was able to my poſt, though ſome days before I had received a Musket-ſhot in my Thigh, and was not yet cur'd; for it was not fit, when every body elſe prepar'd to fight, to lye at eaſe at home, and a man eaſily forgets his infirmities in theſe occaſions, wherein one finds one's ſelf, as it were, animated with a new vigour. Being then advanc'd towards a quitted Half-moon, that look'd into the Town, I got up to it, and there ſaw by the light of the Moon, a great many men hurrying up and down in great haſte, by which I was aſſur'd that they were preparing for a Sally: Some Officers of my Companions, who had follow'd me ſaw the ſame, which made us return in all diligence to give notice of it to the Generals, and to all the *Corps de Guard*. About two hours after midnight they gave a Faulcon ſhot from the Town, for the ſignal; and the Enemy at the inſtant ſallied out of the Town in ſo great numbers, that inſtead of attacking the head of the Trench, as men commonly do; they aſſaulted it by the Flanks and the Tail, and ſtruck ſo great a terror into all the Guards, though prepar'd, that they overturn'd all our people one upon another. The Regiment of *Bourdeaux*, which lay a little on one ſide behind us, having given way, was beaten back upon my *Corps de Guard*; and forc'd me to retire after the beſt manner I could with part of my men, not being able no more than others, to ſtand firm againſt ſo many victorious People. I had a mind to have rallied with a Captain of our Regiment, a very brave man, called *Bonneuil*, whoſe lodgment was advanc'd even to the Graffe of the Town, and that had made a little pair of ſteps of Wood, by which he might eaſily recover the top; but being he had neglected to take the advice I had given him, to keep a Centinel always there, to watch the Souldiers from ſtealing away the ſteps to burn, I found him dead, together with moſt of his men; that having befallen him which I had foretold, he not having been able to retire when he wou'd, by thoſe ſteps which he found pull'd to pieces, by reaſon that the Souldiers had carried away moſt of the Wood to make fires; which by the way may make it appear, that though it be commonly ſaid, that ſome men are more fortunate than others; it may nevertheleſs often be attributed to the little foreſight of the unfortunate ſort, that ſometimes neglect means as eaſie as important to their preſervation.

The Enemy after having thus clear'd the Trench with all the lodgments, there poſted themſelves, with a deſign to ruin it; at which the Duke *d' Elbeuf* being enraged, reſolv'd to periſh or to drive them thence, and indeavouring to inſpire the Regiments with the ſame reſolution, who had thus loſt their Poſts, What Gentleman, ſaid he, has the Enemy thus beaten us from our Poſts, and taken from us in one night what we have been ſo long in gaining; and cannot we do in open day, as much as they have done by night? For my own part I am reſolv'd to drive them out, as quickly as they have driven us, or to loſe my life; and will take no longer time than 'tis to noon to do it in; and I doubt not but every one will follow

follow me, ſince every one is engaged in honor as well as I, and ought to be aſham'd to outlive ſuch an affront. Therefore Gentlemen, I have no other Order to give but this, that noon being come every one make to his Poſt, either to regain it or there to die. This ſhort Speech did ſo rouze their Spirits, and animated every one to that degree, that ſeeing themſelves inevitably diſhonour'd if they did not follow their General, and bravely ſecond his deſign; they effectually did it with ſo extraordinary vigour and reſolution; that in ſpite of the Enemies reſiſtance which was very great, they recover'd all their Poſts, and before night reſtor'd the Trenches and Works into the ſame condition that they were before.

X. During theſe vigorous attacks and defences, Mouſieur *de Parabelle* with ſix hundred Gentlemen arriv'd in the Camp, and Monſieur *de la Force* approach d alſo within two or three Leagues of the Town with four thouſand men. A Souldier returning late from forrage, diſcover'd the Enemy within half a league of the Camp. He gave notice of it, and immediately the body of the Army was commanded to that ſide; part of the Guard of the Trench was drawn off, and there was only left the old Regiments in which moſt confidence was repos d. The Enemy, either advertiz'd of the thing, or having foreſeen it, took this time to attack the guard of the Trench, with ſo much more advantage as it was ſo much weaker, and withal made the moſt furious Sally, that ever had been made till then. I was attackt at the poſt where I was, by an Officer who commanded about fifty men, all arm'd from head to foot; he came directly up to me with a Tuck he had in his hand, with which he gave me a thruſt, that he run me through and through; and did it at the ſame moment that I fir'd a Piſtol, which taking the default of his Arms, broke his Thigh, and made him fall backwards, without leaving his Sword nevertheleſs, which he drew out of my body. The Souldiers that accompany'd this Officer were ſo frighted to ſee him fall, that, victorious as they were, they retir'd above fifty paces; which gave me leiſure, not falling with the thruſt, as great as it was, to crawl along as well as I could, ſupported by a brave Souldier call'd *Mutonis*, to try to get to the bank of the River, which being of difficult acceſs, by reaſon of a very ſteep deſcent, that I muſt go down to arrive at, as it might ſecure me and ſave me from being taken; creeping thus and leaning upon my poor Souldier, a new misfortune befel us, that had like to have put us both into deſpair; which was a Musket ſhot, that *Mutonis* receiv'd in his arm. He had then almoſt as much need of help as I, and really it was a very ſad ſight, to ſee two men ſo cover'd over with their own blood, and both maim'd to have no other help, but that of one another. For my own part, ſuſtaining my ſelf with one hand upon that arm of this Souldier, that was not broken, I with the other ſtopt the fore part of my wound, from whence iſſued a great deal of blood.

It will doubtleſs appear incredible, how, in the condition we then were, we could attempt to recover the bank of the River, to which I have deſcribed the acceſs to be ſo difficult, even to ſound and vigorous perſons. But what will not the love of liberty and life make men do? And why ſhould it be a wonder, that God, who determin'd to do us both, without compariſon, much greater graces, ſhould bring us off from this, as well as ſeveral other dangers, to guide us to the place he had predeſtin'd, after long wandrings and very crooked ways; For he at laſt withdrew this poor Fellow, as well as my ſelf from the Army, and inſpir'd

him

him to embrace a private and altogether christian life, where he meditated nothing but his Salvation; in the prospect whereof he desired to become a *Chartreux*, tho they would not admit him by reason of his arm, that he remain'd lame of his Musquet shot.

Being then reduc'd to the inevitable necessity, either to be knockt o'th' head by the Enemy, or beaten to pieces by the fall we were to have in rowling from the top of the hill to the bottom, because we could not go down upright in the condition we were, after having disputed which of the two we should choose, we resolv'd at last rather to give our selves up into the hands of God, than to fall into those of men. Thus having recommended our selves to his holy protection, we let our selves tumble from the top of this Hill to the bottom (and (God visibly assisting us) the thing being humanely impossible, we got up, and by the help of one another march'd as before to recover our Quarters. In the way, which was all along by the River side, we found an Officer of our Regiment very much wounded, called *L'Anglade*; and presently another called *Miranne* of the same Regiment, who seeing me cry'd out, Monsieur *de Pontis* I am dying, have pity on me. To whom I made answer, I am dying my self too, my poor Friend, and stand in as much need of help as any one; but where are you hurt? To which having reply'd, that he knew not where, but that he was about to expire; I thought that being arm'd it might peradventure be his arms, that stifled him; so taking his Sword from his side, as well as I cou'd, I cut the leathers of his arms, and let them fall off him, which I had no sooner done, but that he began to breathe at liberty, and to come to himself; for he was so squeez'd in these arms, being fall'n upon them in coming down the Hill, that they stifled him; and thus God gave me yet strength enough to save this Officers life, when I was in as much danger of losing my own.

Being at last arrived at the Camp, we were carried to *Marmande*, where some of the Enemies Souldiers that had been taken Prisoners, and who belike had been present at the occasion where I had been wounded, told me that the Officer with whom I had had to do, was at least as ill as I, having his Thigh-bone broke, and that his name was *Feron*. This news did surprize and afflict me at once, because he was my intimate Friend, and that we had formerly been Comrades together in the Guards. I had not known him in the fight, but immediately sent a Drum to inquire how he did, and to let him know how sorry I was to have encounter'd him. *Feron* was no less surpriz'd than I, to understand that I was the man to whom he had given so desperate a thrust; and having return'd an answer with the same sentiments of civility and grief, concerning what had befallen me, he sent the next day also to enquire how I did; and we continu'd the same kindness on both sides, so long as we were near another, which linck'd us faster than before, and encreas'd our old Friendships, which we have preserv'd to this day. From *Marmande* I was afterwards remov'd to *Toulouse*, where I verily thought I should dye, as well of my Wound, as of a burning Feaver that was added to it. I requested and received all the Sacraments, and being willing to reward two Servants that I had, I bid them divide my Cabinets betwixt them so soon as I was dead. These Fellows were both of them so good natur'd, and had so great an affection for me, that the prospect of so considerable a gain, could not comfort them for the much greater loss they conceiv'd they shou'd undergo in losing me. And indeed they were overjoy'd, when the fourth day of my Feaver I had a Crisis, that seem'd at first to threaten

my death, but that turn'd to my cure; for in few days I was cur'd of my Feaver, but not of my Wound, which was above ſix months in cloſing, ſo as that I could march, and that was not wholly heal'd till ſome years after.

XI. Being come to *Rabaſtins*, which was the winter quarters, I receiv'd a Letter from Monſieur *Zamet*, wherein he ſent me word, that being it was the Kings pleaſure to have him nearer his perſon, he was oblig'd to put off his Regiment, and was now in treaty with Monſieur *de Liancour* about it; that this news, which peradventure might ſurprize me, ought not nevertheleſs to afflict me, ſeeing that changing his Command, he did not alter his diſpoſition towards me; and that he ſhould be in a better condition to ſerve me, being nearer the King, from whom I was to expect the reward of my ſervices.

I muſt confeſs, that this Letter was to me a more violent and more ſenſible blow, than that of which I was ſo lately cur'd. The exceſs of grief I felt put me in as great danger of death; and I could not ſee, without being afflicted beyond meaſure, that the perſon to whom I had ſo particularly united my ſelf, and for whom I voluntarily quitted a Company in the Regiment of *Champagne*, and was moreover ready to abandon all I had in the world, ſhould diveſt himſelf of the Regiment that united us, and kept us together, during the whole Campaign; for I very well foreſaw, that I remaining in this body, and Monſieur *Zamet* being with the King, I could no more have the happineſs of poſſeſſing him as before. And he alſo very well foreſeeing how averſe I would be to this buſineſs, would not write me word of it, till firſt the buſineſs was concluded with Monſieur *de Liancour*, into whom he endeavour'd to inſpire the ſame ſentiments of eſteem and friendſhip for me, that he himſelf had. The anſwer I return'd him in the height of my grief was, that ſeeing he quitted the Regiment, I entreated that he would give me leave to quit it too, to follow him in all places wherever he went, having devoted to him both my perſon and my life. But he writ back preſently again, with great earneſtneſs to entreat me to continue in my Command, proteſting that I ſhould oblige him more, and ſhould manifeſt my affection to him better if I ſtay'd in the Regiment, than if I ſhould come to him. Adding withal, that it was not yet time, but when that time ſhould come, he would not fail to advertize me, that this outward ſeparation would not hinder us from being as much united as before; and that he hop'd it would not be long before he ſhould ſee me again.

This Letter gave me ſome comfort, tho I was extremely afflicted, when I conſider'd that I was no more Lieutenant to him, for whom I had quitted all. In the bargain that Monſieur *Zamet* made with Monſieur *de Liancour*, he made me ſhare, without my dreaming of any ſuch thing; in the quitting of his Command having told him, that he did not part with his Regiment to him for two and twenty thouſand Crowns, but upon condition that he ſhould over and above give a thouſand more to his Lieutenant. And accordingly I receiv'd the ſaid ſumm of Monſieur *de Liancour*; who being come to *Rabaſtins* to take poſſeſſion of the Regiment, gave me great teſtimonies of kindneſs, nay more, of friendſhip and confidence; aſſuring me, that if I did not find in him all the qualities of Monſieur *Zamet*, I might at leaſt expect a true and perfect friendſhip; entreating me to proceed with him upon this promiſe; and added, that being he could not at preſent give a more manifeſt proof of the

truſt

truſt he repoſed in me, he deſir'd I would aſſiſt him in his initiations; where he confeſt he had need by the experience of others to ſupply the defect of his own. He could not poſſibly have proceeded after a more civil and obliging faſhion, and I reply'd with all the ſubmiſſion and acknowledgment that was due to ſo obliging a complement.

The firſt Siege of this Campaign was a little Town call'd *Sainte Foy*, which was carried by aſſault; and where Monſieur *de Liancour* did wonders in his own perſon, having firſt leapt a great Ditch, where many others were left behind, who could not leap it as he did. This young Lord was extreamly brave, and manifeſted an extraordinary Courage, but being he had never before commanded at the head of a Regiment, and that I ſaw him advance too far, I did what I could to reſtrain him; but his Courage would carry it againſt me, and forc'd him on.

After the taking of *Sainte Foy*, the Army marcht directly to *Saint Antonin*, where the King would himſelf be in perſon. This Town was attackt without Trenches, and we preſently came to handy blows, which occaſion'd a furious fight, for the Beſieged defended themſelves with great vigour. Our Regiment was not commanded on upon the attack, being reſerved to attend the Enemies relief, which was ſaid to be near at hand, but that however never appear'd, ſo the Town was taken: There it was that Monſieur *de Saint Preuil* was receiv'd Collonel Enſign of the Regiment of *Picardy*; he, whom his fortune and misfortune have ſince rendred famous enough. I contracted ſo great a Friendſhip with him, that we did always eat together, and had but one Bed, and I can honeſtly ſay, that I at that time ſtood him in the ſtead of a Brother, and a true Friend.

XII. The King came afterward with all his Army before *Negrepelice*, having longingly deſired for above a year, to ſee himſelf once in a condition to puniſh, as he did, the barbarous and inhumane treachery, that this Town had exerciſed upon four hundred men of the Regiment of *Vaillac*, that had been there plac'd in Garriſon the Winter before; all whoſe Throats the Inhabitants had cut in one night. This Prince, from the firſt moment that he receiv'd the news, had openly declar'd, that he would chaſtiſe them all after the ſame manner, and would not pardon any one of them whatever. So that the year following, after he had taken the two or three fore-nam'd little places, he came before this. He had, for Lieutenant Generals of his Army, Monſieur *le Prince*, Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*, and Meſſieurs *de Themines* and *de Saint Geran*. The King himſelf in perſon order'd all the Quarters, and the Attacks, which he caus'd to be given to the two extremities of the Town; it not being his pleaſure that they ſhould loſe time in diſcovering it, nor in opening Trenches, but that they ſhould go on directly to the Aſſault, without giving them leiſure to look about them; both becauſe the Town was not ſo ſtrong that Trenches were abſolutely neceſſary, and that, on the other ſide, the impatience he was in to puniſh them according to their deſert, did not permit him to go a longer, tho a ſafer way to work.

The Army, drawn up in Battaile, was put into two diviſions, for the two Attacks; and all things being in a readineſs, the Generals ſent me to the King about noon to receive the laſt Orders, which he had commanded ſhould be taken from his own mouth before the Aſſault. I found him in a paltry thatcht Cottage, where a man was almoſt choakt in the ſmoak, and where he was conſtrain'd to ſhut himſelf up, becauſe he found himſelf

himſelf indiſpos'd: Having told him, that the Lieutenant Generals had ſent me to aſſure his Majeſty that all things were in order, as he had commanded, and that they waited for his laſt order; This is it, ſaid he, that they attack the Town, as I ſaid, at both ends of it; and that you are all of you to have ſome white thing ty'd in your Hatbands, leſt meeting in the Town you ſhould kill one another: For I charge you that you give no quarter to any one whatever, becauſe they have provok'd me to the laſt degree, and deſerve to be us'd as they have handled others. I return'd to carry back this Order, and every one having ty'd a Handkerchief in his Hat, the aſſault was given; which continued ſome hours, in diſputing the Out-works, and the entrance into the Gate, which they defended very bravely, fighting with extraordinary valour. But at laſt they were forc'd on both ſides, and retir'd fighting into a corner of the City, where they call'd out for Quarter, which being deny'd them, they cry'd out, Well, we muſt dye, but we will dye like men of honour, and ſell our lives very dear. In effect, they maintain'd the fight with ſo much obſtinacy, that they kill'd a great many of our men, and defended themſelves to the laſt man, not parting with their Arms, till they parted with their Lives. And this example ought methinks to moderate a little the juſt indignation of Princes upon theſe occaſions, where tho they might reaſonably incline to puniſh many guilty perſons, yet they might at leaſt pardon ſome few, if but to ſpare many faithful Souldiers, who are thus knockt o'th' head by Rebels.

At the end of this ſlaughter, the Souldiers fell to plundering, and to catching up all the women they could meet; when I, being at the head of the Regiment, ſaw a moſt beautiful Virgin, of about ſeventeen or eighteen years of age, come running in great haſte out of a houſe that had not yet been enter'd, and throwing her ſelf at my feet, entreated that I would ſave her honour and her life: I gave her my word ſo to do, aſſuring her, that I would ſooner loſe my own life, than to ſuffer that either the one or the other ſhould be taken from her. To this end I would have had her guarded by me by four or five Souldiers, but ſhe thought ſhe was not ſafe unleſs ſhe held me by the skirt of the Doublet. In this poſture I walkt her through the Town, where ſhe was ſeen by part of the Officers of the Army, of which ſome were ſo inſolent as to dare to demand her; others importun'd me to deliver her into their hands, which inforc'd me to come to high words with them; chuſing rather to have them for my enemies, than to betray my word, and the juſtice I conceiv'd was due to a vertuous Maid, who had importun'd my protection. I conducted her after this manner to my Hutt. Her parents were of the beſt of the Town, whereof her Father was Miniſter; and it fell out, by the greateſt good fortune in the world for them, that they were that day at a houſe they had in the Country, having left their Daughter in the Town to look to the houſe. Seeing my ſelf importun'd afreſh by the ſollicitations of ſeveral perſons, ſome whereof boaſted themſelves to be the principal men of the Army, I conſider'd of all poſſible means to conceal her, till I could reſtore her into her Father and Mothers hands, that both they and I might be deliver'd from the fear of the continual danger to which ſhe was expos'd. But ſeeing this could not eaſily be done in a Camp, where there was nothing but Hutts, and where I knew there was ſo little fidelity, I bethought me at laſt of as odd a way as can poſſibly be imagin'd, and that may ſeem incredible to many. The beſt places to hide ones ſelf in being ſometimes not the moſt private

corners,

corners, but thoſe which are leaſt ſuſpected by being moſt in ſight; I conceiv'd that a great Heifer, which I had caus'd to be kill'd the day before, and which was yet hanging entire from the top to the bottom of my Hutt, might very well ſerve my purpoſe. I therefore turn'd the belly ſide towards the wall, and put my Priſoner into the body of the Beaſt, to try if ſhe might there ſtand unſeen. The thing ſucceeded marvellouſly well, for the fear of ſo imminent a danger aſſiſting to make her fit herſelf to that little room, which was the only place where ſhe could be ſafe; did there ſo leſſen and contract her ſelf, that ſhe was not to be ſeen at all. I therefore told this young maid, that ſo oft as ſhe heard any one knock at the door, ſhe ſhould run and hide her ſelf there, that ſhe might not be too much incommodated by being always there. And it happen'd, almoſt as ſoon as I had tryed this invention, that ſome General Officers, under colour of viſiting the Camp, came to knock at my Hutt. So ſoon as they were come in, they acquainted me with the true reaſon of their coming, and importun'd me to let them ſee her, who fell into my hands; but I anſwer'd them with ſo great freedom, having given them leave to look round my Hutt, where they ſaw nothing but the Heifer hanging up by the heels; that they went away very well ſatisfied that ſhe was no longer in my cuſtody. It would be to no purpoſe to ſpeak of all the reſt, who as confidently ſwallow'd the banter, and who after having been there, return'd ſeeing nothing but the Heifer hanging in the roof.

But the affair went further, and being come to the King's ear, he ſent for me to him. Being aſſur'd of my Servants, whoſe affection and fidelity were ſufficiently known to me, I entruſted them with the Guard of my Priſoner, giving them charge to be always without the door of my Hutt, to tell every body, that I was gone abroad, and to hinder any one whoever from entering in. So ſoon as I came into the King's preſence, he askt me if what he had heard, that I had a very beautiful Maid in my cuſtody was true. Whereupon I who had never conceal'd any thing from my Prince, gave him a true account of the whole buſineſs, as all things had paſt, to the very moment that I came from my Hutt. At which the King looking me full in the face, ſaid to me; And haſt thou honeſtly kept thy word? I then ſwore to him in the preſence of God, and his Majeſty, that I had: Upon which the King ſaid to me again; I am exceedingly pleas'd with thee for it, and eſteem thee a hundred times the more; finiſh what thou haſt ſo well begun, for it is one of the worthieſt actions thou canſt ever do whil'ſt thou liv'ſt, and that I ſhall look upon as one of the beſt ſervices thou haſt ever done me. If any one ſhall by chance diſcover her, and ſollicit thee to have her, tell him the Order thou haſt receiv'd from me to preſerve her, and that 'tis I my ſelf who have given thee charge of her. I then entreated his Majeſty, that he would permit me to ſend a Drum to her Father, who liv'd four or five Leagues from the Camp, that I might reſtore her to him ſo ſoon as I could. This Requeſt, which juſtified the ſincerity wherewith I acted, mightily pleas'd the King, who told me, that he gave me leave ſo to do with all his heart; and that I could not do better.

I took my leave of his Majeſty, and making haſte to return to my Hutt, where I found all things well, I advis'd the Maid to write a Letter to her Father, therein to ſend him word, that he ſhould come fetch her at a certain place I nam'd to her, and to aſſure him, that the Drum, who brought him the Letter, ſhould ſafely conduct him to the place, where ſhe and I would not fail to be. She accordingly writ the Letter, which contain'd

in few words, what I had dictated to her, leaving it to her at their meeting, to tell him by word of mouth the whole Story of the ſtate wherein ſhe had been, and from which I had redeem'd her. The Father and Mother receiv'd this news with ſuch joy, as one may better conceive than expreſs; and were ſoon at the appointed place, where I exactly met them with their Daughter; and where, delivering her into their hands, I proteſted to them that I had preſerv'd her at the peril of my own life, as if ſhe had been my own Child; aſſuring them withal, that I thought my ſelf very happy, that God had given me the opportunity of reſcuing a young Virgin from ſo inevitable a danger. They would acknowledge this favour, and made me an offer of all that ever they had in recompence of the precious preſent I made them, in reſtoring their Daughter, whom they gave for loſt. But I contented my ſelf with their friendſhip, telling them that I thought my ſelf over rewarded in having ſav'd their daughters honour. But I was not yet got back to my Hutt, when I ſaw behind two Horſes that came after me laden with Fowl and other ſorts of proviſion. The man that brought them told me that his Maſter ſent them to me, conjuring me at leaſt to accept of that ſmall preſent, which he was almoſt aſham'd to offer me. I could not civilly refuſe this preſent, for fear of putting him too much out of countenance that ſent it, and only told the Servant that brought it, that I deſir'd him to let his Maſter know that I had accepted it, that I might not diſoblige him, and that I return'd him my thanks. They have ever ſince been mindful of the obligation; and travelling five or ſix months after through the Village where the Father of the Maid liv'd, and going to give him a viſit, the poor Girl was ſo tranſported with joy to ſee me, that ſhe clung about my knees, and would not leave me; being then ſo much the more ſenſible of the obligation ſhe had to me, as ſhe was now more her ſelf, than in the other occaſion; and ſaying in the preſence of her Father and Mother, that ſhe lookt upon me as another Father and Mother, ſeeing I had preſerv'd both her life and her honour.

But as I did after this manner ſave this Maids honour, whoſe beauty expos'd her to ſo great peril; ſo I ought not to conceal an heroick action done by one, whoſe name was *Roger*, firſt Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to the King in this occaſion of the ſack of *Negrepelice*. This man, who was very generous and very honeſt, ſeeing the Souldiers carrying away a great many Women and Virgins, preſently ran up to them with a purſe full of Piſtoles, and cheapning one for one Piſtole, another for two, and another for three, and going after this manner through all the ſtreets of the Town, he bought to the number of forty, which he carry'd to the Kings Quarters, where he plac'd them in ſafety, and from thence ſent them home to their own habitations, ſo ſoon as the Army was withdrawn.

XIII. The King being return'd to *Paris* after the ruin of *Negrepelice*, the Army blockt up a little Town call'd *Sonniere*, which we reſolv'd to carry by Aſſault. We therefore attackt the *Fauxbourg*, wherein was the principal defence; and Monſieur *de Liancour* being at the head of his Regiment, puſht the firſt of the Enemy with ſo much vigour and fury, as compell'd them to give way, to abandon the defence of the Gate, and to retire into the corners of the ſtreets, and into the houſes. But being they were there under covert, and that firing thence continually upon us, they kill'd a great many men, where we were in the open ſtreet,

I be-

I bethought my ſelf of an invention that depriv'd them of part of their advantage, in cauſing the Souldiers to carry many Counterpains and Blankets hung upon the ends of two Poles, behind which thoſe that march'd were conceal'd from the ſight of the Enemy, ſo that having no aim at us, they hardly ſhot but at random and in vain. Yet could not this ſo hinder nevertheleſs, but that one of my intimate Friends called *Roquelaure*, a very good Souldier, and a very brave man, who had been a General in the *Venetians* Army, was killed, in a place where a man would have thought he had been abſolutely ſecure. He ſerved at this time in the King's Army, in the quality of Mareſchal *de Camp*, and commanded the attack, when the Regiment of *Picardy* went on to the aſſault, having always Monſieur *de Liancour* and me by his ſide. Being now Maſters of the Town, and there only remaining ſome Runaways that yet made ſome ſhots in the Air, he told me he was ſo thirſty, that he was able to do no more, and that he ſhould certainly dye, unleſs he had ſomething to drink. I ran preſently to fetch a Flagon, that I commonly made a Souldier carry by his ſide for ſuch extremities; and *Roquelaure* taking the Flagon, enter'd into a houſe to be more out of danger. But it was there that Fate expected him, and it very well appear'd, that all the foreſight of man is vain, againſt the ſtroaks of Providence; for when I was in this Houſe cloſe by him, ſtaying till he had drank, that I might drink too; as he had the Flaggon at his mouth there came a Muſquet Bullet, which hitting upon the Mullion of the Window, and being reſiſted by the Stone, by a ſtrange glance ſtruck full into the head of *Roquelaure*, who fell ſtone dead at my feet, and made me almoſt fall upon him by endeavouring to hold him up. This accident ſo little foreſeen did doubtleſs much more ſenſibly ſtrike me, than if I had ſeen him fall in the Fight; where a man expects to be kill'd himſelf, or ſee thoſe fall whom he moſt loves. I did intirely love this man, and I can ſay, that he had an equal love for me, having ſaid to me at the beginning of the Campaign, that if he ſhould chance to be kill'd, he entreated I would accept of his equipage, to put me ſometimes in mind of my Friend. I doubtleſs ſtood in no need of that to remember him, loving all my Friends from the bottom of my heart, and having not been accuſtomed to borrow from theſe exterior teſtimonies the remembrance I have of their Friendſhip. I could not nevertheleſs avoid this preſent he had made me, being unwilling to diſoblige his Kindred, who would by all means perform the Will of the dead, and compell'd me to accept it.

XIV. *Lunet*, which is but a little pitiful weak place, having ſurrendred upon compoſition, after the taking of *Sonniere* the Army marcht, without any ones knowing whither it was deſign'd to go, and paſt by a little Bourg, wherein there was a kind of Fort into which a great many *Hugonots* had withdrawn themſelves, very well reſolv'd to defend the place: Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* did not think it worth his while to ſtay there, deſpiſing the place as too inconſiderable, and ſo continued the march of the Army. The honeſt men within thought they might make their advantage of our paſſing thus by without attacking them, and hoping to get ſome booty, and elevated with their good fortune, reſolv'd to ſally, and to fall upon the Rear of the Army. I was at that time in the Van, and being aware of them, and having ſhew'd them to Monſieur *de Cerillac*, our Lieutenant Collonel, I told him, that if he would give me leave, I thought I could cut off their retreat, and with threeſcore men make my ſelf Maſter of their Gate before they could return. The propoſal pleas'd him very

very well, and he gave me leave to do what I would; which he had no ſooner done, but that with threeſcore choſen men I ſlipt along through a Ditch, that conceal'd us from the Skirmiſhers, when they thought of nothing but the Rear of the Army, and not of the Head, which they knew to be far enough off; and ſo finding themſelves on a ſudden ſurpriz'd, and their Retreat intercepted, from that part whence they leaſt ſuſpected any ſuch thing, they began to run full drive toward their Gate; but they could not get thither before me, ſo that we enter'd pell-mell with them, and my Souldiers being better acquainted with this kind of work, than this ſort of Rabble, we had no great ado to force them to give way, and to make our ſelves abſolute Maſters of the Gate. I there left ten Souldiers to guard that, and went with the other fifty to charge the reſt of the Bourg, who were ſo frighted with this ſurprize, that they made no manner of reſiſtance.

After having diſarm'd and turn'd out all the men that were to be fear'd, and let the reſt alone without giving my ſelf any trouble with them. I ſent to acquaint Monſieur *de Cerillac* with the ſucceſs of my enterprize, and to entreat him to give Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* an account of the ſame, that I might know what Order he would pleaſe to give about this Bourg. Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* ſent a Gentleman to command me from him, to raze the place to the ground before I left it. I receiv'd this Order with all due ſubmiſſion; but fearing leſt this affair might one day be laid in my Diſh, I entreated the Gentleman not to take it ill, if I deſir'd him to tell Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*, that I durſt not well raze the place, without firſt having his Order in Writing. This Gentleman forſooth, ſtanding upon the punctilio of honour, briskly reply'd, that the word he brought me from Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*, was doubtleſs as good as a Letter. 'Tis true, Sir, ſaid I, in things where the queſtion only is, whither they are true or falſe, but not in an affair like this, where for my own indemnity it is requiſite the word ſhould remain, and ſubſiſt, which it cannot do but in writing; and therefore do not take it ill I beſeech you, if I entreat you to let Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* know, that I never diſmantle nor burn any place, without having firſt a written Order to do it. I thought I had ſufficiently explain'd my ſelf, to give this Gentleman to underſtand, that I did not doubt of the truth of his report, but that I look'd after my own ſecurity for the future; but he took the higheſt offence imaginable, and would make it a particular quarrel: whereupon I told him, that nothing was farther from my thoughts, than to offend him in the leaſt; but that alſo he ought not to engage me in an ill buſineſs, in making a point of honor of a thing that was nothing ſo, and that I was very well aſſur'd if he himſelf was in my place, he was a man of too much underſtanding, not to take the ſame meaſures and precautions that I did. Being then ſatisfied with my anſwer, he went back to Monſieur *d Angouleſme*, who immediately ſent me a Ticket in theſe words.

This is to give Order to raze and burn the Fortifications and principal Houſes of Cabos, *it being a place that ſerves for a Retirement to the King's Enemies, and therefore abſolutely neceſſary for his Majeſtics Service.*

D' Angouleſme.

After

After having receiv'd this Order, I commanded the Inhabitants to carry away what they would, and ſent to proclaim in the neighbouring Villages, that it was free for every one to come and take what they thought fit, upon condition that they ſhould raze the Fortifications, or burn what could not be pull'd down. This work laſted two whole days, at the end of which I came back to the Army.

XV. This precaution, which I thought fit to make uſe of, before I pull'd down this Caſtle, was of great uſe to me in the conſequence; and it well appear'd, that it is good to think of the future in the preſent time, and to foreſee, during the time of War, what may happen in the times of Peace. For ſome years after, a Receiver General of *Guyenne*, who had a part of his eſtate in *Cabos*, and to whom the houſes appertain'd, that I had demoliſht and burnt, came and made his complaint to the Chamber of accounts, that he could not produce his Acquittances and Accounts, being that all his Papers had been burnt by one called *de Pontis*, that during the War had plundred and burnt the Town; and who was at preſent a Lieutenant in the Guards; requiring that he might be permitted to proſecute him, to compel him to reſtore all things to the eſtate they were in before: The affair was carry'd to the Parliament, where I was inform'd againſt, and where a Decree paſt againſt me. But I not appearing, I was ſummon'd at the ſound of Trumpet, and a Proceſs iſſu'd out againſt me for Contempt. In this extremity, to which I was on a ſudden reduc'd, for ſerving the King, I went to his Majeſty, and having acquainted him with my buſineſs, told him, that I was very well aſſured Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* had given me his Order in writing, and that I had ſtiffly inſiſted to have it, but that I could not call to mind where I had laid that Paper. The King then bid me go to Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*, and to entreat from him a note of his hand, that ſhould ſignifie that it was he who had commanded me to demoliſh the Caſtle. But Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* making it a matter of mirth, and turning it into raillery, told me he remember'd nothing of it, and that he would not give me a note of his hand.

With this anſwer I came back to the King, who ſeem'd to be very much ſurpriz'd at Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*'s anſwer, and told me, that he would order me to have an act of oblivion. I muſt confeſs that word ſtruck to my heart, not being able to endure that they ſhould treat what I had done by the expreſs Order of the General, like a crime that deſerv'd remiſſion. I moſt humbly thankt his Majeſty, telling him, that I would not make uſe of what he was pleas'd to offer me, but in the laſt neceſſity, and that I would once more ſearch my Papers. But I know not how, it always fell out, that in the precipitation wherein I then was, this Paper being lapt in another, fell divers times into my hands, and never was diſcover'd by me. Seeing my ſelf then reduc'd to ſuch a condition, that I no more dar'd to ſhew my head, and being forc'd to walk the ſtreets by night only, I went again to the King, who ſaid that ſince Monſieur *d' Angouleſme* deny'd me the juſtice I demanded of him, he would have me take Letters of Abolition. But it is moſt true, that I could not hear the word Abolition without being quite beſides my ſelf; and I confeſs I had a ſecret ſpite in the bottom of my heart, believing that this Prince, who was ſatisfy'd of my innocency, ought to have done ſomething more for me upon this occaſion. I could not therefore yet prevail upon my ſelf to have recourſe to theſe Letters, which in abſolving at the ſame time

made me appear guilty. I therefore again fell to ranſacking all my Papers, and at laſt had the good fortune to find that, which my haſte before had till then made me overlook. And thus, by the Kings order, carry'd to the Parliament that which ſerv'd for my juſtification. I made my innocency appear, and was at the ſame time diſcharg'd from all farther proſecution. Monſieur *d' Angoúleſme* hearing of it, did nothing but laugh, ſaying only that I had been once frighted in my life; ſuch is the conduct, and ſuch are the railleries of great perſons, who value themſelves upon looking unconcern'd upon the misfortunes, into which they not only ſee the meaner men fall, but into which they make them fall, as if they thought it below them to ſhare therein. And this example makes it appear, that a man cannot fail in always dealing cautiouſly with them, ſeeing they eaſily engage men in danger, and as eaſily leave them in it when they are engaged.

The End of the Fourth Book.

BOOK

BOOK V.

Several Circumſtances of the Siege of Montpellier. *Monſieur* Zamet, *Mareſchal* de Camp *is wounded to death. An excellent Diſcourſe of his to the Sieur* de Pontis, *upon the Miſeries of this Life; and upon an Exceſs he had committed upon the Enemy, out of love to him. The Sieur* de Pontis *is himſelf wounded, and like to dye; what paſt betwixt him, the Surgeons, and ſome Religious Perſons, that came to aſſiſt him. The King makes him a Lieutenant in his Guards and makes uſe of him for the Re-eſtabliſhment of military Diſcipline in the Regiment.*

I. TO proceed in the courſe of our Hiſtory, (which I have digreſt from, in the account I have given of the unjuſt proſecution, that the demoliſhing the Caſtle of *Cabos* brought upon me.) The Kings Army, having taken a great many other little places, towards the middle of Summer drew near to *Montpellier*, and ſate down before it, which Army at that time conſiſted of twenty thouſand men. The King was there in perſon, and had for his Lieutenant Generals, Monſieur *le Prince*, and Meſſieurs *de Montmorency* and *de Schomberg*. Monſieur *de Chevreuſe* was there alſo, but he was not much employ'd, and Monſieur *de Leſdiguieres* came thither towards the end. They made three Attacks, the firſt whereof was that of the King, commanded by the Prince; the ſecond, that of Monſieur *de Montmorency*; and the third, that of Monſieur *de Schomberg*. The Regiment of *Picardy* was in this laſt, Monſieur *de Schomberg* always making ſuit to have it, both becauſe of Monſieur *de Liancour* his Son-in-law, as alſo out of the eſteem he had for that Regiment. Monſieur *de Rohan* was ſhut up in the place, with a little body of an Army, that was inſtead of a Garriſon. The firſt Sally they made was on the ſide of a Half-Moon, that was over againſt Monſieur *de Schomberg*'s Attack, and that was very well cover'd with their Out-works, becauſe they had cover'd the Bulwarks very cloſe, and that the Mounts of Earth which they had rais'd were ſuch, as the Fortification was not to be ſeen. The Duke of *Fronſac*, who ſerved there in the quality of a Volunteer, was kill'd in this Sally.

II. Monſieur *de Schomberg*, judging that it was of the laſt importance to force this Half-Moon, propos'd the enterprize to the King, who thereupon call'd a Council, wherein it was reſolv'd to cauſe it to be diſcover'd. They accordingly ſent thither ſeveral Officers one after another, who brought word that there was only a Ditch full of Water, and a Palliſado of plain'd Timber beyond the Ditch. Monſieur *de Schomberg* deſiring to be yet better ſatisfy'd, and remembring the ſervice I had done him before *Montauban* in the like occaſion, put me upon the employment of going again to diſcover this Half-Moon; adding to this Order of his, a thouſand civilities and complements, to encourage me to go to have my

Brains

Brains beaten out. I told him, that not to omit the leaſt thing, or at leaſt that what I had ſeen might not be uſeleſs to him, in caſe I ſhouid be kill'd, I would carry my Tablets along with me, wherein I would write every thing as I advanc'd, and that he ſhould only take care to have them brought off to him.

I arm'd my ſelf as at *Montauban*, with a Cuiraſs and a Cask; and paſſing over the Trench about noon, I gave notice to the Guard, which was of the Regiment of *Navarre*, that I had order to go to diſcover the place, and that therefore they ſhould have a care not to miſtake me. After this, I crawl'd up a great Mount the Enemy had caſt up, to retrench themſelves with; and having ſeen what the other Officers had diſcover'd before, namely, the Ditch full of Water, and the Palliſado beyond the Ditch, I would try if I could not diſcover ſomething more: Wherefore expoſing my ſelf to extream peril, I advanc'd and mounted higher, from whence with great aſtoniſhment I ſaw another Palliſado like the firſt, betwixt the Ditch and me, and which appear'd almoſt incredible to me my ſelf, a ſecond Half-moon enclos'd within the great one, as ſtrong, and of the ſame form as that which enclos'd it. I look't upon it over and over again, not being able almoſt to believe my own Eyes, and ſet every thing exactly down in my Tablets. But when I was got down again to return, I had not gone a hundred paces before I began to conſider, that poſſibly they might laugh at my report; and fearing, as indeed it fell out, that I ſhould be look'd upon as a Viſionary, whom fear had made to ſee what was not, I reſolv'd to go back again, yet nearer hand to aſſure my ſelf of the truth of things, and to ſee if I could not obſerve ſome place, from whence, as at *Montauban*, I might make the King's own Eyes witneſſes of what I ſhould tell him. I return'd then with this deſign, and went ſtraight to the very top of the retrenchment, where I could not long ſtay, by reaſon of a Centinel of the Enemy, who was not above thirty paces diſtant from me on the other ſide; and who having let fly at me, gave a great Alarm to the *Corps de Guards*, who immediately ſtood to their arms, and all fir'd upon me. But the ſame inſtant that I was aſſur'd of what I deſir'd, I threw my ſelf from the top to the bottom, and came to Monſieur *de Schomberg*'s Quarter, who had already given all the neceſſary orders for the Attack.

Monſieur *de Schomberg* took me immediately aſide into a corner of his Tent, where I made him my report; and ſeeing him ſeem hard to perſwade himſelf to believe me, concerning the ſecond Half-moon of which I have ſpoke before, after all the aſſurances I could give him, we went together to the King; who preſently began to ſmile, and fall to rallying me, as I had very well foreſeen. *Did ever any one hear of ſuch a thing, and is there any likelihood in it?* I then entreated his Majeſty, that he would pleaſe to believe his own eyes, aſſuring him, that I would make him ſee the truth of what I had ſaid, from a place that was not far off: I carried him to the place, from which both himſelf, and Monſieur *de Schomberg*, were ſatisfied of the truth of my report. But what ſhall we do? ſaid the King then; All the orders are already given, do you believe, ſaid he, that we cannot force the Enemy from their Poſt? I believe not, Sir, ſaid I, both by reaſon of theſe Palliſado's, theſe Ditches, and the great number of men by which they are guarded; and that it would certainly be too much to attempt to take them all at once, but that it would be much better to take them one after another.

Upon this one of the Generals, came and whiſper'd to the King, do

you

you think, Sir, this Officer has not a mind to save his own Regiment, which has the head of the Attack? you must keep him back, and employ others, for when a leading Officer goes on without hoping well, it never succeeds. I heard every word he said, being near enough; and heard the King make answer, that he knew very well it was not that, which made me to speak after that manner, adding withal, that nevertheless he might do as he said. But the deference the King had for this General's advice cost his Army very dear. Being then sensibly wounded to see my self look'd upon as a Visionary, and a Coward, I entreated his Majesty with great instances, not to let the all Regiment have this affront put upon them, to be deprived of the honour they were wont to have, of going on first upon the Enemy; adding with some heat, that if I had committed a fault, it was not just that the whole body should be punish'd for it by the loss of so honourable a priviledge, and that I alone ought to be chastiz'd, and answer it with my head. The King, who very well discern'd my emotion, made me this answer; I do not pretend, said he, to wrong the Regiment, for on the contrary, I will keep it for a reserve, neither have I any intention to punish you, seeing that I rather ought to reward you for the service you have done me: and therefore speak after another manner, and entertain other sentiments of my justice.

I then retir'd to carry news to my Lieutenant Collonel of the Orders the King had given, and the reason that had mov'd him to do after that manner, insisting much, that having done all in me lay to hinder it, it was now his part to plead our cause anew: Monsieur *de Cerillac* made answer, without being mov'd, that if the King and his Generals would have it so, we must resolve to acquiesce, and peradventure they will do us a courtesy; for they will doubtless save our lives by taking our places; and yet I make a very great question, whither they will be able to carry the place or no: but they will stand in need of us, and we, tho the last, may possibly have the honour of the fight. He spoke after this manner, making a virtue of necessity, and conceiving that it was more discretion to keep there; but added, that nevertheless for decency's sake, we should do well to present our selves, lest we should give the world an occasion to censure and suspect us. Accordingly we went, but were presently told, that we had not the Attack, and that we should stay till we were commanded; whereupon without being very importunate, we return'd to our Quarters, there to expect a new order.

Monsieur *de Chevreuse* who did not command the Attack, having entreated me to carry him to some eminence from whence he might easily see the fight, I carried him to an old kind of Battery, where the Cannon had been plac'd when they first invested the place; and from whence he might see all without any manner of danger. The Attack was presently begun, and succeeded so ill, that *Navarre* and *Piedmont*, who had the head, with other Regiments that sustain'd them, were almost all cut to pieces; and it fell out according to what Monsieur *de Cerillac* had said, that they would at last have recourse to us, for we were commanded with all the Regiment to repel the Enemy, who were not content to have made so brave a resistance, but moreover had sallied out, and thrown themselves into our Trenches; and finding them tir'd with so long a fight, we beat them back with ease enough, and recover'd what we had lost of our Trenches and Lodgment, but not our dead men, which were not to be restor'd to life; and thus the ill grounded conjecture of the General succeeded. 'Tis strange, that an engagement of honour should

ſometimes ſeduce the greateſt men to act contrary to their own reaſon, and to precipitate themſelves and whole Armies into inevitable danger. Tho they had ſlighted my report as incredible, yet at laſt ſatisfied with their own eyes, and things being known for ſuch as I had repreſented them, it was to attempt an impoſſibility to engage in this Attack: In the mean time the Orders were already given, an Officer is ſuſpected for a Coward, and upon this without any other aſſurance they go on headlong to the Aſſault; ſo true it is, that mens Judgments, by an effect of divine Juſtice, ſometimes fail them in the moſt important occaſions.

III. This bloody experience made the Generals alter their reſolution; they gave over the Attack of the Half-Moon to fall upon the great Baſtion; and this change was of ſo great importance, that a man may ſay it was the cauſe of taking the place: for from that day forward the Enemy deſpair'd of being able to keep it, as much as they were confident of doing it before, as they themſelves have ſince confeſt. The new Attack being begun, the Enemy made a great Sally upon our Regiment, which had the Guard; they immediately charg'd the flanks of the Trench, and did it with ſo great fury, that one part of it gave way, and was totally routed, and the other came to rally themſelves to a Lieutenant call'd *La* . . . . . and to me, who yet kept our poſt. The Enemy, who ſtill preſt on, and that thought of no leſs than gaining all that was left, were a little aſtoniſht, when they ſaw us come on all in a body directly upon them, and charge them ſo home, that from Aſſailants as they were before, they ſaw it concern'd them to look to their defence. This alteration put them to their ſhifts: they diſunited, and the one half retiring into the City, left the other to be ſhut up in a corner, from whence it was impoſſible for them to get away. But juſt as they were going to call out for Quarter, a Souldier came crying out, all in a fright, Monſieur *Zamet* is kill'd, Monſieur *Zamet* is kill'd! I askt him, How doſt thou know it? Becauſe I ſaw it, ſaid he; at which being deſperate, and quite out of my wits, I miſerably gave my ſelf up to the fury that tranſported me, in the thought wherewith I was then poſſeſt, that I had loſt all in loſing this intimate friend, without making any manner of uſe of my Reaſon, or other reflection, and threw my ſelf with the utmoſt fury upon theſe poor people, whom I ſacrific'd to my revenge, in cauſing them to be all cut to pieces.

IV. After this bloody execution, to which I had ſuffer'd my ſelf to be carried away, I ran, being yet quite out of my ſences, to ſee if I could find Monſieur *Zamet* dead, as I had been told: I was a little comforted when I was told, that they were gone to put him to bed; but when I ſaw, coming into the room, that his Thigh was taken off with a Faucon-ſhot, that he had receiv'd, in going from place to place as *Mareſchal de Camp*, I lookt upon him as a dead man. I ſtood by his Bed-ſide without being able to ſpeak one word, my heart was ſo oppreſt; when he himſelf began to ſpeak to me after ſo Chriſtian a manner, that I remain'd in the greateſt confuſion, comparing what he ſaid to me to the condition wherein I found my ſelf. *Muſt Chriſtians* (ſaid he to me) *as we are, deſire any thing contrary to the will of* God? *If it be by his appointment that all things happen in the world, and if we cannot doubt that this is a ſtroke of his providence, why ſhould we oppoſe what he has ordain'd? Is not he maſter both of Life and Death? And it would be mockery towards Almighty* God, *to whom we pray every*

every day that his will may be done, not to ſubmit to his good pleaſure, when he thus ſhews his own immediate arm. 'Tis proper in theſe great occaſions, that a man can throughly prove himſelf, and ſound the bottom of his heart, to know whether he be truly his or no. The little ones are more apt to deceive us: but in this Hypocriſie has no place. How happy are we to leave this world, that is only full of ſins and miſeries, to go unto God! I have, 'tis true, great reaſon to apprehend his Juſtice, but he commands us to hope in his Mercy, and it were to offend him to loſe this hope. He will have compaſſion of us, and tho his Judgments are terrible, yet he will ſhew Mercy. Even this is a great favour, to dye in his quarrel, in defending the true Religion againſt thoſe that would ſubvert it. And then looking upon me with eyes full of tenderneſs, and there fixing them for ſome time, as if to make me more ſenſible of the reproach he intended me concerning the action he knew I had ſo lately committed; *But you*, ſaid he, *who love me as your friend, muſt that love of yours render you ſo cruel, that to revenge the death of a man whom Providence will have dye, you ſhould deſtroy ſo many others without mercy, and without juſtice! Where was your generoſity and natural humanity, to have deny'd Quarter to theſe poor men, and to damn them moſt miſerably for my ſake, as if my death could be reveng'd by theirs, or that I could approve this tranſport of ſo irregular a friendſhip? Have you been able to reſtore me to life, in taking it ſo cruelly away from theſe wretches? And was it not rather to pull down the anger of God both upon your ſelf and me, to pretend to revenge my death, which he has appointed, by the death you have ſo unjuſtly given to ſo many perſons contrary to his order, and contrary to his will? I beſeech you repent of this fault, as one of the greateſt that peradventure you have ever committed in your whole life. The remedy which you have thought to apply to my misfortune, has been much more painful to me than the miſchance it ſelf; and I think my ſelf oblig'd to conjure you from the bottom of my heart, that you never for the death of any friend whatever, or your own being mortally wounded, fall again into the ſame tranſport of fury.*

We were alone when he ſpoke to me after this manner; aud I confeſs, that as I then wanted words to make anſwer to ſuch a moving diſcourſe, ſo I want them now to repreſent the condition wherein I found my ſelf; being compell'd both by Monſieur *Zamet*'s reaſons, and my own nature, to pronounce a terrible ſentence upon my ſelf for this exceſs, of which I was ſo inexcuſably guilty. Words then being wanting to me, I made him underſtand my repentance by the abundance of my tears, which I could not refrain. And I muſt alſo confeſs, that this ſo Chriſtian diſcourſe of his, together with the condition of him who made it to me, imprinted ſo lively a ſenſe in the bottom of my heart, that I have ever ſince retain'd a continual ſorrow for that barbarous action. I ſtay'd with him that night, and all the next day, being I could not find in my heart to leave him; and went not out of the Room, but to perform my duty upon the Guard.

V. But it was not long before I was chaſtis'd for the criminal fury wherewith I had ſuffer'd my ſelf to be tranſported. I was commanded to go attack the Enemy with a hundred men, in a little Half-moon, that they were reſolv'd to carry, and from whence they fir'd mightily upon us: where tho they made a brave defence, were yet more vigorouſly attackt; and we were now upon entring, having nothing but a little Ditch to leap, to make our ſelves maſters of the place; but at the ſame moment I felt my ſelf wounded with two Muſquet ſhots at once,

one

one in the body which entred not very far, and only paſt betwixt the fleſh and the skin, the other in the ankle, the bone of which it broke into ſeveral ſplinters, making me fall at the ſame time into the Ditch, from whence attempting to riſe, I fell down again. I was therefore fain to ſatisfie my ſelf with encouraging my Souldiers only, bidding them not to concern themſelves about me, but perfect what they had ſo ſucceſsfully begun; and that it would by no means be honourable for them, by reaſon of my being wounded, to loſe a Half-moon, which it had coſt them ſo much to gain. The men being all very brave, the ſight of the condition I was in, ſerv'd only the more to excite their Courage, ſo that before I could be carry'd off, I had the ſatisfaction to ſee them lodg'd in the place.

I then entreated a Gentleman, a kinſman of Monſieur *de Valencay*, my intimate friend, that ſerv'd with us upon this occaſion in the quality of a Volunteer, that he would help to conduct, or rather to carry me back to the Camp, which he did with a very particular affection; and ſo ſoon as I was arriv'd at my Tent, I ſent to acquaint Monſieur *Zamet* with the condition I was reduc'd to; and to let him know that my greateſt grief was that I could not pay him my duty in his ſickneſs, and do him thoſe ſervices that I could heartily have wiſht, and to be thus depriv'd of the only conſolation of being near his perſon. He was ſenſible of my misfortune, as of a new wound he had receiv'd, believing me to be worſe hurt than I was, and nearer death than he. He ſent to me immediately to let me know his ſence of my condition; which it was no hard matter for me to underſtand, by reaſon of the union, and perfect openneſs of our hearts. We ſent afterwards daily every hour reciprocally to know how one another did, having this only way left of converſing in ſome ſort with one another, and of giving one another a mutual conſolation.

VI. Finding my ſelf in very great danger, and that the Kings chief Phyſician, and the Chyrurgions aſſur'd me, that there was no other way left to ſave my life, but by cutting off my Leg, which began to gangreen, I had a mind to acknowledge the obligation I had to the Gentleman, my friend, of whom I ſpoke before, who brought me back to my Tent: I therefore told him, that God being pleas'd otherwiſe to diſpoſe of me, I entreated him to permit me to ſurrender my Command into his hands; and that he would go in my name to requeſt it of the King, and to tell his Majeſty, that I did humbly beſeech him, in conſideration of my ſervices, to give it him. This Gentleman with great generoſity deny'd me, telling me flatly, that he would not do it. But after this firſt denial I renew'd my importunity, and importun'd him with ſo great inſtance, aſſuring him that he could not diſoblige me more than by ſuch a refuſal, that he ſaw himſelf compell'd, as it were, to gratifie my deſire. He went then, tho very unwillingly, to attend the King, and acquainted him with the humble requeſt I had oblig'd him to deliver in my name. The King a little ſurpriz'd, ask'd him, what is he dead then? to which the Gentleman made anſwer, that I was not; but that I would not be ſatisfied except he would come to his Majeſty, to acquaint him, that his firſt Phyſician Monſieur *Erouard*, who had apply'd, and taken off the firſt dreſſing, had found my Leg in ſuch a condition, the Gangreen being got into it, that he ſaw no hopes of ſaving my life, but by cutting it off: that I could not conſent to it, being not well aſſur'd to out-live ſo violent a remedy, and chooſing almoſt as ſoon to dye, as to ſee my ſelf miſerable,

miſerable all the remainder of my life, and out of condition of ſerving his Majeſty, having thus loſt one of my Legs. Tell him, anſwer'd the King, that I will have him do whatever the Phyſicians and Chyrurgions appoint, that he muſt not ſuffer himſelf to be thus tranſported by deſpair; and that I will not forſake him: that, as to what concerns his Command, I will not diſpoſe of it, till he ſhall be totally incapable of ever exercizing it again, and that I am very ſorry to ſee him reduc'd to ſuch a condition, as to make me ſuch a requeſt. The Gentleman came back to me, and brought me the King's anſwer, at which I was really very much afflicted, having a great mind to procure this favour for my Friend, and ſeeing almoſt no hopes of my ſelf, after all that the Chyrurgions had told me of my condition.

In the mean time I could by no means reſolve to have my Leg cut off, and I had almoſt as willingly have died; when being thus agitated betwixt fear and deſire, and the proſpect of a preſent and inevitable death preſſing hard upon me, I on a ſudden remembred, I had heard a Chyruryion, who had cur'd me of ſome wound or other, boaſt, that he had an infallible remedy to ſtop a Gangreen, and one who liv'd not above fifteen Leagues off at a Town call'd *Tournon*. The affair being preſſing, I ſent my man in poſt haſte to tell him what condition I was in, and to conjure him to come with all ſpeed to ſave my life, by reaſon that I was reſolv'd rather to dye, than to have my Leg cut off. This Chyrurgion, who remembred that I had paid him very well the firſt time he had had me in his hands, mounted to Horſe in a trice, and made all the haſte he could to come to me. In the mean time the King's Chyrurgions, not believing that a Country Chyrurgion could know any particular ſecret that they were ignorant of, and looking upon this hope of mine as a pure alluſion, that might occaſion my death, reſolv'd to uſe violence, to do me, as they thought, a very great piece of ſervice, and to ſave my life by cutting off my Leg, whether I would or no. So that after they had laid before me the inevitable neceſſity of doing it, and that all my Friends had jointly pray'd, and conjur'd me to ſuffer it; ſeeing me ſtill remain inflexible, and obſtinate not to ſuffer it to be done; they plainly told me, that ſeeing I would be the cauſe of my own death, they ſhould peradventure be forc'd to proceed after another manner with me. Accordingly they came the next day into my Tent with all their preparations of Lints, Salves, Ligatures, and Inſtruments to make their operation. I perceiv'd them through the Curtains of my Bed, and was in ſo great a fright, that my Hair ſtood on end, chooſing infinitely rather to loſe both Arms and Legs in an aſſault, or a battel, than to ſee any of them cut off in cold blood in my Bed, eſpecially whilſt I was in hopes to preſerve them by another way.

Two *Franciſcan* Fryers preſented themſelves at the ſame time, to exhort me by a very Chriſtian diſcourſe to ſuffer this operation with patience, giving me to underſtand that for an hour or two of pain, I ſhould preſerve my ſelf many years; and that though I did not care for this life, yet that I ought to do it in conſideration of the other, ſeeing that God did as much forbid us to be Murtherers of our ſelves, as of others, and that here this periſhable life was not only concerned, but life eternal, to which I was going, and where I ſhould ſoon be obliged to render an account of my life; and ſhould be guilty of caſting it away, if I refus'd the methods proper for preſerving it. I anſwered, that it was not certain the cutting off my Leg would ſave my life, and that I had much greater

hopes from an able Chyrurgion, who had a particular ſecret to ſtop a Gangreen, and would be with me preſently. The two Fathers regarding more what the Chyrurgions pretended, that ſuch a Medicine was impoſſible, than any thing I could ſay, concluded out of an honeſt but indiſcreet zeal, that force muſt be uſed, and I muſt be held during the operation; ſo that both falling upon me on the ſudden, they told me, they ſaw they muſt ſave my life by violence. This proceeding I confeſs ſtrangely diſordered me, ſo that in rage and tranſport of paſſion, I cry'd out, What! will you rob me, both of this and the next life too? Are you reſolv'd to damn me? Let me go, except you reſolve to throw me into a condition more dreadful, than the loſs of ten thouſand lives. Theſe amazing expreſſions ſo ſtartled and confounded them, that they ſtraightway let me go, and were much concern'd to find their zeal ſo unſeaſonably employ'd. They chang'd their note, and ſpoke afterwards to me with great charity and tenderneſs; letting all expreſſions alone, that might any way diſcompoſe me, and appeaſing my mind by all the ſoft ways they could. This return quite won my heart, and convinc'd me, that what they had done imprudently proceeded from friendſhip and kindneſs; and I expreſt as much gratitude for this laſt, as I had done averſion for their former behaviour to me; entreating them, that they would viſit me often in my illneſs, which they readily engag'd to do; and then we contracted ſuch a Friendſhip, as continu'd between us ever after; and they have come to ſee me in the place where I now dwell retir'd, a great many years after this accident.

At laſt the man I expected with ſo much impatience, and upon whom I depended for my Cure arrived, and extraordinary haſte he made. Aſſoon as ever I ſaw him enter the room, I cry'd out, Oh! how much am I oblig'd to you for coming ſo quickly, and anſwering all the confidence I repoſed in you! I have told every hour, and every minute, and am ſenſible you could not poſſibly have come ſooner to my relief. You ſee here one, who is a loſt man in the opinion of all the world, unleſs you relieve him. The Chyrurgion reply'd, that he hoped he ſhould be able to ſtop the Gangreen, provided it were not gone too far, and that my caſe were not abſolutely deſperate; and that his remedy did not uſe to fail. I ſent away to beg Monſieur *Erouard*, and the other Chyrurgions to come, and take off their applications, it not being allowable that it ſhould be taken off without them. Aſſoon as the dreſſing was remov'd, the Chyrurgion was a little ſurpriz'd to ſee the Gangreen got ſo high, and ſaid it was gone ſo far, that he durſt give me no aſſurance till after once or twice dreſſing: The others ſaid, he ſpoke very reaſonably; and it would be very happy if there were any hopes then. He apply'd his remedy, and next day they met again at the ſame hour to ſee the effect. The thing appear'd ſtill doubtful, and he would warrant nothing yet; tho this firſt application had prevented the Gangreen from riſing any higher. So he reſerv'd the giving any poſitive Judgment till the next time; and then at taking off the ſecond dreſſing, and duly examining the wound, he declar'd boldly, that now he would be anſwerable for my Cure, and that his remedy had been ſucceſsful. Monſieur *Erouard* and the reſt looking upon it, were a little aſtoniſh'd, and confeſt this was a ſecret they did not underſtand. It is eaſie to judge whether I repented of my obſtinacy, in not ſubmitting either to the pleaſure of the King, the ignorance of my Chyrurgions, and the zeal of my Ghoſtly Fathers; and whether I did not think my want of Courage upon this occaſion a

happi-

happineſs, which would not let me throw away a Leg to no purpoſe, that hath ſerv'd me ſo long, and ſo well ſince that time.

A few days after, Monſieur *Schomberg* ſent to ſee me by his Steward, who found me better of my wounds, but ill enough of my purſe, my pay not being ſufficient for ſo great an expence, as the condition I was then in expos'd me to, above the ordinary charge of the Army: Which Monſieur *Schomberg* having intimation of from the perſon he had ſent to me, procured me ſome money of the King. Part of this I employ'd in rewarding *Mutonis*, the Souldier that helpt me to eſcape into our Camp, and whom I kept in my own Tent as my Brother, ever after he had receiv'd that Muſquet-ſhot in his Arm; till at laſt I got him a place in an Hoſpital, where he ſubſiſted very comfortably without my help. But the ſumm Monſieur *Schomberg* procur'd for me being not very conſiderable, by reaſon that a greater would have made it neceſſary to get a Ratification from the Chamber of Accounts, he was ſo generous to ſend me ſome of his own; and did it after ſo preſſing and ſo obliging a manner, that I thought my ſelf bound to accept, what a better man than I would have made no ſcruple to receive from a Superintendant; and what indeed I could not have told how to refuſe, from a perſon that hath all along done me the honour to love me ſo tenderly; for to have declin'd it muſt needs have given him great offence.

VII. In the mean while Monſieur *Zamet* was dead of his wound, but they conceal'd his death from me, and durſt not be too haſty in letting me know what were enough to have kill'd me, in that condition. The City of *Montpellier* being at laſt ſurrendred upon terms, and the general Peace concluded with the *Hugonots*, the Regiment of *Picardy* was plac'd there in Garriſon, where I was lodg'd rarely well; and my Chyrurgion in ſix weeks had put me in a way of doing without him, and letting my ſelf be dreſt by one in the Town, till my Cure was perfected. I return'd him the beſt acknowledgment I could, and gave him a reward, which tho but inconſiderable if compar'd with the ſervice he had done me, yet proportionable to my preſent ability. What was wanting that way I endeavour'd to make up by the tendereſt teſtimonies of friendſhip, and of the gratitude I ſhould ever retain while that life laſted, which he had preſerv'd, when every body elſe thought me ſure to loſe it.

The death of Monſieur *Zamet* was kept from me, as I ſaid, for ſome time, but the great impatience I was in to know how he did, would not ſuffer it to be long conceal'd, for I was every hour enquiring after him with extraordinary concern. So that after they had prepar'd me by degrees for the afflicting news, I receiv'd it at laſt with a grief not poſſible to be expreſt; and except people knew both our hearts, and the ſtrict union of them, they can never judge what diſorder I was in upon the thought of our being ſeparated for ever, and that I ſhould no more enjoy the bleſſing of his Converſation, whoſe friendſhip I valu'd above all things in the world. But this firſt grief was follow'd by another; for having made me his Executor, and deliver'd his Will into my hands the day after he was hurt, I could not but be ſenſibly afflicted to ſee that ſome of his Relations ſhould quarrel with me, in oppoſing the intention of the Dead, and the care I took to have his Will perform'd. Yet afterwards they all acquieſc'd but one, who ſtill retain'd a coldneſs toward me upon this account; as if the laſt Will of the Dead ought not to be reſpected by the Living; or that he whom they make choice of to ſee

it

it executed, could be to blame for acquitting himself faithfully of this duty.

VIII. After lying seven or eight months under Cure, when I began to walk a little, and get on Horseback, Monsieur *Valencay*, Governour of *Montpellier*, gave me a Commission to go see what the Inhabitants of *Sevennes* were doing. These were little Bourgs and Villages scituated in the Mountains, and possest by the *Hugonots*. They were all gallant Souldiers, having past most part of their youth in the *Low-Country* Wars, from whence they return'd expert and brave, which gave some occasion to suspect them, and oblig'd Monsieur *Valencay* to order this enquiry, that he might be secure they were not contriving some new disturbances. I found them all very quiet as oft as I came among them: and this visit that I made into their Country was not unprofitable to me, because by this means I was capable of informing the King, who afterwards examin'd me about it, as shall be told in due place.

IX. I had not been at *Paris* of a long time, and indeed had some business there. The Regiment deputed me to go sollicit for payment of their Musters that were in arrear. Monsieur *Valencay* contributed to this Deputation too, and I almost fancy'd he was not sorry of so fair an occasion to put me at some distance from him, knowing the particular friendship Monsieur *Schomberg* honour'd me with; who being now in disgrace, he might fear my raising a faction in the place, for a person to whose Interests I had ever shewn my self so much devoted. But in this he betray'd his ignorance of me, if he thought me capable of a thing so contrary to my temper: For I ever knew very well how to distinguish between the duty of acknowledgment to private persons, and that of fidelity to my Prince. I took post with one single Servant, and just after I had past *Nevers*, fell into a good pleasant adventure. I met very late in the Evening with a Courier, who past me, and went up to my man; he being very weary, and not turning his Horse out of the way, the Courier justled him so roughly, that both of them were dismounted, and came down together. A quarrel ensu'd, and to cuffs they fell, and when they had box'd one another pretty tightly, and saw no body come to part them, they began to cool themselves, and fell to parleying. The Courier askt my man whom he belong'd to? and who that was that rode before? and hearing my name, How! said he, that is the very person whom I am sent to: How lucky an accident is this that hath brought me to the man I look for. Come on, let us mount presently, and spur on till we overtake him. Thus they gallop'd away together, shouting after me at a great distance; at last I heard them, and stopt; but not knowing the meaning of this, nor who I had to deal with, I drew a Pistol. The Courier coming up, told me of the good fortune he had in meeting my man, and how he came to discover that I was the person, upon whose account purely it was that he was going to *Montpellier*; at the same time drawing out of his pocket an Order from the King, which contain'd these words: *Upon receipt of this Order, you are without fail to repair to My Person, with all speed.* This put me into a confusion betwixt hope and fear, not being able to guess upon what account I should be sent for; though I could not find any great reason to fear, as not being conscious of any fault I had been guilty of: So I told the Courier he might go on his journey about his other dispatches. But he re-

reply'd, that he had none of importance, or that requir'd haſte but mine, and therefore as to the reſt he would put them into the common Poſt. I urg'd him again, and would fain have got rid of him, telling him he might pay him for his whole Journey, and I would ſatisfie him for his pains; but he anſwered it would be ſo much Money thrown away, and beſides he muſt go back with me. Thus we rode Poſt day and night, and repos'd our ſelves for two or three hours only at *Eſſone*; from whence ſetting out three hours before day, we came betimes in the morning to *Paris*.

X. Monſieur *Valencay*'s diſpatches, of which I was the Bearer, were for the King, and Monſieur *Puiſyeux*; but I thought it my beſt way to light at Monſieur *P.*'s Gates, hoping he might give me ſome light into the occaſion of my being ſent for by the King. He was not a little ſurpriz'd to ſee me, believing I had left the Army by the King's Order; but when he had open'd his Letters, and ſeen the purport of them, he told me, I muſt needs go carry the King that directed to him, and preſent his too ſeal'd up again, becauſe his Majeſty would be the better pleas'd: I very well perceiv'd by the manner of Monſieur *Puiſyeux*'s ſpeaking to me, that the buſineſs upon which the King had ſent for me, had no harm in it; and in that thought went ſtraight to the *Louvre*, in the habit of a man that rides Poſt in the Winter, that is, all dirt from head to foot. Being come to Court, I ſpoke to the Uſher of the Chamber, who very roughly told me, I muſt wait, for the King was not dreſt yet, and that I was not in ſo great haſte. As we were talking, Count *Nogent* came out of the Chamber, and I knowing his obliging temper, went to ſalute him; telling him, upon a ſuppoſal that he might not know me, That not having the honour to be known to him, I begg'd leave to beſeech him, that he would pleaſe to order that the King might be told, that the Officer of *Picardy*, for whom his Majeſty had ſent, was there to attend his pleaſure. And thereupon, as I was about to tell him my name, he interrupted me, ſaying, Are not you Monſieur *de Pontis*? Come, come, the King will be ſurpriz'd to ſee you, for he did not expect you ſo ſoon. Then he took me in, and immediately ſhewing me to the King ſaid, Look you, Sir, is not this the moſt diligent man, and one of the beſt diſpatch in your whole Kingdom? And can any but he, come from *Montpellier* in ſo ſhort a time, as that ſince he was ſent for? To which the King made anſwer, it was incredible I ſhould come ſo ſoon. I let the King alone in his wonder for a while, which ſeem'd to divert, and at laſt clear d up the matter, and deliver'd the Diſpatches from Monſieur *Valencay*. After he had read it, he commanded me to carry it to Monſieur *Puiſyeux*, telling me, I had done well, in bringing it to him firſt. Monſieur *Valencay* (ſaid the King) ſends me word that you are the perſon he ſent to viſit the *Savennes*; you ſhall give me an account of that matter by and by, for I will call my Council, and then ſend for you in; be ready at the time, and in the mean while go, and refreſh your ſelf.

I came accordingly when the Council was ſet, and was call'd in before a great many of the Court, who were then in the Antichamber, and who begun to look upon me after another manner than they had done before. For in this world thoſe are reſpected who are look'd upon by the Prince, and People have a regard for them in proportion to the ſhare they have in their Soveraigns favour. The King then commanded me to make a report to the Council, of what I knew concerning the ſtate of the Country I had

ſeen, and from whence I came, and particularly of the *Savennes*. In order whereunto I began firſt to ſpeak of the City of *Montpellier*, of which I gave an account, that the Inhabitants were very well ſatisfied with Monſieur *Valencay*, and ſeem'd pleaſed with his Government; from thence I proceeded to the concern of the whole Country, and aſſured his Majeſty of the good diſpoſition the People were in, which gave very good reaſon to judge, that they had no averſion to living under his Government, and the direction of thoſe he appointed to command there. At laſt I came to the *Savennes*, telling him, that after having viſited all thoſe Mountains in order, I could diſcover nothing but an abſolute ſubmiſſion in all the Inhabitants, and as great a zeal to his Majeſty's ſervice now, as there had been want of it before; that I had gone thither ſeveral times, and found it always the ſame; and therefore as far as I was able to judge, durſt be reſponſible to his Majeſty, that there was not any reaſon to ſuſpect their fidelity, which was all I had to ſay, according to the preſent condition I left them in. To which the King made anſwer, that it was enough, and as much as he deſir'd, bidding me ſtay without, and attend him at Dinner.

XI. I took care to be there accordingly, but there was ſo much Company the King could not ſpeak to me, and therefore deferr'd it till Supper; where there happening to be but a few, I had a convenient Audience. After Supper the King took me into his Cloſet, and Marquis *Grimant* only being by, ſaid thus to me; I have ſent for you, to let you ſee I am mindful of you, and willing to acknowledge the ſervices you have done me; and therefore I give you your choice, either of a Company in the old Body, or a Lieutenancy in my Guards; chooſe which you had rather have, I leave you at full liberty. I confeſs this propoſal a little ſurpriz'd me, for to ſpeak truth I expected ſomething more, and was of opinion, that the ſervices I had done, after having refuſed a Company in the Regiment of *Champagne*, deſerved a higher recompence, than that of a Command no better, than what I had formerly refuſed. However I was forc'd to ſet a good face upon the matter, and acknowledge it a great thing, that his Majeſty had done me the honour to think of me. Wherefore I made anſwer with all imaginable humility, that ſince his Majeſty was pleaſed to do ſo much in my favour, I humbly begg'd he would make it compleat by pointing out to me himſelf the choice I ought to make; proteſting at the ſame time, that what pleas'd his Majeſty would by moſt acceptable to me, ſo great was the paſſion I had to ſerve him in any Poſt, he thought fit to aſſign me. I thought (ſaid the King) how I ſhould find you affected, and had a mind to try, which of the two Commands you had a greater inclination to. Whereupon Monſieur *Grimcut*, who pretty well knew the King's intention, took the liberty to ſay to him, methinks, Sir, you had better give him a Lieutenancy in the Guards, for by that means, you will be ſure to have him conſtantly near your perſon. That is what I deſire, reply'd the King, and do you do ſo too? (ſaid he) ſpeaking to me. I have already told your Majeſty (ſaid I) that I have no other choice to make, than what your Majeſty directs me to; and I am fixt in that reſolution as I ought to be. But I know your Majeſty's goodneſs is ſo great, that you will not be diſpleas'd, if I put you in mind, that you did me the favonr to promiſe me a Company. This was modeſtly to ask a Company in the Guards; and the King, who underſtood my meaning well enough, preſently interrupted me, and ſaid, True; but it was in an

old

old Body, and I am now ready to do it; though I give you my word, that if the Company of which I now make you Lieutenant, comes to be vacant, either by the death of the Captain, or any other accident, you shall have it. I am willing too to acquaint you at first, that I am desirous to restore one thing in my Guards, and to begin to do it by you; which is that you neither practise, nor give any Orders in the Company, but what come first from me: In extraordinary cases I mean, and not in things of course and common use; and that you never go off your Guard, nor out of your Quarters, when 'tis your turn to command. This I resolve to have done, that I may restore discipline in the body, which at present is quite lost among them; and also with a design to have you always near my Person. I answer'd, That as he was my Master and my Prince, and had done me the particular favour to command me nearer to him, I hop'd by my conduct to let his Majesty see, that my greatest desire was to obey and serve him all my life. Then he ordered Monsieur *Grimant* to see my Commission dispatch'd presently, by which I was to be made Lieutenant to Count *Saligny*'s Company.

XII. But though I set a godd face upon the matter, as I thought my self oblig'd to do; yet I return'd very little satisfy'd with my fortune, and thinking very seriously of the conditions propos'd to me, which appear'd very burdensom and difficult; I look'd upon my self from this time forward, as entring into a dreadful slavery; so that I confess I could have wish'd, had I dar'd to deny the King, that I had not been so unseasonably complemental, and had made choice rather of a Company in an old Body. But I was now engag'd over head and ears, and had no retreat left, nor any remedy, but to see my mistake, and make it an useful example to other people.

Monsieur *Saligny*'s Company was one of the first in the Regiment, and his younger Brother was Ensign of it, which I knew nothing of before. Custom and Order seem'd to require, that he should succeed as Lieutenant, especially in his own Brother's Company. I found my self a little perplex'd so soon as I was inform'd of this: But still that inconvenience must be encounter'd too, and so I resolv'd to pay all imaginable civility to Monsienr *Saligny*; and going to wait upon him, I said, That had I understood sooner, that his Brother was Ensign in that Company, I should have begg'd the King's excuse for accepting the Lieutenancy, and being plac'd between two Brothers, who by Order of War, as well as Birth, ought not to have been separated upon this occasion. But that I but just then had come to the knowledge of it, and all left in my power to do, having already accepted the Commission, was to express my concern. This complement succeeded very well, and I can say, that the two Brothers did me the honour to testify so particular a Friendship for me, that as oft as any little coldness happened beween them, I was always the Mediator, and chosen for the Umpire of their differences.

After having been received at the head of the Regiment, it being necessary to have my self admitted by the Duke of *Espernon* too, who was Collonel of the Infantry, I resolv'd to incline his favour to me by a complement that I knew would please him very well, and gratify the ambition so natural to all great men. The day that I was to mount the Guard, I marched at the head of the Company without a Corslet directly to his House, where causing my men to halt in a corner, some twenty paces from it, so that they kept out of sight, and going by my self, I desir'd

to

to ſpeak with him. As ſoon as I came into his preſence, after the firſt ſalutes, I told him, that the King having honoured me with the Command of Lieutenant to Monſieur *Saligny*, and ſealed my Commiſſion, I had been the day before receiv'd at the head of the Company, drawn up in Battalia, by which I was obliged this day to mount the Guard; but that I would not take upon me the laſt mark of that Authority his Majeſty had given me, till I had firſt received it from his hand, and preſenting him the Corſlet at the ſame time; I added, that I tendered that to him, to whom it belonged to give it me; and that having brought the Company near his houſe, I would not march it by the Gate, till his Lordſhip had firſt given me right to walk at the head of it in the quality of the Kings Lieutenant.

Monſieur *Eſpernon*, a little ſurpriz'd, but much pleas'd, made ſo obliging an anſwer, as plainly ſhewed he had lik'd the ſurprize. He aſſur'd me of his ſervice upon all occaſions, and putting on my Corſlet very gracefully, would in ſome ſort hint to me, that he ſtill remembred what paſt between Monſieur *Baſtillat* and me, about the attack of *Monteſche*; telling me, there were but few perſons that ſo well deſerv'd, or that could acquit themſelves better in this Command. I then askt him, if he would pleaſe to ſee my Company, and he accordingly going preſently down ſtairs, I went to put my ſelf at the head of them, and marcht by, ſaluting him with my Pike after the moſt graceful manner that I could. I marcht them on to the *Louvre*, where Monſieur *Saligny* took the head of them. The King, as a particular mark of favour, and in purſuance of his deſign to uſe me in reſtoring diſcipline among his Guards, would needs ſee me this firſt time in my new Poſt, and to that purpoſe made us paſs and repaſs before him. Our Arms being ſet down in the Guard-room, Monſieur *Saligny* told me, he would carry me to wait on the King in the quality of his Lieutenant: I followed him. But though I had the ſatisfaction to ſee, that this Command gave me eaſie acceſs to his Majeſty's perſon, yet I had as much trouble to find my ſelf made a better ſort of Slave, by the burdenſom engagement I was entring into, and which the King ſpoke to me of now again, repeating what he had ſaid before, That I was not to ſtir from my Quarters, nor give any new Orders in the Company, without firſt conſulting him.

His Majeſty being pleas'd to give the Orders, Monſieur *Saligny* advanc'd to receive them; but I being then near the King, and ſtanding ſtill as he advanc'd, his Majeſty ſtept in between us, leaning upon me, as if he would give the Orders to us both. This immediately gave great jealouſy to Monſieur *Saligny*, and had doubtleſs created an unlucky miſunderſtanding betwixt us, had not I at the ſame time prevented the ill conſequence. My experience in the profeſſion had taught me, that a Lieutenant never takes Orders from a General, when his Captain is preſent, and that he ought to receive them from his own Captain. So that turning aſide my head, and ſeeming not to hear what the King ſaid, as ſoon as ever his Majeſty had done ſpeaking, and was retir'd a little from us, I ſtept to Monſieur *Saligny*, and entreated his Orders, as if I knew nothing. He was ſo ſurpriz'd at this, by reaſon of the ill impreſſion he had taken before, that he preſently thought with himſelf after this trial, he ſhould never have the leaſt occaſion to be offended with my conduct; ſince contrary to all appearance, I had kept my ſelf ſo ſtrictly to the ſevereſt Rules, even then when it ſeem'd that the King himſelf had given me an occaſion to lay it aſide. His Majeſty taking notice of this paſſage, as I

had

had a mind he ſhould, had the goodneſs in ſome meaſure to condemn himſelf, by approving and commending what I had done.

XIII. Some time after the King requiring of me an account of the ſtate of the Company, which was then wholly under my care, the Captain and Enſign being both abſent, I thought good to take this opportunity of informing my ſelf more particularly, what his Majeſty expected from me; and would at the ſame time, for my own ſecurity, beg a Copy of the Orders I was to obſerve in writing. Having entreated his leave to ſpeak freely, I told him, I was very much afraid, I ſhould not be able to give his Majeſty all the ſatisfaction he expected, and leſt the too favourable opinion he might have of my conduct might turn to my prejudice at laſt, when I was found leſs capable than he took me to be; therefore I thought my ſelf oblig'd honeſtly to acquaint his Majeſty, that I was by no means a man of that active and ſprightly parts, that was requiſite in one, who was to give an account of ſo many things, and to execute ſo many orders; but a heavy and ſlow Fellow, and of a very treacherous memory: And therefore not being able ſometimes to do things by my ſelf as others do, I ſtood in need of aſſiſtance. But as I had reaſon to fear I might not always have thoſe helps ready at hand, I very much apprehended I ſhould not pleaſe; and therefore had I dared to take the liberty of begging a favour, I ſhould moſt humbly have beſought him, that for the relief of my memory and underſtanding, his Majeſty would pleaſe to give me the Order I was to execute in writing; that by this means I might the better diſcharge my duty. I perceive plainly, reply'd the King, you would have me think you a Blockhead, but it concerns my honour not to have been miſtaken in the choice I have made of you. I have not given you this command, without a perfect knowledge of you; nevertheleſs I will grant you your requeſt, as well becauſe you deſire it, as becauſe it will be an eaſe to me too. And accordingly his Majeſty caus'd inſtructions to be drawn up for me in writing, upon which I afterwards gave him an account upon all occaſions.

XIV. The Souldiers were at this time very great Libertines, and little or no diſcipline was obſerv'd among them: They did not ſo much as repair to their Colours to march in order, when they went to mount the Guard at *St. Germains*, where the King was: ſome came before, and others ſtraggling behind, or on one ſide, ſo that oftentimes there were not ſo much as a dozen together with the Officers that led them. My humour would not endure ſuch diſorder, which vexed me, ſince it was ſure to draw the hatred of all the Souldiers upon me, beſides the ſlavery I found my ſelf reduc'd too; and I was perfectly weary of my life, and lamented the loſs of my Lieutenancy in the Regiment of *Picardy*, which I had quitted for this. Another greater vexation ſtill was, that I had not one acquaintance in the Regiment, into which I was now taken, and ſo had no body to open my griefs to. When I began to conſider how to diſengage my ſelf from all this perplexity, and get out of this condition which I ſaw was ſure to be attended with ſo many uneaſineſſes, I ſaw very well, there was no poſſible way of doing it, without abſolutely renouncing my fortune, and loſing my ſelf for ever with the King. At laſt therefore I took up my reſolution, conceiving it much better to make a virtue of neceſſity, and place all my delight in doing what the King required of me, and trying at the ſame time to gain the good will

of the Officers, who were then in a manner all Strangers to me; and acquiring authority with the Souldiers, among whom I was a new man, and not yet very much regarded by them. And after having thus ſettled my deſign to execute the King's commands cheerfully, I found by experience, that the will overcomes the greateſt difficulties, and felt a great deal more eaſe in the performance of my duty, than I could have imagin'd, or had ever propos'd to my ſelf.

In order to contract an acquaintance with the Officers at firſt, I invited all the principal of them to a Dinner, which was reaſonably ſplendid, there I began my Friendſhip with ſome of them, which afterwards I took great care to improve. This entertainment paſs'd off with ſo many teſtimonies of affection and eſteem on both ſides, that it look'd like an acquaintance of twenty years ſtanding. I intermixt a ſmall piece of Gallantry with the Feaſt, which contributed much to the diverſion of the Company; for Monſieur *Bouteville*, with ten or a dozen more Captains of Horſe being at the ſame Eating-houſe, in another Room, I ſent for all the Drums of the Regiment, and with them we went all together to drink thoſe Gentlemens Healths, ſaluting them the mean while with a Point of War upon all our Drums. They thought they could not return our Civility better, than by ſending for their Trumpets unknown to us, and taking their turn of drinking our Healths too, ſounding all the while. Thus from a trifle, I produced ſomething conſiderable for my ſelf. For this Dinner made a great noiſe, and acquired me the eſteem of ſeveral that did not know me before.

The End of the Fifth Book.

BOOK

BOOK VI.

The Sieur de Pontis *his Management of a young Gentleman, called* du Buiſſon; *and how, after having been forc'd to fight him, he himſelf obtain'd his Pardon of the King. His Severity towards another diſſolute and obſtinate Cadet, whom he reduces to his Duty. The Jealouſy of the Officers of the Guards, who endeavour to no purpoſe to do him ill Offices with the King. He is ſent by the King to* Fort-Louis, *to learn the Exerciſes, and Military Diſcipline practic'd there, under the Conduct of the Sieur* Arnaud. *The excellent Qualities of this Governour. The great Suit between the Sieur* de Pontis, *and an eminent Commiſſioner, about a Donation from the King.*

I. IT was doubtleſs of no ſmall conſequence for ſuch an Officer as my ſelf, at my entring into the Regiment of Guards, and deſigning, as I did, to cauſe Martial Diſcipline to be exactly obſerved by the Souldiers, in obedience to the King's pleaſure, to gain at firſt the good will of the Officers, that I might be upheld by them in the execution of his Majeſty's Orders. But that which was to be done afterwards, as it was of much greater importance, ſo was it beyond all compariſon the more difficult undertaking. For the buſineſs was to attempt the re-eſtabliſhing of good Diſcipline among the Souldiers, who had in a great meaſure ſhaken off the Yoke; and to reduce a great many wild young Gentlemen to the duty they owed their Officers. I conceived therefore, that in the firſt place I was obliged to acquaint them, what the King expected both from them and me; that they might not be ſurpriz'd when I ſhould compel them to it. So I ordered the Company to be drawn up, and at the head of it told them; That the King having commanded me to make it my buſineſs, to reſtore that Diſcipline which was entirely loſt among them, I thought it my duty to let them know it, before I took the thing in hand; to the intent that ſuch as were not diſpoſed to obey what ſhould be commanded, in conformity to his Majeſty's pleaſure, might have liberty to withdraw; which I entreated them to do betimes, ſince after I had advertiz'd them of their duty, as I was about to do, they could afterwards have no pretence to exempt them from an abſolute obedience: That I requir'd nothing of them but the ordinary duties of a Souldier; which were, to be diſcreet; to have a care of their Arms; not to depart from their Quarters; to repair punctually to their Colours when they were to mount the Guard; to march thither in order with their Arms ſhoulder'd, every one in File following his Leader; and not to quit the Company without leave of their Officer; not to go off the Guard; to perform the Centinels duty exactly; not to quarrel; to obey even the meaneſt Officers; not to wrong, or purloin from any one; and laſtly, not to ſwear. To which I added, that if I found any reluctancy in obſerving all theſe things (though it was with great concern, that I found my ſelf obliged to repreſent to them, what it was fit they all ſhould know) I

ſhould

ſhould have the firſt trouble, being conſtrain'd by the King's order, both to ſee them obſerved by others, and to practice them my ſelf, in giving the firſt example: That I adviſ'd every one to conſider how far his fortunes were concern'd in this caſe, ſince the pleaſing or diſpleaſing the King was the conſequence of it: That being bound to give his Majeſty an account of ſuch as ſhould not diſcharge their duty, I was my ſelf oblig'd to do it too, of thoſe who ſhould faithfully perform it; which would be a certain means for them, either to obtain ſome command in the Army, or to exclude themſelves for ever; and that I did now promiſe all them that behave themſelves honourably, to ſet a juſt value upon their ſervices, and to ſollicit the King that they might be well rewarded.

To this remonſtrance they reply'd, that they were all as willing and ready to obey as I could deſire. But the licentious part of them did not ſpeak their hearts: For, as ſhame would not ſuffer them to quit the ſervice, ſo the glory they affected, to continue independent, made them reſolve to ſhake off a yoke, which they thought below them to ſubmit to. They intended to live on, as they had us'd to do; that is, without being ſubject to any command: Theſe for the moſt part were ſuch as ſerv'd in the quality of Cadets, who look'd upon themſelves as priviledg'd by their birth to be above theſe Rules, which they fancy'd were not made for them; as they ſhow'd by all their Extravagances, and particularly the expence in their Cloaths, which were very near as rich as their Officers.

II. The firſt time it came to our turn to mount the Guard, being all repair'd to their Colours, I acquainted them with the Order they were to obſerve in their March; which was, to go four and four abreaſt through the City; and that when we went to *St. Germains*, ſuch as had Horſes were not to mount them, till we were out of *Paris*; adding, that they ought not to ſcruple the doing what I would do firſt my ſelf to give them an example, and that they were free to quit their Arms, and take their Horſes, when I ſhould give them away my Pike, and mount mine. After having given this order, I made them take their ranks four abreaſt, and marched my ſelf at the head of them on foot, with my Pike in my hand: They obſerv'd this order a pretty while. But theſe young Gentlemen, I ſpoke of before, thinking their honour concern'd to diſtinguiſh themſelves from common Souldiers, began to take greater liberty, to give their Arms to their men to carry, and march out of their Ranks: I made them return to their Arms, and their Ranks again, by touching them in point of honour, upon the word they had paſs'd punctually to obey me. But three or four of them, thinking this a fit occaſion to make themſelves taken notice of by all the Company, neglected theſe orders as before; I then proceeded to menaces, declaring aloud, that I would have them puniſhed, upon which they return'd to their duty.

One of theſe young Cadets named *du Buiſſon*, a man of birth and courage, but withal a little proud too, having again laid aſide his Muſquet, I commanded the Serjeant to correct him, but he not daring to do it, and the Cadet taking his Arms again, and putting himſelf into his Rank, laid them aſide a fourth time. I went, and took the Serjeant's Halbert, who had not dared to do as I commanded him, and with it gave this Cadet four or five good bangs; who told me, that he was a Gentleman: Whereupon, not very well conſidering what I did, I drew my Sword, and gave him ſome blows with the flat of it; which the Gentleman took very patiently,

tiently, without daring to give a word more; and from this time forward not a man ever offer'd to go out of his Rank, and every one obey'd me with a perfect ſubmiſſion. Inſomuch that the King himſelf ſoon took notice of a great alteration in the Company, and took himſelf ſo particular a care of it, that I having told him there was amongſt our men one Cadet of ill example, and he having thereupon commanded me to caſhier him, when I made ſome difficulty of it, and told him that he was related to ſome of our Officers, ſaid, he would caſhier him himſelf then, and would tell his friends of it.

In the mean while every body was buzzing me in the Ear, that *Buiſſon* was likely to reſent ſo publick a correction; and yet I had no reaſon to believe it, for he made no outward ſhew of any ſuch thing; and from a very diſorderly man, was grown the ſobereſt and moſt regular of the whole Company: nay, he gave me a viſit about three weeks after, to ask my pardon, and acknowledge the favour I had done him in that chaſtiſement; telling me withal, that if ever he made a good man, he ſhould think himſelf oblig'd to me for his reformation. Theſe words ſurpriz'd me, and gave me great hopes of him; and indeed his whole behaviour was agreeable to them: which made me tell him, how glad I was to find him of ſo generous a temper; and I aſſur'd him, that he ſhould find an equal change in my reſpect for him, as he was changed with regard to his duty; promiſing withal, to do him the beſt ſervice I could to the King. He repeated the ſame thing to me two months after, and for eight months that he continu'd in the Regiment, behav'd himſelf after the ſame manner. Which gave me all the reaſon in the world to believe, that all reſentments of what had paſt between us were quite laid aſide. So well had he ſtudied to diſſemble his deſign, by an evenneſs of humour, and fair comportment; ſuch as might ſeem incredible in a *French* Gentleman, which Nation rae uſually of a temper more open, and leſs capable of diſguiſe. But at length, he came to me with a Letter from his Father, who had ſent for him, and entreated his diſmiſſion, which I eaſily granted; and thereupon he again made a publick acknowledgment of the favours he had receiv'd from me; as I on my ſide aſſur'd him I would neglect no opportunity of doing him ſervice: And then he told me he was to take Poſt next morning for *Touraine*, which was his native Country.

III. About two days after, ſome that had been preſent at this parting, came to tell me, that they feared *Buiſſon* had miſchief in his heart, becauſe he was not yet gone out of Town, as he ſaid he would. I then began to ſuſpect as well as they, but ſince I could do nothing to prevent him, and conſidering how diſtant from any kind of reſentment his whole behaviour had appear'd, made as though I did not believe it, and carry'd my ſelf ſo that no body could ſuppoſe I did. In the mean while, he kuowing I was to be upon the Guard at *St. Germains*, took the time when I was to return, which that he might be more certainly informed of, he went to enquire for me at my Lodging, upon pretence of making me a parting viſit: And there being told, that I was to come back at night, he went to wait for me upon the Road betwixt *Montmartre*, and *le Roullo*. Seeing me at ſome diſtance coming alone, he put on to a gentle trot, and made directly up to me. Aſſoon as ever I perceiv'd him, I ſaid within my ſelf; Is it poſſible, that Diſſimulation ſhould be ſo diſcreetly carry'd, and that ſo violent a paſſion as Revenge, can lye thus long ſmother'd in a *French-mans* boſom?

Coming up near to one another, I gave him the time of the day, and askt him whither he was going? He boggled a little in his anſwer, and told me he was taking the air; at the ſame time turning his Horſe, as if he would go back with me, and rode at leaſt a hundred paces without ſpeaking one word of his deſign. At laſt out it came: and then he told me, he was very ſorry to find himſelf oblig'd to demand a thing of me, which ſeem'd ſo contrary to his duty; but that the extremity to which he was reduc'd, and the neceſſity that lay upon him of paſſing otherwiſe for a man utterly diſhonour'd, forc'd him to it. That the affair which had been betwixt us about eight months ago was ſo publick, as not to be repair'd except by another as publick, which was the ſatisfaction he requir'd for that affront. That it was with great reluctancy he made me this requeſt, knowing with how little rancour I had acted; but ſince my intention could no way ſecure his honour, he knew I was too generous to refuſe him ſo juſt a demand.

I reply'd, That his Complement ſurpriz'd me much after what he had ſo often ſaid, and the obligations he had formerly profeſt that he had, and ſhould as long as he liv'd, have to me, for having both done my own duty, and reduc'd him to a regular way of living, and ſuch as was becoming an honeſt man, and a Gentleman; and askt him, whether he could have forgot all theſe things, or whether they had really never been his real ſenſe? He made anſwer, that at the time when he ſaid them they were; and would be ſo ſtill, did he not ſee himſelf abſolutely diſhonour'd, and under a neceſſity of demanding this ſatisfaction. I told him, that according to Rule I ow'd him none, having done nothing but what was my duty to do; and that it was not cuſtomary for Officers to give this ſort of ſatisfaction to their private Souldiers. But I ſaw he was reſolv'd to have what he ask'd, and was conſtrain'd in ſpight of my heart to do a thing that was againſt all order and diſcipline. He oblig'd me then to alight, as he did; and it was my good fortune to have the advantage, of which nevertheleſs, tho I was wounded, I made no other uſe, than to preſerve that to him, which he had ſo brutiſhly reſolv'd to take from me, contrary to all Juſtice in the world. I then told him, that a great many other men would not have done as I did, after ſo many teſtimonies of acknowledgment formerly made me; all which he had now given the lye to, after a manner moſt unbecoming a Gentleman of his quality. He confeſt what I ſaid to be true, which made me aſſoon as he got up, offer him his Sword; but for all the rage he was in, he directly told me, that having already been ſo great a Beaſt as to uſe it againſt me, he could not promiſe but he might be brutiſh enough ſtill to turn upon me a ſecond time, and therefore entreated I would keep it, and carry it away with me.

Monſieur *Rambures*, who at that time was hunting about *Montmartre*, having ſeen naked Swords at ſome diſtance, and gueſſing eaſily what the matter was, came riding full ſpeed up to us, and found us in the condition I have related, both of us wounded, and one with two Swords. He expreſt a great concern, that he could not come ſooner to prevent this misfortune; but would however needs do that now, that he could have wiſht done before, which was, to make us embrace, and to prevail upon us to forget all that had paſt. I then begg'd him to give Monſieur *Buiſſon* his Sword again, which he did, and went along with us both to *Paris*, where each of us having caus'd our ſelves to dreſt, were ſoon cur'd, for neither was much hurt.

IV. But

IV. But this unlucky buſineſs, which I could have wiſh'd might have been kept ſecret, was ſhortly after made publick. For ſome people, who envied my fortune, made uſe of this occaſion to repreſent me ill to the King; who was ſtrangely ſurpriz'd to hear ſuch news, and extremely diſpleas'd at me upon it. Monſieur *Saligny*, who was acquainted with the whole truth of the Story, endeavoured to excuſe me, by telling the King, that I could not poſſibly have done otherwiſe, and that I was to defend my own life. Monſieur *Rambures* too, who had been an Eye-witneſs of the action, ſpoke to his Majeſty, and told the thing as much in my favour as he could. But all this would not ſatisfy the King, who ſtill ſhewed himſelf very angry, by reaſon of the ill impreſſions ſome back-friends of mine had made upon him. In the mean while, though I had intimation given me, that ill offices had been done me to the King, yet I kept on mounting the Guard, as I us'd to do, being reſolv'd to lay the naked truth before his Majeſty, if he ſhould think fit to ſpeak to me about it. And having one day preſented my ſelf before him, he gave me a look full of indignation, and when the reſt of the company went out of the room, he commanded me to ſtay. Then he ask'd me, how I had the confidence to appear in his preſence, after the fault I had committed, and if this was the order I intended to reſtore in the Regiment by my example; that the leaſt Cadet might challenge an Officer, and that a man ſhould be thought wanting to his own honour, if he refuſe to anſwer him? Whether I had not foreſeen all the conſequences of this action, which being of ſo pernicious example to all the Officers and Soldiers, particularly offended him in his own perſon, and made it plain to all the world, that he was miſtaken in the judgment he had made of me; for whereas he took me for a ſober diſcreet perſon, I had now forfeited all that good opinion, by ſo irregular, ſo unworthy a management of my ſelf. To this he added threats too, telling me, he was very near letting all the world know, in my perſon, that no Officer can never be allow'd to fight a private Souldier; but if, as a mark of particular favour, he forbore to puniſh me as I deſerv'd, yet I was unworthy to approach his perſon any more; and as for *Buiſſon*, he would make him a publick example, for he ſhould be ſhot to death.

The King had no ſooner ended theſe words but he turn'd about, and was leaving me; but feeling my ſelf cut to the very heart, I threw my ſelf at his feet, humbly begging his pardon, and telling him how infinitely I was afflicted, that I had incurr'd his diſpleaſure: I told him I acknowledg'd his Juſtice, and the truth of every thing he had ſaid to me; but if his Majeſty would grant me this further favour to hear me, I hop'd, that tho the action I had done was criminal in it ſelf, yet the particular circumſtances of it might make me appear leſs guilty; but nevertheleſs, that I durſt not attempt to juſtifie my ſelf, unleſs his Majeſty would firſt aſſure me, that he would have the goodneſs to hear me. The King, mov'd with the paſſion I was in, anſwer'd in a milder tone, that he gave me leave to ſpeak. I began then to do it, in the manner I thought moſt proper to qualifie his opinion of that which he thought moſt criminal in the action, and ſo as might tend to juſtifie both of us, rather than to vindicate my ſelf ſingly, to the prejudice of *Buiſſon*. Your Majeſty may pleaſe to remember (ſaid I,) what condition I found the Company in, when you did me the honour to give me the Lieutenancy of it, and the ſtrict Orders I receiv'd to reſtore the ancient diſcipline there. Having

a young

a young Gentleman to deal with, whom the general diſorder had made ungovernable, and who by a falſe punctilio of honour, valued himſelf upon being independent on the Officers, I proceeded againſt him with all the ſeverity, that to me ſeem'd neceſſary, for the reducing him to his duty, and reſtraining the reſt by his example. 'Tis true, the method I took was a little violent, and if I may preſume to ſay ſo, a little inconſiſtent with the honour of a young Gentleman, who had lived at large, and who thought it his glory to be under no Government. But yet, as hot and wilful as he was, he came to himſelf, acknowledged the juſtice of his correction, and the good I had done in chaſtizing him after that manner, he became a patern of ſubmiſſion and diſcretion to the whole Company; ſo that every body return'd to their former order, and your Majeſty was very well ſatisfied with the regulation. But, Sir, there are a ſort of men, who becauſe they can do no good themſelves, are impatient that any body elſe ſhould; and ſome of theſe afterwards perverted this young Gentleman, perſwading him, that his honour was loſt, and he had no courage, if he did not require ſatisfaction for this affront; and that a Gentleman of his birth and quality ought to eſteem his honour dearer than his life. Theſe ſtrange impreſſions, Sir, and ill counſels of raſh people, that are falſly jealous of anothers honor, was the thing that puſh'd on Monſieur *Buiſſon* to this extremity; who, knowing well enough, that I was a man ſtrict in the obſervance of my duty, and one that would never conſent to an action ſo contrary to the Rules of military diſcipline; becauſe he would unavoidably engage me, to give him, what he was put upon requiring of me, laid wait for my coming back from *St. Germains*, watch'd me upon the Road, and after he had put himſelf out of my Company, and received his diſmiſſion from me, compell'd me to that ſatisfaction, which he never would have dared to demand in any other place, where I could have refuſed him. In this circumſtance, Sir, ſaid I, there was no courſe could be taken, but either to run away, or to do as I did: So that having upon this occaſion only obey'd the indiſpenſable Laws of Nature, which command us to defend our ſelves when we are aſſaulted; I dare promiſe my ſelf thus much from your Majeſty's Juſtice, that you will pronounce me as innocent, as I had been criminal, and worthy of death, had what has been repreſented to your Majeſty been true, that I had voluntarily fought with a Cadet of my own Company. I do therefore, Sir, moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to give judgment upon the caſe, and rather to believe what I ſay, and ſwear in the preſence of God, than what may have been told you, by ſuch as are not ſo well inform'd of the truth of the buſineſs; or that perhaps have proceeded upon ſome private ſpleen againſt us both.

This diſcourſe of mine ſo wrought upon the King, that he was almoſt perfectly overcome by it, ſo that his Majeſty reply'd, That indeed he did not underſtand the buſineſs before, to be as I had now related it to him; nor had he heard any thing of this laſt circumſtance, which very much alter'd the quality of the action: but though he might ſee ſome reaſon to excuſe me, and pardon this fault, which he look'd upon as done againſt my will, yet *Buiſſon* was abſolutely inexcuſable; ſince having at firſt been ſo diſcreet as to receive his chaſtiſement as became him, he was but the more guilty in hearkning to the counſels of raſh, giddy young Fellows, and by ſo ill an action giving the lye to all the good conduct he had ſhew'd before: That to way-lay his Lieutenant upon a common road, to aſſault him, and drive him to a neceſſity of defending himſelf,

himſelf, was a crime not only againſt him who was attackt, but all the Officers of the Regiment were concern'd, and all injur'd in this action; which being an example of ſo pernicious conſequence, he would have it puniſh'd accordingly, and that Juſtice ſhould be done upon him.

V. Finding the King's countenance change, and clearing up towards me, I thought I might take the liberty to move him ſtill farther in favour of him, whom he had condemn'd to dye; and from a ſuppliant in my own caſe, to become interceſſor for another: And I had that hope in his Majeſty's goodneſs, to believe that he would rather incline to my humble requeſt, in regard I intereſted my ſelf for the perſon that had injur'd me. I then humbly beſought him not to be angry, if after the pardon he had been graciouſly pleaſed to grant me for my ſelf, I had the boldneſs to preſume upon begging this young Gentleman's, upon whom his Juſtice intended the whole weight of the puniſhment ſhould fall. I told him, that his action, though criminal, yet ſeeming rather to have been the effect of ill counſel, than ill nature, it might deſerve ſome allowance to be made for it; that if he ſhould receive his life, after having ſo well deſerv'd to loſe it, he muſt needs think himſelf oblig'd ever after to devote it to his Prince's ſervice; that it would be the greateſt affliction in the world to me, to have been the occaſion of the diſhonour of a whole Family: And therefore I was bold to conjure his Majeſty, that he would extend his clemency to two Criminals, who were in effect but one, ſeeing I ſhould think my ſelf puniſh'd in the perſon of him, for whom I preſum'd to ſpeak, and that I could not riſe from his Majeſty's Feet, till he had granted my requeſt.

The King, though inwardly touch'd with what I had ſaid to him, made anſwer, What! You are not content with your own pardon then, and take upon you to move me for another! Are not you afraid of making your ſelf more guilty, and by that in ſome ſort to betray, that you have the greateſt ſhare in the fault of him, for whom you intercede, when you ought to be the firſt man that ſhould deſire to have it puniſh'd! But nevertheleſs, I know your temper, and forgive the exceſs of your friendſhip. I give him the life you beg of me, and I give it as the greateſt teſtimony of my acknowledging your ſervices. But for examples ſake, and the publick ſatisfaction, I will have him brought to Tryal, and proceſs entred againſt him: that in the mean time he may retire into *Holland*, and not return, till there be no more talk of this buſineſs, and I have granted him a formal Pardon.

It is impoſſible for me to expreſs the joy and grateful acknowledgments, that theſe words raiſed in my breaſt, I embrac'd the King's knees, and having return'd my thanks more by ſighs and tears, than words, I withdrew out of the Chamber.

When the Lords of the Court were come into the room, the King told them all, after what manner he had humbled me, and how he had conceiv'd he ought to chaſtiſe me for the fault I had committed, declaring at the ſame time, that, though he had forborn to puniſh me with greater ſeverity, in regard of the ſervices I had done him, he would yet make *Buiſſon* an example, and have him condemn'd in a Council of War to be ſhot to death; which made the whole Court believe, that he really intended to have him executed, not any one knowing the extraordinary grace his Majeſty had promis'd me in his favour.

In the mean time I went to look out Monſieur *Buiſſon*, and told him all that had paſt, and gave him aſſurance, that during his abſence in *Holland*,

I would omit no occaſion of uſing my utmoſt endeavour for his return, and putting him into a condition to expoſe that life for the King's Service, which he now ow'd to his Mercy. * The poor young man was ſo aſtoniſh'd to ſee the ſtrange way I had taken to revenge my ſelf upon him, that he was able to ſay no more than this, that he was extremely confounded, and that now I had repaid his brutal paſſion with the greateſt generoſity I could poſſibly expreſs, he had nothing more to offer in return, but his life, which ſhould ever be as much mine as his own; that he ſhould from thence forward look upon me as a ſecond Father, and was reſolv'd abſolutely to depend upon me, and my conduct. Whereupon we embrac'd, and he went to make himſelf ready for his Journey into *Holland*. His affair was ſhortly after debated in a Council of War, where he was condemn'd, but being got out of the way, they lookt no farther after him.

VI. The King for a good while after put on ſome coldneſs to me before company, tho in private he was as kind to me as ever. I underſtood the meaning of it well enough, and behav'd my ſelf the beſt I could to ſecond his Majeſty's deſign. But I was ſtill wanting for ſome occaſion to procure Monſieur *Buiſſon*'s return, and a whole year eſcap'd me without ever diſcovering any hopes of it. At laſt I reſolv'd to be bold once again, and obſerve meaſures leſs than ever, in an affair where I thought my interceſſion not unlikely to prevail. A Lieutenant of the Regiment of *Normandy* was at that time very ſick at *Paris*, the moment I heard of his death, I conceiv'd I ought to take this opportunity to ſerve the man; whoſe being at a diſtance was a great affliction to me; and accordingly I went forthwith to the King. I told him at firſt, without laying open my deſign, that I was come humbly to entreat a favour of his Majeſty, which was the Command of ſuch a Lieutenant juſt now dead. The King, as far as I could gueſs, preſently ſuſpected for whom I made this ſuit, but not willing to let me know that he penetrated into my thoughts, he ſatisfy'd himſelf with telling me, that he muſt firſt know what I would do with it, and whom I intended it for. I anſwer'd, that it was for a friend of mine, whom I would take the liberty to name, as ſoon as his Majeſty ſhould have done me the honour to aſſure me of the place. Is it not for *Buiſſon*? (reply'd the King) for I know your temper, and do almoſt read it in your heart. Ah! Sir, (ſaid I) thus to penetrate into ones thoughts is to be truly a Prophet; and doubtleſs I ought to be careful to have none but good ones, ſince your Majeſty hath ſuch piercing eyes. 'Tis true, Sir, I am heartily ſorry to ſee this young Gentleman, who is capable of doing your Majeſty good ſervice, ſo long out of a condition to ſhew it; and I take the confidence to hope your Majeſty will compleat the favour you have ſo generouſly begun, in giving him, who holds his life from your goodneſs, an opportunity of employing it all in your ſervice. The King, mov'd with this preſſing importunity in behalf of one who had ſo highly diſoblig'd me, was moſt graciouſly pleas'd to ſay, that it was not in his power to deny me any thing, and that the generoſity of this requeſt engag'd him to grant that, which regularly ought not to be granted.

With this promiſe of the King, which filled me with great joy, I went home, and immediately diſpatch'd away an expreſs Meſſenger into *Holland* to Monſieur *Buiſſon*, to bid him preſently come away to me, about ſome buſineſs of very great conſequence. Accordingly he was ſoon at *Paris*, where having told me, that he very well underſtood he was afreſh oblig'd to me for the favour of his liberty, ſeeing that I brought him to a place,

a place, from which his ill behaviour had conſtrain'd him to fly: I made anſwer, that it was the King to whom he was oblig'd for all; and now eſpecially for a favour he did not expect, which was a Lieutenant's place in the Regiment of *Normandy*, for that his Majeſty had conferr'd upon him, and upon this account it was that I ſent for him: To which I added, that I would carry him to kiſs the King's hand, that he might in perſon pay his acknowledgments for ſo very exceeding a favour, which engag'd him to lay out the reſt of his life upon his Majeſty's ſervice, and that therefore he ſhould be in a readineſs to go along with me that Evening to the *Louvre*. This poor Gentleman, very well underſtanding from what hand his Lieutenancy came, was ſo confounded, that he had not one word at command to return me thanks in, and therefore did it only in dumb ſhew. I carried him at night to the *Louvre*, and having firſt askt his Majeſty's leave to preſent him, I brought him in. As ſoon as he came into his preſence, he threw himſelf at the King's feet, without ſpeaking otherwiſe than by his poſture, and profound humiliation. The King then told him, he was happy in having ſuch a man as I to deal with, who after ſuch an injury, had made it my buſineſs to obtain the pardon of him who wrong'd me to that degree; a thing that he could not have granted to any other, and that very few beſides me would have dar'd to ask it: That therefore he would let him know, that he was oblig'd to me both for his Life and his Command, which he gave him upon my account; that all theſe things laid together oblig'd him to look upon me for the future as his Benefactor, and to repair the wrong, and the fault he had been guilty of againſt the whole body of the Army, by a life and behaviour proportionable to the ſenſe he ought to have of ſo extraordinary a favour. Reſpect, Joy, and Grief all at once made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion upon the mind of Monſieur *Buiſſon*, that he could not return one ſyllable of anſwer to the King; but as he came into the room without daring to ſpeak, ſo he went out again without being able to do it. Which alſo pleas'd his Majeſty more, than if he had made a long Complement, for he judged better of the ſentiments of his heart, by this reſpectful ſilence, than he could have done by any ſtudied harrangue.

I afterwards ſued out his Pardon, and procured the Commiſſion for his Command, and got him admitted into the Regiment; where I am able to ſay, that he acquir'd a great deal of eſteem, having perfectly made good what was expected from him, and paſſing for one of he braveſt men in the Army. He alſo very faithfully obey'd the command his Majeſty laid on him, always to conſider me as his faithful friend. For both from an effect of his natural inclination, and the deep ſenſe he had of the ſervice I had done him, he ever after lived with me, as with his Father, by which name alſo he us'd to call me. And I ſhall take notice in the following part of theſe Memoirs, that having heard I was embroil'd in a buſineſs of ſuch conſequence that my head was in danger, he came poſt from a very remote place to *Rochel*, where I then was, to make me a tender of his life and fortune.

VII. The courſe I took with another Cadet, was yet more ſevere than this with Monſieur *Buiſſon*, and had an effect no leſs ſucceſsful, to the making him a good man, and winning his heart abſolutely. Having receiv'd into my Company a young Gentleman, a Relation of our Captain's, the Count *de Saligny*, that ſo I might train him up, as I did ſeveral others, in the Art of War; I told him at firſt, that as he had the honour

to

to be Monſieur *Saligny*'s Kinſman, ſo it would be neceſſary that he ſhould become an example to the whole Company. I then commanded a Serjeant to lodge him with another Cadet; but this young man was ſo ill conditioned, and ſo perverſe, that he with whom I had quarter'd him, ſoon begg'd of me to part them, for he could not live any longer with ſuch a Mad-man. I had alſo complaints from all hands of his violences and extravagancies; nay he was of ſo deviliſh a diſpoſition, and ſo unbecoming his quality, to go at nights and ſtand in corners of ſtreets to watch for peoples paſſing, taking ſingular pleaſure to give them private thruſts with his Sword, and all this upon no provocation, but out of meer ill nature, and to do miſchief. Hereupon I ſent for him one day to my Chamber, where with great ſeverity I told him, that I had complaints of him made me every day, and ſome of miſdemeanours ſo foul and black, as I durſt ſcarce believe of a Gentleman, being unworthy even of a Porter; that could I have perſwaded my ſelf he had been guilty of ſuch things, I ſhould have done him the favour to clap him up in a Dungeon; and that I adviſed him to let me hear no more ſuch matters of him.

This however could not prevail with him, but within four or five days he fell back to his old villanies, and news was brought me, that he had wounded a woman, an Advocate, and another man, and was fled upon it. This news put me into a great paſſion, ſeeing all my remonſtrances ſo ſoon followed by freſh and greater extravagancies, than he had been guilty of before. So that I immediately cried out to a Serjeant, and two of my Servants, to take my Horſes and purſue the Wretch, and bring him to me (ſaid I) bound hand and foot; I'll make him ſmart for it. Whereupon they preſently took the way they knew he was gone, and having overtaken him within three leagues of the City, brought him back. I would neither ſee him, nor ſpeak to him, but immediately clapt him in a Dungeon, charging that nothing ſhould be given him but bread and water. It is not to be believed to what a degree he was enraged, and how many impertinencies his fury prompted him to utter againſt me: I ſhall only repeat one inſtance of his rage, which was, that in the tranſports of his paſſion he would ſay, that if the five fingers of his hands were five pieces of Cannon, he would level them all at *Pontis*, to beat out his brains, and pound him to powder. In the mean while I thought my ſelf oblig'd to acquaint the King with what had paſt, both in regard he was a perſon of quality, and Monſieur *Saligny*'s Kinſman, and alſo becauſe I had ſome reaſon to apprehend the conſequences of this affair. The King approved what I had done, and according to his cuſtom, recommended to me the ſeverity of diſcipline.

After I had let this Cadet lye a month or ſix weeks in the Dungeon, I had a mind to try whether it had wrought any alteration in his temper, and to this purpoſe ſent a Monk to ſound him, and put him under ſome terrours. The Father going down into the Dungeon told him, the Captains were upon meeting, and there was ſome reaſon to apprehend, it was for bringing him to his Trial; that therefore he adviſed him to take ſome care of his Conſcience, and not ſuffer himſelf to be ſurpriz'd, and that the leaſt he could do was to manifeſt his repentance by a confeſſion of his faults. At this heavy news the poor young man began to quake every bone of him, and conjur'd the Father to intercede for him to me, ſaying, that he acknowledged his paſt offences, and that they would make him wiſer for the time to come. The Father told him he durſt not ſpeak to me of it, I was ſo incens'd againſt him; and that he had no other commiſſion

miſſion but only to prevail with him to think upon his ſoul. This anſwer troubled him yet more, and he conjur'd the Monk not to forſake him. The Monk reply'd, that he durſt not ſo much as come frequently to viſit him, for fear he ſhould be ſuſpected of ſome ſecret intelligence with him, and by that means loſe the opportunity of ever ſeeing him at all. This put the Gentleman into great anxiety, to think what would become of him. The Monk came and told me what a change he found, and how ſucceſsful a viſit he had made, of which I alſo preſently gave an account to the King, who made me this remarkable anſwer: I adviſe you not to depend too much upon this haſty repentance. This looks like a falſe penitence, and he being of ſo wicked a nature, may kill you in a fit of his paſſion: It will be convenient firſt to try whether his converſion be real, or not. Oh Sir, (ſaid I) I fear him not, and know very well he is ſo afraid of me, that I am very confident, he will always tremble but at the ſight of me.

The King gave me leave to do what I thought fit, and I ſent the ſame Prieſt to my Priſoner again, to whom he confeſt himſelf with great teſtimonies of repentance, and afterwards receiv'd in the Chappel, as to prepare himſelf for death. When he had ſcarce any hopes left, I ſent for him by a Serjeant into my Chamber. There I told him, that his Trial being pretty far advanc'd, I thought fit to ſend for him, that I might know from his own mouth, whether he was ſtill the ſame man he had been, and if he ſtill perſiſted in not acknowledging his fault. Then he threw himſelf at my knees, and begg'd of me to ſpare his life. He told me, that he confeſs'd his crimes deſerv'd death, but if I would have compaſſion on him, he did proteſt and ſolemnly engage, that his life ſhould for the future be wholly employed in the King's ſervice, and that he would never again commit the like diſorders, confirming what he ſaid, by taking God to witneſs of the ſincerity of his heart. Whereupon I told him, that as to the ſaving his life, that was not wholly in my power; but I promis'd to do what I could in order to it; and that he ſhould only have a care to keep his word faithfully. Then I ſent him back to Priſon again, and let him lye there a little longer ſtill, till his buſineſs had been examin'd, and his Pardon obtain'd. The acknowledgment of this favour I had procur'd for him, when he look'd upon himſelf to be no better than a dead man, made him love me ever after as his Father. He grew from this time forward a very civil honeſt man, and was advanc'd to a Command, in which he loſt his life honourably. I was willing to ſhew by this inſtance, that there is ſcarcely any diſpoſition ſo preverſe, but it may be reclaim'd, and that there are ſome ſeaſons, when we muſt not be afraid to oppoſe the rougheſt Chaſtiſements to the torrent of corrupted habits, and brutiſh paſſions, when they are not to be dealt with by leſs violent methods.

VIII. The Captains of the Regiment of Guards, and one eſpecially above all the reſt, that ſhall be nameleſs, had a long time been incens'd againſt me, and born me a private grudge, becauſe the King out of particular favour, appointed my Quarters before all the other Lieutenants, when he went into the Field; but yet the greater part durſt not make any open diſcoveries of there hatred me, only one there was, who out of ſpight, ſeiz'd upon the lodging his Majeſty had aſſign'd me, and lay in my very bed, where I found him at my return from the King. But being not yet aſſur'd with what intention he had done it, I would make no buſtle, but went and lay all night upon the Straw. The next day, in-

ſtead of excuſing himſelf, he told me plainly, that I muſt go ſeek out ſome other Lodging. This was more than enough to ſet us together by the ears; but age and experience having taught me a little to moderate my paſſion, I only told him, that it was my humour to content my ſelf with what belonged to me, and for that matter, ſince it was the King's favour to me, is was not for him to oppoſe it, and the King himſelf was the perſon to whom he was to make his complaint.

The King being inform'd of the buſineſs, declar'd himſelf very much diſſatisfy'd with it, and ſaid, He was free to do what he pleas'd in his own Kingdom, and that it was not for Captains to King it with him, and controul what he did in favour to any particular Officer, who always attended his perſon: Declaring at the ſame time, that the Captains ſhould not have their lodgings markt out any more, but they ſhould lye where they pleas'd in the Quarters that ſhould be aſſigned them. This nettled them to the quick, and they waited only for ſome fair occaſion to be reveng'd on me. My Company was at that time the firſt of the Regiment, by reaſon of the great number of Cadets of Quality, whom their Parents did me the honour to commit to my care, that I might bring them up in the firſt exerciſes of War; and I had there among the reſt, the Mareſchal *de St. Geran*'s Son, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſay more by and by.

IX. One day, being upon the Guard at *Fontainbleau*, as another Company was coming on to relieve us, and I had thoughts, according to my cuſtom, to go back with mine to *Montereau*, which was our Quarters, the King call'd me out of his Window, where he ſtood to ſee the Tilting, and running at the Ring, which were then doing in the Court below. I preſently went up, and being come into his Chamber, orders were given me to ſend away my Company, and to ſtay my ſelf about his perſon. I went then preſently to look out the Serjeants, and gave them order, as his Majeſty had expreſsly commanded, that they ſhould be very careful to prevent all quarrels, eſpecially among the Cadets, (who ſtood mightily upon their honour, not to put up any thing from one another) and alſo not to let any one ſtay and drink by the way, by reaſon of the diſputes which are often occaſioned by Wine. I had once a mind, by a ſort of prophetic fear of the misfortune that happened, to detain the Mareſchal of *St. Geran*'s Son with me, whoſe forward humour, and too generous Soul made me eternally uneaſy for him. But at laſt, I know not how, I let him go back with the reſt.

That very day in the month of *May*, 1624. the King had reſolv'd upon cauſing Collonel *Ornano* to be apprehended, who in the Evening came into his Chamber, and was entertained by his Majeſty as formerly, with all the kindneſs imaginable. The King talked with him a great while about a Chaſe the Duke of *Orleans* was to make next morning in the Forreſt of *Fontainbleau*, asking him very familiarly, what ways they had beſt to hunt, becauſe he was well experienc'd in the Forreſt, and knew all the leaſt, and blindeſt paths of it. At laſt the hour deſign'd for his Arreſt being come, Monſieur *Hallier*, Captain of the Guard at that time, and ſeveral other Officers came into the Chamber. Now it is the cuſtom, when the Captain of the Guard is upon entring, for the Uſher to give three blows upon the threſhold of the door, which was alſo the ſignal the King had given for his own retiring. So then his Majeſty hearing the three ſtroaks, bid Collonel *Ornano* good night, and withdrew into another

another room, whither I alſo followed him, according to the order he had given me. Immediately Monſieur *Hallier* came in, and making up to Monſieur *Ornano*, gave him a very ſurprizing Complement; which was, that he was ſorry to tell him he had orders to ſecure his perſon. How! (ſaid the Collonel in great amazement) I am but juſt now come from the King, and he receiv'd me with all the kindneſs in the world; let me ſpeak to him however. Monſieur *Hallier* told him, he had no order to ſuffer that, and he entreated him to give leave, that he might execute what orders he had; that as for any other matters, his own innocency ought to ſupport him with a good aſſurance, and put him out of fear. Monſieur *Ornano* then ſeeing himſelf under a neceſſity of obeying, follow'd the Captain of the Guards, who led him into the chamber of *Saint Louis*, which was appointed to ſerve him for a Priſon.

At the very moment he was arreſted, the King, ſuppoſing that ſome of his Family would not fail to make all poſſible ſpeed to *Paris*, that they might ſecure his Papers, gave me and three Officers more orders to go into the Forreſt, that we might lye upon the great Road, and ſtop all that ſhould attempt to paſs that way. So we divided our ſelves into two and two, and about eleven at night took our ſeparate poſts, upon each of the Roads; where we waited a great while before any body appear'd. At laſt we ſaw at ſome diſtance a man mounted upon a *Spaniſh* Gennet, that came galloping full ſpeed toward us. Our orders were not to ſhoot, and ſo the other Officer and I reſolv'd to turn our Horſes head to head acroſs the way, when he came up near us, that ſo we might ſtop his paſſage. But this man, who was admirably well mounted, ſhew'd us a trick for our trick, and without any manner of concern, riding full drive upon us, he gave us ſuch a bruſh, as threw my Companion and his Horſe above ten paces off: We never thought of purſuing him, for indeed it had been to no purpoſe, he being ſo much better mounted; and I for my part was not ſorry we had been thus broke through, for the reſpect I bore to Collonel *Ornano*. I went back to give the King an account of what had paſt, who only laught heartily at the ſtory.

X. But that very morning I had moſt afflicting news brought me: For the Serjeants of my Company not having executed my commands as they ought, ſome Cadets ſtopt at *Moret*, and the Wine being got into their Heads, they quarrell'd, and fought three to three, ſo deſperately, that two of them were kill'd upon the ſpot, one of which was Mareſchal *St. Geran*'s Son; and two more very dangerouſly wounded. When this news came to *Fontainbleau* it put me almoſt out of my wits: I went immediately to wait on the King, and tell him of it firſt, humbly beſeeching him to remember the order he had given me, that I ſhould ſtay that night about his perſon. Whereupon his Majeſty commanded me to go and tell the Mareſchal *de St. Geran* my ſelf, and promis'd to make my peace with him. I went, but very unwillingly God knows, having ſo ſad news to carry; and I had ſcarce began to ſpeak, but he underſtood me at half a word, and askt preſently if his Son was kill'd? I did my beſt to comfort him by conſiderations meerly humane, thinking more of what concern'd his Honour, than his Salvation; and at laſt entreated him to do me the juſtice upon this occaſion, not to impute this misfortune to me, whom a poſitive order from the King had put out of a capacity to prevent it. He anſwer'd me with all the goodneſs I could expect, and immediately lockt himſelf up in his Cloſet. The King ſent ſhortly after to

let

let him know that he bore a part of his grief with him; and when he came to return his thanks, his Majeſty, after comforting him with all the expreſſions of a particular tenderneſs, did me the honour to juſtifie me to him, and to aſſure him that I was in no fault at all; to which the Mareſchal reply'd, with all the Civility imaginable, that he was very far from accuſing me, that he knew me too well to lay the misfortune to my charge, and that he ſhould always love me, at the ſame rate he had ever done.

But the Captains of the Regiment, who were all of them very angry at me, for the reaſon I gave before, thought this a favourable opportunity to do me an ill office with the King. For not knowing that I ſtay'd behind at *Fontainbleau* by his expreſs command, they came all in a body, and entreated leave of his Majeſty, to proceed againſt me in the ordinary methods of Juſtice; giving him to underſtand, that ſome Lieutenants thought it below them to do their duty, and to attend their Companies, and lov'd to be at Court, and by that means were the cauſe of infinite diſorders. The King, who very well knew their malice againſt me, and the private jealouſie that animated them to it, would not however take any notice to them, but let them go on, and prefer their informations. But as ſoon as they were perfected, and they came to preſent them to his Majeſty, he took them, and told him, he would take care to have them examin'd. But afterwards he threw them into the fire, and gave the Provoſt order to ſtop all farther proſecutions. This made them underſtand too late, that they had committed an errour, in attacking a perſon, whom the King honour'd with his particular protection, and in whoſe favour he ſo openly declar'd himſelf.

XI. Some years after the King had given me a Lieutenancy in the Guards, he ſent me to *Fort-Louis*, with a private Commiſſion, and upon an occaſion, that he would have no body know, but me only. Monſieur *Arnauld*, Camp-maſter to the Regiment of *Champagne*, and Governour of this Fort, was at that time in great repute for his knowledge and experience in War, and in all the arts of Military Diſcipline. He was equally prudent and bold in his undertakings, and no leſs ſucceſsful in the execution of them. The prudence of his conduct made him admir'd, even by thoſe who were above him in birth and command, and there ſeem'd nothing wanting, to reſtore the old *Roman* Diſcipline in *France*, but his being made General of the King's Forces. One may truly ſay too, that *France* owes part of the glory of deſtroying *Rochel*, that Cittadel of the *Hugonots*, to him, for he firſt began by *Fort-Louis* of which he was Governour, to block up the City, and cut the Inhabitants off from ravaging the Country, till the King afterwards came to make himſelf Maſter of this important place. This great reputation that Monſieur *Arnauld* had, both in the Armies and at Court, was the cauſe, why the King, who hath ever had a natural inclination to all the concerns of War, deſired to learn his methods of drawing up men, and exerciſe, and diſcipline. Reſolving therefore to employ ſome one of his Officers, in a thing impoſſible for him to learn in his own perſon; he caſt his eyes on me, as one proper to keep the ſecret, and likely to inform him of what he had a mind to know. He intruſted me with his deſign, and told me, that to make the matter more private, I ſhould firſt take a Journey into *Provence*, and go from thence to *Fort-Louis*, to paſs ſome time in the quality of a Volunteer with this Governour, as if more particularly to inſtruct my ſelf in a trade,

for

for which all the world knew I had a great paſſion. He gave me order to ſtay there, till he ſent for me, and till I had exactly obſerv'd all the particulars he had a mind to learn, but he expreſly forbad me to tell any man alive, that I went thither by his command.

With theſe inſtructions away I went, not ſo far as *Provence*, but from *Lions* turn'd toward *Rochel*, and ſo directly to *Fort-Louis*, to lye at a Gentleman's quarter, with whom I had been acquainted when I was in the Regiment of *Champagne*. He receiv'd me with ſeveral teſtimonies of friendſhip, telling me, that I muſt of neceſſity go wait upon the Governour, who was very exact in his Diſcipline, and expected an account of every one that came into the Garriſon. This was juſt as I would have it, and accordingly he carried me to him two days after. Being not known to Monſieur *Arnauld*, or at leaſt believing my ſelf not to be ſo, I told him, his great reputation had drawn me thither, and that having ever from my youth been ſtrongly inclin'd to make my ſelf expert in martial matters, I was come with a deſign to be inſtructed under him, and to ſerve ſome time in his Garriſons a Volunteer, that I might try to improve by his judgment, in obſerving what he made to be practis'd by his Troops in their exerciſes, and in practiſing the ſame my ſelf the beſt that poſſibly I could, under his command. He reply'd, that he had indeed made it his particular buſineſs and ſtudy, to underſtand his profeſſion, and thought he might ſay, that he had made ſome little progreſs in it by his pains and experience; and that he hop'd, if he liv'd any time, to ſettle part of the antient diſcipline once again among his Souldiers. The openneſs he us'd in the end of his diſcourſe, gave me ſome ſuſpicion, that I might poſſibly be known to him, though he were not to me. And he being one of a piercing wit, might perhaps think, that I came to paſs ſome time there by private orders from the King, for he added at laſt in a very obliging way, that I did him honour in coming to learn under him, what he himſelf had acquir'd with great pains; that he promis'd to conceal no part of his knowledge from me, and that he would keep me there, and ſhew me every thing. I return'd his civility the beſt I could, but entreated him to conſent, that I might perform all the exerciſes as a Volunteer, ſo to learn things more exactly, and be able to do them with the better grace.

Thus I ſtaid with him about three months, eating almoſt every day at his own Table, and keeping near his perſon as much as I could, and ſtudying what I came to learn with extraordinary application of mind. And I can truly ſay, that though I had ſome knowledge and experience before, having been bred up from a Child in War, yet I learnt a great deal in a little time under ſo good a Maſter, and knew ſeveral things which were not practis'd by others. For being happy in his inclination for me, and I having one too for the Art he excell'd in, I improv'd both by practice and exerciſe, and by the private conferences he was pleas'd to honour me withal, and learnt a great deal of that, which made him ſo great a Souldier, and gave him ſuch eſteem in the world, I took great care to ſet down whatever I learnt that was new, and drew out upon Paper ſeveral ſchemes of Exerciſes, Battalions, Encampments, Marches and Defiles, pretty well gueſſing what would beſt pleaſe the King.

XII. At this very time one of the Captains was upon ill terms with his *Maiſtre de Camp*, who complained of him, that he ſcarce ever came at his Company, and when any command in it fell, he ſtill procur'd it for ſome of his own Relations, without regarding merit, as he ought to have done.

It was no wonder, that one so exact for discipline, should blame an Officer who observ'd it so little; and who having more respect to fitness and services, than to affinity, should condemn a conduct so unlike his own. For whenever he observ'd any brave Souldier, who had serv'd the King well in his Armies, he would without any notice taken of his quality, procure him the recompence of some command in the Regiment, which was a great encouragement to others, who saw, that under such a Governour honourable employments were made the reward of doing well. This different conduct then produc'd a misunderstanding; which was increas'd upon a particular occasion. The Ensign of this Captain's Company being dead, Monsieur *Arnauld* desir'd the Colours might be given to a very brave Serjeant, who had signaliz'd himself in several actions that merited reward. The Captain on the contrary would give it to one of his own Kinsmen, who seem'd to have no other Title to this command, but that of being related to him; and Monsieur *Arnauld* having sent him a very civil Letter, took it ill to be deny'd, of which he complain'd highly, and spoke of him, as a person that sought all opportunities to disoblige him.

I, who had the honour to be this Captain's near Relation, and intimate Friend, and who had so many engagements to Monsieur *Arnauld* too, thought my self concern'd to manage this business, and to do a piece of service to both of them at once. I told Monsieur *Arnauld*, that having the honour to be particularly acquainted with this Officer, I knew him in his own temper very far from this disobliging carriage, which he seem'd not without some reason to resent upon this occasion; that I could not impute this refusal to any thing but pure misfortune, and some misunderstanding; that he had Enemies, and that a man when absent easily passes for more guilty, than he really is. I engag d my self at the same time to write to him, and it was my good fortune to manage the matter with so good success, as to bring them to a very fair understanding of one another.

XIII. A few days after this difference was compos'd, I receiv'd a private Order from the King to return to Court. I knew very well that the Governour, who was grown kinder to me, by reason of my great assiduity and constant application, would be much troubled at my going away, so that I was fain to prepare him for it, lest a sudden departure should give him any reason to accuse me of being less grateful than his obliging entertainment of me deserv'd. So I signify'd to him the indispensable necessity of my returning to *Paris*, upon business of great consequence. He was very importunate for my stay, and offer'd me any thing in the Regiment, that was in his power; but he found at last I could not help going, and perhaps suspected too (as I hinted before) the true reason of my coming thither, and so left me at full liberty to follow my own inclinations. After which I staid with him a few days longer, and in that time was witness of a very generous act of his, which deserves a room in these *Memoirs*. As we were going the Round with him one night, he stept alone a little before to hearken what the Souldiers said, who were very loud in their Hutt; where he heard one of them begin his health, and the rest took him up, cursing and railing in very insolent and injurious terms. At first indeed he was a little surpriz'd, to find the Governor's health so odly receiv'd, but knowing how naturally men are inclin'd to licentiousness, and how far this inclination works with some sort of people, and how great a violence it is upon them to be reduc'd to so exact a

discipline

diſcipline as that he made them obſerve; he was not angry, but turn'd all into raillery, and calling me to him, Theſe are rare Fellows (ſaid he) they drink my health after a ſtrange faſhion, and make fine Panegyricks in my praiſe. Then he continu'd his Round, and viſited all the ſtreets, and at laſt coming again to the door of theſe precious Health-drinkers he knock'd. They within, whom the Wine had a little elevated, anſwer'd briskly, Who comes there? The Governor reply'd with Authority, Open the door; which they, being a little aſtoniſh'd to hear his voice, preſently did. He only ask'd them, why they were not in bed ſo long after the Tat-too, to which they made anſwer, that they humbly begg'd his pardon, but having by his leave been out to forrage, and got ſomething, they were merry together, drinking the King's health, and his. Whereupon throwing them ſome Gold, and giving them caution to behave themſelves more diſcreetly for the future, that they ſhould drink his health after a more decent manner; they tranſported with joy, fell down and embrac'd his knees. Thus inſtead of puniſhing the inſolence of theſe Souldiers, who had dared to give him ſuch language for the ſeverity of his diſcipline, he rather choſe to win them by gentle ways, and vanquiſh them by his bounty.

Nor can I forbear in this place to report another action yet more generous than the former, as indeed the occaſion was more important. He was very punctual in keeping his Regiment always full, and in this method conſulted both the Kings advantage, and his own inclination; whereupon orders were given that no Skip-jacks or intruders ſhould appear upon the review of the Companies. One of the Captains of his Regiment fail'd in this point, and upon being reproved, took ſuch offence, that he broke out into a paſſion, openly declar'd he would not obey the order, and was ſo far tranſported at laſt, as even to draw his Sword upon his Collonel. This revolt needed the Kings authority to ſuppreſs it, which made Monſieur *Arnauld* write to Court, and repreſent the dangerous conſequences of ſo raſh an action, if it paſt unpuniſht. Whereupon the King commanded that the Captain ſhould be broken; and this great example wrought its due effect upon the Garriſon. In the mean while, the Officer humbled to the laſt degree by this diſgrace, was ſenſible of his fault, when it ſeem'd irreparable. Monſieur *Arnauld* had notice of it, and reſenting what was paſt no farther than was neceſſary to promote the Kings real Intereſts, he writ to Court a ſecond time, and conjur'd the Miniſters to procure this Captains reſtauration; entreating them to conſider, that it was of more conſequence to a Governour to make himſelf lov'd than fear'd; and therefore this extraordinary grace which he entreated of them, would be of no leſs ſervice to the King, than their Juſtice had been. His reaſons prevail'd; and all the Officers of the Regiment were ſo mov'd with this generoſity, and the conſideration they found their Governour in at Court, that they ever after took a delight to pleaſe and obey him.

XIV. I took my leave of Monſieur *Arnauld*, and went from *Fort-Louis* to the King, whom I found at *Compeigne*; and when I preſented my ſelf, his Majeſty, the better to diſguiſe the matter, took no notice of me at firſt, and rather ſeem'd to be angry, asking me why I had ſtay'd ſo long? I, who very well underſtood this language, readily anſwer'd that I had ſcarce had time to obey his Majeſty's orders, and had made all the haſte I could away upon his Letter. The next morning he took me alone with

him

him into his Closet, and there lockt himself up, demanding an account of what I had learnt in my Journey. I gave it him as exactly as possibly I could; shewing him the Observations, and the Draughts I had taken. This Prince, who took a singular delight in this noble Diversion, spent an hour alone with me in his Closet almost every day for a month together; making me set out all that I had done in Companies of Souldiers, by knotted Threads, or little figures of Lead. And after he had learnt all that I my self could learn of Monsieur *Arnauld*, he would command, and be commanded in turn, as well as I, so that we did as it were perform our exercises one after another, by the ranging of these figures, according to the different methods that I had observ'd.

XV. This very particular confidence of the King's put several at Court to a stand, who knew not what to make of my being shut up with him so often alone. Among others the Serjeant Major of the Regiment of Guards, grew so extremely jealous, as to tell me one day, that I had an ill reputation among the Souldiers, and many of them began to suspect I inform'd the King of all they did, not being able to guess from what other cause this exceeding familiarity between his Majesty and me should proceed. I must confess so rude a complement nettled me much, so that I reply'd briskly, I thought till then he had known me, but what he had said, being very distant from my nature, and constant course of life, he made it plain that he was little read in men; that those who understood me better than he, could have no such jealousy concerning me, and all my acquaintance (himself exeepted) were satisfy'd I'd rather dye than do a thing so base, and unbecoming a man of honour. Must people wonder (said I) that the King should sometimes talk to me in private, and after having sent me into so remote a Province about several affairs, require of me an exact account of all I have done there? does not all the world know this is his humour, and that he delights to discourse over his business very particularly? But that which disgusted this Officer, was, that the King had shew'd him my draught of Battalions, without telling him whose it was, only he gave him to understand, that he liked this method better than his, which he had caus'd to be printed. He had some suspicion however that I might be the man that had drawn it, and question'd me about it; but the King having forbidden me to tell, or give it to any body, I answer'd him so as was likely to take off his jealousies of that kind.

XVI. My life was so checquer'd and mixt, that it was one continu'd succession of good and ill adventures. I had about this time a great contest with a famous Commissioner concern'd in the Salt-Customes, grounded upon a Donation from the King. For the Duke of *St. Simon* and I having obtain'd a considerable Grant, assign'd us upon this Commissioner; and I having need enough to make the best of his Majesty's favour, prest upon him for payment; and upon his refusal, thought my self oblig'd to prosecute him in the Kings Council, and obtain'd a Decree against him. But he was a Master in his Trade, a cruel litigious fellow, that car'd not a rush for a Decree, and carry'd his pockets always full of Appeals and Injunctions. I soon saw he was too cunning for one so ignorant in Law-suits as I, and that the safest way was to think of an accommodation. To this purpose I apply'd my self to his younger Brother, who was my very good friend, telling him I was so well perswaded of the

Justice

Juſtice of my Cauſe, that I ſhould not ſcruple the referring the matter between his Brother and me, to him. He promis'd me to ſpeak about it. But the Commiſſioner little regarding his Brothers recommendation, and thinking a Souldier as I was would ſoon be weary of thoſe dilatory proceedings, and that he might ſave his money by this means, was deaf to all propoſitions made in my behalf, and abſolutely refus'd any terms of accommodation.

One day, as I and ſome other friends were walking in Monſieur *Deffiat* the Superintendant of the Treaſury's Hall, I ſaw my adverſary come in; and without employing any other Mediators, went to diſcourſe him my ſelf; where I told him freely thus: Sir, I know you do not love me, but for my part I bear no ill will to you: I ask you nothing but what the King has given me; and is it not a ſhame for a rich man, as you are, to refuſe that little you owe me; and ſlight the Rules of Court obtain'd againſt you? I am naturally ſo averſe to Suits, that I had rather ſubmit peaceably to the Judgment of any Arbitrator you will name, ſo we may but put an end to this buſineſs. Since you open your heart to me (reply'd he) it is but fair that I deal as openly with you: I have only one thing to ſay, which is, that I have at this very time ſeven and twenty Cauſes depending, and I have Money enough to maintain them ſeven and twenty years: So that you had beſt conſider whether it will be for your purpoſe to engage in a Suit with me. This knaviſh anſwer, and ridiculous boaſt, was what I leaſt expected, and made me really angry. Give me your hand (ſaid I to him) I promiſe you upon the faith of a Gentleman, and a man of Honour, that ſince you reſolve to ſtand Suit, I will ply you ſo cloſe, that the Kingdom ſhall be too hot for one of us. From that time forward I began to ſollicit my Judges with all my might and main, and ſparing neither pains nor money, obtain'd at length another Decree againſt him, and a Writ to ſeize his Body. This forc'd him to leave *Paris*, and flee to *Lions*; I purſu'd him thither, but he ſeeing himſelf preſt, ſtopt the proceedings by a freſh Injunction; ſo that we were to begin all again. Both of us return'd to *Paris*; and about this time I found a way to humble the inſolence of a Serjeant after a very pleaſant manner.

I had ſome new Citation brought me every day, either to command my appearance, or the producing ſome paper or other; and the Serjeants took a pride to ſerve theſe Citations, becauſe they were under protection. At laſt, growing weary of this ſort of Officers, who are not very acceptable Gueſts to men of our way in ones own houſe, I reſolv'd to make uſe not of force, but cunning, to rid my ſelf fairly of the inconvenience I ſuffer'd by them. To this purpoſe I invented a Trap at the entrance into my Chamber, as wide as the door, ſo that when the Bolt was drawn, none could go in or out, but they muſt needs fall into it. Then I had a great Sack nailed to the roof of the room below, wide open, juſt under the Trap, that whoever ſlipt into the hole might fall into the Sack, and hang in the air. In regard I had often company with me, they thought fit to chooſe out one of the ſtouteſt Serjeants to ſerve theſe Citations. One of which having boaſted that he fear'd me not, and being very jolly upon the account of ſome Piſtoles that were promis'd as his reward, came to my Houſe, and enter'd my Chamber, with a Citation in his hand. As bold as he pretended to be, he appear'd to me not much aſſur'd; and told me, that being oblig'd to bring me a Citation, yet he would ask my leave, and not ſerve it unleſs I were willing he ſhould. I anſwer'd, that he very little underſtood how to be civil to men of ho-

nour, and that he ought not to mock me, by asking my conſent to bring what I ſaw him hold in his hand. He ſeeing me angry, had recourſe to ſubmiſſions and excuſes; but at laſt I began to raiſe my voice, and then fearing if he did not get out of the Room, that I ſhould reward him with a Cudgel, he began to retire, and ſhift towards the door. In the mean while my man had drawn back the Bolt that ſtaid the Trap, and ſo my brave Serjeant, that thought of nothing but making his eſcape, vaniſht in an inſtant, being fallen through the Trap-door into the Sack, which clos'd at the top with the weight of his body, as did the Trap alſo, returning in a moment to its former poſture. There was my Gentleman dangling between Heaven and Earth, in an aſtoniſhment ſo great, that he ſcarce knew whither he was dead or alive. I gave him leiſure to come to himſelf, and let him hang about a quarter of an hour. After I had order'd him to be drawn out, he begg'd of me, as the greateſt favour I could do him, not to divulge a thing which would diſgrace him for ever; which I promis'd, being ſufficiently ſatisfied, that I had ſo innocently humbled the pride of a Serjeant. But he would ever after put me in mind of the Sack, and laugh heartily at the jeſt.

In the mean while I preſt my Commiſſioner as cloſe and vigorouſly as I could, and made him know, that, if he had better knowledge in Craft and Quirks of Law, yet I had the better Cauſe, and credit enough to defend it. At laſt ſeeing his buſineſs in an ill condition, he reſolv'd to gain the Judges by great Preſents, and found a way to ſurprize the Superintendant, entreating the aſſiſtance of his credit, againſt a Gentleman of *Provence* that perplex'd him with a Suit of Law. Monſieur *Deffiat* being thus caught, ſent the Marqueſs his Son to ſollicite all the Judges in his name againſt me, without knowing all this while that I was the party concern'd. My Advocate gave me notice of it, and tho I had much ado to believe this of a perſon who had always giv'n me great teſtimonies of his good will, yet I entreated the King to ſpeak to him about it. Next morning putting on my Corflet, and taking three or four of the braveſt Cadets of my Company along with me, I went to wait on the Superintendant juſt as he was at Dinner: I ſtay'd till he roſe from Table, and coming up to him while he was waſhing his mouth, I told him in his Ear, I am come hither, Sir, to preſent you a Requeſt, whether it be a civil one or no, I can't tell, but I'm ſure however it is juſt. Am not I very unhappy, Sir, I who have ever had the honour to be your Servant, to paſs all on the ſudden for a Criminal in your opinion, and to draw your diſpleaſure upon me, without knowing how I have done it? You muſt needs think me guilty of ſome great fault ſure, Sir, ſince after having honour'd me with your favour and affection, you now ſollicit againſt me in ſo juſt a cauſe, and where the execution of the King's pleaſure is the only thing in diſpute. Monſieur *Deffiat* much ſurpriz'd at ſuch a complement, ſaid, interrupting me, I ſollicit againſt you! I proteſt I do not know what you mean, pray unfold the myſtery, and make me underſtand you. Here is Monſieur *F.* (replied I) who is preſent in the room, hath commenc'd a Suit againſt me, and maliciouſly trifles off the Duke of *St. Simon* and my ſelf, about a Donation the King hath been pleas'd to beſtow upon us. I have obtain'd ſeveral Decrees againſt him both in Parliament and Council, but he is an Eel, that always ſlips through my hands, when I think to graſp him. If you undertake to defend him, Sir, as it appears you do, by the ſollicitations the Marquis your Son has lately made in his behalf againſt me; I know too well that it is in vain for a poor Officer as I am,

to

to ſtand it out, and think to carry his point againſt a Superintendent; and if the caſe be ſo, I had better give up my cauſe to my Adverſay, and be quiet. I proteſt to you (reply'd Monſieur *Deffiat*) that I did not know it was you, that was at Law with Monſieur *F.* he has ſurpriz'd me, but I will make him know, that there is nothing to be got by ſurprizing men of honour. At the ſame time he call'd him, and made but few words, but in ſhort took my Gentleman down; you have abus'd me, (ſaid he) and ſurpriz'd me, in making me ignorantly ſollicit againſt Monſieur *Pontis*. You owe me Five hundred thouſand Livres, I declare if you do not pay me within a week, I will lay you by the heels. He was offering to juſtify himſelf, but the Gentleman commanded him to withdraw, and think of what he had ſaid to him. All the Company were extremely pleas'd to ſee an Exciſe-man ſo humbled. At the ſame time he order'd his Son, the Marquis, to go along with me and undeceive the Judges, and to tell them, he was ſorry he had ſuffer'd himſelf to be ſo ſurpriz'd, and that he had ſollicited againſt a man he lov'd. Several of them had receiv'd great Preſents, and ſome whole Cart-loads of Orange-trees; which when I ſaw in their Gardens, I could not forbear ſaying in jeſt to theſe Gentlemen: Oh! what corruption! Oh how do I ſuſpect my Cauſe! For God's ſake, Sir, when my concern comes before you, do not look upon theſe Trees, for they will be very ominous to me if you do.

I was adviſ'd by my Friends to except againſt one of theſe Judges, becauſe having been my Adverſary's Advocate in this very Suit againſt me, he had ſince by his means obtain'd to be Maſter of Requeſts, and ſo all on the ſudden from his Council, was preferr'd to be his Judge. The thing appear'd odious enough of it ſelf, and a man of any equity at all, would never have ſtaid to be excepted againſt for ſuch a reaſon. But two thouſand Crowns penſion, which he receiv'd from this Commiſſioner, made him proceed againſt the ordinary Rules of Juſtice. Before I would except againſt him, I had a mind to try what civility would do, and accordingly went to ſee him, where I complemented him to this effect: I am come, Sir, (ſaid I) upon a buſineſs that is very juſt, and I think you a man of more equity than not to grant it. You know you have formerly pleaded for Monſieur *F.* with whom I have a Suit now depending, and I do not wonder you have ſerv'd him the beſt you could, for it is the buſineſs of an Advocate ſo to do. Nay, I have ſeveral times commended the Wit, Learning and Wiſdom, that you have ſhewn upon this occaſion. You are ſince made a Maſter of Requeſts, which, Sir, is the Reward of your Merit; and we muſt believe, that having been ſo good an Advocate, you will prove as good a Judge; but pray, Sir, give me leave to tell you, that I conceive the firſt teſtimony of your Juſtice, ought to be the refuſing to ſit as Judge, in a Cauſe where you have been Counſel. For though I do not doubt your probity, yet it would reflect upon your honour to judge him, as a Maſter of Requeſts, whom you have already ſo ſeverely condemn'd as a Pleader. To which he reply'd, that if he ſhould wave all the Cauſes he had been concern'd in, he might even as well throw up his place, for moſt of the buſineſs had gone through his hands. After a long debate, finding him reſolute, and that he would not decline ſitting upon this Cauſe, I took my leave: And going immediately to the King, I told his Majeſty the whole ſtory. Juſt as I had done, in came Monſieur *Sequier*, Chancellor of *France*, and the King taking him by the Arm, ſaid, Hark you my Lord Chancellor, I have a Queſtion to ask you: May an Advocate, who hath pleaded againſt a man, and afterwards

wards bought a Judges place, be Judge in a Cause of his own pleading? The Chancellor look'd a little surpriz'd, and answer'd, that he did not believe any body would say he might; that it was a thing contrary to all Law, and all Reason. But yet, said the King, it is what ..... pretends to do in *Pontis*'s case here. This was enough to engage the Chancellor to promise me Justice, and next day he was as good as his word, in granting me a Decree, forbidding Monsieur *De la* ..... to be present at the Judgment not only of this, but of any other Suit that I might hereafter have with the Commissioner aforesaid. I deliver'd this Decree to an Usher of the Court, to signifie it to this Master of Requests; but he had notice of it, and being at his wits end, to see his design publickly condemn'd by King and Council, he immediately apply'd to my best friends, to interpose with me, that this business might go no farther. I gave them a true account of my behaviour in it, which they approv'd, and told them it was meer necessity made me proceed after that manner; so that upon any other account I should be ready to serve him. But this business having made a noise, and Monsieur *De la* ..... fearing, that my access to the King might give me opportunity to do him ill offices, as it had been no hard matter to have done indeed, had I been of so mean a Spirit, he came to me himself not long after, and after a great deal of talk, which is not necessary to be repeated here, he desir'd me at last to go with him to the King, and speak in his behalf. I went with him in his Coach to *St. Germains* at the Kings rising, and presenting my Judge, said, Sir, Monsieur *De la* ..... upon consideration that I belong to your Majesty, will needs be formally reconcil'd to me, tho indeed we have never been Enemies; but he knowing that your Majesty is pleas'd to do me the honour to allow me about your person, will out of an extraordinary generosity use my mediation to beseech your Majesty to forget what has past between us, seeing I have forgot it with all my heart. Had I known him for the generous person he is, I should have proceeded in another way, as I believe he would have done with me, had he known me for such as I am; and therefore I most humbly beseech your Majesty ever to look upon him, as one of your good and faithful Servants. The King was pleas'd to take this address well, and Monsieur *De la* ..... and I went out, very well satisfy'd with one another.

But I was not rid of my Suit for all this, but forc'd to continue my prosecution against him, who had held me in hand so long about the Donation from the King. I obtain'd at last another Attachment against him, which forc'd him to leave *Paris* a second time, and flee to *Lions*. I pursu'd him so close, that he was fain to take Sanctuary in the Popes territories at *Avignon*. Then I writ to the Kings Ambassador at *Rome*, which was the Marquis *d' Estree*; and having obtain'd leave of his Holiness, I was about to arrest him, and he escap'd from me again to *Orange*. I was not discourag'd for all this, but writ to the Prince of *Orange* at the *Hague*, to demand Justice against this litigious Knave. He had notice of it, and seeing no refuge left, but either flying into *Germany*, or *Spain*, and hazarding the being taken in his flight too, he writ to the Duke of *St. Simon*, to desire an accommodation; and chose at last to pay, though against his will, what at first he resolv'd never to give us, rather than to banish himself the Kingdom. So he paid the Duke twenty thousand Crowns, and me about forty thousand Livres. But this Suit, tho upon a summ so trivial to so rich a man, was the cause of his utter ruine. For he spent above four hundred thousand Livres in it, and was made a perfect

fect Bankrupt. So truly was the promiſe I made him kept, that the Kingdom ſhould grow too hot for one of us. And I thought it not amiſs by this remarkable inſtance, to ſhew the world how very apt the falſe truſt a man puts in his Credit, and cunning in Law, is to betray and undo him. Yet for all this, I did his Brother a very good office to the King; for he having a mind to buy a Lieutenants place in the Guards, and the King asking me what I thought of him, I gave the beſt Character I could, both of his valour and deſerts: Adding withal, that ſince he had Money, it was fit he ſhould ſpend it in his Majeſty's ſervice, who had an original right to it.

XVII. It was near about this time that Monſieur *Bouteville*'s misfortune happen'd; who having fought (as 'tis well known) contrary to the Kings expreſs prohibition, was ſeized, juſt as he was upon the point to eſcape into *Lorrain* with the Count *de Chapelles*. The Marquis *de Buſſy*'s Servant, knowing his Maſter was kill'd, follow'd them cloſe, and made ſo good haſte, that he overtook them at *Vitry-le-Bruſhe*. It had been the eaſieſt thing in the world for them to ride on, till they had got into a place of ſafety, for they wanted but two Poſt-ſtages, and the Count *de Chapelles* did all he could to perſwade Monſieur *Bouteville* to it: But providence ſo order'd it, that himſelf ſhould be the cauſe of his own ruine, by pretending an unſeaſonable bravery, and reproaching the Count with want of Courage, for the neceſſary caution he adviſ'd him to. In the mean while this Servant had time to go to *Vitry-le-Francois*, of which the late Marquis *de Buſſy* was Governour, where he gave notice to the Provoſt Marſhal of the place, where the men that kill'd him were; and this Provoſt with his Archers beſet the houſe, took them, and carry'd them to *Vitry-le-Francois*. The King heard of it, and immediately order'd Monſieur *de Gordes*, Captain of the Guards, and me, to go with two hundred men to *Vitry*, and bring Monſieur *Bouteville* and *des Chapelles* to *Paris*. I, who had the honour to be particularly acquainted with Monſieur *Bouteville*, was employed in ſuch a Commiſſion ſore againſt my will, and it went to my heart to do ſo ſad a piece of ſervice to one who had always expreſt a great deal of favour and affection for me. Tho on the other ſide, I could not chooſe but diſapprove and condemn ſo criminal a thing, in them whoſe death I lamentedbefore-hand. As ſoon as we were arrived, he expreſt great joy for my coming, and in complement ſaid, I was exceeding welcome; for he knew now I was of the party, there would be no foul play. I anſwer'd, that indeed he had reaſon to think ſo, for Monſieur *Gordes* was a man of too much honour to ſuffer any ſuch thing. He was very pleaſant all the Journey, and ſhew'd little or no trouble, depending no doubt upon his great relations, and the Intereſt of his friends. When we came to the Inn, he would needs have me to play with him, as being undiſturb'd in his thoughts, and perfectly maſter of himſelf. There was a rumour abroad, that the Duke of *Orleans* had put ſeven or eight hundred men into the field to reſcue Monſieur *Bouteville* out of our hands. The King was made acquainted with it, and ſent us a reinforcement of five hundred men a league beyond *Loguy*, with poſitive order to defend our ſelves very well, if any attempt were made upon us. I obſerved Monſieur *Bouteville* was a little ſurpriz'd at the arrival of this great Convoy, and ſaid to me, by way of confidence; What's the meaning of all this Company? What are they afraid of?

Have I not given you my word? and having given it, can any body imagine I will break it? But I, who thought I might eaſily diſengage a man from his promiſe, who was ſo well guarded, and had no great reaſon to hope well in this buſineſs, told him again with the ſame freedom, Look you, Sir, this is not a time to ſtand upon generoſity, and punctilio's of honour, I releaſe you of your promiſe, and if you can make your eſcape, do not ſcruple to do it. In good earneſt I could heartily have wiſht it done, provided it might have been without any fault of mine. When we drew near *Paris* he began to be apprehenſive, and told me, that if we carry'd him to the *Conciergene*, he was a gone man: But when he found he was to be convey'd to the *Baſtille*, he expreſt great joy, and aſſur'd himſelf he ſhould not dye. In the mean time, we knew well enough his hopes would deceive him, and that the King would make him an example; the rather by reaſon of the Holy-days, which he had profan'd by his bloody Duels. And not being to be prevail'd upon by the interceſſions of the moſt eminent perſons in this Kingdom, he gave all his Nobility to underſtand, by this inſtance of ſeverity, that it was their duty to reſerve their valour for his ſervice, and the publick Intereſts of the Crown.

The End of the Sixth Book.

BOOK

BOOK VII.

Several considerable particulars of the Siege of Rochelle. *Cardinal* Richlieu *tries to draw the Sieur* de Pontis *into his Service. Father* Joseph's *Conference with him, to that effect. He is out of Favour with the King. upon the account of Monsieur* Saligny's *Command, which he had a mind of, and that was bought by* St. Preuil. *The great Difference between him and Monsieur* Canaples, Maistre de Camp *of the Regiment of Guards. He is tried in a Council of War, he justifies his Innocence to the King in private, and afterwards before the whole Court. The Mareschal* de Bassompiere *obtains his Pardon. The Generosity of Mareschal* Crequi, *Monsieur* Canaples *his Father. The City of* Rochelle *is surrendred to the King. The great Qualifications of* Guiton *Mayor of* Rochelle.

I. IN the year 1627, the King resolv'd to go lay Siege to *Rochelle*, intending by that means to deprive the *Hugonots* of the strongest Rampart they had in *France*. It is not my design here to give an account of all the passages of this famous Siege, the publick events whereof are recorded in History; but I shall only take notice of some circumstances wherein I my self was concern'd, and shew how providence was pleas'd to order my affairs, whether in putting me by the present fortunes I might reasonably have aspir'd to; or in preserving me from those great dangers, in which, according to all humane appearance, I must otherwise have perish'd. Having staid at *Paris*, by the Kings order, to gather some Troops that were left behind, and bring them to the body of the Army; after I had discharg'd that Commission, I went to wait upon the King at *Fontainbleau*, from whence after a few days he mov'd towards *Rochelle*. Assoon as he came near, he lay the first night at *Surgeres*, about three or four leagues off from the City; and afterwards came up to *Etray*, which was but a mile from the Camp. One day Monsieur *Marillac*, who was then but Mareschal *de Camp*, but afterwards Mareschal of *France*, was commanded to attack a Fort, that was far advanc'd, by night; and being he was first to discover the Ditches, and all without, he chose two Serjeants, who were very brave Souldiers, for that purpose. But before he sent them, he went to the Kings Quarters at *Etray*, to give him an account of what he intended to do. The King, who knew the gallantest men of his Army, askt the two Serjeants names; which being told him, after a little pause turning to Monsieur *Marillac*, As for *Cadet*, said he, (which was the name of one of them) I know him to be a very brave fellow; but I have not so good an opinion of the other. I know a man, (said the King) who would acquit himself well of this Commission, and bring us an exact account of every thing: I have made tryal of him upon many such occasions: I mean *Pontis*, the Lieutenant of my Guards: tell him I desire him to go, and bring me an account of what he can discover.

The

The deſign had been taken to attack the Fort about two hours after midnight; ſo that I was to go by eleven of the Clock at fartheſt, for it requir'd at leaſt an hour to go thither, and as much to get back again. I went in the dark of the night, accompany'd with two Serjeants, whom I ſent two ſeveral ways, and went my ſelf a third. Inſtead of going directly to the Ditches, where I ſhould have had much ado to get down, I fetcht a compaſs, and put my ſelf into *Rochelle* road. When I came near the Draw-bridge, I went all along by the ſides of the Ditches, as if I had come out of the City, that ſo if any one ſhould chance to meet me, he might think I belong'd to the Town. After I had gone a little way, I found a great Gate, that they were building to come down into the Ditches by, but it was not yet finiſh'd. I went down by this Gate as ſoftly as I could, but yet I could not do it ſo as to eſcape being heard by the Centinels, who cry'd out, Who goes there? and made ſeveral ſhots at me, which whiskt on every ſide of me. I kept on my way in the Ditches, and found in one corner a pair of winding ſtairs, that led up to the top of the Ditch: Up I went, but when I was got almoſt to the top, I met a man coming down the ſame ſteps. I fixt my ſelf inſtantly, and without betraying any ſurprize, made as though I was peeping through one of the Skit-gates, that was upon the ſtairs, that lookt down into the Ditch. The man that was coming down, finding my back toward him, and taking me for one of their own ſide, askt what I was doing? to which I anſwer'd, that having heard ſhooting, and a great noiſe, I was looking to ſee what was the matter. Whereupon, without having the leaſt ſuſpicion of me, he reply'd, It is nothing but theſe raſcally Centinels, that are afraid of their own ſhadows; and having ſaid ſo, he went down, and I went up to the top, where I met a Serjeant, who was come from poſting and relieving the Centries. He askt me whither I was going? and I anſwer'd coldly, that I was order'd to come and ſee what was the meaning of thoſe ſhots that had been made. Whereupon the Serjeant, who was an honeſt old fellow, without giving himſelf any further trouble to examine who I was, told me it was nothing but a falſe alarm; and askt me, if I had nothing elſe to ſay to him? I told him, No; and in truth I was a little impatient to be gone out of his company. After this manner I paſt, and eſcap'd ſo great a danger, by a viſible effect of the protection of Almighty God.

I return'd the ſame way I came, and found *Cadet*, who waited for me, and when he heard me ſtruck two ſtones one againſt another, which was the ſignal agreed upon betwixt us. He had a Bottle of Wine, of which he made me drink two or three draughts, which refreſht me very much; and I had great need of it, having taken a great deal of pains, and ſtumbled a long time up and down in very uneven way. As ſoon as we were return'd to the Camp, I made a report of all I could obſerve of this Gate I had found into the Ditches, the depth and breadth of the Ditches themſelves, the little Winding Stairs, and all the reſt I had diſcover'd. But there being ſome conteſt upon a report made by one of the two Serjeants, which made it neceſſary to call a Council of War, and a great deal of time being ſpent that way, as the Troops were marching along the ſhore to gain that Gate, day broke upon them, and the Enemy diſcerning our men at a diſtance, made ſuch a furious fire upon them with their Cannon, that ſeveral of our Souldiers were killed and wounded. This conteſt, which was in part the cauſe of our misfortune, made the King after the taking of *Rochelle* declare, that he would ſee himſelf whether my report were true.

II. I ſhall only take notice of one example more upon this occaſion, to ſhew of what importance it is in theſe enterprizes not to expoſe an Army raſhly, upon the reports of ſilly People, or the vain projects of ſuch as do not underſtand the profeſſion. Father *Joſeph*, a famous Capuchin, who had a rambling kind of Wit, and employed himſelf principally in War, and State affairs, had intimation given him, that there was a large Common-ſhore by which all the naſtineſs of the Town was carried off, and that it would be an eaſy thing to make our ſelves Maſters of the place, by ſending men up this Shore by night. Immediately he reſolv'd upon this attempt, and proceeded ſo far as to propoſe a terrible Engine to ſerve for the effecting it. But firſt we muſt kuow, whether the Paſſage were good, for it was a Citizen who had told Father *Joſeph* of it, and we were not ſecure, that the information was to be depended upon. They ſtraight began to talk of ſending me thither, and the King made great enquiry after me, but I kept my ſelf out of the way, as growing weary of being perpetually employed upon ſuch diſcoveries, which got me but little honour, for my report was not always credited, and yet expos'd me to abundance of danger. However, found out I was at laſt, at a friends quarter, where I was at Supper; and not knowing how to excuſe my ſelf, I went preſently to wait upon the King, who told me, he had ſent for me upon a buſineſs of conſequence, which Father *Joſeph*, who was then by, could give me an account of.

The good Father, acting the part of a General, repreſented to me his whole deſign, and told me afterwards, with a grave and diſcreet zeal, that the King having ſingled me out from ten thouſand for this important ſervice, I ought to think of anſwering the good opinion his Majeſty had of me; and that if I did not find my ſelf ſo much diſpos'd to it as the matter requir'd, I had better fairly deſiſt, than undertake it unwillingly. This diſcourſe diſpleas'd me much, and I knew not well how to reliſh it, that a Capuchin ſhould take upon him to read Lectures of Courage and Reſolution to me. Which made me reply with ſome reſentment, tho in the Kings preſence, that he did me wrong, and it did not become him to talk at that rate; that his Majeſty had never commanded me any thing, wherein I had not behav'd my ſelf like a man of honour; and that had the occaſion been leſs perillous, where there could have been no ground to ſuſpect me of fear, I would have begg'd his Majeſty to excuſe me from undertaking it, after ſuch an affront put upon me in his preſence. The King, who ſaw me a little mov'd, appeas'd me, by turning to Father *Joſeph*, and telling him that he knew me very well, and durſt anſwer for me. So away I went with an Enſign, in a dreadful windy night, which favour'd our deſign. There were Souldiers plac'd at every fifty paces to ſuſtain us, in caſe we ſhould be attack'd, as alſo to ſhew us where the Ditches were, leſt we ſhould loſe our ſelves in the dark. Being come to the Drain, we ſounded the Ouze with a long pole, and found the Mud cruel deep on all ſides; and after having ſearcht every paſſage, concluded there was no poſſibility of getting thorough. We return'd, and made our report, that forty thouſand would periſh there as well as two, and nothing was to be hop'd for from this project. Upon this Father *Joſeph* began to fret, and ſaid, it could not be; that he had been otherwiſe inform'd by a Citizen of *Rochelle*. To which I boldly reply'd, that if he could take that man, he would do well to hang him for a Liar, and a Rogue; adding withal, that had the paſſage been good, it were impoſſible to do

any thing that night, becauſe there was no Bridge over the Graffe, but a Plank, over which one man had much ado to paſs. At this the Father grew louder, ſaying, he had ordered Bridges to be made, and he believ'd they were ready. The concluſion came to this, that there being no Bridges, and his great Machine being broken, all this project fell to nothigg. The King, after the ſurrender of *Rochelle*, would needs view this Drain, and there ſhew'd Father *Joſeph* the danger to which he would fain have expos'd the Army. Which puts me in mind of what paſt between the Father and Collonel *Hebron*, who hath been ſo well known both in *Germany* and *France*. For as he was forming mighty projects, and laying wiſe deſigns, above any mans comprehenſion, he ſhew'd him three or four Towns in a Map, which he would have obſerv'd to be taken; the Collonel, who was not us'd to receive ſuch orders from a *Capuchin*, anſwer'd with a ſmile, Hark you, Maſter *Joſeph*, 'tis an eaſie thing to talk, but Towns are not taken with ones fingers ends.

III. Being now engag'd in diſcourſe upon this good Father, I think it may not be amiſs to take notice of what paſt between him and me much about the ſame time, with regard to Cardinal *Richelieu*. This Cardinal is well enough known to have many eminent qualities, and ſuch as gain'd him great reſpect, both at home among the Kings Subjects, and abroad with Forcign Princes, and a Great Miniſter he was, and a moſt celebrated Politician. But as the greateſt men never are without ſome defects, every body doubtleſs muſt have obſerv'd this mighty fault in him; That in the ſervices he did the State, he did not manifeſt all that zeal for his Prince that became him, but made it his buſineſs to entice away his faithfulleſt Servants, and decoy them out of his Majeſty's ſervice into his own. He knowing me to be a perſon moſt inviolably devoted to the perſon of the King, and having either obſerv'd himſelf, or been told by others of ſomething in me, that was not diſpleaſing to him, ſo as to incline him to wiſh me about his perſon, he had the goodneſs to look upon me, and diſcover his inclination chiefly upon the following occaſion.

Being one day remov'd nearer the King's Quarter, from which he lay very remote before, he deſir'd his Majeſty, that ſome Companies might be ſent to keep Guard at his Lodgings, by reaſon that now he lay more expos'd to the Sallies of the *Rochellers*. The King order'd him ſome Companies of his own Guards, and I was the firſt that kept Guard before his Quarter with my Company. In purſuit of his deſign to win me over to his ſervice, he gave order that a very fine Chamber ſhould be got ready for me, where nothing was wanting: but I would not ſo much as lye down all night, that I might look to what I had in charge, and obſerve my duty the better. He found means even from hence to take an occaſion of courting me, and induſtriouſly ſpoke in my commendation before ſome perſons at Court, that they might tell me again. At laſt he would have me tried in good earneſt, and made choice of Father *Joſeph* for this purpoſe. A man very fit to execute his deſigns, being entirely in his Intereſts, and one of no leſs cunning and dexterity than himſelf. He made ſure of my hearkening to his propoſals, becauſe Monſieur *Beauplau*, Captain of his Guards, was at that time dangerouſly ſick, and he deſign'd in caſe he ſhould dye, to give me that Command if I would accept it ſo, as to give my ſelf up to him wholly, and without reſerve; For ſo much I was in plain terms given to underſtand, that he expected all his Officers ſhould look upon him as their Soveraign, and that in all the diſturbances and revolutions

revolutions at Court, they ſhould ſtand by him againſt all oppoſition, and without all exception. This was the principal condition, upon which he gave them to underſtand, that he admitted them into his ſervice; and it was what I confeſs raiſed great indignation in me to ſee, that they were thus made by a kind of new Oath, to renounce the engagements they had made to the King, whom I have ever conſider'd as my Maſter, and could never diſpoſe of my ſelf to any other to his prejudice.

Father *Joſeph* paſſing by my Lodging one day, or at leaſt pretending to make that in his way, that I might not think he came on purpoſe, askt pretty loud, whether I was within. They preſently came and told me, and I as ſoon coming down to meet him, we went up together into the Chamber. Every body in Company ſtraight withdrew, to give way to this Miniſter of the Cardinal, who was fear'd almoſt as much as he. The Father before he open'd himſelf upon the chief occaſion of his viſit, ask'd me, if I had made trial of a certain invention he had learnt from a Souldier, who had frequently diſcours'd about ſome Engines, that might be proper to incommode the *Rochellers*; which was, to fire a Ship at a great diſtance by a Muſquet ſhot. Having deſir'd to know my opinion of it, I told him, ſince he did me the honour to conſult me, I was oblig'd to tell him, that I thought it a very caſual thing; that this Souldier, upon a tryal he made in my Garden of three or four ſhots, there ſucceeded but one, and therefore I conceiv'd no great ſtreſs ought to be laid upon ſo great an uncertainty. He then entreated me, that I would bring the Souldier with me to his houſe next day, that we might make the experiment in his Garden, and there (ſaid he) we will regale you, and I will engage you ſhall be very well receiv'd. Father (ſaid I) I ſhall be much better receiv'd than I deſerve, 'tis too great an honour for me, that you are pleas'd to think of me. Oh (replied he) I am ſure I have good reaſon to think of you, we are old acquaintance. Do you remember the time, when you offer'd me your Horſe? I am aſham'd Father (ſaid I) to think of ſo poor a thing, and it ſhews your generous temper to remember it ſo long.

The buſineſs he ſpoke of was, that going one day to *St. Germains* in very hot weather, I overtook this Father *Joſeph* upon the road, and a Frier, who were likewiſe both going thither; it was about the time he firſt ingratiated himſelf with Monſieur *Luines*, and to creep into Court. I very civilly deſir'd he would eaſe himſelf and ride my Horſe. He, who at that time did not think it decent for a Capuchin to ride on Horſeback (though he hath been of another mind ſince, and diſcover'd that he might travel in a Coach for the ſervice of the State) return'd me many thanks, but told me withal, that ſince I was ſo obliging, he entreated I would eaſe them in taking their great Cloaks, and a Wallet that the Frier carried, which I very readily did. So that it was as pleaſant a ſight to ſee a Captain carrying a Wallet before him then, as afterwards it was to ſee a Capuchin turn'd Courtier, and Miniſter to the prime Miniſter of State. This was the thing the Father referr'd to, who continu'd his diſcourſe to me after this manner. I have ever ſince bore in mind (ſaid he) the Charity you ſhew'd to us then, and I could not forget you when I remembred that. I have taken ſeveral occaſions to ſpeak to the Cardinal in your behalf; and have found, that he hath a very great eſteem for you. He is much diſpos'd to ſerve you, and is never deceiv'd in his choice of men. Really he hath a marvellous talent in judging of merit, and a liberal hand in rewarding it wherever he finds it. Father (ſaid I) I am extremely oblig'd

to

to you, for ſo great an acknowledgment of ſo ſmall a piece of ſervice. I did not deſerve thus much from you, that you ſhould recommend me to the Cardinal, and am fearful, that what you have had the goodneſs to ſay to him in my favour, may turn to my diſadvantage; for ſince ſo great a Soul as his can ſet a value upon nothing that is not very eminent, and I have nothing in me but what is very common, it is in ſome ſort to wrong his Judgment to poſſeſs him with an opinion of a perſon that does no way deſerve it. I have only one thing to boaſt of, which is the inviolable fidelity I have ever born to the King, and in that I can ſay without vanity, I give place to none. The Father, perceiving I was aware of his deſign, and that his Mine was ſprung, was not at a loſs however, but took occaſion from my own words to return me this anſwer. Why this, ſaid he, is the very thing that the Cardinal values moſt in you, 'tis that ſtrict fidelity ſo known to all the world that he chiefly looks after. He would have Officers that ſhould be faithful to him, and be only his without exception or reſerve; he cares not for them who ſerve two Maſters, (theſe were his very words) knowing very well no good is to be expected from ſuch people. This is it that hath made him fix upon you, becauſe he knows when you have once devoted your ſelf to a Maſter, you look upon him only, and after God will ſerve him only. And it is ſo rare in theſe times to find men of that temper, that were they to be bought, the Cardinal would purchaſe them at the price of their weight in Gold.

A man could hardly puſh a thing more home, or declare himſelf more openly, and truly I, believing I ought then to come out of the Clouds, made no ſcruple to declare my ſelf as openly as he had done. I know Father (ſaid I) that it is too great an honour for me, that his Eminence looks upon me, and am very well ſatisfy'd, that in being about his perſon, I ſhould ſecure my fortune; but ſince the Cardinal himſelf declares, that fidelity is ſo valuable a qualification in his Servants, would not he be the firſt that ſhould condemn me of unfaithfulneſs, if after the King has done me honour in placing me near his perſon, and giving me a Command in the Guards of his own accord, I ſhould ſo ſoon quit his ſervice, and diſpoſe of my ſelf to another. This would betray a moſt inexcuſable levity and ingratitude, and every body muſt conclude, that after having ſerved a King of *France* ſo ill, I were very unworthy to ſerve the greateſt Cardinal in *Chriſtendom*. Doubtleſs, Father, I have all the reaſon in the world to believe, thrt the Cardinal intends only to try me upon this occaſion, and hope you will have the goodneſs to repreſent it to him, and add this favour to ſo many others, for which I am already oblig'd to you. The Father then taking the opportunity I gave him of coming fairly off, ſeem'd to be very highly ſatisfy'd with me, and having commended me for the due ſenſe I had of his Majeſty's favours, he went away, appearing outwardly as well content, as he was inwardly diſturbed to ſee his complement ſo ill return'd.

IV. The Cardinal ſeem'd no leſs ſatisfy'd with my anſwer, highly commending the fidelity I had expreſt in it, and though he could not chooſe but be vext, that ſo poor an Officer durſt refuſe entring into his ſervice, it is not to be believ'd how many ſubtle contrivances the ambition of not being defeated in what he had once attempted, put him upon to win me over. If he ſpoke of any of the Officers, he always preferr'd me above the reſt, and affected to commend me in the preſence of the King, and the great men at Court: Inſomuch that ſeveral of my Friends told me,

me, I was highly oblig'd to the Cardinal for the advantageous characters he constantly gave of my conduct. These complements I receiv'd with seeming submission and acknowledgment, but inwardly I had no relish for the affected speeches of a man whose pretences I so well knew. One day the King having granted me a favour for one of my Kinsmen, bad me go complement the Cardinal upon that account. Accordingly I went and told him, that since his Majesty had put all things into his disposal, he had sent me to ask his consent to a gift he had done me the honour to confer upon me; at which I perceiv'd he was mightily pleas'd, and said with a smiling countenance, that he was very glad of the King's kindness to me, that he knew my merit, and instead of repining at any thing his Majesty should do for me, would with all his heart contribute to it whatsoever lay in his power. But the kindness he was pleas'd to shew me did not continue very long; for I shall shew before I have done, that after having try'd promises and entreaties, and all the gentle ways that a Minister so subtle as he could contrive, he proceeded at last to methods of severity and violence. But now I must proceed to give an account of what past during the Siege of *Rochelle*, and relate the most troublesom business that ever I was engag'd in in my whole life; which I dare affirm to have been just at the beginning, however several circumstances of time and place, and persons rendred it criminal to the last degree.

V. Before I give an account of the great difference I had with Monsieur *Canaples*, my *Maistre de Camp*, and the Son of Mareschal *Crequi*, it will not be improper to set down in short the cause of a little coldness toward me formerly. It happen'd that being one day at play with Count *Saligny*, the Captain of that Company where I was Lieutenant, he had the better, and won of my Captain six hundred Pistoles. The Count *Saligny* not knowing what to lay his ill fortune to, would needs examine the Dice, and finding them false ones, he said a Cheat was put upon him, and he was robb'd of his Money. Monsieur *Canaples* vindicated himself by saying, that he plaid fair, that he could not answer for the Dice, they were what he bought for true ones, and since both plaid with the same Dice, whatever advantage there was both had it equally. Count *Saligny* went presently out of the house, and finding me out, told me what had past, and that he was resolv'd to be reveng'd, not being able to be so cullied by his *Maistre de Camp*. I return'd such an answer, as the false honour of the world inspires men with upon such occasions, and assur'd him of my service; but letting him know withal, that I had rather make them friends if that might be, and so both preserve his Honour, and keep my own Command. The Quarrel was soon compos'd, but as nothing can be a secret in this world, what I had said was told Monsieur *Canaples*, who was furiously incens'd against me; yet he always dissembled his displeasure, and no resentment appeared outwardly, till the occasion of which I shall presently give an account.

VI. But still notwithstanding the accommodation there remain'd some bitterness in the heart of Count *Saligny*, so that being no longer able to endure to be commanded by one who he thought had affronted him, he resolv'd to sell his command. He spoke of it to me, and promis'd, if I would buy it, to make me a better bargain than any other man by two thousand Crowns. I answer'd, I desir'd it of all things in the world, but I wanted Money; yet that should not hinder my acknowledgment

of the obligation I had to him, and that I could not hope for any thing but from the Kings bounty, who had promis'd to give me a Company, as he had already made me a Lieutenant. Monſieur *Bologne*, whom I have often mention'd, hearing what had paſt between us, was very urgent with me to buy this Command, promiſing to help me to Money, and to ſtand bound for it. But I, who never car'd to trouble my friends, except there was an abſolute neceſſity for it, told him, the difficulty did not lye in procuring the Money, but in paying it again: that if he ſtood bound with me, he would run a great hazard, and I was not of a humour to make my own fortunes at my friends expence. Monſieur *St. Preuil* coming to ſee me a little after that Count *Saligny* had ſpoke to him about ſelling his Command, but for his part he would never think of it, till he knew firſt whether I had not ſome proſpect of the Commiſſion my ſelf. I made anſwer as I had done to Count *Saligny*, that I could be glad to have it, but I would not buy it. That is not the thing, ſaid he, there are enough of your mind, all that I have to ſay to you is, that while you have any thoughts of it, I will never have any; I know very well what juſt pretenſions you have to it, and if you'll buy it, I have four thouſand Crowns at your ſervice, of which I now make you an offer. I then very ſeriouſly made anſwer, that I was very much oblig'd to him, and had much rather he ſhould buy it than any body elſe, becauſe I heartily lov'd him, and wiſht him as well as I did my ſelf: but added withal, that ſince my hopes of a Command were thus loſt, which I had ſome right to expect from the Kings bounty, as Count *Saligny* himſelf had it given freely, I begg'd at leaſt he would give me leave to complain, and not take it ill if I laid hold on this opportunity to draw ſome advantage from my misfortune; for I ſtand in need (ſaid I ſmiling) of a little ſweetneſs to moderate the ſharpneſs of my Choler, and ſoften my Melancholy. Monſieur *St. Preuil* promis'd to aſſiſt me with all his heart, in getting ſome Money from the King, and told me, I might ſafely impart to him any contrivance I could make uſe of to that purpoſe.

Neceſſity quickens a man's invention, and I was not long in forming the expedient I ſtood in need of; but preſently told him, that being he was to go to *Taillebourg*, where the King then was, he muſt take the pains to write me a Letter from thence, and there acquaint me with his reſolution to buy this Company, and that I would return an anſwer to it, full of grievous complaints of the injuſtice done me. That afterwards he might ſpeak to the Duke of *St. Simon* in my favour, and ſhew him my Letter, that he might ſhew it to the King, and by making him underſtand the juſtice of my complaints, might at leaſt procure me a recompence for the cauſe that was given me to complain. Monſieur *St. Preuil* engag'd to do ſo, and to ſerve me the beſt he could. And accordingly he writ to me from *Taillebourg*, as we had agreed before; which I anſwer'd by another complaining one, writing him word, that I ſhould be the moſt unhappy man in the world, if this Company went ſo out of the hands of one, who had receiv'd it from the King's meer bounty; that I ſhould have nothing left to hope for, ſince it would be always ſold at this rate; that I was not concern'd he ſhould be the Buyer, but that it was ſuffer'd to be bought at all; that the grief to ſee all my pretenſions ruined was ſo violent and ſo juſt, that I could not quickly overcome it, nor lay aſide the reſentment I ought to have; that he ſhut the door of his Majeſty's liberality againſt me; but that when I had ſuffer'd this injuſtice for the love I bore him, I might perhaps at one time or other declare my reſentment

reſentment more openly. Monſieur *St. Preuil* ſhew'd my Letter to the Duke of *St. Simon*, and ſpoke to him in my behalf according to the agreement betwixt us. The Duke ſhew'd it to the King, and ſeeing his Majeſty begin to be angry, he told him, that really there was a great deal to be ſaid in my excuſe, if I did complain, finding my ſelf thus diſappointed; that he did beſeech his Majeſty to ſurprize me with ſome unexpected favour; that complaints being the natural effects of grief, they were allowable when the cauſe of that grief was juſt; that I was one of his Majeſty's moſt faithful Servants, one that had expos'd my life in a hundred engagements, that carry'd many honourable ſcars about me, and deſerv'd a Company in his Guards as well as any Gentleman in *France*. The King a little calm'd with this diſcourſe, reply'd, 'Tis true, he is a brave man, and it is but juſt to conſider him a little upon this occaſion. After which he ſent an Order to Monſieur *Deffiat* to pay me four thouſand Franks.

But ſtill he was not ſatisfy'd with my Letter. And when I came to him at *Surgeres* a little after, he gave me to underſtand by his ſilence and coldneſs, that he was diſpleaſed with me. Not knowing then, whither I ought to ſpeak, or hold my tongue, fearing on one ſide, that if I ſpoke I ſhould be thought inſolent, and if I ſaid nothing it might look like guilt; at laſt however I choſe the latter, and reſolv'd to try if by ſilence and ſubmiſſion I could overcome the good nature of the King. At Supper the Count of *Soiſſons*, who was upon no very good terms with his Majeſty, came to wait on him, and after a little diſcourſe took his leave, and all the reſt of the great Lords one after another went away. Still I ſtaid, hoping by my perſeverance to oblige the King to ſpeak to me, and knowing that he took it well to have people aſſiduous about his perſon. But my patience at laſt was quite worn out, and being inwardly vext to ſee the King keep on a coldneſs toward me ſo long, as ſoon as he roſe from the Table I fell at his knees, and told him, that my fear to diſpleaſe his Majeſty, and the confuſion which the remembrance of my fault gave me, had oblig'd me till then to keep ſilence, but I hop'd he would permit me now to ask his pardon moſt humbly for my paſſions and complaints. Ho ho! (ſaid the King roundly to me) who then put you upon writing ſuch a huffing Letter? I reply'd, that his Majeſty having given me hopes of the Company he had beſtow'd on Count *Saligny*, and Monſieur *St. Preuil* having ſince bought it, I knew very well, that he would not do him an injury, in giving me what another had bought. Whereupon the King ask'd me, what I complain'd of then. It had been eaſy to tell his Majeſty, that this was the very reaſon of my complaint, that having given his word to gratify me with that Command, he had ſuffer'd it to be ſold; but this was no time to inſiſt upon the juſtice of my cauſe, and it was better to take a more ſubmiſſive courſe; and therefore laying all the fault at my own door, I made anſwer, I had no body to complain of but my ſelf, and I moſt humbly begg'd his Majeſty's Pardon for having offended him. The King who pretended to be more angry than he really was, ſuffering himſelf to be eaſily overcome, ſaid to me, Be more temperate another time, and do not complain thus of having injuſtice done you: I have commanded *Deffiat* to give you four thouſand Livres.

VII. I was well ſatisfy'd with this gentle reproof, having great reaſon to apprehend very ſcurvy conſequences of this affair. But going to get my ſelf paid this gift of the King's, I had like to have ſpoil'd all by a

falſe

falſe piece of Gallantry. Meeting with a Commiſſioner of Monſieur *Deffiat* who told me, the Superintendent would ſpeak with me, I preſently went, believing it was to pay me the four thouſand Livres; and accordingly he told me, I was much oblig'd to the King's bounty, who had remembred my ſervices, and order'd him to give me four thouſand Livres. I anſwer'd, that I acknowledg'd my obligations to his Majeſty with all due reſpect, but if he would give me leave to ſpeak my thoughts, though four thouſand Livres might appear ſomething conſiderable for me to receive, yet it was but a ſmall matter for ſo great a Prince to give. I thought Monſieur *Deffiat* would have taken my meaning right in what I ſaid ſo freely, and preſently have offer'd me his ſervice, to perſwade the King to ſomething more, and the kindneſs he had all along profeſt for me, was what might juſtify my expecting this from him; but I was much ſurpriz'd to find all my hopes and my policy baffled. For he fell on a ſudden into a violent paſſion, reproaching me in very harſh language, with ingratitude, and the unbecoming returns I made for his Majeſty's bounty. Then I ſaw my fault too late, and thinking of nothing more but how to repair it, inſtead of ſolliciting a new grant, I begg'd him to excuſe me, if the neceſſity I was in of being at great expence to ſubſiſt honourably upon my Command, had put me upon taking this liberty with him; aſſuring him it was only the confidence I had in his goodneſs and favour, that had encourag'd me to ſpeak after that manner, and that as to any thing elſe, I had all my life, and ever ſhould retain, a due and grateful ſenſe of his Majeſty's liberality to me.

The Commiſſioner I mention'd, who was a very good friend of mine, began then to take my part, and endeavour'd to appeaſe Monſieur *Deffiat*; telling him in confirmation of what I had ſaid before, that the ſtation I was in about the King expos'd me to great charges above my fortune, that I was forc'd to run in debt continually, and ſo it was rather for my Creditors than my ſelf that I was urgent for Money; that I was indebted to himſelf four thouſand Franks, and he had an Intereſt in the Kings gift to me. This laſt however was ſaid only in kindneſs to me, that by making his Maſter his own debtor, he might preſerve what the King had already given at leaſt, which was in ſome danger of being loſt too. But with all that both of us could ſay, we had much ado to appeaſe the Superintendant, who appear'd perhaps a little more ſevere towards others, than he was to himſelf; for 'tis ſure he was not of a diſpoſition apt to think the Kings bounty guilty of any exceſſes, when his own ſervices were rewarded. At laſt however, being intreated, and ſollicited by ſeveral conſiderable perſons, he promis'd to do me no ill office to the King, but to ſerve me as far as it lay in his power.

Some days after, being upon Guard with my Company at Sea on board one of his Majeſty's Ships, the *Rochellers* ſent out four Fire-ſhips to burn our Veſſels. When I ſaw them bearing down upon us, I order'd all my men to put out Hand-ſpikes, and ſet them like a Hedge to keep them off. This was immediately done, and ſo the Fire-ſhips were ſtopt, and not able to get within us, or do us any harm, and all their artificial fires play'd inwards, without flying out upon us. The King at a diſtance ſaw all that paſt, as he was going to walk upon the Beach; and ſending Count *Nogent* for me, would know from my own mouth what method I had taken for our defence againſt thoſe Fire-ſhips: And being a Prince of a noble nature, he was glad of this occaſion to tell me that he abſolutely forgave my laſt fault. And when I had given him an account of our behaviour

viour in this action, he ſaid with a ſmiling countenance, that he was ſatisfy'd with me, and my ſervices pleas'd him well. The Duke of *St. Simon*, who was by, immediately after gave me to underſtand what the King meant by ſaying ſo; telling me that I muſt live in good underſtanding with Monſieur *St. Preuil*, and that he would ſerve me to the King upon any occaſion.

VIII. Having given an account before of Monſieur *Canaples* his diſpleaſure againſt me, and the cauſe of it, with ſome other particulars that happen'd ſince, I am now oblig'd to ſpeak of the great falling out we had ſome months after, and during the ſame Siege of *Rochelle*. Going one day to view a place proper to ſet a Guard in, about four hundred paces diſtant from the Sea-ſhore, I ſaw from that eminence Maſts of Ships a great way off, that lookt like Spires of Steeples. I was a little ſurpriz'd at firſt, to think what it might be, but after conſidering a little, and counting to fourteen, I concluded it muſt be the *Engliſh* Fleet, commanded by the Lord .... whom all the world hath heard of. Therefore riding full ſpeed to the Kings Quarter, to make a report of what I had ſeen, I ſaid it could be nothing elſe but the *Engliſh* Navy. The King having diſcover'd the whole Fleet from the Garret of his Lodgings, (the braveſt and ſtouteſt Fleet for both the number and prodigious bulk of Ships, that had ever been known) commanded me to go and give notice to the Officers, to come and receive his Orders, that all the Army might be in a readineſs to engage this Fleet, in caſe it ſhould make any attempt; and at the ſame time he bid me afterwards go and chuſe out a fit place, wherein to draw up the Regiments in Battaille. Being come to Monſieur *Canaples* Quarter, who was my *Maiſtre de Camp*, I told him the King had commanded me to give him notice to draw up his Regiment, by reaſon of the arrival of the *Engliſh* Fleet. But the Major of the Regiment being very ſick, and his Deputy that day a little out of order too, beſides that he underſtood but little of the buſineſs, Monſieur *Canaples* deſir'd me to go and put the Regiment in Battaille my ſelf. I told him, that as ſoon as ever I had executed the Kings Orders, who had commanded me to go view the field, I would not fail to obey his; but entreated him withal to remember, that it was my turn to command the Forlorn-hope that day; for ſince my entring into the Regiment of Guards, there had no occaſion offer'd it ſelf for me to command them; and 'tis well enough known, that thoſe employments, tho full of danger, are lookt upon as poſts of honour, and ſuch as a man never gives up to any body whatſoever. Monſieur *Canaples* promis'd me to remember, and not diſpoſe of that Command to any other. Upon this promiſe I left my *Maiſtre de Camp*, not apprehending that a man of honour would fail me in a thing that was my due, and eſpecially upon ſo important an occaſion. I went afterwards to chuſe the ground, whither all the Companies both of the Regiment of Guards, and *Swiſſes*, repair'd in a trice. There I form'd all the Battalions, plac'd every Company in its poſt, every Souldier in his rank, and the Officers at the head of them, to encourage the Souldiers by their example, and have the firſt and greateſt ſhare, both of the hazzard, and of the Conqueſt.

IX. After having thus with my utmoſt diligence obey'd the Kings Orders, I return'd to Monſieur *Canaples*, to give an account of what I had done; and hard by his Lodging met my intimate friend Monſieur *Savig-*

nac, Lieutenant to Monſieur *Rhoderick*'s Company, who told me for good news, that he was going to his Poſt, and had receiv'd Monſieur *Canaples* his Order to command the Forlorn-hope. You may gueſs what a ſurprize I was in to ſee ſuch a ſlight put upon me, in failing of the promiſe that had been made me in this buſineſs; and I fancy my paſſion will appear excuſable, ſince ſuch an affront requir'd a very ſteady vertue to ſupport it with patience, in a man of Courage: Eſpecially ſince it was that time my opinion that Heaven always declared for him, who when his honour was injur'd, repell'd the offence by force of arms. Monſieur *Savignac* had no ſooner ſaid ſo, but I anſwer'd in heat, How! hath Monſieur *Canaples* given you that Order? He cannot do it, he hath promis'd it me, and beſides it is my right: This were to act contrary to his own Word, and to Juſtice. I askt it not of him, reply'd he, ſpeak to Monſieur *Canaples*, perhaps he will give you ſome other employment; I pray be not angry till you have heard his reaſons. No, no, ſaid I in great fury, a man can have no reaſon for acting contrary to Juſtice, and his own Word; I will have no other employment but that which belongs to me, and that cannot be given you juſtly, which cannot without injuſtice be taken from me. Monſieur *Savignac*, who lov'd me very well, but did not think he ought to yield to me upon ſuch an occaſion, ſaid to me, Look you Sir, I made no ſuit for it, it was given me voluntarily, and without a particular Order I cannot leave it.

Thereupon taking it for granted that Monſieur *Canaples* had put this affront upon me deſignedly, ſince it was not poſſible he ſhould have forgot in ſo ſhort a time what he promis'd me but juſt before; I went to ſeek him out, ſmothering my reſentment, and taking no notice that I knew any thing. I told him the Regiment was in Battaille, and when he pleas'd to come to it, he would find all in order according to the Kings command. And now Sir, ſaid I, I doubt not but you have remembred me. About what? ſaid he. The command of the Forlorn-hope, that you promis'd, and which of right belongs to me to day, ſaid I. At which putting on great ſurprize, Oh! truly I have given it to Monſieur *Savignac*, I am very ſorry for't, but in earneſt I forgot. I, who had a mind to ſhew him that I was more angry than he was ſorry, made anſwer a little roughly, How Sir, forgot! Is it poſſible a man of honour ſhould ſo ſoon forget his promiſe? I know not how to help it, ſaid he, I did not remember it. Seeing him dally thus with me, I raiſing my voice, reply'd, You perhaps forgot it Sir, becauſe you would forget it; but it ſhall not paſs ſo, for if you have forgot your promiſe, I very well remember that it is my place, and am reſolv'd not to loſe it. What would you have me do? ſaid he, the Orders are already given. Change the Orders Sir, ſaid I, if you pleaſe. Would you have me (reply'd he) be unjuſt to another, in taking away a poſt that I have given him? How! Sir, ſaid I, louder than before, you have been unjuſt to me before, in taking from me what was my right, and what you promis'd I ſhould have. Why, what would you have me do? ſaid he, very angrily; I cannot change the Orders, get you gone to the Regiment. Yes Sir, ſaid I, I will go, and go to the head of the Forlorn-hope; you have given me your word, the faith of a Gentleman, and a man of honour. I have done what you commanded me, and you have not been juſt to your word. I declare to you Sir, that I am reſolv'd to dye rather than part with what is my due; you ſhall ſee ſtrange work. I have not eaten the Kings bread ſo long, not to ſhew him in ſuch an occaſion of danger as this, that he has not been miſtaken

in

in the choice he has made of me to be near his perſon. All that troubles me is, that I have ſpoke to you of a thing I ſhould not have ſpoke to you about. Monſieur, Monſieur *de Pontis*, ſaid he, conſider who 'tis you ſpeak to. At which, raiſing my voice yet higher, I know very well Sir, ſaid I to him, that I ſpeak to a perſon, who engag'd his faith and his word to me, and hath fail'd in both. Whereupon Monſieur *Canaples*, enrag'd to the laſt degree, to ſee himſelf ſo us'd by an Officer of his own Regiment, reply'd, Get you gone, you are an inſolent fellow. Sir, ſaid I, the reſpect I owe you, with-holds me from ſaying a thing, that would very much diſpleaſe you; but, ſaid I, drawing my Sword a little way, and clapping it down again, Here is that ſhall one day do me right. Monſieur *Canaples*, extremely ſurpriz'd at this menace, ſaid to me, I ſuſpend you from your Command. But I, knowing he pretended to a thing out of his power, reply'd calmly, Sir, you uſurp an authority that does not belong to you, while the King is preſent, none but he can ſuſpend me.

X. Thereupon I left him, and ſeeing this affair was like to be of dangerous conſequence, if I did not prevent it, thought it my beſt courſe to make haſte, and acquaint the King with it. Accordingly I went and told him, that while I was executing his Majeſty's command, Monſieur *Canaples* had given away my poſt to another. The King, who was then very buſie in giving all the neceſſary Orders for the Army, had not leiſure to hear me, and therefore referr'd me to the Duke of *Eſpernon*, as Collonel of the *French* Infantry. I loſt no time, and had none to loſe, in the great buſtle and hurry every one was in, and therefore went immediately to the Duke, to whom I gave an account of my diſpute with Monſieur *Canaples*, for having executed the Kings Orders, and his own: Telling him, that having addreſt my ſelf to the King, his Majeſty had referr'd me to him to do me Juſtice, being himſelf ſo buſie in giving out Orders, that he had no leiſure to hear me; and therefore I humbly begg'd his Lordſhip to give me the poſt that belong'd to me. Monſieur *Eſpernon* made anſwer, that this was no fit time to decide ſuch controverſies, the Enemy being in ſight; and publick buſineſs being always to be preferr'd before private: that when the fight was over, they ſhould be at leiſure to conſider my caſe, and to do both of us Juſtice. But, my Lord, ſaid I, what will become of me, he hath interdicted me my Command. Oh, ſaid Monſieur *Eſpernon*, that is what he cannot do, while the King is preſent, that belongs only to him; and when I am preſent, and the King away, it belongs only to me. Go tell Monſieur *Canaples* from me, that he muſt permit you to exerciſe your Command, and this difference ſhall be decided, when that we have now in hand with the Enemy is decided. This word of the Duke's put me in ſome heart again, but conſidering that it would not be proper to carry it to Monſieur *Canaples* my ſelf, for fear of making things worſe, and quarrelling afreſh, I preſented my Table-book, and entreated his Lordſhip that he would pleaſe to write in them himſelf, the meſſage he would have delivered to Monſieur *Canaples*; telling him, I was afraid if I ſhould go back to acquaint him with his Lordſhips pleaſure, that he might fall into a paſſion with me, and then I might perhaps forget the reſpect that was due to him. Monſieur *Eſpernon* then writ in my Table-book, and ſent to Monſieur *Canaples*, to permit me quietly to exercize my Command; and thus being very well content to ſee my ſelf ſupported by the Collonel, I went away to the Regiment.

Meet-

Meeting my Captain *St. Preuil* by the way, I gave him a ſhort account of the matter, according to the ſhort time I had to do it in, deliver'd him Monſieur *Eſpernon*'s Order, and entreated him to carry it to Monſieur *Canaples*, with all the ſpeed he could. After which I went to take my poſt that had been deny'd me; and by great good fortune, Monſieur *Savignac*, to whom this poſt had been given in my wrong, was not there when I came: For tho we were very good friends, I was reſolv'd not to loſe my place, and Mouſieur *Savignac* would have been as reſolute as I, to keep what had been given to him.

XI. But it happen'd unluckily, that Monſieur *Canaples*, who was making the round of the Regiment of Guards. juſt as I took my poſt, ſaw me at a diſtance, before he had receiv'd the Duke of *Eſpernon*'s Letter. He made up to me inſtantly upon a round gallop, with his Cane in his hand, and thinking to fright me with threats, cry'd out as he came, I ſhall remove you with a vengeance, I'll make you quit that poſt. I being not of a humour to be eaſily affrighted with big words, let him come within thirty or forty paces, and then call'd out to him to advance no nearer: Do not go about to offer me an affront Sir, ſaid I, for I am abſolutely reſolv'd not to endure it: What right have you to take that from me, which the King has given me? Upon this, leaping out of his Saddle, and drawing his Sword, he came up to me, as if it had been my duty to ſuffer my ſelf to be beaten and abus'd; but being willing to ſave him that trouble, I drew mine too, and advanc'd half way to meet him, with a reſolution not to attack him, but only to defend my ſelf. I confeſs this was an extraordinary proceeding, and ſuch as might appear a capital offence, for a Lieutenant to draw upon his *Maiſtre de Camp*, at the head of the whole Army: But thinking my ſelf backt by the authority of the King, and the Collonel, and being like to be aſſaulted, and for ever diſhonoured, without having committed any other fault than obeying the Kings Orders, I thought of nothing but getting quit of this ſcurvy buſineſs, tho it ſhould coſt me my head.

The Duke of *Angouleſme* and ſome other great Lords, being come in to us, when we had made two or three paſſes at one another, parted us; and there the matter reſted, till we ſaw the *Engliſh* Fleet come to an Anchor in the Road, without preparing for any manner of Engagement. But then Monſieur *Canaples*, enrag'd to the laſt degree, at the affront he thought he had receiv'd in the ſight of the whole Army, reſolv'd to go immediately to the King, that he might prepoſſeſs him about this buſineſs. I ſaw him take Horſe, and preſently gueſt his deſign, and knowing of what conſequence it was to prevent him, mounted the beſt Horſe I had inſtantly, reſolving, if I could, to get thither before Monſieur *Canaples*. But he, knowing me to be a little hot, and ſuſpecting I would follow him, took a by-way, and left the direct one to me; by which means he arriv'd firſt, and related the whole matter to his Majeſty, wholly to his own advantage, telling him that I attempted to aſſaſſinate him, and drew upon him at the head of the Regiment. But he did not tell him that he himſelf had firſt attempted to take away my Honour, and perhaps my Life too, in the preſence of ſo many honourable witneſſes. He aggravated my fault all that poſſibly he could, and told his Majeſty, that if Juſtice were not done upon it, all Military diſcipline would be utterly confounded, and loſt; that there could be no more ſafety to be expected, either for the Officer from private Souldiers, or for the *Maiſtre*

de

de Camp and Generals from the meaneſt Officers in the Army. The King made anſwer, that he would not obſtruct Juſtice; but that he would have him go to Monſieur *Eſpernon*, and let him inform himſelf of the buſineſs.

I came into the room juſt as Monſieur *Canaples* went out, but found the King ſtrongly prejudic'd againſt me; for I no ſooner open'd my mouth, but he told me with great ſeverity, *Canaples* hath told it me already, 'tis a ſcurvy buſineſs for you, if it be as he informs me. Sir, replies I, your Majeſty knows that better than any body. If you have a mind to inform your ſelf, and will be pleas'd to hear me, your Majeſty will then ſee that I have done nothing but for your ſervice, and by your Order: I moſt humbly beſeech you Sir, to call to mind the Order you gave me. Well, well, ſaid the King, go to Monſieur *d' Eſpernon*, and tell him I ſent you, and will talk with him about it. I went accordingly as faſt as I could, hoping to find ſome acceſs with the Duke, becauſe of the Order he had given me for Monſieur *Canaples*, but was ſtrangely ſurpriz'd to find him yet leſs diſpos'd to hear me than the King. Aſſoon as ever I came in, he ſaid, O Monſieur *Pontis*, Monſieur *Canaples* hath ſpoke to me about your affair, there is now a ſtrange confuſion among the Officers of the Army: There is no ſuch thing as ſubmiſſion or dependance left among them: The Enſigns will turn Lieutenants, the Lieutenants Captains, the Captains are *Maiſtres de Camp*, and the *Maiſtres de Camp* will be Collonels: I ſhall take good care to hinder theſe diſorders: I wonder how you dare appear before me. I come hither, my Lord, ſaid I, under the King's protection; he hath ſent me to tell you, that he will diſcourſe you upon this buſineſs. You have done wiſely, reply'd the Duke, to come to me from the King, for otherwiſe I ſhould have laid you by the heels, to have given you leiſure to think of what you could ſay in juſtification of your crime. Seeing then no defence left me but that of humility and ſubmiſſion, I humbly begg'd of him, not to condemn me upon the ſingle report of my Adverſary, and without firſt hearing what I had to ſay for my ſelf. I conjur'd him to conſider, that the innocent are often oppreſt by the authority of their Enemies, who will have every thing paſs for a fault, that oppoſes their injuſtice; and all men Criminals, who defend themſelves from their oppreſſions. I hope, my Lord, ſaid I, if you will pleaſe to hear the truth of the whole matter from unprejudic'd perſons, you will excuſe my misfortune, and your ſelf undertake my defence, and think me more worthy of your compaſſion, than your anger. I beſeech you, my Lord, to remember the Letter you did me the favour to write in my behalf to Monſieur *Canaples*, wherein you blam'd him for preſuming to ſuſpend me, when the King and you were preſent in the Army; and commanded him from the King to let me alone in the free diſcharge of my Command. When after this he went about to diſhonour me, againſt the Kings, and your Lordſhips expreſs Order, I conceiv'd that both the King, and you your ſelf, my Lord, had put the Sword in my hand, to repell the injury that was offer'd to the Kings authority, and at the ſame time to defend my ſelf from the affront they would have put upon me.

Theſe reaſons were of force to work upon Monſieur *Eſpernon*, whoſe honour and authority ſeem'd to be engaged in my quarrel; but he not being then at leiſure to conſider of it, and poſſeſt too by what Monſieur *Canaples* had told him, and in regard my action appear'd really very foul and odious in it ſelf, when all the circumſtances were laid aſide, that

might make it appear more excuſable, I plainly perceiv'd that he was very ill diſpos'd toward me, and that I ought to take my leave. And withal, thinking my ſelf not very ſafe, I reſolv'd to withdraw to Mareſchal *Schomberg*, who hath ever done me the honour to love me, and to protect me with extraordinary kindneſs and favour.

XII. Then it was that I began to reflect on the inconſtancy of mens fortune: I ſigh'd heartily to ſee, that after ſerving the world ſo faithfully ſo many years, I ſhould be ſo ill rewarded by it, that after expoſing my life a thouſand times in the ſervice of my Prince, I was now like to loſe it ignominiouſly by the rigour of publick Juſtice; or at leaſt to paſs the remainder of it in exile and oblivion. I repreſented to my ſelf the miſery of a fugitive, and a vagabond, who fears every thing, hath nothing to hope, looks upon all Creatures as combin'd againſt him to render him unhappy, and one that can only expect from death the end of all his miſeries and misfortunes. And indeed I never wiſht to dye but that day, for then I thought death the greateſt good fortune that could have befallen me, fearing above all things the hand of Juſtice, and almoſt as much as that, to live wretchedly, out of the Court, and my native Country. Such were the thoughts meerly humane, and the low conſiderations that wholly poſſeſt my mind. I was not then ſenſible, that it is a happineſs for a man who hath liv'd long in Courts and Armies, to be oblig'd to leave them, and driven to think of ſomething more ſerious, to dedicate the remainder of his life at leaſt to God, when the World will have no more to do with him. But God was pleaſed thus at a diſtance, and by degrees, to prepare me for renouncing the world, by giving me a taſte of its bitterneſs; and tho I did not then apprehend it, yet the various afflictions he try'd me with were ſo many earneſts of his mercy to me. While I was thus intent upon my ſelf, with regard to the outward conſequences of this extremity, to which I was then reduc'd, God was pleaſed to look upon me, and inſpire me with a thought of begging his aſſiſtance. This made me with deep ſighs ſay, Lord thou knoweſt my miſery, and I know thy mercy, take upon thee my defence, for I have no defender. My prayer was ſhort, but my devotion was ardent and ſincere. But my grief and diſquiet were ſo exceſſive, that within a few days I was ſo chang'd, as hardly to be known; my very hair turn'd grey in that ſhort time; and I am ſure none who have not experimentally known what it is for a man of Honour and Courage to ſee himſelf reduc'd to fear the hand of a common Executioner, can be a competent Judge of the condition I was in.

XIII. When I had withdrawn to Mareſchal *Schomberg*'s houſe, they began to examine my buſineſs. The uſual informations were made, and the Drum beat throughout all the Quarters to cite me to a perſonal appearance; but I, chuſing rather to paſs for a Criminal when at Liberty, than to ſurrender my ſelf up a Priſoner, and be expos'd to all the violent deſigns of my Enemies, was interdicted and caſhiered, and all Souldies and Officers of the Regiment were forbid to own me for an Officer.

The Proceedings when concluded were carry'd to Monſieur *Eſpernon*, as Collonel of the Infantry, and ſo the principal Judge. He ſpoke of it to the King, who not being able utterly to caſt off the extraordinary goodneſs he had ever had for me, and deſigning to ſave my Life, had a mind not to oppoſe Juſtice publickly, but to ſpin the Cauſe out as long

as

as he could, that ſo when time had qualify'd mens Spirits, he might the more eaſily grant my Pardon, without being blamed by the principal Officers of the Army, whoſe authority ſeem'd to be concern'd for my puniſhment. The King therefore anſwer'd the Duke of *Eſpernon*, that they were to have the opinion of the Mareſchals of *France*, and the principal Officers of the Army; and ſo the buſineſs was ended.

But that which made very much for my Juſtification, was the extraordinary generoſity of Mareſchal *Crequy*, Monſieur *Canaples* his Father, who as ſoon as ever he heard of our quarrel, declar'd highly in my favour againſt his own Son. He condemn'd Monſieur *Canaples* publickly, as a perſon that broke his word, and commended what I had done, as an argument of my Courage, and repelling an extraordinary injury by an extraordinary action. This declaration from Mareſchal *Crequy*, who thus renounc'd his natural inclination for the ſake of Juſtice, was of very great weight in my Cauſe; for it could not eaſily be imagin'd, that a Father would pronounce againſt his own Son, if he could have found any Juſtice on his ſide. Nevertheleſs my buſineſs was examin'd in the Council.

In the mean while Mareſchal *Schomberg* wrought privately with the King, to have compaſſion upon an Officer, who had ſerv'd him all along with ſo great fidelity and zeal; and to incline him to order it ſo that all things might be compoſed. The King, as I ſaid, was pretty well inclined to this of his own accord, and had often ſpoken of it to ſeveral people; but every body anſwer'd cautiouſly, fearing on one ſide to offend his Majeſty, and doubting on the other leſt they ſhould offend Monſieur *Canaples*, who was a perſon of great Intereſt and Power. There was one however that ſpoke his thoughts freely to the King upon this ſubject: But this mans opinion was as baſe and unworthy, as Mareſchal *Crequy's*, my adverſary's Father, was generous. He had formerly been my Captain, under *Henry* the Great, when I was a young Cadet in the Regiment of Guards. And the King being pleas'd one day to do him the honor to unboſom himſelf to him upon my concern, ſaid, You have known *Pontis* longer than any body: He ſeems to me to be patient, tho he be a little hot and provencal; doubtleſs he muſt have been highly provok'd, what think you? This was plainly to declare himſelf for me, and to engage this Officer to ſpeak favourably of a man, whoſe cauſe the King himſelf had taken upon him to defend; but he, contrary to all people's expectation, had the ill nature to anſwer the King, that though it had been his own Son, that had committed ſuch an action, he would condemn it as criminal even in his Son. The King, who look'd for another kind of anſwer, and that his own opinion ought to have met with more reſpect, gave ſome ſignifications of his being much ſurpriz'd at ſo rude a return, and went off toward the Window, without ſaying any thing at all: This was in effect to condemn a man ſeverely, whom his Majeſty had by his own queſtion abſolv'd; and there's no great doubt to be made, but his Vote had been ſold againſt me, or he would never have expreſt himſelf at that rate upon ſuch an occaſion. And indeed after the matter was abſolutely determin'd, and my Pardon obtain'd, he ſeveral times made me great excuſes, which ſerv'd really only to aggravate his own Condemnation.

XIV. While my affair lay before the Council, Monſieur *Hallier*, then a Captain in the Guards of the Body, who hath ſince been made Mareſchal of *France*, and Governour of *Paris*, under the name of *de l'Hoſpital*; and

Monſieur

Monſieur *d'Eſtiſſac*, *Maiſtre de Camp* of a Regiment of Infantry, either came, or ſent to me every day, to give me notice of all that was ſaid in Council, or in the King's ordinary Diſcourſe concerning my buſineſs; ſhewing by this good office the particular kindneſs they had for me, even in the time of my greateſt diſgrace. And by this means too, I knew who were my true, and who my falſe friends, and who my declar'd enemies. I knew there were in the Council eight and forty Judges againſt me, Princes and Mareſchals of *France*, Dukes and Peers, Collonels, Mareſchals *de Camp*, and *Maiſtres de Camp*; the reaſon of which was, that theſe great Officers were willing by favouring Monſieur *Canaples*, to raiſe the authority of their own Commands, and to render themſelves more formidable to the Captains, Lieutenants and Enſigns. Thus were they in ſome ſort both Judges and Parties, and had a mind to make me an example; for fear, if this boldneſs of drawing upon a *Maiſtre de Camp* were authoriz'd by eſcaping unpuniſhed, that they ſhould hereafter find more reſiſtance than ſubmiſſion among the inferior Officers; and ſo be often engag'd to fight like private Gentlemen, inſtead of making themſelves obey'd by vertue of the King's authority.

And I muſt confeſs their fear had been juſt, if the circumſtances of my action had not abſolutely ſecur'd me from this reproach, and made it plain to all the world, that if an inferiour Officer is never permitted to draw his Sword upon the perſon that commands him, a *Maiſtre de Camp* is no more allowed to break his word with one that is commanded by him, and without any manner of Juſtice, contrary to the King's, and the Collonel General's Order, to take from him that rank which belongs to him by his Command.

But at the ſame time that ſo great a number of perſons declared themſelves for my death, I had the comfort to ſee a great many others take my part to the laſt, and make my cauſe their own. Beſides thoſe I have named, Count *Soiſſons* a Prince of the Blood, ſent to invite me to retire at his Lodgings, aſſuring me of his protection, and that as long as he had life he would preſerve mine. Monſieur *Thooras*, Governour of Fort *St. Martin* in the Iſle of *Rhe*, ſent me a tender of his ſervice, and begg'd of me to come into that Iſland, where he promis'd me all imaginable ſecurity. But Mareſchal *Schomberg* adviſ'd me not to ſtir out of his houſe, by reaſon of the favour the King ſhewed in my concern. So that returning my thanks to thoſe Gentlemen, with all the reſpect and acknowledgment due for ſuch honourable and advantagious offers, I ſtill continued where I was.

At laſt the King being eternally importun'd by Monſieur *Schomberg*, and put forward by his own inclination too, ſent me word by Monſieur *Schomberg* that I might retire into his Quarter, which he gave me for my refuge. But fearing every thing in the condition I was then in, and apprehending above all, leſt I ſhould fall into the hands of Juſtice, I contented my ſelf with ſtaying in the King's Quarter in the day time, and retir'd my ſelf at night in the Mareſchal's.

XV. One day as I was walking in the *Baſſe-Court* of the King's Lodgings, with Monſieur *Montigny* and *Marſillac*, both Captains in the Guards, theſe two Officers told me, they would not adviſe me to ſtay any longer in the Camp, for as long as I paſt for criminal, I was always in danger, and if ever I came to be arreſted, there would be an end of me. Nay, Monſieur *Marſillac* offer'd me an hundred Piſtoles, and Monſieur *Montigny* fifty,

fifty, entreating me, as I lov'd them, to accept the offer. I told them I had two hundred left, and that their kindneſs was what I valu'd much more, than the Gold they made me a tender of juſt then; the King putting his Head out at Window perceiv'd me, and becken'd me to come to him, but as unhappy people ſee every thing by the fear that poſſeſſes them, and my mind was full of the fright theſe Officers had put me into, I took this ſign from the King in the worſt ſenſe, and believing it to be a manace, was perfectly confounded; Did you ſee the King threaten me? ſaid I. You told me as much. I am a dead man. I muſt flee for it. You'll never ſee me more. At that inſtant, without any farther deliberation, I embrac'd them, and out I went, betook my ſelf to my Heels, and fled, as if all had been loſt. I look'd all about for my Man and my Horſe, but could find neither, which made me quite mad, and I concluded now that I was deliver'd up into the hands of Juſtice. I repented my ſelf of going into the King's Quarters at all; and not knowing at laſt whom to blame, I diſcharg'd all my anger upon my man who was miſſing, reſolving with my ſelf to be very liberal of my Cudgel, as ſoon as ever I could ſet my eyes on him. But while all things ſeem d to conſpire to trouble me more, as I was thus running up and down among the Sutlers, like a Mad-man, to ſeek my Servant, and could not find him, I was frighted more than ever to ſee a man come running and calling after me: It was a young fellow call'd *Cadet*, that belong'd to the Kings Chamber, whom his Majeſty had ſent to aſſure me all was well, and to fetch me to him. I thought he purſu d me with an ill intent, and therefore fell to running faſter than I had done before. At laſt however coming a little to my ſelf, and beginning to fancy I might have taken a falſe alarm, I ſtopt. The man came up and told me, The King had ſent for me to him. I askt what people ſaid of me? at which he fell a laughing, and anſwer'd merrily, Why they ſay that you have taken a fright, and have led me a fine courſe: But what are you afraid of? The King would only ſpeak with you. I have had this day the ſatisfaction of ſeeing Monſieur *Pontis* run away from me. Then I preſently reſolv'd to go wait upon the King, tho the trouble and agitation both of my mind and my body had been ſo exceſſive, that I had ſweat to that degree, that it appear'd on the outſide of my Doublet.

I had no great need of conſideration what I ſhould ſay to the King. My retirement had given me but too much leiſure for revolving in my mind every thing that might ſerve to prove my innocency. And having always hoped that at one time or other the King would give me liberty to juſtifie my ſelf before him, I had meditated and prepared an exact narration; wherein following only common ſenſe, I had put together, all that a Souldier (who had liv'd thirty years about Court, and had no other Eloquence than what Nature gave him) could ſay, that was plauſible to render ſuch an action leſs odious; and to cloath it with all thoſe circumſtances, that could make the Juſtice of his Cauſe appear.

XVI. So ſoon as I came into the Court of the Kings Lodgings, the Duke of *St. Simon*, who was looking out at window, made a ſign to me to come up the ſtairs by the Wardrobe; and when I was there he told me, the King had ſent for me to learn the truth of the whole matter from my own mouth. The King was laid down, by reaſon of ſome little phyſick he had taken. Being come to the Bed-ſide I fell upon my knees, and in my countenance plainly diſcover'd the remorſe I had for

having offended my Prince, who had ever been ſo gracious to me. His Majeſty then told me, he would have me declare the whole truth without any diſguiſe; and that he had ſent for me purely for the ſame purpoſe.

There was all that time no body preſent in the room but the King, the Duke of *St. Simon*, and my ſelf; ſo that having an opportunity of ſpeaking freely to him, I did it after this manner:

Sir, I can never ſufficiently thank your Majeſty, for the grace and honour you are pleaſed to do me, in permitting me to render you an account of my actions; for I have ever hoped from your Majeſty's goodneſs, that would you vouchſafe to hear me, you would judge me rather unfortunate than faulty. I dare boldly ſay, that if my Conſcience could reproach me with having failed in my duty, or ever diſobeying your Majeſty's orders, I ſhould never have had the boldneſs to preſent my ſelf before you; and that I ſhould voluntarily have baniſh'd my ſelf both from your Court and Army; and have ſought death out of your Kingdom, for in it I could not have liv'd after I had loſt my Honour. So that tho thoſe in the Council of War, who are either friends to Monſieur Canaples, *or have not been rightly informed of the truth of the matter, have declared againſt me; yet I hope your Majeſty being ſo equitable as all the world knows you to be, will judge things as they are, and as I ſhall lay them before you; That it was Monſieur* Canaples *only, who acted contrary to your Majeſty's orders, to the Rules of War, and his own Honour; and that, whereas he complains of my having done him an injury, 'tis he on the contrary who hath injured me. Your Majeſty knows I have always told you the truth, but I proteſt afreſh, that upon this occaſion I will not utter one ſyllable, not only that is not true, but nothing except what your whole Regiment of Guards know to be ſo, as well as I, and what Monſieur* Canaples *himſelf cannot but acknowledge for ſuch.*

Your Majeſty may pleaſe to call to mind, that having brought you the news of the Engliſh *Fleet's arrival, you commanded me to go give notice to the Officers to go and receive your Majeſty's Orders, and afterwards to make choice of a fit place to draw up the Army in Battaille. Thereupon I went immediately to carry this Order to the Officers, and acquainted Monſieur* Canaples *with it among the reſt. He entreated me to go draw up our Regiment my ſelf, becauſe our Major was ſick. I told him I would firſt execute your Majeſty's Orders, and when that was done, I would not fail to obey his. But it being my turn to command the Forlorn-hope that day, having never yet done it, ſince I had the honour to be received into the Regiment, I entreated him to remember it, telling him the paſſionate deſire I had, by ſome conſiderable piece of ſervice, to acknowledge the ſingular favour your Majeſty had done me, in commanding me to be near your perſon, and in preferring me of your own accord to be a Lieutenant in your Guards. He promis'd me he would, and upon that aſſurance I left him. When I had obeyed your Majeſty's Orders firſt, and then his, I return'd to give him an account of the whole, and at the ſame time to beg the effect of his promiſe, asking him if he had remembred me? But he at firſt made as if he did not underſtand what I meant; and after I had explained my ſelf to him, he ſhew'd me as plainly that he had forgotten me. I beſeech your Majeſty to conſider, whether it was poſſible for a man of honour, as Monſieur* Canaples *is, to forget in ſo ſhort a time the promiſe he had made me but juſt before; and whether this was not plainly to tell me, he had forgot me, only becauſe he would forget me.*

I confeſs, Sir, I was ſenſible touch't with this injury, and found my ſelf nettled to ſee that Monſieur Canaples *had not only uſed me like a pittiful fellow,*

and

and a Foot-man, in breaking his word with me; but beſides that he uſurp'd a power which no way belong'd to him, to take from me the rank your Majeſty had given me; and meerly out of a deſign to affront me, to change the general and eſtabliſh'd order of your Army. I thought, Sir, that Monſieur Canaples *was not allowed to ſet himſelf above your Majeſty, nor by his own private authority to take from me that right, which my Command and my Rank made mine, and which I have endeavour'd to deſerve. This affront, Sir, wounded me more than all the injurious words he could give me in the heat of paſſion; and I humbly beg your Majeſty's pardon, if I told him, that he toucht me in the tendereſt part, and made me mad: For I ſaw very well, that he uſed me ſo in cold blood, and that the affront he put upon me was a premeditated one. I do alſo Sir confeſs, for I dare conceal nothing from your Majeſty, who command me to ſpeak freely, that in the heat of my paſſion, I could not forbear giving him ſome language that was a little rude, the better to repreſent the injury he did me; but if I failed ſomething in the reſpect due from me to him, as my* Maiſtre de Camp, *he firſt failed in that which he owes to your Majeſty, and his own word. And therefore I think I may ſay, that his fault was greater, and leſs excuſeable than mine, becauſe, Sir, it was upon your own authority that he attempted; and how much ſoever I am his inferiour, yet there is more proportion betwcen a* Maiſtre de Camp *as he is, and a Lieutenant as I am, than between your Majeſty and Monſieur* Canaples. *Beſides Sir, he was the firſt offender, without any provocation from me, and contrary to his own word, ſo that if I ſaid ſome diſreſpectful things to him, it was himſelf that drove me to that extremity. Your Majeſty knows, I am, I thank God, patient enough, but Sir, he provokt me to the laſt degree; and had a mind I think to try whether there was any ſpark of Honour in me, after he had endeavoured to take it all away by this affront. Thus your Majeſty ſees plainly enough, he was not only guilty of his own fault, but of mine too; nor can he juſtly complain of my being loud with him, after he had ſo ſenſibly injured me.*

He was not content, Sir, to deprive me of the rank that was my due, and in that to go againſt your authority, but he proceeded yet farther; for upon my letting him ſee that I had the reſentments of a man of Honour upon this occaſion, and told him roundly, I could not quickly forget ſo great an affront, he took my ſenſe of this offence for an injury, and flew into ſuch a paſſion, that forgetting the order of War, which forbids every Maiſtre de Camp *to ſuſpend an Officer, when your Majeſty, or Monſieur* Eſpernon *is in the Army, he would needs take upon him the power of interdicting me the exerciſe of my Command. But I knowing this was more than he could do, contented my ſelf with telling him ſo, and left him as ill ſatisfy'd with me, as I had reaſon to be with him, to come throw my ſelf at your Majeſty's feet, and beg juſtice for the affront that had been done me.*

The great affairs with which your Majeſty was taken up at that time not affording you leiſure to hear me, your Majeſty ſent me to Monſieur Eſpernon, *who after having heard our difference, made anſwer, that I ſhould go tell Monſieur* Canaples *from him, that it was your Majeſty's pleaſure he ſhould permit me to execute my Command. I entreated he would give himſelf the trouble of writing to him himſelf, that I might not be ingaged in ſome new Conteſt with him, which he accordingly did upon my Tablets preſently, and this I deliver'd to Monſieur* St. Preuil, *who promis'd me to carry it immediately to him.*

Upon this confidence I went and took my place at the Head of the Army, aſſuring my ſelf, that Monſieur Canaples *would make no ſcruple of obeying the D. of* Eſpernon's, *which indeed was your Majeſties Orders; but was very much aſtoniſh'd to ſee him oppoſe them throughout, meerly to diſhonour and ruin*

me;

me. For as ſoon as ever he ſpy'd me at a diſtance in my Poſt, he immediately gallop'd up to me with his Cane in his hand, threatning all the way what he would do. I, Sir, who knew my ſelf ſupported by your authority, and the Collonels, ſeeing my ſelf like to be uſed like a Rogue in the preſence of the whole Army, thought fit to caution him both for his honour and my own, while he was a good way off, not to come near me in that poſture, nor offer me an Affront, which I was not prepared to ſuffer; telling him, Your Majeſty had given me that place, and Monſieur Eſpernon *maintain'd me in it, and therefore I could not quit it without an expreſs Order from your Majeſty, or the Collonel. Monſieur* Canaples *gueſſing then by my countenance, and my words, that I was not diſpos'd to receive a Caneing, thought to deal better with me, and leapt from his Horſe, advancing toward me with his Sword in his hand. I confeſs, Sir, when I ſaw my ſelf preſt after this manner, and perfectly conſtrained to defend my life, which I had reaſon to believe he had a mind to take away, as well as my honour, I made a Virtue of Neceſſity, and put my ſelf in a poſture to defend both the one and the other.*

I dare not declare more particularly to your Majeſty what I did afterwards, nor how I found my ſelf diſpos'd. I know the reſpect I owe, and the confuſion the remembrance of my fault ought to put me in, while your Majeſty is ſo gracious to hear me. At that the King interrupting me, ſaid, *Speak boldly, and fear nothing, you know I charged you to conceal nothing from me, and I would know all.* This anſwer, and the change I obſerv'd in the King's countenance, made me think he took ſome pleaſure in hearing me, and that what I had to ſay would not be diſagreeable to him. So continuing the diſcourſe with a more free and Souldier-like air, *Since your Majeſty* (ſaid I) *will have me ſpeak out, I confeſs, that when Monſieur* Canaples *did me an honour, I durſt not have hoped for from his generoſity, I accepted it, being pretty well diſpos'd to defend my life, which it was more honourable to preſerve for your Majeſty's Service, than to give it up cowardly to the paſſion of a man that would have deſtroy'd me. So that when he came up hotly with his Sword drawn and bluſtring words, I was not diſmaid at it, and only thought of acknowledging the honour he did me, in ſaving him part of the way, and putting my ſelf in a poſture for returning his civility. And I may boldly tell your Majeſty, ſince 'tis your pleaſure I ſhould diſſemble nothing, that if the Duke of* Angouleſme *had not come in ſeaſonably to part us, Monſieur* Canaples *might perhaps have found, that it was an eaſier matter to threaten, than to kill me; and to interdict me my Command without any Authority to do ſo, than to drive me from my Poſt by force of Arms.*

The King well pleaſed with ſo ſincere and natural a narration, and ſeeing that the Circumſtances did really render what I had done very excuſable, was ſo moved at theſe laſt words, which I had pronounced in a Military and kind of Provencal tone, that he ſaid to me with a ſmiling countenance, *What then thou drew'ſt too? I did indeed Sir,* reply'd I, *and dare not deny it to your Majeſty, but 'twas Monſieur* Canaples *that forced me to it; and I think your Majeſty would not have been pleaſed with having me killed like a Rogue that had neither Courage nor Honour. And how didſt thou do then?* ſaid the King. *Sir, Your Majeſty will pardon me if I tell you, that I began to meaſure my Sword with his, and was defending my ſelf the beſt I could when they came in to us.* But that was not what the King would have, for perceiving me a little warm'd with the recital, he would have the diverſion of ſeeing me repreſent my action with ſomething of that heat which was but too natural to me. So that the Duke of *St. Simon*, who had withdrawn toward the Window, to leave me at greater

liberty

liberty with the King, comprehending what he meant, gave me to underſtand it. At which animating my ſelf as much as the preſence of the King would allow, throwing my Cloak upon my left ſhoulder, and ſtanding upon my Guard, I did that with my Hand and Arm, which reſpect would not ſuffer me to do with my Sword. The King, who ſaw the ſprightlineſs of my geſture, and obſerv'd the fire that ſparkled in my Eyes, cover'd his face a little with the Sheet, that he might laugh without being diſcover'd, which made me preſently conclude the Cauſe was won, and all my own.

As ſoon as this little Farce was over, the King bad me be ſure to remember all the particulars I had told him, and let no body living know of my having been with him: And withal he commanded me to be ready at his Chamber-door when he went to Council, there to throw my ſelf at his Feet, and give him an account of my whole buſineſs, as if I had never ſpoke to him of it before. Upon which I immediately withdrew, and went down the Stairs by the Wardrobe as privately as ever I could.

XVII. Then I plainly ſaw, that Providence, inſtead of forſaking me, (as I imagin'd at firſt) had aſſiſted me after a viſible and extraordinary manner, and that two ways: Firſt by inclining the King to be favourable to my Cauſe; and then in not permitting me to find either my Horſe or my Man, in order to the making my eſcape, for had I fled, I had been utterly loſt.

At eleven of the Clock I preſented my ſelf at the King's Chamber door, and at his coming out with a great deal of Company that attended him, and among others the Cardinals *Richelieu* and *la Vallette*, I threw my ſelf at his Majeſty's Feet, and began to ſpeak and beg his audience after this manner.

Sir, I am come to lay my ſelf at your Majeſty's Feet, to implore your mercy. I put my life into your Majeſty's hands, for I had better loſe it by the Sword of your Juſtice, if I have deſerv'd to loſe it, than live miſerable, a Fugitive, and under your Majeſty's diſpleaſure. But I moſt humbly beſeech you, Sir, that you will firſt do me the favour to hear me, that if I ſhall have the good fortune to make my Innocence appear, I may have the conſolation of being abſolv'd by your Majeſty's own Judgment; and on the contrary, if I cannot juſtify my own conduct, I may be condemn'd out of my own mouth.

The King, who ſeem'd very cold to me, on purpoſe to conceal his ſecret intelligence betwixt us, heard me with a fierce countenance, his hand on his ſide, and ſtanding between the two Cardinals. Then with a fierce look he ſaid, *Riſe, that I may the better hear you, and if you have any thing to ſay in your own juſtification, ſpeak it, but be ſure you ſpeak truth.* All the Court was preſent at this extraordinary Audience, and I pleaded my cauſe for half a quarter of an hour, after the ſame manner I had done it in private, in the King's Chamber, but much more ſeriouſly, as ſpeaking now in publick before the Cardinals, Princes, and Lords of the Court.

While I was harranguing thus, the King ſaid ſoftly to Cardinal *Richelieu*, as I have been ſince told by a Lord that overheard him, *You ſee* Canaples *provoked him to the laſt degree, for my part I do not think him ſo much in fault*; and when I had done ſpeaking he ſaid aloud, *'Tis true, he ought not to deprive him of the Poſt due to him by his Command, when he did nothing but only execute my Orders.*

Upon this they went presently into Council, and Cardinal *Richelieu* having understood from the King, that he would have the judgment upon this business put off, by reason of the *English* Fleets lying there, in expectation of a fair Wind to assault the Mole, his Eminence declared it to the Council.

Thus the matter was deferr'd, that is, the King reserv'd the judgment of it to himself, and at his coming from Council he very graciously told me so; I humbly begg'd of his Majesty to do me the favour, not to let me lye idle, but to employ me some way in his service, which he promis'd me to do, but withal ordered me in the mean time to stay in his Quarters, without going to the Regiment of Guards, or executing any part of my Command.

XVIII. The King accordingly did remember me as he had promised, and a few days after made me Captain of a Galliot, to go out to Sea, and discover the Enemy. I then began to think of reconciling my self to the King, by some signal action in this new Command his Majesty had conferr'd upon me. I bought a great many Ells of Taffata, and made Streamers of them with the Arms of *France*: These I plac'd round about my Vessel, and made it look so fine, that several Lords were eager to come aboard, and would needs go with me to Sea. Finding my self thus crowded in the time of my disgrace, and fearing it might do me some new mischief with the King; or at least, that I might not be able to execute his orders faithfully, if I were not absolutely Master of the Vessel, and had her to my self; I thought fit to acquaint him with it, and did so. His Majesty was well pleased to see that I rejected the favour of others, and sought after his only, and that I would apply my self to no body else, but him, as in truth, I had more occasion to do now than ever. Therefore forbidding the Lords and all others to go aboard me, and having told them for a blind, that he would have them all keep about his person, except such as had Commands, I was left to my self, and my Ship at my own disposal. Then I fell to cruising, to try if I could discover the Enemies designs, passionately desiring to do the King some considerable service, that I might have a little merit to intercede for my peace, and gain an absolute Pardon.

I was once at open Sea in the night, when my Pilot, who was a Master in Navigation, came about an hour before day, and told me, a fresh gale was rising, and both Wind and Tide stood fair for the Enemy; and therefore he was afraid, if they had any mind to attempt the Mole, they would not lose this opportunity. The Pilot was in the right, and spoke like a man of wisdom and experience; for a little after we heard a Cannon shot from that part where the *English* Fleet rid, which the Pilot told me was the first signal for the fight, and if we should hear a second we might depend upon it that it was so. Having a great confidence in this man, I immdiately raised all my People, both Souldiers and Slaves, commanding them to be ready, and at the first touch of the Boatswain's Whistle, fall to their Oars amain. The second Cannon shot came to our Ears presently after, and then I made them row toward the shore as fast as they could, and saw the Enemy spreading their Sails, to prepare for attacking the Mole. Being landed, I immediately went to the King, and acquainted him, that the Enemy were hoisting Sail, and that the Weather, Wind and Tide were so favourable, that they could not lose so fair an occasion.

At

At this news the King gave his orders throughout, and afterwards went with part of the Nobility to the Battery, which was at the Head of the Bay, commanding me to lye under the ſhelter of this Battery.

There was nothing very remarkable in this fight, except the Cannon ſhot, of which a prodigious number was fir'd on both ſides. There was nothing to be heard but Peals of Thunder, nor to be ſeen but Lightning, in the midſt of a dark Smoke, that cover'd the whole Sea. It was a fine ſight to ſee thoſe monſtrous Veſſels too, that reſembled great floating Caſtles; and advancing one after another in very graceful order, gave Broad-ſides at our Mound, of fifty or threeſcore Cannon ſhot at a time.

But as the *Engliſh* attack'd briskly, they were as warmly receiv'd. The Battery where the King was did wonders. He made ſeveral ſhot himſelf, delighting extremely in every thing that related to War, and never was more liberal, either of Lead to the Enemies, or Gold and Silver to his Souldiers and Gunners. During the whole fight, I kept my ſelf cloſe under the Cannon of his Battery, according to the orders I had receiv'd, venturing out only a little now and then, to purſue a Veſſel when it retir'd from the Charge, but being forc'd to return very quickly, for fear of being ſnapt by ſome other that came on. There was only one Cannon Ball fell into my Galliot, with which ſhe was much damag'd, and two Slaves kill'd.

XIX. At length the Enemy ſeeing Heaven declare on our ſide, and that all their attempts were vain, made a retreat, fatal to *Rochelle*, and advantageous to the King and his Arms. Then I fell to cruiſing again, and was ſo happy as to meet with a favourable accident, which was of great advantage towards reſtoring me to the King's favour. Seeing a very beautiful guilded Prow floating upon the water, and the Arms of *England* in it, I made up, and found it was a conſiderable Prize, and a Preſent worthy the King. With much ado I haled it up into my Galliot, and return'd a proud man toward the Beach, where after I had got it aſhore, I went ſtraight to the King's Quarter. As I was going, Monſieur *Baſſompiere* met me, and told me, Monſieur *Canaples* had entreated him, to beg my Pardon of the King in his name, by reaſon that his Father Mareſchal *Crequi* did, as I ſaid formerly, very much condemn his behaviour, and beſides he knew well enough how the King ſtood affected, which made him ſpeak firſt, to get the merit of a thing which he hop'd might turn to his honour. I told him of the good luck I had met with, and he gave me all the hopes imaginable, adviſing me to make uſe of this advantage to ingratiate my ſelf with the King. I then declared my deſign, which was to let the King know, that the Shot which took off this Prow, came from his Battery, as indeed it did, and ſo by degrees inſenſibly to perſuade him, that his Majeſty himſelf had made the ſhot. He approv'd of my deſign, telling me, he thought the true way to go to work for my own intereſts, was to advance the King's honour.

On I went, and at my entring the King's Lodgings, I compos'd my countenance the beſt I could, without diſcovering the leaſt gayety, but looking very modeſt and dejected, as became a man, who had reaſon to apprehend the conſequences of ſo unlucky an affair as mine, I told his Majeſty, that one of the *Engliſh* Veſſels was much diſabled, and I had found a great piece of her Prow, which I thought it my duty to bring away, that his Majeſty, if he pleaſed, might ſee it. I would not ſay any thing more at firſt, thinking he would be apt enough of his own accord to

attribute

attribute the glory of this ſhot to himſelf. He told me he would go view it, and askt me by the way whereabouts I had found it. I anſwered very innocently, and without ſpurring on too faſt, in ſuch a place, on the right hand, which was the part expos'd to his own Battery. The King, who paſſionately deſir'd it might be thought his own doing, but durſt not yet take it to himſelf without ſome ground, was pleas'd with my anſwer, and reply'd, 'twas I that made that ſhot at ſuch a time, I ſaw the Veſſel fall off as ſoon as ever I had diſcharg'd, and did then believe ſhe had receiv'd ſome damage, Upon this I began to confirm his opinion by ſeveral circumſtances, which was matter of great Joy to this Prince, who ſtood much upon his being a good Marks-man, and did really excel in all military matters; there being perhaps ſcarce a man in his Kingdom, that could draw up the greateſt Army in Battalia ſo ſoon, or ſo advantageouſly as himſelf. He took great pride in ſhowing this Prow, and telling every one that came, that I could teſtify it fell upon a ſhot of his; which was as much for my ſatisfaction as his own, for thus I was made a Judge in the caſe, and did not queſtion, but having determined favourably for him, he would not fail to do as much for me.

Mareſchal *Baſſompiere*, loth to loſe ſo fair an opportunity, when the King was in ſo good a humour, got his Majeſty to do that at his requeſt, and for his ſake, which he was inclin'd enough to do of himſelf, but that he would have ſeem'd to proceed more upon favour than juſtice. I humbly beſeech your Majeſty (ſaid he) to grant me one humble requeſt which I have to make you. The King who probably gueſt what he would be at, he ſeem'd a little ſhy, telling him, he could not engage his word till he knew for what. Sir, reply'd Monſieur *Baſſompiere*, I can aſſure your Majeſty the cauſe is good, and you will have no reaſon to repent of the favour. But tell me what it is (ſaid the King) if the cauſe be good, why are you ſo nice in declaring it? Is it ſomething that concerns your ſelf, or ſome of your Relations? Sir, ſaid he, the favour I would obtain neither concerns my ſelf, nor any Relation of mine, but another that hath more need. Oh! you are too ſubtle for me, reply'd the King, I am no Diviner to know your thoughts. At laſt Monſieur *Baſſompiere* told him that it was my Pardon, he took the boldneſs to beg, and did it from Monſieur *Canaples* too, who was infinitely troubled for the misfortune he had brought upon me. The King ſeeming mightily ſurpriz'd, ſtood ſome time ſilent, as if he had much ado to grant his requeſt, and yet at the very moment that Monſieur *Baſſompiere* ſpoke, he preſt a little upon my ſhoulder, as it were to ſignify his ſecret conſent. Monſieur *Baſſompiere* repeated it again with more than ordinary importunity, and the King, who only held off to diſguiſe his own inclination, made a ſhew at laſt of being vanquiſht, and ſaid to me, Thank *Baſſompiere*. I, who all this while had kept my eyes down, without ſpeaking a word, as ſoon as I heard the King's Command, went to thank Monſieur *Baſſompiere*, and, then fell down to embrace the King's knees with theſe words, Sir, 'Tis to your Majeſty that I owe every thing, I hold both my fortune and life from you, which I hope one day to lay down for your ſervice, and with my blood to ſeal my acknowledgments for your bounty. The King after a ſhort whiſper with Monſieur *Baſſompiere*, bad me go along with him, and do as he ſhould direct me.

XX. We went immediately to Monſieur *Canaples*, who having had notice by a Gentleman whom Monſieur *Baſſompiere* had ſent before, came out to the top of the Stairs to receive him. As ſoon as we were come into the

the Chamber, Monſieur *Baſſompiere*, ſaid to Monſieur *Canaples*, Here is Monſieur *Pontis*, Sir, whom I bring to you by the King's Command. I will be the Mediator of a perfect reconciliation betwixt you two; You muſt either utterly forget all that is paſt, or otherwiſe I declare my ſelf an Enemy to you both. Monſieur *Canaples* whoſe deſire it was, that this buſineſs might be huſht up, for the reaſons I mentioned before, came immediately to embrace me, and willing to prevent me, in civility, ſaid pleaſantly; Sir, I entreat you let us no more remember any thing that hath happen'd, for it will not be for our advantage, for either of us to have ſuch an Enemy as Monſieur *Baſſompiere*. We have both of us been a little too obſtinate; there hath been heat on both ſides, and exceſs of paſſion, and ſo both ought to excuſe it, becauſe both are to blame; and I hope that this will produce a great good, and that we ſhall love one another the better for it hereafter. Finding my ſelf highly oblig'd by ſo generous a complement, I made anſwer with great ſincerity and freedom, that I now eſteem'd my ſelf happy in my misfortune, ſince it procured me the honour of his friendſhip; that I hoped to let him ſee how ſenſibly I was oblig'd by this generoſity, that he very well knew the air and humour of my Country; but could aſſure him, that tho I were a little rough ſometimes, yet I had a great deal more and better heat for thoſe who honour'd me with their friendſhip. I make you no excuſes, Sir, becauſe you have been pleaſed to prevent me in firſt excuſing me your ſelf; and it is beſt, that neither of us think of a thing, which both wiſh had never happen'd. With that we fell to embracing afreſh, and Monſieur *Baſſompiere* made us do it a third time, the better to confirm the Union, which was ever after ſo ſincere, that Monſieur *Canaples* could not forbear expreſſing a coldneſs toward thoſe who had ſollicited him to proſecute this affair againſt me, for he ſeveral times declared, that he had not done it of himſelf, ſo much as by the ill advice of ſome falſe friends.

Then Monſieur *Baſſompiere* carried me to Mareſchal *Crequi*, who had ſhewn himſelf ſo generous upon this occaſion. And being I could never ſufficiently acknowledge the particular teſtimonies he had given me of his noble nature; after the firſt complements I told him, that I was much concern'd it was not in my power, to ſhew by my actions the ſenſe I had of his generoſity to me in this buſineſs; that I ſhould moſt impatiently long for ſome occaſion of aſſuring him by my ſervices, how much I thought my ſelf obliged by his extraordinary goodneſs in vindicating me, when almoſt all the world beſides had deſerted me; and that this had been one of the principal arguments, that convinc'd me I had not been altogether ſo guilty, as ſome others would repreſent, for I knew him too good a Father, and too juſt a perſon, to declare himſelf without good reaſon againſt his own Son in favour of a Stranger, whom nothing but the merits of the cauſe could render worth his conſideration. Mareſchal *Crequi* anſwered me with all imaginable civility, that I did him wrong in magnifying what he had done; as if for being a Father he was to deveſt himſelf of all humanity and juſtice toward thoſe who might have ſome difference with his Children; and that having done no more than his duty, he deſerved to be commended ſo much leſs, as he ought to have been condemn'd if he failed in it. And turning to Monſieur *Baſſompiere*, Is it not fit (ſaid he) that every one ſhould have their due? Why ſhould my Son be allowed to affront a Gentleman, and a man of honour? Let us not take ſo much upon us. My Son, though a *Maiſtre de Camp* in the Regiment of Guards, hath no right to offer violence to Monſieur *Pontis*, who is

but a Lieutenant. Perhaps my Sons Command is an honour to him, whereas other perhaps are an honour to their Commands. In ſhort, I have only this to ſay, that in caſe Monſieur *Pontis* had been condemn'd, I would have carry'd my Son my ſelf to have made him ask him pardon, for the affront he had put upon him.

After this I went to pay my reſpects to the Duke of *Eſpernon* and ſome other Lords, that had done me ſervice in my affair: but it happen'd I know not how, that I failed of acquitting my ſelf to Cardinal *Richelieu* of what I was indebted to him upon this account. The conference I had with Father *Joſeph*, and the deſign I knew he had to draw me from the Kings ſervice, together with my refuſal of entring into his, made me unwilling to appear before him. In the mean while, being a little jealous of the good offices he did to thoſe who ſought his favour, he was much offended, that after he had himſelf ſought to gain me by his chief Miniſter, I had failed of thanking him upon this occaſion, for what he ſaid from the King to the Council, about deferring to give Judgment in my Cauſe. I knew too, that he had not conceal'd his diſguſt, for ſome days after, the Biſhop of *Manda* asking me if I had been to pay my thanks to the Cardinal? and I innocently anſwering, That my little acceſs to his Eminence had hindred me from doing it; he ſaid I was much to blame, and that the Cardinal would certainly reſent it. Then I ſaw my fault too late, and deſiring to redeem it, I begg'd Monſieur *Cominges Guitaut* to introduce me to him. But the Cardinal, who never cared for late homages, and liked only the firſt incenſe, receiv'd me very coldly, and by his ſet countenance gave me to underſtand, that my civilities were not at all acceptable to him. The Biſhop of *Manda* too, being willing to make my excuſe, his Eminence could not conceal his indignation from him, but ſaid theſe words, which were told me again; He did come indeed to return me thanks, but it was after he had been with every body elſe; I had nothing but the leavings of his Complements: He allowed me only the laſt place in his memory and reſpects, though I had the firſt in the defence of his cauſe; and then too, he did not come ſo much of his own accord, as he was brought by Monſieur *Cominges*. So that this fault, which he took for a ſlight, joyn'd with my refuſal of his ſervice to Father *Joſeph*, was the principal ground of that obſtinate averſion he hath had to me ever ſince. I was afterwards reſtor'd to my Command as formerly, and all the informations preferr'd againſt me were torn to pieces.

XXI. The exceſs of trouble and fear this unhappy buſineſs brought upon me threw me into a violent Feavor. The diſtemper was ſuſpended till the affair was over, and then as exceſſive a joy ſucceeding, Nature found herſelf overpowred by ſo ſudden and ſo different a change; ſo that after having eſcaped death by the hand of Juſtice, I found my ſelf in a new danger, both from my Diſeaſe and my Phyſicians, who were very near diſpatching me, tho without any ill intention. During this illneſs, I was ſomewhat diſturbed with the remembrance of my paſt life, and particularly for having upon ſome occaſions cauſed a great many of the Enemy to be knockt on the head, more out of paſſion, than for the ſervice of the State: I fancy'd I ſaw all thoſe men remonſtrating againſt me, and demanding juſtice of God for their deaths. This imagination afflicted me much, and I reſolved to make ſome amends for this fault: But upon my recovery I ſoon found that the reſolutions of ſick and dying men ſeldom are ſincere; for when I was well I ſcarce ever remembred what I promis'd when I lay ſick.

Upon

Upon my growing better, the Kings Phyſicians, Monſieur *Bouvart* and Monſieur *Privos*, having order'd me a purging potion, a wretch that I forbear to name, took this occaſion to get rid of me, and procure my Command: He corrupted the Apothecary, who ſold him my Life, and inſtead of the Apozem, mixt me the moſt mortal poyſon he could think of. But I can never ſufficiently acknowledge the good Providence that took care of me; for the night before I was to have taken this deadly draught, I had a very great Criſis, and ſweat to that degree from ten a clock to one, that I found my ſelf perfectly well. The averſion I ever had to Phyſick made me order the Vial to be ſet by in my Cloſet, and leave Nature to finiſh what ſhe had ſo well begun. The Phyſicians coming to viſit me, and ſee the operation of their Medicine, I told them Sparkiſhly, Look you Gentlemen, here is a Miracle, is not this a prodigious effect, and a plain proof of the vertue of your Phyſick? They believing it in earneſt, began preſently to magnifie their preſcription, not ſeeming ſo much ſurpriz'd at it, but to expect all this from a remedy ſo well choſen; adding, that ſince the firſt doſe had ſucceeded ſo well, I muſt needs take another, to carry off what that might have left behind; and ſo went away highly pleas'd with the ſucceſs of their Phyſick. I thought however it was not fit to conceal it from Monſieur *Privos*, who was my particular friend; and when the company was gone, told him, I had a great Criſis in the night, and finding my ſelf better upon ſweating, had forbore my Phyſick: And to confirm what I had ſaid, bid my man bring the Potion. Aſſoon as he ſaw it he cry'd out, Ah Sir! what did they intend to do with you? They would have deſtroy'd you, this is rank poyſon. God hath had a particular care of you, for if you had taken this you had been a dead man. Then he fell to exclaiming and ſwearing to vindicate his own reputation, and ſent away immediately for the Grand Provoſt. They went preſently to the Apothecary's, but he was run away, which made me conclude it was a deſign, and no miſchance, or miſtake. I had a ſuſpicion of the perſon that thus attempted upon my Life and my Command, but it was enough for me that I got off ſo. I would not bring any information upon it, and was glad the Apothecary was not taken, leſt the Author of this Crime ſhould have been diſcovered.

XXII. And here I muſt not omit the generoſity of Monſieur *Buiſſon*, that Gentleman that was a Cadet in my Company, and afterwards quarrell'd with me, for whom as a teſtimony of my forgiveneſs and friendſhip, I procur'd firſt a Pardon, and then a Lieutenants place: For he hearing, tho very late, of this unfortunate buſineſs of mine, which was the chief cauſe of my ſickneſs, came purpoſely from *Italy* to the Camp before *Rochelle*, ſome months after I was reſtored to my Command, to make me a proffer of his perſon, and all he had in his power; aſſuring me, that both himſelf and his fortune was abſolutely at my ſervice and diſpoſal. By this extraordinary acknowledgment he had a mind to vye friendſhips with me, and let me ſee, that no misfortune could cool his affection, nor any diſtance of place ſtop the zeal he had for the ſafety of a perſon, to whom he thought himſelf oblig'd for his life and preferment.

XXIII. The King, reſolving to relieve the Iſle of *Rhe*, commanded by Monſieur *Thoiras*, and inveſted by the *Engliſh* Navy, gave Mareſchal *Schomberg* orders to paſs over into it, with the beſt of our Forces. His Majeſty was then at *Etray*, within a mile of the Trenches. As I was one night

night upon the Guard, I ſaw on a ſudden a great flame and thick ſmoak over *Rochelle*, and at the ſame time heard a great noiſe. I diſpatched two or three Souldiers to know the cauſe of this uproar, and none of them returning back, I thought the Enemy might have taken this opportunity of our Forces being ſeparated, to make ſome attempt upon the King's own Quarters. So I drew up our men, and after acquainting Mareſchal *Brezay* with what paſt, with him and Monſieur *de l' Iſleroy* I went to the King's Bedchamber. The Mareſchal waked him, and I told his Majeſty what I had ſeen and heard, which continu'd ſtill. The King preſently got up, and went into a Garret to ſatisfy himſelf of the truth of it, and having been an Eye-witneſs of my report, lookt upon us, and ſaid, This is no jeſting matter. Then he askt me if I had ſent to the Trenches, and order'd the Guards to ſtand to their Arms; and when he was ſatisfy'd I had, he commanded them to dreſs him, and bring him his Arms. At that time a conſiderable Officer, and otherwiſe a brave man, but perhaps a little too raſh in his zeal upon this occaſion, ſaid to the King, Save your Servants, Sir, ſave your people; if the Eneme attack us here your perſon may be in danger, ſince part of your Army is gone to the Iſle of *Rhe*, and we are but a few left here; I conjure your Majeſty retire to *Surgeres*. The King anſwered without any concern, I will not ſtir from this place, but will fight at the head of my Foot in perſon. Bring me my Arms preſently. In earneſt this generous ſtout anſwer from the King, gave me a joy not to be expreſt, which made me fall down at his feet, and in a great tranſport ſay to him; Sir, when we have our King at the head of us, every ſingle man will be as good as twenty, and each Company as good as a Regiment; no body will preſume to ſpare himſelf upon ſuch an occaſion, but we will all ſerve you with the laſt drop of blood, in our veins. The King then armed and gave out neceſſary orders for ſuſtaining an Aſſault, in caſe the Enemy ſhould attack him in his Quarter. But while every one was preparing to engage, the Souldiers I had ſent to the Trenches came and aſſured us, that inſtead of making a Sally, the *Rochellers* had been terribly frighted with a miſchance that had befallen them, by their Magazine of Powder taking fire, which cauſed that great noiſe we heard. The King received this news, as he had done the other, without any great concern, or diſcovering any more joy to ſee himſelf in ſafety, than he had done fear at the expectation of danger. Then Mareſchal *Brezay* made this reflection to me, Look you, ſaid he, if the King had followed the advice that was given him, to retreat to *Surgeres*, he would have had us all three toſt into the Sea, when once he found a falſe Alarm had made him run away. I was of the ſame opinion too, and whatever might have happened, I could never have prevailed upon my ſelf to have given him counſel, which though it might be for his ſafety, could never have been for the honour of ſo great a Prince. But unexpected accidents do not always leave us the liberty of thinking, and the wiſeſt men in ſuch caſes may ſometimes be miſtaken. I remember too, while every one was in trouble about the King's perſon, which we thought too much expos'd, an Officer, conſulting perhaps his Majeſty's ſafety more than his own, after debate what might be the cauſe of this great noiſe, let this word ſlip by chance, I hope 'tis nothing in grace of God. Whereupon all that were by, and little uſed to ſuch language, fell to rallying him, as one who betraid his fear by that expreſſion. And tho I was no better than the reſt, yet I could not chooſe but be offended at thoſe kinds of Jeſts, which

ſeem'd

ſeem'd to me ſo ill grounded. For is it not brutiſh to imagine, that to appear brave a man muſt forget that he is a Chriſtian? and doubtleſs if that Officer had called upon the Devil inſtead of God, they would have thought better of him, and not have reproved him. So little do we know what a man of courage is, when men think being impious is enough to make them thought brave. In the mean while the affronts there were perpetually put upon this Officer, were ſo ſevere, that not enduring to be the conſtant jeſt of all the Hectors and young Bullies, he was forc'd a little after to beg a diſmiſſion, and withdraw from out of the Army.

Next morning all the General Officers came to pay the King their reſpects, accompanied with great praiſes; his Majeſty had ordered me to be about his perſon, and indeed I made my Court that day after a very pleaſant manner. For the King did me the honour to call upon me every now and then, and ſaid, Ask *Pontis* how it was, chooſing rather to have it told by another than himſelf. And accordingly I repreſented this action of his Majeſty's with all imaginable advantage and zeal; nor was it any hard matter to ſucceed that way, for upon this occaſion a man might be a good Courtier without any flattery, and there needed only a relation of what I had ſeen to give the King his due commendation.

XXIV. One day going to relieve the Guard, and being to paſs through a little Valley that lay expos'd, and commanded by a Hill, where four or five pieces of the Enemy's Cannon were planted; as I rode at the Head of four hundred men, marching very leiſurely, and talking with a Corporal called *de la Croix*, I laid my Leg upon my Horſe-neck, as men do ſometimes to eaſe themſelves, though indeed it was no proper time to do it, but rather to mend my pace: Juſt then came a Cannon Bullet, which exactly took off the Stirrup out of which I had taken my Foot, and battered it to pieces. The force of the blow beat down my Horſe, but he got up again preſently, and attempting to recover my Stirrup, I found it was clear gone. Then I acknowledged the good providence of God, that had thus ſaved my Leg, and probably my Life too, fearing nothing more than to be maim'd, and out of a capacity to ſerve the King. They made a jeſt of it to the King, and told him I had one of my Legs taken off by a Cannon ball, but his Majeſty hearing afterward that I had only loſt my Stirrup, turn'd it into mirth, and laught at the oddneſs of the accident.

The *Engliſh* had blockt up the paſſes by Sea ſo effectually, that we could put no proviſions into the Iſle of *Rhe*. But the King reſolv'd to thruſt in twenty light flat-bottom'd Boats, and order'd me to go along with Monſieur *d'Eſplandes*, who was to conduct them, that I might bring him back an account of the expedition. When all things were ready, and the Wind favourable, we embark'd by night, and in a ſhort time came very happily aſhore in the Iſland, through all the fire and ball that was liberally beſtow d upon us, and in ſpight of ſix great *Engliſh* Ships, that made after us, but could not come up to us for want of Water. The Bullets lighting upon the Grabel of the Beach, beat great heaps of Stones into our Skiffs, and kill'd us a great many men; and ſometimes one of them would take off a Sack of Flour from a Souldiers ſhoulder, as they were unlading. Monſieur *d'Eſplandes* and I ſat down to reſt our ſelves, and a Cannon Bullet hit a Portmantua upon which I ſat, carried away part of the things within it, without doing me any other harm, than throwing me ſome fifteen paces off. And as Monſieur *d'Eſplandes* urged me to ſit

down again, upon a Free Stone hard by him, divining as it were, that this was no ſafe place, and better to ſtand up; juſt in that nick of time (which is almoſt incredible) a ſhot ſtruck this Stone, and ſhatter'd it to pieces. There was but little pleaſure in being ſo familiar with great Guns, which made me think of haſtening back with my report to the King. And ſo going aboard a ſmall Boat with only one Waterman, I got over this Arm of the Sea, through above four hundred Cannon ſhot that were made at us in our paſſage: but that which was a greater difficulty, was ſeveral long chains of beams of wood laid in the Sea at every quarter of a League, and theſe linkt together with great rings of Iron, ſo that at each of theſe we were forc'd to wait for ſome great wave to lift the Bark over the beams. The King, who ſcarce expected to ſee me any more, believing we had all been ſunk, by reaſon of the great firing that continu'd all night, was very much ſurpriz'd at my return, and the ſucceſsfulneſs of our paſſage.

XXV. At laſt the time was come for the City, which was the main hope and ſupport of the *Hugonot* party, to fall into the hands of its lawful Prince. It was reduced to ſuch extremity by famine, that a great many people died for want of Bread; and I will here relate what I had from my Landlords own mouth, when we were got into *Rochelle*. Deſcribing the neceſſities they were in, he proteſted to me, that for eight days together, he made himſelf be let blood, and made it be fry'd to nouriſh his poor Child, ſo by degrees taking away his own life to preſerve his Son's. The Eloquence of one *Salbert*, a Miniſter of great conſideration among them, contributed much to the perſwading them to endure great extremities; their religious zeal made them inſenſible of every thing, together with the authority and heroick conduct of *Guiton*, Mayor of the City, who got great renown in this Siege, ſeem'd to inſpire them with new vigour and courage. To give you ſome Idea of his reſolution, I need only ſay, that one of his Friends ſhewing him an acquaintance of theirs languiſhing and dying of hunger, he anſwered coldly, Is this ſo ſtrange? 'Tis what we muſt all come to. And when another came, and told him they were all dying of hunger, he reply'd as coldly, Provided there be one left to ſhut the Gates it's well enough. But Heaven ſeem'd in favour of the King's Arms; the *Rochellers* themſelves were aware of it, and confeſt it very ſurprizing, to ſee the weather ſo fair in that ſeaſon, when the Storms and the Sea were uſed to make all *Rochelle* tremble, and overflow all the Streets of the Town. But that which made it yet more aſtoniſhing, and which might be very well thought a miraculous Providence in this great undertaking, was, that tho the Plague then raged with great fury in two thirds of the Kingdom, this Canton continu'd entirely free from it, in the midſt of the dreadful neceſſities of a City reduc'd to this miſerable condition, and of the infection uſed to attend great Armies, eſpecially after ſo long a Siege.

The *Rochellers*, having no hopes left of freſh ſuccours from *England*, and the Fleet having ſeveral times in vain attempted to relieve them, began to treat about a Capitulation. One Article of which was, that the Mayor *Guiton* ſhould ſtill enjoy the honours of his dignity, and its priviledges entire. The 29th of *October*, 1628. ten Deputies came with the ratification to lay themſelves at his Majeſty's feet in his Chamber, where he was attended with Count *Soiſſons*, the Cardinals *Richelieu* and *la Vallette*, Monſieur *Chevreuſe*, and *Baſſompiere*, *Schomberg*, *Deffiat*, and others,

where

where they implored his Majesty's mercy afresh; and the Sieur *de la Gonsre*, the King's Advocate in the Presidial Court, spoke for them. At the same time the Citizens from the Rampiers and Counterscarps, crying out, God save the King. Four hundred men were appointed to go take possession of the Town, and prepare the King's Lodgings, to clean the Streets and Houses, and make all things ready for his Entry. He made choice of four Captains and four Lieutenants, of which I was one, to command them, under the Duke of *Angoulesme*, whom we were to obey, and had express charge not to make the least disorder in the City, with threatnings of exemplary punishment in case of any complaints against us. Among other things, the King ordered particularly, that we should not suffer the Souldiers to sell bread to these hunger-starv'd Wretches, and only to let them receive some little presents in case people offer'd them of their own accord. Thus we entred *Rochelle*, possest our selves of the Gates, and posted Guards in several places. We found the Town in a most horrid and deplorable condition; the Streets and Houses tainted with dead bodies, which lay about very thick, without being so much as covered: For toward the end of the Siege the *Rochellers* were meer Skeletons, and not men; they were so feeble, that they had not strength enough to dig Graves, or carry the dead out of their Houses. The greatest present a man could make to them that remained alive, was Bread, which they preferr'd as their only remedy that could save them; and yet this remedy too prov'd mortal to some, who eat it so greedily as to choak themselves.

I had like to have been ruined by a quarrel with a *Rocheller*, which happen'd thus. Having given some Loaves of Bread to one in great want, I had a mind to a Gun of his, which was a very neat one; I ask'd him if he would sell it, and finding him a little unwilling, I prest him, till at last he was content I should have it for eleven Cardecu's. But as soon as I had paid him, and was carrying off the Gun, he repented of his sale, or rather that he had not so much Bread as he desir'd, and fell into a rage, speaking so loud as I heard him, I wish (says he) the silver of those eleven Cardecu's were melted in his Heart, and the lead of the Gun in his Brains; he takes my Gun, and makes me sell it him, whether I will or no. I was surpriz'd at so brutish a complement, and presently turning back toward him said, Why what's the matter Friend? Have I done you any wrong in paying the price we agreed upon for the Gun? I thought you had been an honest man till now, but now you have undeceiv'd me. The other presently gave me the lye; and then my patience escaping me, without regard to the King's charge, or the poor fellow's extremity, I gave him a good swinging Cuff upon his lean Cheek, telling him, he ought to know whom he spoke to, and not give the lye to a man of honour. With that he began to chafe and storm, crying out, that he would complain to the King, that he had violence done him, contrary to his Majesty's promise.

I quickly saw where this would end, if it were not taken up in time, and was pretty sure to lose my head, if it came to the King's ear; and therefore did all I could, both by my self and friends, and this man's relations to pacify him; I offer'd him eighteen Cardecu's more, which he refused, and resolv'd to be reveng'd whatever came on't. But at last he was follow'd so close with the entreaties of his best friends, that he grew calm, and for the pains he had been at to make himself so very angry, I gave him about a dozen loaves over and above what he had received before. Afterwards he came and excused himself to me, and said, his extremity had thrown him into that violent passion. I made him a friendly remonstrance,

ſtrance, which he took kindly, and gave him to underſtand, that one of the greateſt points of converſation, was to know whom a man ſpoke to, and not to offend men of honour by rudely giving them the lye, as he had done. At the ſame time I proffer'd him my ſervice, and as much bread for himſelf, or his friends, as he wanted; and thus this difference was compos'd.

When the King had made his Entry into *Rochelle*, the Duke of *Angouleſme* would needs viſit the famous *Guiton*, who had held out ſo long againſt the greateſt Prince of *Europe*; and ſome Officers, of which I was one, attended him thither. He was a little man, but of a vaſt underſtanding, and a great Soul; and I was really extremely pleas'd to ſee in him all the marks of a gallant perſon. His Houſe was magnificently furniſht, and his Hall adorn'd with a vaſt number of Enſigns, which he ſhew'd one after another, naming the Princes from whom he had taken them, and the Seas he had ſailed. He had a great many Arms in his Houſe, and amongſt the reſt one very fine Partiſan, taken from a Captain in fight. I had no ſooner commended it, but being exceedingly generous, he would needs preſent me with it, and forced me to accept that and a hundred Pikes beſides. He made Cardinal *Richelieu* a handſom anſwer, when he went to pay him the civility of a viſit, ſpeaking to him of the King of *France*, and the King of *England*. He was afterwards very much diſſatisfy'd with the Cardinal; for not having ſurrendred the City to the King, till after a promiſe of having all the Enſigns of his Dignity continued to him, and one of his Priviledges being, to go attended with a dozen Halberdeers in his Livery, whenever he appeared in the Streets of *Rochelle*: His Eminence one day ſent him word, That the King being preſent in the City, it was contrary to rule that he ſhould retain theſe marks of a Dignity, that did not now belong to him, and that the King was then the only Maſter and Mayor of *Rochelle*: This new order ſtrangely offended *Guiton*, who ſaw himſelf thus deceived, and fallen from his honours, contrary to the aſſurance that had been given him. Inſomuch that he told me, Had he believed they would have broken their word with him, the King ſhould not have found one living creature at his entring into *Rochelle*, for he would have held it out to the very laſt man. And probably the King would have been forc'd to raiſe the Siege, by reaſon of the Winter, and Storms that came on immediately upon the ſurrender of the City; for the fair weather ended the very ſame day the Town was reduc'd; and the ſeventh of *November* following, the Sea was ſo boiſterous in the night, that it broke down above forty fathom of the Mound on *Marillac* ſide. The Chevalier *de la Foyett*'s Veſſel was driven by a guſt of wind into the Port, and broke three or four Machines without any damage to it ſelf; and five or ſix *Engliſh* Ships ran aſhore upon the Coaſt of *Augoulia*: So that a man may ſay, had *Guiton* taken a reſolution to hold out but one month longer, as he might have done, we had been in great danger of loſing in one day all the fruit of ſo many labours, and ſo long a Siege. For the ill weather, together with the breaking of the Bank, would infallibly have relieved the beſieged, and there was nothing but a viſible and eminent Providence, that oblig'd them to yield in a time ſo favourable to the King's Arms.

After his Majeſty had made ſome ſtay in *Rochelle*, to give neceſſary orders, and prevent any new revolts, he returned triumphant to *Paris*, with the Glory of having in a great meaſure diſarm'd the Proteſtant Religion in his Kingdom, by the taking of this City.

The End of the Seventh Book. BOOK

BOOK VIII.

The Duke of Rohan *makes a great Attempt upon the City of* Montpellier, *and is betray'd by the perſon who was to give up the City to him. The Sieur* de Pontis *is ſent to viſit the* Alpes, *for the Paſſage of the King's Forces. His Moderation towards a Man that would have kill'd him for another. His behaviour toward the Cadets and Souldiers of his Company. His Quarrel with a Captain who quarter'd by force upon his Eſtate at* Pontis. *The King goes with all his Army into* Savoy, *and forces the Paſs of* Suza. *The Sieur* de Pontis *obtains an Eſcheat of the King, which only gets him a great Suit at Law. The Duke of* Orleans *attempts to force the Guard at the* Louvre, *when the Sieur* de Pontis *was upon the Guard.*

I. DUring the Siege of *Rochelle*, they of the ſame Party with the *Rochellers*, under the Command of the Duke of *Rohan*, made a great attempt upon the City of *Montpellier*, and had a mind to draw in one of my intimate Friends, the Baron *de M.* ſecond Captain in the Regiment of *Normandy*; the event whereof was ſo conſiderable, as to deſerve a mention in this place, before I go on to the reſt of my *Memoirs*. This Baron *de M.* had married a Wife of the *Hugonot* perſwaſion, and being one day at a houſe of hers, the Baron *Bretigny* propos'd to him to favour the Duke of *Rohan* in his deſign upon *Montpellier*; and in reward they promis'd to make him Governour of the place, and Lieutenant General of Monſieur *Rohan's* Army, or to give him two hundred thouſand Crowns, which the Duke himſelf engaged to pay him. The Baron *de M.* was a perſon of greater fidelity than to conſent to ſo baſe an action; but by avoiding one miſchief he engaged himſelf in another, and reſolved for the Kings ſervice to betray the man, who pretended to engage him in betraying the King. The anſwer he return'd to the Baron *de Bretigny* was, that an affair of ſuch conſequence deſerved ſome conſideration; that he would go back to *Montpellier*, where his Company was in Garriſon, and from thence would acquaint them with his reſolution, by a very brave Souldier, one *Cadet*, whom he had bred up from a Foot-boy, and in whom he repoſed great confidence.

He loſt no time, but gave notice immediately to Monſieur *des Foſres*, Governour of *Montpellier*, what propoſals had been made him. Theſe two conſpired in the ſame deſign, which was to betray them, who dar'd to propoſe the betraying of their Prince. Monſieur ſends *Cadet* away preſently, to ſtrike up the bargain with Monſieur *Bretigny*; and the Duke of *Rohan* was made acquainted with it, who ſaid, he would not engage in the attempt, except the Walls were laid open on that ſide by the Citadel. Monſieur *Foſres* accordingly cauſed them by little and little to be laid open, in ſeveral places, and upon different pretences. Upon which the Duke, to make ſure work, ſends an Engineer in the habit of a Soul-

dier, who was received into the Governours own Company, that he might ſee all without any manner of ſuſpicion. The Guard in the mean while was kept but negligently both in the Cittadel, and the lines of Communication, by which the Duke of *Rohan* with four hundred men was to ſtorm the Wall, and the Ditches which were but of a moderate height, and ſo make himſelf Maſter of the *Eſplanade*, which lay between the Cittadel and the City. When all things were ready, Baron *M.* gave notice it was time to execute their deſign. The Duke of *Rohan*, to prevent all jealouſies from the drawing his Forces together, gave out, as if he intended to beſiege the Caſtle of *Courconne*, three leagues from *Montpellier*, to which place he came with ſeven thouſand Foot, and three hundred Horſe. The night appointed came, and Baron *M.* and *Guitaut* a Captain of the Regiment of *Normandy*, to whom the Governour had entruſted the ſecret, mounted the Guard in the Cittadel. The Engineer, diſguiſed in the habit of a Souldier, ſaw all that paſt, ſo that he could not have the leaſt jealouſy of foul play. Monſieur *M.* after this opened all the Gates, Draw-bridges and Poſterns, and the Engineer went out with *Cadet*, to go fetch the Duke of *Rohan*. They agreed before, that when the Duke ſhould be near with his Army, two Officers ſhould be ſent to know, whether any alteration had happened. As ſoon as ever the Engineer was gone, the Governour underſtanding it from Monſieur *M.* call'd all the Captains together, and made the Regiments of *Picardy* and *Normandy* ſtand to their arms, which might all make up two thouſand eight hundred men. Of theſe eight hundred were poſted in the principal places and avenues of the City, with order to kill all the Citizens that ſhould ſtir out of their houſes, or that attempted to throw themſelves over the Walls, by reaſon four thouſand *Hugonot* Inhabitants were to take arms. He poſted twelve hundred at the breaches of the Wall of the City, that looked into the *Eſplanade*, going to the Cittadel; and there threw up in haſte great retrenchments with very good barricadoes behind, and openings to give way for the twelve hundred men, who had order to ſally out upon the Enemy, as they entred the *Eſplanade* by the Lines of Communication. He ſet eight hundred men in the Cittadel, of which five hundred were likewiſe to ſally at the ſame time, and the other three, who were all choſen men, to remain with him in the Cittadel. He cauſed beſides all this twenty pieces of Cannon to be planted upon the *Eſplanade*, and loaded them with Muſquet Bullets, and placed a certain number of good Souldiers with Halberts behind the inner door, within the Cittadel. On the top of the Draw-bridge, which was made like a Trap-door, he ſet *Beine* the Engineer of the place, with a Hatchet in his hand, and expreſs order not to cut the Rope of the Bridge, till Monſieur *Gouſtonville* ſhould cry out to him, *Harle la main*. All things being thus diſpoſed with incredible diligence, Baron *M.* told the Governour, that if the two men they were to ſend would have him go back with them to Monſieur *de Rohan*, he was abſolutely reſolv'd to go, rather than give them any ſuſpicion, tho he were very well aſſur'd they would give him a thouſand ſtabs after he was dead, when they ſaw themſelves ſo cheated; but he valued not death, provided he could do the King ſervice, in revenging himſelf upon thoſe who thought him capable of failing in his duty.

II. All things being huſht, at laſt two Officers according to agreement, came to the Poſtern to meet Baron *M.* He told them things were in a very

very geod condition, and that if they pleaſed, he would bring them into the place. But they made anſwer, that knowing him to be a man of bravery, they had an abſolute confidence in him; that Monſieur *de Rohan* was hard by, and would give his orders out, and be with them in half a quarter of an hour. The Baron reply'd, he would go in then, and keep himſelf behind the door within the Cittadel, to open it for them when they came. Thus they return'd back, and immediately all the Enemies Forces drew near. Monſieur *de Rohan* in coming altered his firſt deſign of falling on by the lines of Communication, hoping that if he could get into the Cittadel at firſt, he ſhould in three hours be maſter of the Town. He had with him ſeven thouſand Foot, and three hundred Horſe, and the next morning came three thouſand more of *Vevarets*. The order was, that two hundred choſen men, among which were a great many Gentlemen and Officers, were to fall on firſt; that they ſhould be backt with a thouſand more, and the reſt according as need ſhould require. The Baron of *Bretigny*, author of the Enterprize, who marcht foremoſt of all, came and knockt very ſoftly at the outward Gate of the Cittadel, and addreſſing himſelf to Baron *M.* ask'd, Couſin, are you there? To which a Serjeant, who was well inſtructed what to ſay, made anſwer, Sir, He is gone to take a turn at the Guard, but he hath left me to aſſure you, that he will come again immediately to receive you; in the mean time draw your men up cloſe into order of Battel. With that Baron *Bretigny* gave the word from hand to hand, Cloſe, cloſe. One and fifty of theſe firſt two hundred being advanced with him, *Beine*, who was afraid to ſee ſo many let in, cut the Rope with his Hatchet, without ſtaying for the word, and immediately the Bridge fell down behind, and one part being incloſed between the Gate of the Cittadel and the Bridge, the reſt fell into the Ditch. Thoſe of the Cittadel immediately threw a great many Fire-works, both into the Ditch, and all about it, that they might the better ſee what they did, and ſhot at the main body without, of which a great many were kill'd and wounded. As for thoſe that were trapt between the Gate and the Bridge, there were nine and thirty kill'd, and twelve taken priſoners, of whom moſt part were very much wounded. *Cadet* who guided them, naming himſelf, and our men having let down a Rope to pull him up to them, they who were near him drew him back, and detain'd him by force, ſaying, They would never ſuffer him to eſcape, unleſs the Governor, or ſome body in his name would promiſe them their lives. And accordingly when they ſaw that they ſhot at them without proffering them any thing at all, they gave him above twenty wounds, of which however he did not dye: Monſieur *Rohan* withdrew, full of concern and paſſion, and ordering his Ammunition-bread to be thrown away, he loaded his Carriages, with as many of his dead and wounded, as he could recover.

What judgment others may paſs upon this action I cannot tell, but for my own part, though ſome perhaps may excuſe it by reaſon of the indignation a man of honour may conceive, to ſee himſelf thought capable of being falſe to his Prince; yet I own it troubled me very much, and I could look upon it as no better than a piece of treachery: Nor could my inviolable devotion to the King's ſervice and intereſt, prevail with me to approve that in my friend, which I muſt have condemned in my ſelf. The treachery they would have drawn him into, ought not to have engag'd him in another treachery; nor was it in my opinion an argument he underſtood the rules of honour and fidelity, to pretend to

merit

merit frmo his King, by betraying thoſe that tempted him to betray him. Treachery does not change its nature, when it changes its object, and it is always infidelity to break a promiſe; and to forfeit faith once given, though it were for the intereſt of the greateſt Prince upon Earth. This Officer was doubtleſs highly to be commended for rejecting the advantageous offers made him by the Duke of *Rohan*, that he might ſtand firm in his duty; but that it was not conſiſtent with that duty to ſurprize the Duke with fair promiſes; and that word ought not to have been given, which ought not, nor ever was intended, to be made good. There was a way open, and the Duke of *Rohan* muſt have eſteemed him the more, if he had flatly refus'd to ſerve him againſt the King; but he drew upon himſelf the cenſure of his beſt friends, in quitting the way of honour, and taking double and indirect methods; and I confeſs I could never look upon a man guilty of ſo foul and unfaithful an action, as my friend.

III. A little while after, upon our return from *Rochelle* to *Paris*, the King commanded me to go into *Dauphine*, *Savoy* and *Piedmont*, to diſcover all the paſſes of *Italy*, deſigning to march his Army into thoſe parts, againſt the Duke of *Savoy*. I went accordingly, and having examined with all the care I could, all the ways by which an Army could poſſibly paſs the Mountains, I took an exact account of them, and after two or three months return'd to *Paris*. The King ſent for Monſieur *de Eſcures*, who made the Charts, and was Quarter-maſter General of the Army, and ſhewed him the account I had preſented; ordering him to examine it carefully, and compare it with his Charts; and found after by his report, that my account was exactly true as to the leagues, which was all he would undertake to anſwer, not being acquainted with the paſſes, ſo well as I, who was of the Country. Whereupon his Majeſty was graciouſly pleas'd to ſay, he was ſatisfied very well with my ſervice, and that he would remember it. And he gave preſent order for all things, for the expedition of *Piedmont*, whither he intended to go in perſon with his whole Army.

IV. About this there happened to me a very unlucky accident at *Paris*, from which it was a great providence that I eſcaped. Coming one night late from the *Louvre* on Horſeback, and going to carry my Captain, Monſieur *St. Preuil*, ſome orders, that I had juſt receiv'd from his Majeſty, found him at play in a houſe beyond the *Hoſtel de Bellegarde*. As ſoon as I was paſt this *Hoſtel*, and got over againſt the Chappel of the *Hoſtel de Soiſſons*, my Footman going before me ſome twenty paces with a Flambeau, a man at the corner of a ſtreet made a thruſt at me with all his might, enough to have run me through and through, and kill'd me upon the ſpot; but God guided both the Hand and the Sword ſo happily for me, that inſtead of running me into the belly, it hit under the pummel of my Saddle, and there broke. The thruſt was ſo violent, that a piece of the Sword, half a foot long, ſtuck in the Saddle. Surpriz'd at this paſs, which I heard before I ſaw it, I leap'd off my Horſe, and drawing, I threw the Fellow down, beat him, and in the heat of my paſſion was very near killing him. He profeſt to me, that he was miſtaken, that he was *Valet de Chambre* to Monſieur *Bellegarde*, and took me for another Gentleman, by whom he had been cudgell'd. Such a miſtake diſpleas'd me very much, but however, taking ſome compaſſion on him, I turn'd back, and went into the *Hoſtel de Bellegarde*, and his Maſter being in bed, I contented my ſelf with committing his *Valet de Chambre* into the cuſtody of the Gentle-

man

man of his Horſe. The next morning I thought my ſelf oblig'd to go, and make my complaint to him, and tho he lov'd the fellow very well, yet to make me ſatisfaction, he told me, He was a Rogue, and ſhould be hang'd. But that was not the thing I came for, but chiefly to give him notice of this diſorder, that he might prevent any thing of that kind for the future; and therefore I told him, That ſince it had been my chance, and the man had no malice againſt me, nor had I received any harm, I entreated he would pardon him, and only give him warning to be wiſer another time. Notwithſtanding he ſtill inſiſted upon what he had ſaid, that he would have him hang'd. But aſſoon as I was return'd home, he ſent him to me by the Gentleman of his Horſe, to tell me, he put him abſolutely into my hands, to do what I would with him. I made anſwer, that ſince Monſieur *Bellegarde* was ſo generous to leave him to my diſpoſal, I freely forgave him. But the King heard of it, and ſaid he ſhould be hang'd; tho he contented himſelf with ſaying it only, and did not cauſe it to be done.

V. Another occaſion was given me of acknowledging the Divine protection, which did not only very viſibly ſpare my life, but gave me an opportunity of ſaving another perſon's, which was in danger. Having ſupp'd one night with a Courtier, a good friend of mine, and going home on Horſeback about eleven a clock, attended by two Foot-men, one of which carry'd a Flambeau, I ſaw at a diſtance upon *Noſtre-Dame* Bridge, three or four Villains aſſaulting a man, whom they had forc'd up to a Wall, where he was defending himſelf the beſt he could. I did not much deliberate upon giving him the relief I my ſelf ſhould have expected from another man upon the like occaſion, but ſpurring as hard as I could in among theſe Raſcals, I ſo amazed them, that immediately they ran: but the man was almoſt as much troubled and aſtoniſh'd, as if he had been ſtill among the Rogues. He did not think himſelf ſafe with me, and I could ſcarcely bring him to his ſenſes. I askt him, who he was? to whom he belong'd? and where he liv'd? but could not get one word out of his mouth. In the mean while, I could not find in my heart to leave him in this condition neither, doubting he might be attempted again, and more eaſily robb'd. I gave him time to recover, and naming the moſt conſiderable parts, and Inns of *Paris*, I got it out of him at laſt, that he lodged in the Place *Maubert*, and was Steward to the Duke of *Lorrain*, who was then at *Paris*. I try'd to get him up behind me, but not being able, becauſe he was a very big fat man, and not yet cur'd of his fright, I thought it beſt to alight my ſelf; and giving one of the Foot-men my Horſe to lead, I walk'd with him to his Lodging; where he return'd me thanks as well as he could, being not yet perfectly come to himſelf. He ask'd one of the Footmen who I was, and where I liv'd, and came next morning to acknowledge the ſervice I had done him, and a few days after invited me to Supper, to which I took ſome Perſons of Quality, my Friends along with me, who were no leſs ſurpriz'd than I, at the Magnificence of this Entertainment.

VI. The King deſigning (as I ſaid) to march his Army againſt the Duke of *Savoy*, made them ſet out in the depth of Winter, and he himſelf follow'd in *February*, 1629. I ſtaid a little after him at *Paris*, to pick up ſome Souldiers that were left behind, and went with about two hundred to overtake the King beyond *Fontain-bleau*, according to the

order his Majesty has given me. As soon as I was come up, I distributed every Souldier into his owu Compauy, and then took my own place in the head of mine, to march along with the Army to *Lyons*. My Company (that is Monsieur *St. Preuil*'s, which I almost always commanded) consisted at that time of two hundred and fifty men, all lusty fellows, and well clad. There were among them about fourscore young Gentlemen, most of them of very good families, and had very handsom equipage. I having the honour to be known by all the persons of the Court, and all the principal Officers in the Army, for one that had always with great industry apply'd my self to my profession, was very exact in my discipline, and had a great care of my Souldiers; this made a great many people of Quality do me the honour to entrust their Sons with me, to learn what the experience and diligence of so many years had taught me. And I think I may say without vanity, that I was beloved, feared and obeyed by my men after a very extraordinary manner. But I try'd by a particular address to win upon the affection of the Cadets; for I gave them the Command of the Company by turns, that while they were learning to be Souldiers, they might learn to be Captains and Officers too at the same time.

The King was much pleas'd to see this Company in so good order, and expreſt his satisfaction, by granting it a priviledge which others had not. For seeing my Company so large, and full of Gentlemen of Quality, I thought it my duty to acquaint his Majesty, that being alone, as I then was, without my Captain, and having so many young Gentlemen, whom their Parents had committed to my care, I should find my self over-burden'd with the charge, unless his Majesty made me some grant in favour of all those young Cadets, that they might be treated with more respect than the common sort of Souldiers; for they not having been inured to hardship, would soon grow discontented, and complain to their Relations, whom I should by that means make my Enemies, and so might make most of them at last disband, and quit the Army. The King very graciously reply'd, That I did him a kindness in giving him this notice, and I am glad (said he) that you have askt me what I grant you most willingly. Thus I had ever after double Quarters for my Company, and by this means had it in my power to make some distinction betwixt the Cadets, and the ordinary sort of Souldiers.

I was also very careful to prevent any disorders in the Quarters, not being able to endure that the Souldiers should wrong poor people in the Villages. To this purpose, when I went out, I always drew up my Company, and made proclamation, that if any Countryman had cause to complain, he might come and do it without any fear. Before I dislodg'd I saw all things restor'd, and never went out of the Town, till I had first got a Certificate from the Lord and the Parish Priest; being resolv'd always to carry my justification in my Pocket, and fearing lest I should be accus'd to the King. who was more severe to me than all the rest, because he made me the instrument of reforming the discipline among his Guards. But I had another reason still, which oblig'd me to some exactness in this point, and that was, that having so many Gentlemen in my Company, who were like to be Commanders themselves shortly after; I would not use them to pilfering, lest when they came to be Officers, they should suffer their Souldiers to do the same, that they had been formerly allow'd in themselves. And those mean things were not to be indured in men of birth and quality, whose minds ought to be noble and generous above the meaner sort of men.

VII. As

VII. As soon as our Army was arriv'd within some few leagues of *Lyons*, we being to pass the River in Boats, fearing some disorder might happen in the passage, I told Monsieur *Vientais*, a Captain of the Guards, that we must endeavour to pass first, if we would do it safely, and without confusion; and accordingly we embarkt our Companies, and past early without any loss or tumult. It afterwards appear'd that our fear had not been groundless, for there was such a disorder in getting over the Army, that a great deal of Baggage was lost. The King staid a while at *Lyons*, and we refresht our selves in the Country round about, and I and my Company went to a Village about a league beyond *Lyons*; but it happen'd that this Village, which was assign'd for our Quarters, belong'd to a Kinsman of mine, a Captain of a new-rais'd Regiment, who was then in *Dauphine*. His Wife frighted to see so many Souldiers, came and conjur'd me to use my best endeavour for exempting her Estate from Quartering. This was no easy matter to obtain, the Army lying so dispers't all over the Country as it did; and I had much ado to prevail with my self to go about it, but told, the orders were given, and it would breed a great confusion. But at last yield I did, to a Woman's, and a Relation's request, and went back to *Lyons*, to see if I could obtain what this Lady desir'd. As soon as I came into the King's presence, I humbly besought him to remember, he was now entring into my Country, and that I came to beg one favour, which was, that he would direct our Quarters to be chang'd, because the Village assign'd us belong'd to a Kinswoman of mine. They press me hard, Sir, said I, to make use of my credit with your Majesty upon this occasion, or at least the credit they imagine I have. The King turning to the Lords about him; 'Tis true (said he laughing) we do now approach his Country, and ought to consider him a little. So he gave order presently to Monsieur *d'Escures* to change the Quarters; and as soon as I had receiv'd the order, I return'd to the Village, and dislodg'd the three Companies the same day, who lost nothing by the bargain, for they were much better provided for in their new Quarters.

VIII. But it fell out by an odd accident, that at the same time I did this good Office for my Kinsman, in clearing his Village of Souldiers already fix'd in their Quarters; he who had raised a recruit of thirty or forty men, must needs, forsooth, go quarter at *Pontis*. In my Manor-house, I had a good stout Bailiff, one of generosity and wisdom too. This Captain then coming into the Castle, and telling the Bailiff, that he came to quarter in the House, the fellow receiv'd him very civilly, knowing him to be my Relation, and told him, all there was at his service. Accordingly he entertain'd him well, had his Horses set up and dress't, and gave Bread and Wine to the Souldiers. But when the Captain declar'd he would stay three or four days, and the Tenants were to receive and lodge the Souldiers at their own charge, this Bailiff a little surpriz'd at that, told him, He receiv'd him as his Master's Kinsman, and not as a Captain, and that it was not reasonable his Master's poor Tenants should be oppress't; at which the Officer began to huff, telling him he had his orders to quarter there. The Bailiff, who was no Fool, thinking it best to give way, dispatch'd a Messenger privately to me, and inform'd me of all that past.

This man's ill nature and unworthy carriage vex'd me I confess, and in my ill humour I wrote my Bailiff an angry Letter, wherein I said, I re-

nounc'd

nounc'd his kindred and friendſhip, and could no longer look upon him as a man of honour; and that if his Trunks and Baggage were ſtill in the Caſtle, he ſhould not deliver them, till he was paid for all that had been ſpent. In the mean while this Captain after two or three days was upon going, and entreated my Bailiff to ſend him his Trunks to a certain place that he nam'd, which the fellow, having not yet receiv'd any orders from me, promis'd to do; and thus he march'd away with his Company, much pleas'd with having us'd a Kinſman and a Friend, as if he had been the moſt perfect Stranger in the world. My Bailiff, upon the receipt of my Letter, took an honeſt reſolution to execute my pleaſure faithfully, and like a brave fellow; for ſoon after, the Captain troubled that his Trunks were not ſent him, ſent again to demand them, but the Meſſenger was ſurpriz'd at his anſwer, That when the Captain paid for what he, and his Company, and his Horſes had eaten and drunk, the Trunks ſhould be delivered. This news was no ſooner brought him, but he came himſelf in a great fury to demand his Baggage. The Bailiff anſwered, When he would pleaſe to defray what expences he and his Souldiers had put me to, the things were ready for him. How! ſaid he, the expence of my Souldiers; why was it not their due? Sir, ſaid the Bailiff, I have order to deliver nothing without that: My Maſter hath forbidden me, I know he will be obeyed, and it would not be ſafe for me to fail in it. Here is his Letter, and if you will give your ſelf that trouble, you may read it your ſelf. He read all my angry Letter againſt himſelf, and ſeeing his ill nature and baſeneſs repreſented there to the life, he could not look oh it without abhorring his own deformity; and not knowing which way to diſcharge his paſſion, he ſputtered it out in railing and injurious language, and at laſt went away in a rage, ſeeing his ſtrength too ſmall; for there were in this Village near a hundred good Souldiers, and brave Fire-men, ready to fight, as Provencals uſually are, and theſe were all very well reſolv'd to defend the right and intereſt of their Lord.

But this Captains mind was ſoon changed; His Wife, to whom I had ſo lately done the good office you heard of, writ him a Letter at this very time, of the conſiderable ſervice they had received from me, conjuring him, that where-ever he met me, he ſhould expreſs the acknowledgments they would ever have of my generous proeeedings, and the proof I had given of my friendſhip to them, and my credit with the King. It is not eaſie to think the perplexity this news put him into: He ſaw himſelf overpower'd with civilities, when he was loading that very friend with opprobrious language, and ill uſage. Thus he was divided between two contrary paſſions; Anger on one ſide, and Shame on the other; and he could not tell at firſt whether of theſe he ſhould yield to: but at laſt Shame carried it, he confeſſes himſelf to blame, is ſenſible how he had wounded our friendſhip, and reſolves to make amends. Thus full of confuſion he goes back to my Bailiff, makes a thouſand excuſes, pays both for himſelf and his Souldiers, and hath his Baggage delivered to him. Afterward he employ'd all his friends, and among others Monſieur *de Bonne*, who was a Lord of *Dauphine*, to reconcile me to him. But I could never prevail with my ſelf to own a man for my friend, who had betray'd ſuch want of honour and generoſity; and all I could grant thoſe who intereſted themſelves for him upon this occaſion, was only an Interview, where all the Complement I made him was this, That having the honour to know him, I thought my ſelf no leſs happy in being known by him, for the man I was. He excus'd himſelf mightily, but I would never

never ſee him more, thinking a man that had been capable of ſo much baſeneſs, would hardly ever change his Nature, or render himſelf worthy to be beloved.

IX. When the King had ſtaid ſome time at *Lyons*, he paſt on to *Grenoble*, and from thence to *Ambrun*; and being his Majeſty was to continue there ſome days, I askt leave of him to go before, as far as *Pontis*, which was not far off, with fifteen ot twenty Officers of the Guards. We ſtay'd there four or five days, in which time I entertain'd them ſo magnificently, that it coſt me two years Revenue. We thought of nothing but diverting our ſelves, when all of us had a great combat to undergo. On a ſudden we heard a great noiſe as we were walking, that rattled like a Whirlwind, and looking that way from whence it came, we ſaw a prodigious large Eagle, which had fallen upon a flock of Turkies. Twelve or thirteen of us that were there, all ran with our Swords drawn to engage this King of the Air; but the Bird, inſtead of being frighted, came on himſelf to charge us, not being able to mount, becauſe the Country was low, and he had not air enough to raiſe himſelf, being very heavy, and ſurpriz'd too, before he could take all the advantages for flying away. 'Tis incredible with what fury he made at us, his ſtrength being ſo great, that with one blow of his Wing, he ſtunn'd and fell'd one of us to the ground, and had like to have kill'd one of the biggeſt Maſtiffs in the Country, with ſeizing him in his Talons, as the Dog came out to ſeize him. To conclude, after all we could do could not hurt him with our Swords, nor ever get the better of him, till we ſent for a Fowling-piece, and ſhot him twice or thrice to get him down. We carry'd this Eagle along with us to *Ambrun*, to ſhew it to the King, to whom Monſieur *Comminges*, who was one of the company, gave a narration of our Combat; and his Majeſty ſaying he wiſh'd he had been there, he very pleaſantly replyed, that his Majeſty's perſon had been leſs ſecure in an engagement with this Eagle, than if he had fought againſt that of the Empire.

X. I had order'd all the Souldiers of the Village of *Pontis* to give a Volley of all the Shot they could make (which amounted to no more than a few Muſquets, and a good many Chambers that I had got ready) to ſalute the King, when he paſt by the foot of the Hill on which the Village ſtands. Thus when nothing leſs was expected, on a ſudden a great noiſe was heard, and the King ſtanding ſtill upon the Bridge over the *Durance*, which was in the Valley, ſeem'd pleaſed with this Rattle that I endeavoured to honour my Houſe with, and ſaid in merriment, He will furniſh us with Cannon for a need. After this came the Pariſh Prieſt with the Croſs, and all the Inhabitants, to ſalute the King; the Curate harrangued his Majeſty in his Provencal language, and the King attempted to reply in the ſame tone, but could hardly make himſelf underſtood, which gave great diverſion. After the King had with great goodneſs lookt upon theſe poor people, who fell on their knees before him, he made them riſe, and diſmiſt them.

I thought this a favourable occaſion humbly to entreat his Majeſty would determine a great controverſie this Village was engaged in, which being ſcituate upon the Confines of *Dauphine* and *Provence*, was every day by the ears with the Officers of each Province, while both of them equally pretended to it. I repreſented to his Majeſty the Tyranny ex-

erciſed every year over his poor Subjects, in making them pay their Taxes twice over; and humbly begg'd his authority would put an end to theſe unjuſt perſecutions. The King ſpoke of it to the Council, and I had it left to my choice, which of the two Provinces I would ſettle it in. Monſieur *Crequi*, who was Governour of *Dauphine*, hearing of it, laid hard at me to fix it there, promiſing me his ſervice and protection upon all occaſions. To whom I anſwer'd, that he did me great honour, but I humbly begg'd of him, that I might have leave to conſult the advantage of the poor people, who found it much more commodious to be ſeated in *Provence*; and I knew him ſo generous and kind, that he would continue me the honour of his protection, tho of another Government, ſince of what Province ſoever I were, I ſhould ſtill belong to the King, whom he himſelf was proud to ſerve. I choſe then with his Majeſty's good liking to fix it in *Provence*, to which it belonged indeed in Monſieur *d'Eſcure*'s judgment, rather than to *Dauphine*; and I obtain'd an Order of Council upon the matter. But the King granted me beſides, a fair Privilege to the Mannor-houſe of *Pontis*, which was, that whereas all Affairs and Differences of the Village were to be determin'd by the Judicature of the Province, thoſe that concern the Mannor-houſe are all referred to the Kings Council. And this hath been obſerved ever ſince, as well in reſpect of the Pariſh buſineſs, as the Lords; the Officers of *Dauphine* make no more pretenſions to the one, and the other acknowledges no Judge but the Council.

XI. The King came to *Braincon*, where there is a Mountain not to be paſt but upon Hurdles, a kind of Carriage, behind which the perſon that guides it ſits, and makes it ſlide down extreme ſteep places, with marvellous ſwiftneſs. His Majeſty told me, I being the Guide muſt ſhew the way. The Conſul's Daughter of the Country came and offer'd her ſelf to let me down. The King at firſt was in ſome concern, to ſee a young Maid undertake a thing that he thought had ſo much danger in it. But they aſſured him this Maid underſtood the Trade very well, and ſo he ſaid ſmiling, Well, we ſhall grow wiſe however at his coſt. I ſat down upon the Hurdle, under the conduct of this Girl, and away we flew down over the Snow, as ſwift as an Arrow out of a Bow; and having ſcrambled up again to come tell the King there was no danger, he ſat down, and was guided by the Conſul himſelf, and down he went as faſt and as ſafe, as I had done before. He rewarded the man with a Priviledge and ſome Piſtoles; and all that waited on the King had the ſame paſſage, but for the Army they were order'd to fetch a compaſs, that they might paſs with greater eaſe.

When the King was advanc'd with his Army, within a league of the City of *Suza*, he commanded Monſieur *Comminges*, a Captain of his Guards, to go next day to *Suza*, with the Quarter-maſters, to take up Lodgings for him and all the Court. He order'd me to bear Monſieur *Comminges* Company, that if Count *Verrue*, who guarded the Paſs of *Suza*, ſhould give us free paſſage, I might bring him back an account; but in caſe he ſhould deny it, we might obſerve the places and manner by which it ſhould be attackt. We went away next morning ſome twelve or fifteen in company, and being come within two hundred paces of the ſtreight, we ſounded a Trumpet. Upon which Count *Verrue* ſent an Officer with ten or twelve Souldiers, to know who we were, and what we would have. Monſieur *Comminges* askt if he were the perſon that

commanded

commanded there, beccuſe the King had ſent him to ſpeak with him. The Officer bid us ſtay where we were, and he would return with an anſwer immediately. After he had made his report to Count *Verrue*, who kept this Paſs with about two thouſand men, he came again to tell us, That the Count was coming himſelf, and that we need not draw forward; which he ſaid to prevent our diſcovering the place. Preſently after the Count appeared at the head of two hundred Muſqueters, and after a civil ſalute, Monſieur *Comminges* ſaid to him; Sir, the King my Maſter hath commanded me to go to day to *Suza*, to prepare his Lodgings, becauſe he intends to lye there to morrow night. To which the Count reply'd very civilly, Sir, His Highneſs would take it for a very great honour to lodge his Majeſty, but ſince his Majeſty comes with ſo much attendance, you ſhall give me leave if you pleaſe to acquaint his Highneſs with it firſt. What then, Sir, reply'd Monſieur *Comminges*, will not you let us paſs? Sir, return'd the Count *de Verrue*, You muſt give me leave, as I told you before, firſt to acquaint his Highneſs. To which Monſieur *Comminges* made anſwer, Well, Sir, then I go, and make my report to the King. You may do as you pleaſe for that Sir, reply'd the Count.

Thus we took leave of him, and went back to his Majeſty, who declar'd he did not take Count *Verrue*'s anſwer ill at all, but ſaid, he anſwer'd like a wiſe man, and a good Commander; and he would prepare to act like a great King. So orders were preſently given for attacking the Paſs. What was moſt remarkable upon this occaſion, which hath been ſo much talkt of ſince, was, that the Enemy ſtanding firm to expect us at this ſtreight, which it had been impoſſible for us to force, was very much ſurpriz'd, to ſee the Count *de Saux*, who had ſhovell'd away the Snow, and crawl'd up thoſe high Mountains, come fall on them on a ſudden, and encloſe their Rear, upon which they fled immediately, and left all their Fortifications; ſo that our Souldiers had leiſure to make them feel the weight of the King of *France*'s Arms, to whom they had the boldneſs to deny a paſſage. There were however a great many of our men kill'd by the Cannon of *Suza*, which ſcowred all the paſſage after a ſtrange manner. Mareſchal *Schomberg* was wounded there, but his wound only ſerv'd to render him more glorious, and more hardy againſt the Enemy. *Suza* preſently ſurrendred to his Majeſty, and a Peace ſoon after being concluded, the King was viſited there by his Highneſs; and the King reſolving to pay his viſit, did all he could to ſurprize him, but he could not. For the Duke having notice of his coming, came down ſtairs to meet the King, who ſaid, I had a mind to ſurprize you, and have got into your Chamber. To which his Highneſs very pleaſantly reply'd, So great a King as he, could not eaſily be conceal'd. And as the King and the Duke were paſſing with a great crowd over a Gallery, that was not very ſtrong, the King ſaying, That they had beſt make haſte, leſt the Gallery ſhould fall under them. The Duke return'd this complemental anſwer, That one might ſee, that every thing trembled under ſo great a King. His Majeſty then ſhewed him all his Army, and gave him the pleaſure of contemplating the *French* Nobility, after having made him ſome time before feel the force of their Courage.

While our Army lay in *Piedmont* before the Peace, they plunder'd by right of War; and I having three very beautiful *Neapolitan* Courſers for my ſhare, Count *Soiſſons* ſent to entreat me to ſell him one of them, to reſtore it to the Duke; I ſent him word, that having given thirty Piſtoles for one of them, he ſhould have him for the ſame price if he thought

thought fit; but for the other two which coſt me nothing, I would freely ſend them to him, without taking any thing for them, The Count was a little ſurpriz'd at my anſwer, and ſent me a Purſe full of Piſtoles, with this Meſſage; That he would not have my Horſes unleſs he might pay for them; but though I was not ſo rich as many others, yet my Soul was as great, ſo that I ſent him back his Purſe with the Horſes, without ever taking any more but the thirty Piſtoles, that the Horſe I mention'd coſt me.

XII. The King while at *Valence*, after having repaſt the Mountains, underſtood there, that ſeveral Cities had revolted by the inducement of the Religioniſts, and therefore went to beſiege *Priras*, which was one of the ſtrongeſt. Here I loſt a very good friend, a Captain of the Guards, who was unfortunately kill'd by one of our own Centry's, as he was going to diſcover ſome works. And what was moſt deplorable of all in this accident was, that his beſt friend was the cauſe of his death againſt his will. For as he was climbing up the ſide of a little Hill, this Officer taking him for one of the Enemy, commanded the Centinel to fire, which he did, diſcharging a great Muſquet ſhot upon him, by which he was ſlain. I miſs'd but little of ſharing in his misfortune, having offer'd my ſelf to go along with him; but he would go alone, and ſo periſht alone. Who can in ſuch caſes but acknowledge and admire that Providence, that rules and ordains ſo many different events, as beſt pleaſes him, who parts two friends to take away one, and ſave the other; and permits that one who would have given his blood for his friend, ſhould himſelf be innocently the cauſe of his death! But my Eyes at that time were too much fix'd upon the earth, to raiſe me up to this principle, and went along as other people with the ſtream of the age, lamenting the loſs of a perſon whom I lov'd, and improving that thought no farther. I ſhall ſay nothing more of this Siege, nor of the other Towns that ſurrendred to the King; my deſign being not to compile a Hiſtory, which were an undertaking above my abilities, but only as I ſaid, to obſerve the different accidents and circumſtances that occur to my mind; ſuch as may be uſeful to manifeſt the Government of the Almighty in the courſe of this mortal life; or may afford ſome light into a profeſſion that I have addicted my ſelf to ſo many years with more than common aſſiduity and application.

XIII. At the King's return to *Paris*, there befel me what the world would think a great fortune, eſpecially for ſuch a one as I, who ſeem'd to be cut out more for the acquiring Honour than Wealth; while I ſaw ſo many others advance and enrich themſelves in a ſhort time. One day as the King was at *St. Germains*, and coming very nimbly down ſtairs to go a hunting, I happen'd to be there, and his Majeſty leaning upon my arm, that he might go faſter and ſurer, I thought to ſnatch this opportunity of begging a conſiderable Eſcheat of a Sempſtreſs of the Queen's, one *Rachel de Viaga*, a *Spaniard* by birth, one who had not been naturalized; and then lay extremely ſick. I contented my ſelf at that time with giving a very ſhort account of the matter, and beg that his Majeſty would pleaſe to remember me, as he had done me the favour to promiſe he would. His Majeſty aſſur'd me he would not forget it; and accordingly hearing ſome days after that the woman was expiring, and could not live till morning, he promis'd me the Eſcheat. I was ſenſible I ſhould not want

Competitors,

Competitors, and begg'd the King's protection, repreſenting to him, that a great many would attempt to deprive me of his bounty, as being more worthy than I. To which the King reply'd, Go, go, take you no care, I'll ſupport you againſt them all. And his Majeſty ſhewed afterwards, that he had taken me into his protection, preferring me before ſeveral Lords, who would fain have been nibbling at this Eſcheat, which was indeed very conſiderable, and what I might very well look upon as a reward his Majeſty's bounty intended me for all my paſt ſervices.

The Sempſtreſs dying that night, next morning by break of day ſeveral great perſons, as the Duke of *Elbeuf*, the Marquis *de Rambouillat*, Great Maſter of the Wardrobe, and ſome others, came to beg this Eſcheat of the King; but his Majeſty, mindful of the promiſe he had made me, told them all, It was not in his power, for he had diſpos'd of it already. He explain'd himſelf no farther as yet; but preſently after told the Duke of *Elbeuf* all, who had a great kindneſs for me, and declared himſelf very well ſatisfied with my having it; proteſting that had he known his Majeſty's inclination to do me that favour, he would have joyned with me in the requeſt; but the reſt were not of his temper, and eſpecially a great Officer in the Houſhold, who ſhew'd himſelf too importuning and troubleſome, when it was too late; and after he knew it was given to me, charged the Uſher of the Chamber not to let me in the next day. So that when I thought to prevent the ill offices which I knew very well were deſign'd me, and came to preſent my ſelf betimes in the morning at the Chamber-door, to have audience one of the firſt, the Uſher a little roughly bad me ſtay till the King was up. I gueſt whence this came, and knew the ſhutting me out of the Kings Chamber was to ſhut me out from his bounty too: But I believed that a Prince, when he had declared himſelf as his Majeſty had done, would ſoon ſtop his Subjects mouths, and that no one could be ſo bold to ask, or ſo ſucceſsful to obtain a Grace that his Majeſty had ſo frankly beſtow'd upon me.

I waited then till the Crowd came, and went with ſome Lords into the Chamber; as ſoon as I was in the room I made my reverence to the King, and pray'd him to remember me; to which his Majeſty replyed, I have remembred you, I give you what I promiſed, and what others have tryed in vain to take from you. Go preſently to *la Vailliere*, and bid him from me draw up your Bill of Donation for this Eſcheat. I entreated his Majeſty to ſend ſome one immediately from himſelf, telling him, that Monſieur *la Vailliere* might otherwiſe make ſome difficulty of the thing. I ſee, ſaid the King, you are uſed to take your ſecurities; go you before, and I will ſend ſome body after you. I went away immediately, and it fell out as I had foreſeen, for Monſieur *la Vailliere* told me, he would ſpeak to the King about it firſt; that he was going to the *Louvre*, and would diſcourſe him about it. I had a mind to be by, and therefore going into the Coach with him, we went together to the King. There I found Mr *L.* and *St. G.* who not judging ſo favourably of me, as his Majeſty had done, and thinking this gift more fit for them, were ſo bold as to ask him, If he knew what this Eſcheat was worth? The King told them, he thought it might be worth fifty thouſand Francks. How, Sir! ſaid they: Yes, above two hundred thouſand; whereas if your Majeſty had given Monſieur *Pontis* fifty or threeſcore thouſand Livres, would not he be well enough rewarded? This confident anſwer very much diſpleaſed the King, who not liking to have his actions ſo controul'd, ſaid with a voice of Authority, Kings govern themſelves by

their own wills, if this Eſcheat were worth a hundred thouſand Crowns, I would give it *Pontis* with a much better will. You think becauſe he has but little, I ſhould give him but little; and I quite contrary would give him much more than I do, becauſe I know he hath a great deal of Merit, tho but a ſmall Eſtate. This anſwer out of the mouth of a King, and pronounced with a more than ordinary Emphaſis, ſtruck them all dumb, and gave me a joy paſt my power to expreſs, to ſee his Majeſty take my part ſo warmly againſt the great ones, who thought they had a right to oppoſe his favours to me.

My Bill being preſently diſpatched, a Courtier who had a conſiderable Office, made me this pretty Complement; Sir, You are not acquainted with affairs of this kind, if you will give me one half of this Eſcheat, I will quickly put you into ſecure poſſeſſion of the reſt, without any trouble or diſpute at all. I knowing him a very cunning man, and a little concern'd in the buſineſs, thankt him civilly for his kind proffer, to do me, or rather indeed himſelf that good Office, telling him, the burden was not ſo heavy, but that I both would, and could, bear it all my ſelf. I ſent away ſome Souldiers of my Company into the Country-houſes that belonged to this Sempſtreſs, whoſe Heir I was conſtituted; and being deſirous to acknowledge in ſome meaſure his Majeſty's liberality toward me, I ſent him a Preſent of all the Holland and Baptiſte which was in her Shop at *Paris*; and among other things a great Point-bed, which the King gave the Queen, valued at ten thouſand Crowns. The Hollands he gave among the Queens Maids of Honour. But I afterwards found I had been too free, thus to give back again a good part of what the King had given me: For after I had cleared my hands of the rich Cloaths and ſumptuous Bed, and had taken poſſeſſion of the Lands and other Eſtates of this Sempſtreſs, one of her Kinſmen preſented a Requeſt to the Parliament, in purſuance of an old Letter, by which he pretended to ſhew, that this *Spaniſh* woman had been naturalized. I was baſely down in the mouth at this news, and reſolved to ſend one on purpoſe into *Spain* for more particular information; but all the ſervice that did me, was only the throwing away five hundred Crowns more, which this mans journey coſt me. For after the matter had lain a long time before the Parliament, at laſt Judgment was given againſt me, that all the Land ſhould go to the Kinſman, and the Movables ſhould be mine. Thus after I had given the beſt of the Goods away, I was diſpoſſeſt of the Land; and that which ſhould have been worth to me above two hundred thouſand Livres, was not worth above ten thouſand, all charges born. The King not being able to forbear laughing at me, ſaid one day, Well *Pontis*, thou wert born to be a man of Honour, but not a man of Fortune. Sir, re-reply'd I ſmiling, it has depended upon my ſelf to make me a man of Honour, but it will depend only upon your Majeſty to make me a man of Fortune, and that may be done whenever you pleaſe. But how comes it to paſs, ſaid the King, that thou couldſt not keep this Eſcheat? Sir, ſaid I, your Majeſty gave it me, but your Juſtice hath taken it from me; but you have it in your power always to repair this loſs of mine with advantage, by ſome other Grant. The King only laugh'd at what I ſaid, and I remain'd the ſame I was before. For moſt certainly, God who knew that Riches might have been my ruine, by tying me faſter to the World, always ſet thoſe great fortunes, to which I might have ſome pretenſions, at a diſtance from me; and by an effect of his infinite mercy, that I did not then diſcern, let me be croſt in the deſigns of

my

my whole life, becauſe he had another deſign upon me, much more advantagious, than all I could wiſh for then. The more diligent I was in my Command, and the more faithful in all parts of my duty, the leſs I advanced in my fortune. The King, whom I ſerv'd with incredible zeal, ſhew'd a particular affection for me, as ſeveral paſſages in theſe *Memoirs* declare; but then his keeping me always about his own perſon, hindred him from raiſing me to conſiderable Commands, that might have given me greater liberty to retire; and he was not over-haſty in doing any great matters for me in the condition I then was, that ſo he might keep me to a more abſolute dependance upon him alone.

XIV. There happen'd to me about this time, as I was upon the Guard at the *Louvre*, a rencounter pleaſant enough in it ſelf, but untoward for the conſequence it might have had, and the quality of the perſon concern'd in it. The King had given me command to lye upon the Guard, contrary to what other Officers uſed to do; deſiring to have me extraordinary obſequious to him, and fixt to his perſon, knowing me particularly faithful and affectionate in his Service. The Duke of *Orleans*, who then lay in the *Louvre*, coming home on foot one night very late, reſolv'd to ſurprize the Guard in a jeſt, which had like to have coſt both him and us very dear. He being always well attended, ſome of his Train had got within eight or ten paces of the Centinel; and then threw themſelves ſo nimbly upon him, that they wrapt him up in a Cloak, and ſtopt his mouth with a handkerchief to hinder his crying out. Then they came all together to the Guard, and began to cry, Kill, kill: I was laid down upon the Mattrice, and moſt of the Souldiers were aſleep; but we were ſoon rouzed; and I, ſurpriz'd to ſee my ſelf ſo preſt on a ſudden, ran out of door with my Sword, crying, To me, To me. I call'd the Pikes and Muſquets, and began to puſh our aſſailants very vigorouſly; whoſe ſhoulders were well cudgell'd with bangs of Pikes diſtributed very liberally; and finding ſuch warm entertainment, they cry'd out, The Duke of *Orleans*; and he himſelf cry'd out, *Gaſcon*, *Gaſcon*. But the more they cry'd the more I laid on, without hearkning to any thing they ſaid, till at laſt we encloſed them all in the Guard-room, and were about to uſe them very ſcurvily: But knowing the Duke, I cry'd out, Oh, my Lord! what have you done? you have hazarded your own, and all our lives. I got him preſently into my Chamber, and with much ado appeas'd the tumult, the Souldiers being heated, and much enrag'd, for having ſuffer'd themſelves to be ſo ſurpriz'd.

There were no lives loſt, becauſe it was done all on the ſudden, and the Souldiers had not time to recollect themſelves, or come into a poſture for doing miſchief. I came afterward to the Duke of *Orleans*, and told him, I was at my wits end for what had happen'd; but his Highneſs ought to pardon us, ſince we could not do otherwiſe than we had done, not knowing who they were, and that we had all been loſt, had we ſuffer'd our ſelves to be fore'd. To which the Duke anſwer'd, Go, go, it was only a frolick, and if you ſay nothing, we have no great reaſon to brag of it. I could not take this for a jeſt though, and apprehended ſome diſgrace from it. The Duke of *Orleans* proteſted that he pardon'd me with all his heart, and gave me the aſſurance of it by looking graciouſly upon me. Never was Prince in ſuch a fright, his Jeſt having ſucceeded ſo ill, and ſeeing himſelf ſo vigorouſly attack'd by his own fault, and ready to be knock't o'th' head by thoſe whoſe duty it was to defend him. It

was

was very fortunate both for him and us that he came off with life, since otherwise we had all been lost without remedy, though it was but the performance of our duty. It is ill playing such pranks, unworthy not only of a Prince, but of the meanest Gentleman. I attended him to his Apartment, where he caus'd himself immediately to be let blood. I reprov'd the Centinel severely, who was a brave Cadet, and more unfortunate than faulty, though according to the Rules of War, he deserv'd to have been punish'd.

In the morning I was at the King's rising, not daring to conceal this affair from him, which he must needs have heard from others. He took me into his Cabinet, and I gave him an account of all that past. He askt whether his Brother were hurt, and understanding that he was not, he only laught, and said, I perceive they were well beaten, but 'tis no matter, they deserv'd it. But fearing still lest the Duke of *Orleans* might resent this affront, I took the liberty to beseech his Majesty to make my peace with him, which he promis'd to do. He sent one of the Gentlemen of the Chamber to see how he did, without taking notice of any thing. The Duke, who had no great mind to divulge what had befallen him, sent word he was well, but had been let blood for a slight indisposition. And coming a little after to the King, his Majesty took him into into his Cabinet, where, after having intimated that he had heard of the business, and rattled him soundly for his rashness in exposing his person so, he call'd me in, and said to the Duke; Here is *Pontis* in great confusion about your matter. To which the Duke immediately made answer, That he did not take any thing I had done the least ill, but was ready to serve me upon all occasions. And indeed he resented it so little, that when I desir'd a little after a Colours for one of my Souldiers, his Royal Highness gave it me at first word.

The End of the First Volume.

MEMOIRS

MEMOIRS OF THE Sieur De PONTIS.

PART II.

BOOK I.

The King ſends Cardinal Richelieu *with a powerful Army to the Relief of the Duke of* Mantua. *The Death of Monſieur* de Canaples. Cazal *beſieg'd by the Enemies, and the Siege rais'd. An Interview of the* French *and* Spaniſh *Generals when the Peace was concluded. The Cardinal* Mazarine *ſaves the* French *Army; and the Sieur* de Pontis *afterwards brings them off from a great danger.*

I. THE Duke of *Savoy*, ſeeing the King at a diſtance, and now gone back to *Paris*, thought his honour concern'd to break that Treaty with him, the making of which had been indeed the effect of neceſſity more than choice. To this purpoſe he ſought the alliance of the King of *Spain*, and of the Emperour, who had ſent the grand *Colalto* with a ſtrong force to inveſt the Duke of *Mantua* in his Capital City. The King conceiving a juſt indignation at this breach of Faith in the Duke of *Savoy*, ſent Cardinal *Richelieu* in the beginning of the year 1630. to repaſs the Mountains, that he might relieve his Ally the Duke of *Mantua*, and revenge this falſe dealing of the *Savoyard*. The Cardinal's March was very ſplendid and remarkable, when he paſt through the Plain of *Montohris* to go to *Pignerol*. For he march'd the Army in Battalia, and all the Officers on foot for a whole day, himſelf in the middle of the Army in his Coach, playing with a very pretty little Boy, that was almoſt always with his Eminence, and never from him, except when he came as a Spy to make his obſervations in the Army. He diſcharged this piece of ſervice notably, though he was but very young, and in this reſpect proved himſelf a wonderful Scholar of ſo great a Maſter. For he would come and toy and play up and down among the Officers and Souldiers, without ever diſcovering any thing of

his deſign, and then all he heard he was ſure to tell to the Cardinal. Thus he put a trick upon all the world the more ſecurely, becauſe of the innocence that appear'd in his behaviour, and concealing his malice under the uſual ſimplicity of that age. I for my part being then in the Army, and particularly obſerv'd, by reaſon of my refuſing to put my ſelf into his Eminence's ſervice, no doubt was no more ſpar'd by this youngſter than all the reſt; though I kept my ſelf pretty much upon my guard, ſo as to be careful not to ſpeak any thing worth telling again. But who would ever have ſuſpected ſo young a Spy, or have thought that the play of a Child ſo little, ſhould have been made uſe of to cheat, and put a trick upon all the Officers of the Army?

When we were come to a Village near the little River of *Oria*, his Eminence was viſited there by his Highneſs of *Savoy*, to whom, by his orders, we all paid the ſame honour as to the King himſelf. After this firſt interview, which was to propoſe an accommodation, the Cardinal made ready to paſs the River with all the Horſe at the Foord, having ſent the Foot another way about to go over the Bridge. That which I thought very obſervable on this occaſion, was to ſee a Biſhop and a Cardinal with a water-colour'd Cuiraſſe on, and a Feuille-mort colour'd Habit, embroider'd with Gold, a curious Feather round his Hat, two Pages marching before him on Horſeback, one of which carried his Gantlet, and the other his Head-piece; and two more Pages on Horſeback, on each ſide of him one, with a very fine led Horſe; and after him came the Captain of his Guards. Thus equipp'd he paſt the River *Oria*, with his Sword by his ſide, and a Caſe of Piſtols at his Saddle-bow. And when he was got to the bank on the other ſide, he made his Horſe prance and curvett before the Army, ſome a hundred times together, as if he took a pride to ſhew the world, that he very well underſtood that exerciſe.

II. From thence we remov'd and lay at *Rivoli*, where the Cardinal receiv'd a ſecond viſit from his Highneſs of *Savoy*, to whom at his coming we paid the ſame reſpects as before. But after the Cardinal and the Duke had ſome diſcourſe together, and the Duke would not comply with ſome propoſals made to him, we receiv'd orders to take no more notice of him at his going away than if he had been a meer private man. So that preſently laying down our arms, we walk'd and talk'd with one another, and made as though we had not ſeen him paſs by.

III. The Cardinal reſolving from *Rivoli* to go beſiege *Pignerol*, made uſe of a common ſtratagem to impoſe upon the Duke of *Savoy*, by pretending a laying Siege to *Turin*, that ſo his Highneſs being wholly taken up with the fortifying himſelf there, might not take any care of putting any ſuccours into *Pignerol*. His Eminence therefore having march'd upon the Van-guard and Artillery within a league of *Turin*, gave order that the Rear ſhould immediately draw off towards *Pignerol*, and ſo changing the Rear of his Army and making it the Van, he gave this City ſuch a ſurprize that they ſaw themſelves inveſted before any ſuccours could get into them, which reduc'd them to a neceſſity of ſurrendring in very few days. Poor Monſieur *de Comminges*, a Captain of the Guards, and my very particular friend, loſt his life at this Siege through his own fault. For I having been two or three times to make my obſervation of an advanc'd work, and ſee if it could be carried on ſtill further, ſo as to make a Lodg-

a Lodgment nearer the Town. He would needs go to view it too, and ask'd the Mareſchal *Crequi*'s leave to do ſo: Who told him at firſt, that he adviſ'd him not to put himſelf upon any unneceſſary hazard of his life, ſince I had ſeen all that there was to be ſeen already. This however did not prevail with him, but he urg'd the Mareſchal on, till at laſt he got leave to go have his brains knockt out; not conſidering that God often puniſhes the raſhneſs and oſtentation of ſuch as court danger. He begg'd of me to ſhew him the way, which I knew not how to deny; and he went on farther than I did. As we were coming back again, it happen'd I know not how, that I ſtay'd a little behind, and as he walk'd on before me very ſoftly in a place that was much expoſed, I deſir'd him to mend his pace, and not value himſelf upon his Courage, becauſe I ſaw a fellow levelling directly at him.

He, without queſtion loth to diſcover any fear, went on at his old rate, defying the death that threatned him, and in that very inſtant was ſhot quite through the body, with a Muſquet-bullet, with which he fell to the ground. He did not dye however upon the ſpot, but was carry'd into the Camp, and liv'd ſome days; and then, tho too late, he confeſt himſelf to blame, for not having taken Monſieur *de Crequi*'s, and my advice. I was ſenſibly afflicted to ſee him in this condition, but there is no preventing a mans misfortune, that will run upon his own death; and I never ſaw a plainer inſtance of the Divine Juſtice, in puniſhing thoſe that preſume to tempt Providence, and caſt themſelves into danger, when there is no occaſion for it. For tho he was really a gallant man, and my very good friend, yet I cannot but condemn ſuch imprudent carriage as this was. It is fit, nay it is neceſſary not to be afraid of death, when the diſcharge of one's duty is concerned, but to brave it unſeaſonably is the very extremity of folly. I own I always diſdain'd that ridiculous fool-hardineſs, and never could value my ſelf upon expoſing my perſon to a Gun, without being called to it. Nothing is more idle than to dye at this rate; 'tis to draw upon ones ſelf the ſcorn and the cenſure of all mankind, for the ſake of a miſtaken notion of Gallantry. Indeed I cannot inveigh too ſeverely againſt this vain imagination of Courage, that takes off a world of young perſons; and they would do well to learn from the examples of thoſe that have gone before them, that ſuch a ſort of death cannot be reputed honourable, either by God or Man.

After the ſurrender of *Pignerol*, I was one of them that were commanded to ſee the Town fortify'd, and there I built a large Baſtion, that went afterwards by the name of *Pontis*.

IV. While the Kings Arms met with ſo good ſucceſs in *Piedmont*, under the command of Cardinal *Richelieu*, his Majeſty made preparations for removing with the whole Court to *Lyons*, about the middle of *May*, 1630. And in regard the Duke of *Savoy* ſtill perſiſted in maintaining what he had begun, the King went and beſieged *Chamberry*; which yielded preſently, with very little oppoſition. But as little as it was, Monſieur *de Canaples* received a Muſquet-ſhot before it, of which he dyed a little while after. Upon the ſurrender of the place, he was carry'd in thither. It is impoſſible for me to expreſs the friendſhip and tenderneſs which he did me the honour to profeſs for me during his illneſs: Perhaps there never was a more perfect reconciliation ſeen. He deſired me not to ſtir from his Bed-ſide; and once mentioning the difference that happen'd between

us

us at the Siege of *Rochelle*, he ſaid, with a moſt extraordinary goodneſs, *Really, poor* Pontis, *I did not know thee, and it ſeems a quarrel was neceſſary to bring us to a right underſtanding of one another, and make us good friends.* I had much ado to ſteal from him to diſcharge the duty of my Poſt; and unleſs he was told that the King or ſome of the Generals had ſent to ſpeak with me, he complained that I had a mind to deſert him, in a condition, when he profeſt to repoſe the greateſt confidence in me. I did all in my power to return ſo ſincere a kindneſs: I comforted him the beſt I could, I encourag'd him, and gave him good hopes; and I may ſay, that if Providence had not otherwiſe diſpoſed of him, I might have expected to find a ſecond *Zamet*, for friendſhip and open-heartedneſs. But his hour was come, and ſo will ours at one time or other; and I muſt do him the Juſtice to ſay, being by when he expired, that he dy'd with a great ſenſe of Piety.

V. Several other places followed the example of *Chamberry*, and every thing yielded to his Majeſty's Arms. But one remarkable accident befell me at *Montmelian*; which the Mareſchal *de Chatillon* was ordered to beſiege, or rather indeed to carry on the Siege begun by the Sieur *de Vignoles*. Our men having one day raiſed a Battery againſt two low Flankers, and diſtreſſing them pretty much, the Enemies caſt up another againſt ours, conſiſting of five or ſix of their biggeſt pieces of Ordnance, which fired ſo terribly, that all the Carriages of our Guns were broke to pieces, and the Gunners either kill'd or beat off from their Poſt. I was upon the Guard about fifty paces off, and apprehending that the Enemy, exalted with this good ſucceſs, might make a Sally; I immediately went to the Centinel, and directed him to keep cloſe upon his Guard, for fear of any ſurprize, which I very much ſuſpected; and then repaired to my own Poſt. Aſſoon as ever I came there, a Cannon-bullet grazed along a Wall, againſt which the Souldiers of the Guard had ſet their Muſquets an end, and taking them in a row, cut them all off in the middle, and at the ſame time made them all go off. This great noiſe, and the ſurprize of ſo odd an accident, made me retreat ſome few ſteps backward, as men commonly do in the firſt fright: But Providence ſo ordered it, that the conſternation I was in at this ſudden and prodigious Crack, was the occaſion of ſaving my life. For in the very inſtant, came one or two Cannon-bullets more, that took the top of the Wall, and overturn'd it juſt in the place, from whence the firſt had made me retire. God however deſign'd to make me ſenſible that my preſervation was owing to him, by ſuffering me to be overtaken by a great Stone, which falling upon me, broke my Gorget, and bruiſed my Shoulder.

VI. In *September* the ſame year 1630, the King was taken very ill at *Lyons*: And in the time of this ſickneſs Cardinal *Richelieu* had very ill offices done him to his Majeſty. The Cardinal having notice of it, thought his preſence at Court neceſſary, to ſcatter this great ſtorm that was gathering againſt him, by the ſecret practice of ſome very powerful Enemies. He left the Army therefore under the command of the Mareſchals *la Force*, *Schomberg*, and *Marillac*; giving nevertheleſs all the private inſtructions to Monſieur *Schomberg*, who was his particular Friend and Confident; and ſo went ſtraight to *Lyons*. The King, afterwards being recovered, return'd to *Paris*, whither the Cardinal attended him, that his fortune might not run a ſecond riſque by his abſence. While

While our Army were refreſhing themſelves in quarters, I was appointed by the Generals and Controllers, to fit up all the Mills on the River *Mante*; and the Commiſſioner for Victualling being fallen ſick at the ſame time, I receiv'd a Commiſſion to provide the Army with Bread. Going one day to view the Mills that wanted repairing, I ſaw at ſome diſtance a Chapel, which I went up to, not out of devotion, but curioſity. Finding the doors barricado'd, I had a mind to know what was within; ſo I made a Souldier get up, who having broke a piece of Glaſs, diſcover'd a great many Sacks of Corn heaped one upon another. After this ſo fortunate diſcovery, and ſo beneficial to our Army, who were then in want of Bread, I waited on the Generals, and promiſed to furniſh them with a great ſupply of Corn, provided they would but find me a good many Waggons, and a ſufficient Convoy. The next day all the Waggons of the Artillery, and about a hundred and fifty belonging to the Army, were ſent me in, and with them as many Souldiers as I deſired. We loaded, and carry'd off this Corn, all except ſome fifty Sacks, which we could not bring away, becauſe the Country was alarmed, and ſome Troops fell upon our Convoy, which charging the rear of the Baggage, had done us a great deal of miſchief, if we had not made a timely retreat. The Generals order'd me for my recompence the fourth part of a Crown for every Sack: But I can ſafely ſay, that in the truſt committed to me of providing Bread for the Army, I could eaſily have made my ſelf a very great gainer, had I not declin'd induſtriouſly all other advantage, but what I thought fair, and ſtrictly agreeable to the rules of honeſty and honour.

VII. Thus our Army refreſh'd themſelves in the County of *Mante*, when the King was importun'd by Monſieur *de Thoiras*, who held out the Cittadel of *Cazal*, to relieve him againſt the *Spaniſh* Troops, that were ſet down before it. Hereupon he ſent orders to the Generals, that the Army ſhould march with all poſſible ſpeed to the relief of *Cazal*. When this reſolution was taken and made publick, Monſieur *de Schomberg* order'd me to provide Biſket-bread ſufficient for the whole Army for eleven days march; which accordingly I did. And beſides this proviſion, I preſented Monſieur *de Schomberg* with two thouſand Aniſeed Biskets, Monſieur *de la Force* with eight hundred, and Monſieur *de Marillac* as many; and to the Mareſchals *de Camp*, Controllers, and Treaſurers of the Army proportionably.

The whole Army, with all their equipage, being come to the plain of *Raconis*, was drawn into form of Battel, and divided into three bodies, the Van-guard, Main body, and Rear. Thus they continued to march, till we advanced within fourteen or fifteen leagues of *Cazal*; when notice was given, that the Duke of *Savoy* had joyn'd the *Spaniard* to fall upon our Flank. This obliged us to alter the method of our march. The Army was then ranged in three Columns; the Van-guard compoſed the right, the Battalion the middle, and the Rear the left Column. Between the middle and the right Column marcht all the Cannon, Carriages and Ammunition; between the left and the middle, went the Baggage of the Generals and all the Army; ſo that all was hemm'd in. The Horſe went upon the wings, in front and flank, by Squadrons, and in form of Battel. Marching in this manner through all the plains, our Army was continually in a poſture for fighting, either for the *Savoyards*, who were upon our Rear; or the *Spaniards*, that were in Front of us.

But the *Spaniards* would not ſtir out of their Trenches, making themſelves ſure of the Fort of *Cazal*, which they kept cloſe blockt up. When we came to the Village of *Oximeane*, about four ſmall leagues diſtant from *Cazal*, we halted there three days, in expectation of news from Monſieur *de Thoiras*; to whom ſix men had been ſent to give him intelligence of our approach, and to aſſure him of relief, as alſo to agree upon a time, when our Troops ſhould be drawn on, to attack the Trenches. But only one of thoſe ſix that were ſent came back to us again. All meaſures being duly adjuſted, orders were given to lead on ſtrait to *Cazal*. About a league from the Town we halted, to ſtay for the ſignal from the Cittadel, which was to be a great ſmoak, to give us notice that all the Garriſon were ready, and in Arms.

As ſoon as ever the ſign was given, all the Troops advanc'd, being diſtributed into three bodies: Monſieur *la Force* commanded the right wing, Monſieur *Marillac* the left, and Monſieur *Schomberg* the main battel, becauſe this happened to be his day of commanding in chief. Before we came up to the Trenches, he gave us a ſhort ſpeech to this effect, but with abundance of warmth, and ſuch a lively and warlike eloquence as becomes the mouth of a General, and is moſt likely to inſpire an Army with courage. Fellow-Souldiers, (ſaid he) you have now an occaſion of the greateſt honour, and higheſt conſequence that our age hath ever ſeen: I cannot but expect a good event of it, when I obſerve both the courage and zeal of ſo many brave men, whom the King hath entruſted with the honour of his arms; and the confuſion of our Enemies that tremble already, before they engage us. If you have been ſtout formerly, to day you muſt be Heroes. Danger and Death overtake thoſe that fear and fly from them, but the man that can look theſe in the face, and fear nothing, is half a Conqueror already. We have one Army before, and another behind us. They that flee will be killed ſhamefully for Cowards, and they only that take their enemies lives while they loſe their own, will dye like men of honour. I pardon that man from this minute that falls upon me, if he ſees me behave my ſelf like a Coward, but I will not pardon him that runs away himſelf. Come on then ſtoutly, where honour and duty call, and I engage my word to all them, that ſhall ſignalize themſelves in the ſervice of their Prince, to give his Majeſty a true eſtimate of their bravery, and to take care, that their ſervices ſhall be honoured and rewarded as they deſerve.

Theſe few words, with the advantage of that vehemence with which they were uttered, and the courage of thoſe that heard them, made the whole Army go on, as though they were already ſecure of coming off Conquerors. The Forlorn-hope, and thoſe appointed to ſupport them advanc'd. When they were within half Cannon ſhot they went to prayers, as is uſual; and all in deep ſilence expected the diſcharge of a Cannon from the Town, which was to be the ſignal when we ſhould fall upon the Enemy. In the moment we heard it, our Troops advanc'd with incredible reſolution and heat, though we put our ſelves full upon the mouth of the Cannon, that was planted along the Enemies Trenches, and muſt needs make a horrible ſlaughter among us. The Mareſchal *Marillac*, who by his Poſt was the forwardeſt, had began the attack, and we were all in the beſt diſpoſition that ever Army was ſeen, to fight for the honour of our Prince and Country; when all on the ſudden, to the great diſſatisfaction of the whole Army, Monſieur *Mazarin* was diſcovered riding from the Enemies Camp, holding a Sheet of white paper in his hand, and waving

waving it about, for a ſign of a Treaty of Peace, crying aloud, Halt, halt: Stand, ſtand. The Souldiers were ſo enraged to ſee themſelves checkt in the midſt of their Career, that ſome of them were ſo extravagant as to diſcharge ſeveral Muſquets at him. Our Generals had much ado to ſtop them. But at laſt Monſieur *Mazarin* having liberty to draw near, and confer with the Mareſchals of *France*, declared to them, that the *Spaniſh* Generals, had ſent him to preſent them that paper, that they might propoſe what terms of peace they pleaſed. Monſieur *Schomberg* reply'd, that this matter was of ſo great conſequence, that it was fit the Generals on both ſides ſhould perſonally confer together, and that as long as they treated by Meſſengers and Writing only, there would always be ſome ſcruples remaining, which would only be the ſeeds of freſh diſturbances.

VIII. Then Monſieur *Mazarin* return'd to the Enemies Camp, to agree upon a place where they might meet together. One between both Armies was choſen, as the beſt and moſt ſecure. All the Generals on both ſides repaired thither, and there formed the Articles of Treaty as was agreed between them: that is, *That the Town of* Cazal *ſhould be put into the Duke of* Mantua's *hands*; *that the* French *Souldiers ſhould be commanded out, and* Montferrins, *who were the Duke of* Mantua's *Subjects, ſent thither in their room*; *That the Kings Army ſhould draw off from* Montferrat, *but yet keep the poſt where they then were, till ſuch time as they had embarked all the Enemies Cannon and Baggage upon the* Po; *and that the Cittadel ſhould be delivered to a* Montferrin *Officer, ſuch as they ſhould name.* The Articles being mutually ſigned, the Generals parted, after great Complements on both ſides; and our Army retired about a quarter of a league, that they might give the Enemies no Jealouſie; and encamped there that night in their Arms for fear of any ſurprize. The Enemies alſo encamp'd that night in their Trenches, and decamp'd next day very early, that they might paſs the River the ſame day, according to our agreement.

That night there fell ſuch abundance of rain, that the Souldiers Arms were all ſpoyled with it, and they wet to the skin. Wherefore next morning the greateſt part diſperſed themſelves into the Villages all thereabouts to dry themſelves, and left their arms at the Camp in much diſorder. In the mean while Monſieur *Thoiras* came from the Cittadel to our Camp, to wait on the Mareſchals. Monſieur *Schomberg*, who had no great kindneſs for him, ſaid at firſt meeting, *So, Sir, this is the ſecond time*; meaning that he had relieved him once before at the Iſle of *Rhe*, when he was beſieged in *St. Martin*, by *Bouquinquan* the *Engliſh* General. Monſieur *Thoiras* return'd him a civil, but cold anſwer, *Yes, Sir, I am beholden to the King's Arms, and to you, Sir.* Afterwards Monſieur *Schomberg* invited him and the two other Mareſchals to dinner.

While they ſat at Table in the great Hall, with a great many perſons of quality, where I alſo was, and ſaw all that paſt, immediately the *Spaniſh* Generals, *Picolomini* and *Colalto*, had paſſed through our Camp, and came into the Hall. Monſieur *Schomberg* being extremely ſurprized, as well as the reſt of the company, ſaid to them, *Really Gentlemen, I am much concerned that I had no notice of your coming, for I would have rode to meet you.* Whereupon *Picolomini*, who was a man of Wit as well as Courage, reply'd, *Sir, we did it on purpoſe*; *and ſince we could not ſurprize you in War, had a mind to try if we could do it in Peace. But I muſt confeſs, that I my ſelf was a little ſurpriz'd as I came through your Camp: For*

whereas

whereas I muſt own, that tho I have commanded ſeveral Armies, and in ſeveral Countries, I never ſaw any that lookt better, and more orderly, nor more eager of fighting, than yours was yeſterday when drawn up in Battel, and ready to attack our Trenches; yet to day I ſee no body in your Camp, nor any thing but the Souldiers Arms lying up and down in great confuſion and diſorder. Monſieur *Schomberg* tipping us the wink, to go and get the Souldiers to their Colours preſently, anſwer'd *Picolomini* with great readineſs of wit, *This need be no ſurprize to you at all Sir, for I who am a* German *born, when I came to ſettle in* France, *and put my ſelf into the King's ſervice, was in truth at firſt at a loſs, what this humour of the* French *ſhould mean. But when I had been a Commander ſome time, and was uſed to the Genius of the Country, I preſently found, that the* French *were the briskeſt Fellows in the world, when there was occaſion for fighting; and the moſt inclined to eaſe and divert themſelves, when there was none. One good quality they have is, that as they quickly lay down their arms, ſo they quickly ſtand to them again. And that you your ſelf may bear me witneſs that I ſay true, I will immediately ſhew you an inſtance of the* French *temper. I will order the Drum to beat through the Quarters, and dare promiſe you, that before we have gone through the Camp, you ſhall ſee all the Army in good order.*

At the ſame time all the Officers that were there went out, and getting on Horſeback, rode about to get the Souldiers together. In the mean while Monſieur *Schomberg* employed all his dexterity, to hold the *Spaniſh* Geneaals in diſcourſe, and detain them inſenſibly. Afterwards he prevailed with them to take a little walk, and amuſed them a good while without their ſuſpecting any thing. At laſt the diligence and addreſs of the Officers was ſuch, that when *Picolomini* and *Colalto* return'd, they found the Army in excellent order. The Officers with their Pikes in their hands, and the Souldiers their Arms made a very graceful appearance; which the *Spaniſh* Generals were ſo much ſurpriz'd at, that they could ſcarce perſwade themſelves, this was the ſame way they came before, fancying it was rather deluſion upon their ſenſes, ſo much was it beyond any thing they had ever ſeen, either in *Spain*, or any other part of *Europe*. *Picolomini* obſerving this good order, and the courage of the men, could not forbear expreſſing his admiration of it in very complaiſant terms, ſaying to *Schomberg*, That it could not be any diſhonour to be vanquiſht by ſo many brave Souldiers, and ſuch great Commanders. After this they took leave of one another, and return'd each to their own Army.

IX. But what follow'd was not agreeable to all this civility; and our Generals ill conduct had like to have loſt the whole Army. The Treaty of Peace was broken in ſome of the principal Articles; and whereas it was agreed, that our men ſhould give ſafe conduct to all the Enemies Baggage, Cannon and Artillery, as far as the River; the *French* behaved themſelves very unworthily, and in ſuch a manner as all the world condemned, fell to pillaging the Ropes, Bridles, Horſe-collars, and the reſt of the Baggage that belonged to the *Spaniſh* Army. And whereas we had engag'd, as I ſaid before, to draw all the *French* out of the Cittadel, and put *Montferrins* in their Rooms; they ſet men on work night and day to make *Montferrin* Habits, and ſo many Taylors were employed on this occaſion, that in four and twenty hours time near eight hundred of theſe Habits were made, in which they dreſt up as many *French* Souldiers, and after having taught them two or three words of the language of the Country,

Country, put them into *Cazal*, under pretence of ſo many *Montferrins*. Thus by means of their Coats with Hanging Sleeves, and the help of theſe words, *Seignor ſe*, *Seignor la*! they poſſeſt themſelves of the Caſtle; and, which helpt to conceal the cheat yet more, they mingled ſome real *Montferrins*, whom they had bribed, among theſe *French* Souldiers, that ſo one part might keep all the reſt from being diſcovered.

Nay, they went farther ſtill, and fail'd in making good the chief Article of all, which was that concerning the Governour, who was appointed (as I ſaid) by the common conſent of both parties. For, reſolving to remove him from this Poſt, upon pretence that he was a *Spaniard* in his heart, they chous'd and ſurpriz'd him as you ſhall hear. Two days after the Enemy had paſt the *Po*, with their Baggage and Ordnance, our Army divided it ſelf into two bodies. Eight thouſand Foot, and ſome Squadrons of Horſe paſt the River alſo, without any Cannon, at *Libourne*; the remainder of the Foot, and all the Horſe that ſtaid behind with the Cannon, for greater ſecurity, march'd along the River ſide, without paſſing it, fearing leſt the Enemy ſhould make any attempt upon our Army, that was on the ſame ſide with theirs, and not caring to clog it with the whole Train of Ordnance, which would have made their retreat difficult. In the mean time Monſieur *Marillac*, who had reſolv'd to ſurprize the new Governour of the Caſtle, when our Army, except the Generals and ſome few Troops, were gone over, contrived to invite the Governour to Supper. When he was come out of the Caſtle, the Souldiers, diſguis'd like *Montferrins*, had orders to change the word, and to deny him entrance at his return from Supper, as not knowing him, and he not knowing the word. The Governour then after having ſupp'd with Monſieur *Marillac*, who ſhewed him great civility, took his leave full of ſatisfaction, to go back to his Caſtle. But he was aſtoniſht at the complement the Centinel gave him at the Gate. For as ſoon as he heard him he bid him ſtand, and ask'd who was there. The Governour, ſaid he. The word, reply'd the Centinel? The Governour having told him the word, which himſelf gave before he went out, the Centinel cry'd out, Stand where you are, you *French* Traitor, would you ſeize the Caſtle? if you come here I will ſhoot you. The Governour was in a ſtrange confuſion; he heard himſelf call'd Traitor, and *French-man*; but he preſently perceived it was a *French-man* that betray'd him. He bawls and rages againſt *France*, calls us treacherous Villains, Knaves, and all that; but the more he raged, the more the Centinel cryes, that he was a Traitor, and charged him not to come there. He repairs immediately to our Generals, who after they had chous'd him with ſo much civility, anſwer'd him as civilly, That they could not be reſponſible for the treachery of the *Montferrins*, that he muſt make his complaint to the Duke his Maſter, ſince it was into his hands that the King had delivered the Town. But the Governour, who ſaw through the meaning of this anſwer, was not miſtaken in the matter, and immediately writ after the *Spaniſh* Generals, who were not above two or three leagues off, to acquaint them how the *French* had kept him out of the Caſtle.

X. Mean while our Generals having paſt the River to joyn their Army, which waited for them at a Village about a league off, made great haſte, and advanc'd with all their Troops as far as *Libourne*. On the other ſide, the Enemy underſtanding the breach of faith we had been guilty of to the Governour of *Cazal*, and being enrag'd beſides at the plunder of their

Baggage, resolv'd to fall in upon us, when we were weakned by the division of our Troops, and began their march to this purpose. But Monsieur *Mazarin*, who performed the part of a Mediator, and had procur'd this peace, plaid the *Spaniards* a true *Italian* trick, and came riding full speed to our Camp at *Libourn* about midnight. I happen'd that night to be upon the Guard on that side of the Camp where he came, and the Centinel having stopt him, and hearing the name of *Mazarin*, immediately call'd me to him. I came presently and saw it was Monsieur *Mazarin*, who with great passion cried out, Ah, Sir, you are all lost, the Enemies are within a mile, and are coming to fall upon you with their whole Army. Give orders to sound to arms throughout the whole Camp immediately. I answered him with some kind of indifference; *Sir, we have no Commission to sound to arms without the Generals order, his Tent is but just by, and I will conduct you thither if you think fit.* However I took the advantage of this Intelligence, and sent to give notice in all the quarters, that they should be ready; and in the mean time I waited on Monsieur *Mazarin* to Mareschal *Schomberg*'s Tent. He threw himself about his neck, and made him this Complement, *Ah Sir, must I embrace the man now, that I shall see dead within this hour? How so, Sir,* said Monsieur *Schomberg, methinks you have a mind to try if you can fright us.* Monsieur *Mazarin* reply'd, *I have no design to fright you Sir, but to preserve your life, and the whole Army; for your Enemies are coming to charge you, and are not above a mile off.* They were really however two leagues distant, but he had a mind to alarm us the more, that we might make greater haste. Monsieur *Schomberg* reply'd with the indifference of a great General, *If we can but see them when they come, we shall not fear them; but yet it is fit we should take care to secure our selves as well as we can.* Immediately he ordered to sound an alarm through the whole Camp; and as many of us Officers as were there, ran about to carry his orders; so that in a very little time our Army was ready for the march.

XI. They call'd a Council of War however, to debate what was fit to be done, and it was determin'd that our Army not being in a condition to stand so great a shock, we ought to provide for a retreat. It went against the grain though to see our selves forc'd to flee from the *Spaniard*; but at last it was judg'd that a Retreat is never dishonourable, when opposition is manifestly hazardous. Monsieur *Schomberg* commanded the Van-guard, and the two other Mareschals the Rear. Our whole Army was drawn up in Battalia, and kept this order during the whole Retreat, because we had two leagues of wide Champaign to go over. Monsieur *Marlissy*, Captain of the Guards, commanded the Forlorn-hope, and under him a Lieutenant and my self commanded those of the Forlorn that were neareſt the Enemy. This Lieutenant and I had a great quarrel; for I would command alone, as being his ancient, and he would needs command with me in the quality of Lieutenant; telling me besides, that if I happened to be kill'd, there would no body to command, which would occasion much disorder, and might expose those first Troops to great slaughter. Our stiffness in maintaining each his post, flew so high, that we had like to have come to blows, so blind and so furious is ambition, even in the most dangerous circumstances. The Generals coming in to compose this difference, appointed that I should command the Lieutenant; but that the Lieutenant too should command under me, which was the regular way, and put an end to the whole dispute.

When

When we were got a good way in this plain, I ſpy'd a great way off four Horſe-men making full ſpeed toward us. I ſent to acquaint the Generals, who came to the head of the Forlorn-hope to wait for them; who when they were come up within a Trumpet, told the Mareſchals of *France*, That the *Spaniſh* Generals had ſent to tell them, that they were much injured and provoked by our breach of Articles, and that they were coming with the *Spaniſh* Army to demand ſatisfaction. Our Generals replyed, That ſince they thought themſelves wrong'd, and intended to revenge it, they alſo were ready to do them reaſon in a fair fight; That for their parts they were ſo far from breaking the Agreement, that they were making it good at that very time, by drawing off from *Montferrat*, as one of the Articles enjoyn'd; that their march was not now a running away, but that of gallant Souldiers who return'd Conquerors; that the *Spaniards* themſelves had dealt unfaithfully, who not daring ſome few days ago, to ſtand the aſſault of the *French* Army, were now attempting to fall upon their Rear, when they were divided; that this diſcover'd their Treachery and Cowardice, ſince it was manifeſt that they made the Peace before, only becauſe they thought themſelves too weak; and broke it now, only becauſe they thought themſelves too ſtrong for us. That notwithſtanding our unequal number, would make them know, that a few *French* are able to deal with a great many *Spaniards*; and that Courage, not numbers, made men Conquerors. Thus they drill'd on theſe four Horſe-men with ſuch bluſtering words as theſe, fitter indeed for a *Spaniard* than a *French-man*, who commonly loves to talk big of what he has done, more than what he ſhould do.

All this while our Troops continu'd marching, and made all the ſpeed that poſſibly they could, notwithſtanding all our General's brave words, which might amuſe thoſe Horſe-men, but could not put a ſtop to our Army, that knew it ſelf too feeble. At length, having had enough of our Generals eloquence, they took leave, and return'd back as faſt as they came. At the ſame time our Army were order'd to mend their pace; and the Van-guard being come into a dale to a River call'd *Doni-Balta*, over which there was a Bridge, they paſt as quick as they could to make way for the Rear againſt they ſhould come up. On the other ſide, the Rear being at ſome diſtance, began, as they came up a little riſing ground, to diſcover by degrees ſome five and thirty or forty Squadrons of Horſe, coming on at a great rate. We after ſaw more and more of the Enemies drawing up to us, who made ſure of cutting us in pieces, and lookt upon us as ſacrifices to their revenge; as indeed it was impoſſible, that ſo few as we were ſhould ſtand out againſt ſo many Troops. But they were mightily diſappointed in their expectation, and we gained time enough to leave the River I mention'd between us and them. Which happen'd after a very odd manner, and by a ſmall ſtratagem that I contriv'd, and which theſe great Generals of *Spain* were not able to diſcover.

XII. When our Rear was come into the road by which they muſt go down into the dale, at the entrance into which there was an old ruinous houſe: We taking it for granted that we were loſt, and eſpecially thoſe of us that were the hindmoſt, and were almoſt cloſe to the Enemy; I made ſome ſtout Souldiers and a Serjeant leap all on a ſudden into this Cottage, and order'd them, that when the Enemy were about forty or fifty paces from them, they ſhould diſcharge upon them, ſhooting leiſurely one after another; which I was in ſome hopes might a little ſtop, or it may be,

be, divert thoſe that purſued us, upon a ſurprize they might have, that the danger was greater than in truth it was. This contrivance ſucceeded very well: For the Enemy coming on, and our Muſqueteers making ſeveral ſhot ſucceſſively, as I had directed them, all that part of the Horſe halted immediately; and fearing that there might be among thoſe ruines a great number of men, that might put a ſtop to their march, becauſe they were loath to give our Army time to file off, they never attackt this ſuppoſed Guard, but immediately wheeled away to the left to fall upon us at another place. But the fetching this compaſs was a greater hinderance to them than they lookt for, and occaſioned all our Rear's getting off ſafe, who by this means gained time to paſs the River, ſome by the Bridge, and ſome at a Mill, where they waded only up to the waſte. The Muſqueteers whom I had poſted in the old houſe, ſeeing the Enemy's Army gone off, came on to joyn our Rear, and only one young Fellow ſtaid behind, who was loaded with a Sheep that he had caught up. Monſieur *Schomberg* made him come over too with the reſt, and telling me in raillery, that we had not left ſo much as a Sheep behind us, embrac'd me very kindly for the good ſervice I had done the Army. He went over the laſt of them all, followed by me only, and immediately we broke up the Bridge after us. The Enemies came up almoſt the minute we got over, and ſhewed themſelves on the other ſide of the River. But finding this bar betwixt us, and not being able to come to blows, they reveng'd themſelves upon us with reproaches and hard words. They made one furious diſcharge however, which made a terrible noiſe in the Vale, but did little execution, there not being above five and twenty or thirty of our men killed and wounded, for a monument of ſo noble and honourable a retreat.

Our Army then marched on toward *Fouijs*, having left a ſtrong guard upon the River to hinder the Enemies croſſing it, which they attempted to do that very night, but were ſo briskly repulſed both by the Guard, and a Relief ſent to them from our Army, which as yet was got but a little way off, that they were forced to give over their deſign, and return ſhamefully to the place from whence they had poſted ſo faſt. Our men alſo came up again to joyn the body of the Army, which went into Quarters at *Fouijs* and the Towns thereabouts.

'Twas in the Caſtle of this Town, which belongs to three Counts of that Countey, that Mareſchal *Marillac* was arreſted ſome days after by a ſtrange turn of fortune, or to ſpeak more like a Chriſtian, by the judgment of God, which ſhould make thoſe men tremble, who look upon their fortune as fixt and ſure. There are in this Caſtle three or four pretty Bed-chambers, in each of which each Mareſchal of *France* took up his Lodging

---

The End of the Firſt Book.

BOOK

BOOK II.

Cardinal Richelieu *in disgrace; he is restor'd to favour again. The Mareschal* de Marillac *is confin'd and condemn'd. The Battel of* Castelnau-d'Arry. *The Duke of* Montmorency *is taken in the Fight. An Account of his Process and Death. The Siege of* Nancy. *Some discourse between the Duke of* Lorrain, *and the Sieur* de Pontis. *That Town is reduc'd to Submission.*

I. DUring this whole War that I have been treating of, *Mary* of *Medicis*, the Queen Mother, *Marillac* Keeper of the Seals, and some other Lords, removed to *Paris*, and there by private intrigues form'd a very strong party against Cardinal *Richelieu*, to remove him from Court. It would require a long discourse, to unravel this great mystery, and relate all the particulars of it, which indeed were a subject for a large History. I need only tell you then in short, that the Cardinals enemies prevailed so far with the King, as to forbid him the Court. The Keeper of the Seals dispatcht a Courier instantly, to his brother the Mareschal *de Marillac*, to inform him of this disgrace, of the man whom they lookt upon as an Enemy to them in particular, as well as to the whole Kingdom in general.

This news gave mighty satisfaction to the Mareschal, and fill'd him full of great expectations. He publickly declared his joy to the two other Mareschals of *France*, his joynt Brothers in Commission; one of whom, Monsieur *Schomberg*, who was particularly dear to the Cardinal, was very melancholy, that he had received no Letters himself, and suspected that his fortune too might be tottering, by the fall of his old great Patron. I was that very day upon the Guard in *Fouijs* Castle, where I told you our Generals had taken up their Quarters; and continuing upon duty the next day too, and the night after that, was an Eye-witness of all that passed upon this occasion. Monsieur *Schomberg*, thinking of nothing but his own disfavour, which he judg'd inseparable from that of the Cardinal, would not sup that day. And the Mareschal *de Marillac* for his part, fancying now that he should be the greatest man in *France*, fill'd his imagination with vast preferments, which he promis'd himself shortly, and had in some measure tasted of already. But we shall see in the person of this Lord, one of the terriblest instances imaginable, how unstable all humane affairs are, and how empty the projects of the wise men of this world.

II. Cardinal *Richelieu*, who was lookt upon as one perfectly subdu'd by the party that hated him, and past all hopes of rising any more, deceiv'd all his Enemies in an instant, and by one of the strangest turns of policy that ever was known, trod all those under foot that insulted over him. He turn'd all the effect of their malice upon themselves, and took advantage of the easiness of that very Prince whom they had disposed to ruine him, to get the better of them again. His Friend, the Cardinal *de la Vallette* being acquainted with his disgrace advised him to take courage, and not let matters go off so. He perswaded him to go wait upon the King once more, and make another tryal how far he could prevail upon him; he argued with him, that Kings being the images of God, did in this resemble their divine original, that they loved men should importunately address to them, and that nothing but perseverance could carry the point. Cardinal *Richelieu* followed this politick advice of his friend, and couragiously went to the King: and making use of all his cunning upon this occasion, and arming himself with all his resolution, to do violence as it were to his Prince, he accosted him to this effect. *I am come, Sir,* (said he) *to make an offer of my head to your Majesty, that you may dispose of my person as you think good, if I do not prove by undeniable arguments, nay, by Papers of unquestionable authority, that the Mareschal* de Marillac, *and*

his Brother the Keeper, and ſome others have deſigns againſt your perſon. That the only reaſon why they are Enemies to me, is becauſe they are ſo to you, Sir; That they load me with falſe accuſations, meerly becauſe I ſupport the intereſt of your Majeſty, againſt their wicked attempts; and that my quarrel is not that of a ſingle or private perſon, but ſuch as all the State is concern'd in. They know very well, Sir, that I ſee through all their diſguiſes, and that I make uſe of your Royal Authority to diſappoint their treaſonable projects, and therefore would fain take me from about your Perſon and Court, and drive me out of your Kingdom, that they may more ſecurely abuſe your goodneſs, while you take them for faithful Servants, but while they are in truth hatching nothing but Treaſon and Falſhood. If your Majeſty will give me leave to inform you, what I can do of my own certain knowledge, you will ſcarcely believe, what really I could very hardly have believed my ſelf, and yet all but too true. You will ſee that my Enemies are privately contriving to depoſe you, and that their Cabals ſtrike at nothing leſs than the ſecuring your Royal Perſon; that ſo when they have ſhut you up in a Monaſtery, (inſtances whereof we may find in our own Hiſtory) they may get the Government into their own hands.

III. Theſe and many other ſuch expreſſions deliver'd with an air of aſſurance, and by a perſon who had gained an abſolute maſtery of the King's breaſt, perſwaded ſo ſtrongly, or rather indeed confounded this Prince to ſo great a degree, who (as all the world knows) was naturally of a very jealous and diſtruſtful temper, that he gave the Cardinal leave, to cauſe the Mareſchal *de Marillac*, and his Brother the Keeper to be apprehended. The latter was impriſon'd immediately; and a Courier preſently diſpatch'd to the Mareſchal *de Schomberg*, with orders from the King to ſecure the Mareſchal *de Marillac*. This Courier uſed ſuch wonderful expedition, that tho he came out two days after the former, which brought the news of Cardinal *Richelieu*'s diſgrace, yet he reacht the Camp the next day after him. Monſieur *Schomberg* at the reading the order from the King, was infinitely ſurpriz'd, to ſee the whole face of affairs at Court ſo prodigiouſly chang'd, and in ſo ſhort a time. He was well pleaſed to find his own hopes and fortunes ſo quickly ſettled again, but much concern'd to ſee this done by the ruine of his friend, the Mareſchal *de Marillac*. He acquainted the Mareſchal *de la Force* with the command ſent him from the King; and calling me to him, he bad me go fetch Monſieur *de Montigny*, the firſt Captain, and all the other Officers of the Regiment of Guards, to draw up my Company in the Caſtle-Court, and then to take up the Draw-bridge. I perform'd what he had given me in charge without delay; all the Officers came into the Caſtle, my Company, which kept guard, into the Court; and the Bridges were all drawn up. All this preparation might have given the Mareſchal *de Marillac* ſome jealouſy, had not this been muſter-day; and he himſelf declared his opinion the day before, that all the Officers ſhould be ſhut up in the Caſtle to prevent the foiſting in of falſe Muſters, ſo that he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of any thing at all.

We came all together into the Mareſchal *de Schomberg*'s Chamber, and Monſieur *Marillac* with us at the ſame time, who only congratulated him upon the receiving a Courier, and deſir'd he would ſhew him his Letters, that he would go to Dinner, and when that was over, come again to ſee the news. Monſieur *Schomberg* deſir'd him not to give himſelf that trouble, and aſſur'd him he would come himſelf to his Apartment, and communicate his Letters to him, and then waited on him half way to his Lodgings. The Mareſchal *de Marillac* ſeeing my Company below in the Court, ſaid to Mareſchal *Schomberg*, without ſuſpecting any thing, 'I ſee you have taken care to prevent falſe Muſters, it is very well done indeed. So he went to Dinner, for Monſieur *Schomberg* would not have him apprehended then, becauſe he had no opportunity of imparting his order to the Officers. He came back therefore into his Chamber with us all, and after having obſerv'd, whether there might not be ſome body by, who was a particular Confident of Mr. *Marillac*'s, he ſhut the door, and ſpake to us after this manner. *Gentlemen, the King hath done you the honour to intruſt you with the Glory and the Security of his Arms, and now he intruſts you with the Safety of his Perſon and Kingdom. I am ſenſible the Order I have received from his Majeſty will be a great ſurprize to you all, but it is no part of our buſineſs to pry too curiouſly into the ſecrets of a Prince's pleaſure; all that we have to do is to reſpect his Commands, and to execute his Orders. The King hath commanded me to ſecure Monſieur* Marillac's *perſon. It is enough that I let you know what he would have done, and I know you are too loyal not to obey him, eſpecially in a matter of this conſequence.* Afterwards that the buſineſs might not be ſuſpected, and be the more effectually done, he bad us make ſome complaints at the going down from his Chamber, as if he always kept back our Muſters, and refus'd to pay us. It's

It's impoſſible for me to expreſs the amazement and concern I was in at this bad news. For Monſieur *Marillac* being a perſon whom I lov'd and honour'd very particularly, and one who, I may take upon me to ſay, did me the honour to have a kindneſs for me; my very heart was ready to burſt when I heard this order for apprehending a perſon for whom I had an infinite reſpect, and ſaw that my duty made it neceſſary for me to have any hand in his ruine. But there was no remedy, I muſt contain my ſelf, and yield to the powers above me, my poſt obliging me to obey the King's comand. We went down then all together out of the Mareſchal *de Schomberg*'s Lodgings, every one complaining loudly, that it was a miſerable caſe to have a man of that temper to deal with, that continually promis'd us pay, and we never could get any thing but words; That kept men in a diſtant Country, and would not ſuffer them to come near their King; that after all, there was nothing like being about one's own Maſter. Theſe complaints they made, and ſeveral ſuch like, which he had ordered them to diſguiſe the ſame buſineſs withal.

IV. When the Mareſchal *de Marillac* had din'd, Monſieur *Schomberg* and *la Force* went with us all to his Chamber, and he coming to meet us, with a very pleaſant and gay countenance, askt what news from Court? but alas! he heard very bad news for him, when Monſieur *Schomberg* preſenting him the Kings Letters that contained the order for apprehending him, deſired he would give himſelf the trouble of reading thoſe Letters. One may eaſily imagine what an operation ſo ſtrange and ſudden a turn of Fortune would have upon a mans mind; but for all that, it is impoſſible to repreſent the violence of his paſſion, which indeed put him quite beſide himſelf, when he read the crimes falſely laid to his charge, and upon which he was commanded to be ſecured. For then forgetting himſelf utterly, and not knowing where he was, he loſt all fear and reſpect, and fell to railing againſt the Cardinal in a moſt furious manner, ſaying aloud, tho without naming him, That he that told the King thoſe things, was a Raſcal, a Traytor, and a Perjur'd Villain.

The Mareſchal *de la Force* ſeeing him ſo enraged, and thinking this paſſion might turn to his prejudice, if the Cardinal ſhould come to know it, endeavoured to ſoften him, telling him very wiſely, *Come Sir, matters are not deſperate yet: You know I my ſelf had once the misfortune to be in Arms againſt my Prince, and yet he was ſo gracious to pardon me, and ſince that to truſt me with the Command of his Armies. If you are innocent, your Innocence will by this means be render'd more conſpicuous, and honourable; and if you be guilty, your Offence cannot be greater than the Clemency of the King, and his diſpoſition to forgive, if you do but throw your ſelf at his Majeſty's feet, and implore his Mercy, as I did.* But nothing was able to ſtop the tranſports of his juſt indignation. And tho I cannot approve the exceſs of his paſſion, yet at the ſame time I muſt needs own, that if it were allowable upon any occaſion, to repel a falſe accuſation with violence, this was ſuch a caſe; when a man of Mareſchal *Marillac*'s quality and honour, who had always preſerv'd an untainted Loyalty to his Prince, ſaw himſelf maliciouſly charged with attempts upon his Liberty, his Crown, and his Life. And theſe accuſations, of which he knew himſelf perfectly innocent, put him quite paſt his ſenſes, and carry'd him to ſpeak without any conſideration or regard to perſons, whoſe intereſt and power at leaſt he ought to have ſtood in fear of.

Mareſchal *Schomberg* ſeeing that there was no bringing him to any temper, and not being able to ſee him any longer in that exceſs of trouble and deſpair, was about to withdraw, and took his leave, telling him, that he could not put a better guard about his perſon, than that the King honoured with the ſecuring of his own. But in regard he had his Sword on ſtill, Monſieur *de Montigny* told Monſieur *Schomberg*, that it was neceſſary he ſhould be deſired to take it off, and ſo put himſelf into the condition of a Priſoner: Then Monſieur *Schomberg* whiſper'd him in his ear, that ſince the Kings order muſt be ſubmitted to, it were well if he would of his own accord ſtep into a Wardrobe juſt by, and lay aſide his Sword; which he did immediately. But if he had had his wits about him, he might eaſily have made his eſcape out of a Window in that Room, under which there was a load of Hay, and he need not have leapt down above ſix or ſeven foot at moſt. But he was ſo full of trouble, and ſo utterly paſt all ſenſe, that he thought of nothing but the injuſtice they had done, without ever conſidering how to ſave himſelf from it. I being, as I ſaid, upon the Guard at that time, guarded him the remaining part of that day, and all the night following.

V. The

V. The Marquis of *Autichy*, who was his relation, having obtain'd leave to come ſpeak with him, after ſome diſcourſe, the Mareſchal deſired him to go write to ſeveral perſons, but not ſeal his Letters for fear of giving any ſuſpicion. In the mean while he pray'd me to go ask Mareſchal *Schomberg*, whether he would pleaſe to incloſe in his Pacquet a Letter, which he was deſirous to write to the King. Monſieur *Schomberg* after having conſider'd of it a little while, anſwer'd, That he would do it with all his heart, but in regard the Courier belonged to the Cardinal, he durſt not engage it would come to the King's hand. He ſaid to me afterwards, ſpeaking of Monſieur *Marillac*, *I thought him paſſionate I confeſs before, but could never have imagined it to this degree. How poor a thing is man when left to himſelf! His Judgment always fails him when he ſtands moſt in need of it.* But without queſtion any other man in his circumſtances would have felt what a ſhock ſo heavy and ſo unexpected a blow as this of Monſieur *Marillac*'s can give to the móſt reſolute man in the world. 'Tis a much eaſier matter to find faults with thoſe lamentations and complaints, which exceſs of grief forces from the mouth of others, than to bear up with patience and temper under ones own. But yet this great man, 'tis true, was guilty of a great fault upon this occaſion, and did by no means behave himſelf to his own advantage. For the very Courier hearing part of what he ſpoke with too much heat againſt the Cardinal, no queſtion but he helpt to make matters worſe with his Eminence, who to be ſure was very particularly inform'd of all theſe things.

Well, I went to return Monſieur *Schomberg*'s anſwer, about the Letter Monſieur *Marillac* deſir'd to write to the King, and he compoſed a very handſom, and very eloquent one of four pages long; for Grief always expreſſes it ſelf well. In this Letter he told the King, That his Enemies made it their buſineſs to ruine him upon the account of the good ſervice he had done his Majeſty, which therefore made them hate him: That it is the very character of Envy, to fall upon the moſt commendable actions of them that it looks upon with an evil eye; That it endeavours to find evil in good, darkneſs in light, and turns vertue into vice; That it inſpires thoſe that are acted by it, to accuſe and murder the innocent with a greater degree of confidence, than theſe innocent perſons themſelves can attain to for their own vindication; but that he hoped, the King's wiſdom and juſtice would not ſuffer him to be prepoſſeſt by the malice of his Enemies; and that on the contrary, he would pleaſe to take a true eſtimate of him and his Loyalty, and judge how inviolably he was devoted to his ſervice, from the publick teſtimonies he had given of it all along, and not by the falſe prejudices of his Slanderers and Accuſers: That therefore he caſt himſelf wholly into the arms of his mercy, who had always been a Protector of the Innocent. That, for his part, he could not believe that his Majeſty, after having done him the honour of a moſt gracious Letter but the day before, ſhould ſo very quickly change his opinion of him to that degree; that in this he plainly diſcerned the working of his Enemies, who betrayed themſelves, and began already to uſurp his Royal Authority, at the very inſtant that they accuſed him of attempts againſt it. Several other paſſages there were, which I cannot now recollect, and after having given it me to read, as to one whom he was pleaſed to honour with his particular favour, he deſir'd I would carry it to Monſieur *Schomberg*, that he might peruſe it too. Monſieur *Schomberg* when he had read it, gave it me again to carry back to Monſieur *Marillac*, and to beg that he would make it ſhort, for fear that the King ſeeing ſo much of it ſhould not trouble himſelf to read it. Monſieur *Marillac* according to his advice ſhortned it, and then ſent it him again. But Monſieur *Schomberg* in civility would not read it, ſaying, That he was ſatisfied Monſieur *Marillac* had ſaid nothing, but what was agreeable to the reſpect due to the King: which pleaſed him very much, and put him upon extolling Monſieur *Schomberg* for this great civility to him.

VI. All night long he never once ſhut his eyes, and did nothing but walk about, cry out, bewail himſelf, write Letters, and then tear them to pieces again; ſo violent was the diſorder of his mind. He reflected perpetually upon the horrid malice of his Enemies, and could ſcarce perſwade himſelf, that there was, either any Wretches ſo vile as to put about ſuch calumnies againſt an innocent perſon, or any Princes ſo credulous and eaſy, as to be poſſeſt with them. Sometimes he did not know where to lay the fault, and after many reflections upon the reſpect he owed the King, the Cardinal's pique againſt him, and his own innocence, he lookt up at laſt to the Divine Providence,

Providence, as the ſupreme Diſpoſer of all humane events, and humbly beſought the Juſtice and Mercy of God. In ſhort, I cannot expreſs how many, how various, how violent motions, even to a degree of Convulſions appeared in his body and mind both, that fatal night next after his diſgrace. Then he felt plainly, that his Greatneſs weighed him down, that his Eminent Poſt only ſerved to increaſe his misfortune, and make it more remarkable; and in ſhort, that his innocence had never been accuſed, if his condition had not made him a mark for Envy.

I confeſs the ſeeing a perſon, for whom I had an exceeding great reſpect, and had the honour to be beloved by him, in theſe deplorable circumſtances, rent my very heart to pieces that night, when I was preſent at all he ſaid and did upon this occaſion. And, committing great violence upon my ſelf to contain, and not daring in point of prudence to give any vent of that which oppreſt me within, I found my paſſion grow upon me the more, the more I ſtrove to ſtifle it. Then ſure I had time enough to make many reflections, and to ſee clearly by ſeveral inſtances, how little the beſt and moſt fixed fortunes in this world are to be depended upon. A Cardinal in diſgrace one day, and in favour again the next, and the hopes of all his Enemies defeated and overturn'd in an inſtant, were ſubjects large enough to furniſh me with arguments, to pall my appetite of favour at Court. But the time for effecting this was not yet come, and indeed it very ſeldom happens, that what we ſee come upon other people is apply'd home to our own ſelves. The mind obſerves the accident, and conſiders it after a ſpeculative kind of way, and then ſtops there, and ſeldom goes any farther. I could dwell for ever on this ſubject, which yet I cannot to this day ſo much as once think upon without great concern. All that I need add more of it here is, that this great Mareſchal two or three days after he was apprehended, was carry'd almoſt as far as *Turin*, and that from thence he was ſent under a Guard of five hundred Horſe to *Paris*.

VII. It was now about the end of the year 1630, and an Indictment being preferr'd againſt him, by the King's, or rather by Cardinal *Richelieu*'s order, they ſet up at *Ruel* a Chamber of Commiſſioners choſen out of ſeveral Parliaments for this purpoſe. But the Tryal was not brought to an iſſue till 1632. I ſhall not take upon me to relate here the particulars of what paſt in this important affair. The publick News, and Memoirs, that are in every bodies hands, tell us, that if the opinion of ſome of his Judges, who till then never were thought incompetent ones, had prevailed, the concluſion of this affair had been as much for his honour, as at laſt it prov'd fatal; and his Enemies would have had reaſon to be aſham'd for the aſſault they had made upon his Innocence. But God in his Juſtice, which Monſieur *Marillac* himſelf found reaſon to adore, permitted him to be over-power'd by the majority of his other Judges.

Near the end of his Tryal, about a fortnight or three weeks before his Condemnation, when he was guarded at *Ruel*, by Monſieur *des Reaux*, Lieutenant of the *Guards du Corps*, whom he had no affection for, the King order'd me to go and guard him. I had much ado to bring my ſelf to comply with this, dreading what might come on't, becauſe I knew the Cardinal hated me, and that he knew I had a particular eſteem for Monſieur *Marillac*. For being to deal with ſo vigilant and ſo formidable an Enemy, I knew very well, that if I fail'd in the leaſt punctilio of my duty, he would be ſure to take all advantages to ruine me. I reſolved therefore to do all that ever I could for declining this Commiſſion, and earneſtly entreated his Majeſty, that I might not be removed from about his perſon, to take the charge of guarding a Mareſchal of *France*, who had often commanded me in the Army. I added moreover, that all the world was ſenſible he had ſome kindneſs for me, and therefore my Enemies would be ſure to keep a ſtrict eye upon me, and I ſhould be expoſed to all the miſchief their malice could do me. *Why, what are you afraid of*, ſaid the King, *is it not I that ſend you? Do you ſuſpect your ſelf, that you ſhall not be true to me?* I anſwer'd, That I had rather dye a thouſand deaths than be falſe to my duty; that this was no part of my fear, but that I was afraid of what his Majeſty knew better than my ſelf I had good grounds to fear; and at the ſame time I threw my ſelf at his Majeſty's feet. The King reply'd mildly, and with a great deal of goodneſs, *Go, go your way man, and be obedient; be true to me, and fear nothing.* So I was forc'd to go.

The Mareſchal *de Marillac* profeſt himſelf much comforted to ſee me, and to be under the cuſtody of a man he lov'd. I found him full of all the confidence and reſolution, that a good Conſcience uſes to inſpire men with. He would often ſay to me, *What can they convict me of, except having been a moſt faithful ſervant to the King? Let*

them but do me Juſtice, and I am ſure they cannot hurt me. He drew up all his Writings himſelf, and was ſo aſſured of his own Innocence, that he thought it abſolutely impoſſible they ſhould condemn him to death. I declin'd diſcourſing with him alone as much as I could, that I might give no ſuſpicion of any private correſpondence with him. In the mean while, the Commiſſioners ſent for him before them ſeveral times, to examine him upon ſeveral Articles exhibited againſt him. One day as I was conducting him into their Chamber, he leaned upon my arm, and with a ſmiling countenance ſaid to me, *Look you Sir, all that I can accuſe my ſelf of, is not fault enough to whip a Page for.* But he was much aſtoniſht, when coming into the Chamber, and finding how his Judges ſtood inclined, (who made what his Enemy had a mind to have done the meaſure of their proceedings) he ſaw that he was to expect nothing better than a Scaffold. From that minute he was ſo alter'd, that one could ſcarce know him when he came out of the Chamber. Death was plainly to be ſeen in his face and eyes: His mind was full of nothing but this horrid Injuſtice that triumph'd over Innocence; and his body grew ſo weak from that inſtant, that he could ſcarce ſtand. He lean'd upon me, and cry'd aloud, but alas! in a voice very diſtant from that at his going in, *Ah! where is the God of truth, that knows my innocence! Lord, where is thy Providence, and thy Juſtice! make haſte my God to help me.* Nothing can be imagin'd more moving, and any one may judge, whether I was not melted with it. But I was oblig'd to put a good face upon the matter, and ſtifle that grief within me, with which I was ready to burſt.

I had uſed to go and acquaint the King from time to time of all that paſt, and when I ſaw the Mareſchal ſentenc'd to death, I took occaſion to beſeech his Majeſty, that he would pleaſe to diſcharge me from guarding him any longer, for that I could not bring my ſelf to conduct a perſon to Execution, for whom I could moſt willingly have laid down my own life. The King very graciouſly condeſcended to my requeſt: So that I ſhall ſay little of his death, the particulars whereof have been carefully collected and publiſh'd: I only add, that notwithſtanding all the heat and paſſion of his temper, and all the confidence he had from the knowledge of his own innocence, yet at laſt he ſubmitted with an entire reſignation to the Divine Juſtice, which knows how to uſe the injuſtice of men, when he ſees fit, and make that an inſtrument of bringing about his own decrees. And then being ſenſible, with all due humility, that God intended this publick death for a mercy to him, thereby to chaſtiſe his ſecret faults; in this ſenſe he ſuffer'd this laſt puniſhment, and all the ſhame that attended it, having his Head ſtruck off in the common place of Execution, and amidſt a vaſt throng of People. Nay not only that, but he endur'd the barbarous inſults of his Enemies too, whoſe malice ſeem'd ſcarce ſatisfied with his death: For, which is very odd, when Cardinal *Richelieu* was told of the Mareſchal's Condemnation, he could not be of opinion, that the matter ought to have gone ſo far neither; but it was likely the Judges ſaw further into the caſe than other people. Thus after having uſed his utmoſt endeavours to deſtroy the man he hated, he would appear to juſtify himſelf, by caſting upon the Judges all the odium of a Sentence, which every one knew was owing to him alone. And that which muſt needs ſeem the greateſt, and moſt intolerable hardſhip to the Mareſchal *de Marillac*, is, that the Cardinal's ſpeaking of his death with all that coldneſs and indifferency, after having been ſo eager and warm, both in wiſhing and procuring it, could not be ſuppoſed to come from any thing but a ſecret bitterneſs and ſpight, that made him inſult over the barbarous end of an innocent perſon; whoſe blood deſerved the tears of all good and wiſe men, much better than the keen jeſt of an Enemy.

VIII. I ſhall not now inſiſt on any thing that happened to his Brother Monſieur *Marillac*, Keeper of the Seals, who dyed in Priſon upon the ſame account; nor to the Queen Mother, that illuſtrious Princeſs, whoſe baniſhment and death gave her yet more luſtre than her life. All theſe were ſo many Victims devoted to the humours and petts of that great Miniſter of State, who found, that the only method to ſecure his own high ſtation, was to ruine all that ſtood in his way, and that were entirely fixt in the ſervice and true intereſt of their King.

IX. I proceed now to what concerns another of his Victims, whoſe perſon was indeed more eminent than Monſieur *Marillac*, and his death every whit as tragical, tho the cauſe in which he ſuffer'd, deſerved it more. The great Duke of *Montmorency* I

mean;

mean, who, not being able to endure the Tyranny of that arbitrary man, that had got both the ſoul and perſon of the King abſolutely in his power, combined with the Duke of *Orleans* to reſcue *France*, all the Grandees, and even the King himſelf from the oppreſſion under which they all groaned. The deſign was highly commendable, if the methods of compaſſing it had but been as innocent. For knowing, that he could have no ſufficient ground to take up arms againſt his Prince, he thought himſelf ſafe enough by engaging the Duke of *Orleans*, the King's only Brother, and that backt by him he might riſe, not ſo much againſt the King, as againſt the man that abus'd the King's Authority, to lower all the great Lords, and make Princes truckle under him. In this he was not ſo wiſe as he ought to have been, for reaſon and duty both would have told him, that he ſhould firſt have conſidered how unſafe it is to have any great dependance on the obligations of Princes, who are engag'd the more eaſily, becauſe afterwards they can eaſily leave them in the lurch that engag'd them, and are ſure by the greatneſs of their quality to ſecure themſelves from puniſhment at laſt.

X. Monſieur *Schomberg* being at that time with an Army in *Languedec*, to oppoſe the deſigns of *Monſieur*, and the Duke of *Montmorency*; Monſieur *St. Preuil* and my ſelf were ordered to go joyn him there with ſome Companies of Guards. When we were come up, the whole Army, which was not above ſix or ſeven thouſand ſtrong, marched to *Caſtelnau-d' Arry*, the Capital City of *Auragais*, that held out for the King. Monſieur's and the Duke of *Montmorency*'s Forces, conſiſting of thirteen thouſand men, came up within three leagues of us. But between the two Armies there were great Waters and Bogs, which were a great ſecurity to us, and made us amends for the diſadvantage of unequal numbers. About a quarter of a league from thence there ſtood among ſome Vineyards an empty houſe, very convenient to put a Guard into, becauſe the ſituation of it being high, all the Enemies motions might be diſcovered from it. For this reaſon Monſieur *Schomberg* ſent a Serjeant and ſome Souldiers thither, but yet with orders to quit it again, if they ſhould find themſelves preſt by the Enemy. The Duke of *Montmorency* likewiſe, who with five hundred men advanc'd to make his obſervation of the poſture and condition of our Army, perceiving this houſe, thought there might poſſibly be ſome Guard there. He went therefore immediately up to it and charg'd them, and with great eaſe beat them from that Poſt, where he placed a ſtrong Guard of his own afterwards, of a hundred and fifty men.

Our Army never ſtirr'd all this while, Monſieur *Schomberg* reſolving to ſtay till he was attackt, in regard he was ſo much weaker, and had the Town of *Caſtelnau d' Arry* to ſecure his retreat upon occaſion. The Duke of *Montmorency* return'd mighty brisk to Monſieur, and ſaid to him, *Oh, Sir, The day is now come, that will make you Maſter of your Enemies, and bring the Son and the Mother together again* (meaning the King and the Queen Mother) *but* (ſays he, drawing his Sword) *we muſt dye this up to the hilts in blood.* The Duke of *Orleans* fearing what the event of an engagement might be, return'd him a very cold anſwer, *Ho, Monſieur* Montmorency, *you will never leave your bluſtering. You have promis'd me mighty conqueſts a long time, but ſtill I ſee nothing but hopes. I would have you know, that I for my part can make my peace, and retreat whenever I pleaſe, and make a third man.* Upon this ſome hot words aroſe on both ſides, and the Duke of *Montmorency* withdrawing to a corner of the Room, to the Counts of *Moret*, and *Rieux*, and Monſieur *d' Aiguebonne*, (one of my particular friends, who related all this to me) ſaid to the two former, *Our young Spark* (meaning the Duke of *Orleans*) *is turn'd Coward, he talks of ſecuring himſelf, and making a third man; but neither you Monſieur* de Moret, *nor you Monſieur* deRieux, *nor I will ſhew him the way; and we muſt engage him ſo far now, that he ſhall be forc'd to fight to day, whether he will or no.*

In the mean time Monſieur *de Montmorency* put himſelf in a readineſs to come up to us, and Monſieur *Schomberg* put his Army into line of Battel before *Caſtelnau d' Arry*, into which place he deſigned to retreat if he were preſt to it; a Gentleman of that Country, about ſeventy years of age, came and told him, that if he would truſt him with five hundred Muſqueteers, and two or three hundred Horſe, he would ſecure the day to him; and engage to make him maſter of the Enemies Army, by laying an Ambuſcade, which they could not poſſibly avoid, at a Bridge, by which they muſt of neceſſity come, to attack the Kings Army. Monſieur *Schomberg* very gladly received the Gentlemans advice, and ſeeing that he could not well decline following it, ſince not above eight or nine hundred were hazarded for a whole Army, he ordered

Monſieur

Monſieur *St. Preuil*, and ſome Officers beſides, and my ſelf, to go along with the Gentleman, and take five hundred Muſqueteers of the Guards, we had brought into the Army, and gave us beſides three hundred Horſe. The place prov'd very fit for an Ambuſcade, for there were ſeveral bogs, and hollow ways and ditches, by which the Monſieur's Army muſt needs come to gain the Bridge. We ſet the Muſqueteers in theſe hollow places, where they could not be diſcovered, and the Horſe a little higher, for they had orders to make the onſet, and to draw the Enemies into the Ambuſh among the Foot; who were ſo placed, that they could eaſily make five hundred ſhot in a very little time.

The Duke of *Montmorency* having prevail'd with Monſieur to come up with the Army, notwithſtanding the ruffle that had been betwixt them, marched at the head of the Van-guard, and after him the Counts *Moret* and *Rieux*. Monſieur's poſt was the main body, and there was no Rear guard, but a party of Reſerve. Monſieur *Montmorency* commanding the Van in chief, came firſt into the way where the Ambuſcade lay, and being attackt by our Horſe, repuls'd them very briskly, and in ſome meaſure defeated them. But as he was puſhing on his advantage a little too warmly, he and the Van guard fell together into our Ambuſcade, who made in an inſtant ſo violent a ſhot, that perhaps there never was a greater ſlaughter in ſo ſmall a time. The Counts of *Moret*, *Rieux*, and *la Feuillade* were killed in it. The Duke of *Montmorency* himſelf, after having done all that a great General could poſſibly do upon ſuch an occaſion, and even forc'd ſeveral ranks of our men, was at laſt beaten down under his Horſe; and the news ſpreading immediately, that he and all his party were ſlain, Monſieur threw down his Arms, and ſaid the ſport was too hot for him. So he commanded to ſound a Retreat immediately.

Mean while one *St. Mary*, a Serjeant in the Guards, came and told me, that he thought he ſaw Monſieur *Montmorency* lying under his Horſe. But I, who had a particular honour and eſteem for this Duke, upon the account of his great worth, was much concern'd at his misfortune, and would not go my ſelf to make him my Priſoner. I went then and told Monſieur *St. Preuil* of it, being very well ſatisfy'd to leave the honour of this to him. He did not care for going alone neither, but urg'd me ſo earneſtly, that I yielded at laſt to go with him. We went then with ſome Souldiers and the Sergeant, to the place where he had ſeen him lye. Monſieur *St. Preuil* perceiving him in this lamentable condition, cry'd, *Ah Maſter!* for ſo he always uſed to call him. The Duke, who had formerly had a quarrel with *St. Preuil*, and had no kindneſs for him, thought he was very glad of an occaſion to diſoblige him, and to take his revenge upon one that he thought his Enemy: And in this apprehenſion cry'd out in a great paſſion, *Come not near me, I have life enough left to kill thee ſtill.* Monſieur *St. Preuil*, who was very far from having any malicious intentions toward him, and indeed was much affected to ſee matters thus with him; proteſted to him, that he came thither with no other deſign than to do him ſervice; and that he would rather dye a thouſand deaths, than do any thing unbecoming the reſpect due to his perſon. The Duke, a little better ſatisfied, and ſeeing me with Monſieur *St. Preuil*, told us he was engaged to us, and thought himſelf happy in falling into ſuch hands as ours, who had ſuch kindneſs for him. Then we came nearer to help him, and had very much ado to get him out of the Ditch, where his Thigh was ſet faſt under his Horſe, which was dead, and lay very heavy upon him. It was really a very ſad ſight, to ſee him all over blood, and almoſt ſtrangled with that that came out of his mouth, for he was much hurt. At laſt I got him in my Arms, and laid him in a Cloak, which I made four Souldiers carry, at each corner one. We met Monſieur *Brezay* by the way, whom as ſoon as the Duke perceived, (as indeed he was afraid of every thing, and had not the perfect uſe of his reaſon) he was concern'd to ſee him, becauſe he was his particular Enemy. He begg'd of Monſieur *St. Preuil* to bring a Confeſſor to him, that he might dye like a Chriſtian at leaſt: But Monſieur *St. Preuil* encourag'd him afreſh, and engag'd to him that no wrong ſhould be done him, while he was under his Cuſtody. We brought him after this to Monſieur *Schomberg*, who expreſt great reſentments of tenderneſs and compaſſion, and that he was extremely concern'd at his misfortune, and could have wiſht, rather to have loſt his own blood, than to ſee him in this miſerable condition: For in truth all the world lov'd and honour'd this excellent man. He deſir'd Monſieur *Schomberg* to let him have a Confeſſor, fearing he ſhould dye every minute without Confeſſion. But the Mareſchal bad him fear nothing, for he would ſend his own Chyrurgion, or any

other

other he ſhould make choice of, to dreſs his wounds, and ſhortly after he was carry'd to *Letoure*.

XI. The King had commanded me, if any action happen'd, to come and bring him the news; ſo I went with all the expedition I could, and of three Couriers that were diſpatcht at the ſame time, I got firſt to *Pezenas*, where his Majeſty then was. Being come into the Hall, where the King, the Cardinals, and ſeveral great Lords of the Court were, I directed my ſelf, not to the Cardinal, as others frequently did, but to the King; and acquainted him, that we had engaged, and his Army had got the day. The King at this news was ſeized with ſuch fear that Monſieur might be kill'd, that he grew very pale and diſordered, and cry'd out in great confuſion, *What! and is my Brother dead then?* I reviv'd him preſently, by telling him, No, he was not, but very well. Cardinal *Richelieu* was ſo ſurprized with this ſudden exclamation and the tenderneſs his Majeſty had expreſt for his Brother, that he could not forbear ſaying to ſome perſons that ſtood by; *Ay, he makes War upon his Brother to fine purpoſe; you ſee Nature diſcovers herſelf, and commits violence upon him.*

Then I inform'd the King particularly of the ſeveral paſſages in the action, and the taking of Monſieur *Montmorency*; and while I was telling my ſtory, the other Couriers arrived, and theſe addreſſing themſelves to the Cardinal, and not to the King, told him the ſame that I had juſt before told his Majeſty.

XII. Some time after this the whole Court remov'd to *Tholouſe*; and now the War was ended, I being deſirous to take this opportunity of going for a little while to *Pontis*, where I had a great deal of buſineſs, asked leave of the King, but he would not give it me, and commanded me to wait on him to *Tholouſe*. This deſign was, to employ me in conducting Monſieur *Montmorency* to *Paris*, where in the right of a Peer of *France*, he ought to be try'd by a Parliament of Peers, which is that of *Paris*. But Cardinal *Richelieu*, who lookt on him as his peculiar Enemy, had no mind to ſuch tedious methods; and fearing that the Quality, the great Alliances, and the Worth of the man he hated, might by gaining of time incline the King to mercy, he went a ſhorter way to work, and waving the ſtated forms of Tryal for Peers of *France*, perſwaded the King to appoint the Duke's Proceſs before the Parliament of *Tholouſe*. Beſides, it was ſome ſatisfaction to him, to have him try'd in the midſt of his own Government, and before the face of a Country, that honour'd him exceedingly.

Then the King commanded me to go to my Company, which was ſome leagues off, and which I had left, to attend his Majeſty's perſon, under the command of an Enſign only, when Monſieur *St. Preuil* and I were ordered with five hundred Muſquets into *Languedoc*. His Majeſty directed me to be the next day at *Narbonne*, whither himſelf intended to come, in his way to *Tholouſe*. There had been heard for ſome days before, terrible noiſes, like the roaring of Bulls, upon the Sea; which to me ſeemed to foretell ſome great raging ſtorm: And thus we quickly found it: For as I and my Servant were upon the Road, we heard of a ſudden a loud clap of Thunder, attended with mighty Lightnings, and immediately upon it fell a fearful ſhower, which continued for four hours with ſuch violence, as if Heaven and Earth would come together. I had a Bridge to paſs, over a ſmall Brook, and rid full ſpeed to get over before the Waters roſe, but they were ſo high in a very little time, and there ran ſo ſtrong a ſtream over the Bridge juſt at my going over, that it took my Horſe up to the Belly, and had like to have carry'd him away. My Servant, who came after, was in more danger than I. We had like to have been drowned a hundred times, our Horſes being forced to ſwim in many places, and the Roads being all like Rivers. The King, who was then upon the Road too towards *Narbonne*, had much ado to recover the Town; all the Court loſt their Baggage, more than three hundred men drowned; ſeveral Coaches, and ſome of the Queens were left behind, and her Maids had much ado to ſave their lives. A Light-Horſe took up two of them, and ſet one before, and another behind him. I for my own part, after a world of hardſhip, getting to my Company, ſaw all ſorts of Birds and Beaſts, nay, even the very Rabbets run into Houſes and Barns before mens faces. I do not at all magnifie the matter, for one would have thought a ſecond flood had been coming, the Rain continuing (as I ſaid) for four hours together without any abatement, and four and twenty hours in all.

I never was more put to it in all my life : For being much concern'd to obſerve my order exactly, which was to be at *Narbonne* next day with my Company, I reſolved not to fail. I got them thither at laſt, but fatigued them beyond what you can imagine ; inſomuch that the King chid me, and told me, I play'd the fool in bringing my Company croſs the Country ſuch weather as that was. His Majeſty went forward to *Tholouſe*, and Monſieur *Montmorency* was brought thither by his order : Where he arrived the 7th of *October*, in the year 1632, about noon. They carry'd him to the Town-houſe, and put him under the Cuſtody of Monſieur *de Launey*, Lieutenant of the *Guards du Corps*. The ſtreets and publick places, from the Gate where he came in, up to the Common Hall, were lin'd with Souldiers and *Swiſſes* ; and ſeveral Guards were ſet in other places about the Town ; ſo very loth was the Cardinal, that he man, whom he lookt upon as his Priſoner, ſhould get out of his hands.

XIII. Some three hours after the Duke's arrival, two Commiſſioners came to the Town-Hall to examine him. The Commiſſion given the Parliament to proceed upon his Tryal was firſt read to him : Whereupon he ſaid, with a great deal of temper, that tho his Peerage made him accountable to the Parliament of *Paris*, and no other Court, yet he muſt confeſs his offence was ſuch, that if the King was not favourable, any Judges had right enough to condemn him ; that he was very well ſatisfied therefore to be try'd by the Parliament of *Tholouſe*, whom he had ever had a reſpect for, and lookt upon them to be very honeſt Gentlemen. The Commiſſioners ſat at the end of the Table, and ſeated him on their left hand. They brought ſeven Witneſſes in againſt him, that is, four Officers of the Regiment of Guards, two Serjeants, and the Clerk of the States of *Languedoc*. He owned all that the Officers of the Guards evidenc'd againſt him, concerning the action of *Caſtelnau-d' Arry*. And one of them being queſtioned, whether he knew Monſieur *Montmorency* in the battle, anſwered with tears, that ſeeing him covered with fire, and blood, and ſmoak, he had much ado to know him at firſt ; but when he ſaw him break ſix of their ranks, and kill ſeveral Souldiers in the ſeventh, he concluded this could be no body but Monſieur *de Montmorency* ; and that he knew him perfectly well afterwards, when his Horſe fell dead under him, and he lay there without being able to get off.

The Commiſſioners askt him, if he had ſign'd the debate of the States of *Languedoc*, of the 22d. of *July*, in which they entreated Monſieur to give them the honour of his protection, and promis'd to ſupply him with whatever Money he ſhould want, for the ſupport of his Party, and that they would never deſert his Intereſts. He denied that he had ſubſcribed it, and the Clerk being produced againſt him, and affirming that he had, he fell into a great paſſion, calling him a forging Knave, and charged him with counterfeiting his hand.

All this while the whole Court was employed in importuning his Majeſty for Monſieur *de Montmorency*'s Pardon, and every body pray'd to God in his behalf. For (beſides that he was a perſon extremely to be valu'd) his great alliances with the Royal Family, having the honour to be Brother-in-law to the firſt Prince of the Blood, and Unkle to two Princes beſides, and one Princeſs, which is my Lady Dutcheſs of *Longeville* ; and the illuſtrious reputation of his own Family, the eminent renown of which is as old as Religion in *France*, was the reaſon that all the Kingdom intereſs'd themſelves in his preſervation. The Cardinal *de la Valette* expreſt an extraordinary zeal above all the reſt, and when he had done all he could with the King, as well as the Pope's Nuntio, and all the Princes, he betook himſelf to the Prayers of the Church, which he directed to be made every where, aſſiſting in them himſelf, and ſeveral great perſons at Court with him, and omitting nothing, that ſo affectionate and generous a friendſhip as his could inſpire a man with upon ſuch occaſions.

The Blue Penitents alſo made a ſolemn Proceſſion, among whom walked a great many perſons of Quality, and they went to viſit the bodies of St. *Simon* and *Jude* on their Feaſt-day, at the Abby of St. *Cernin*, where they ſung Maſs, and abundance of people communicated, every one profeſſing thoſe devotions to be perform'd upon Monſieur *Montmorency*'s account, and with an intent to beg his life of God. Nay, Monſieur the Duke of *Orleans*, though a party in that revolt himſelf, having, as I ſaid before, laid down his arms, and return'd to his obedience, was not unmindful of the Duke of *Montmorency* in this extremity : But ſent a Gentleman, who threw himſelf

thrice

thrice at the Kings feet, and entreated him in his name, with all the earneſtneſs imaginable, to ſpare a perſon, who had ever expreſt an exceeding great zeal for his Majeſty's ſervice, and who had engaged in this unhappy buſineſs (as he himſelf had done) more out of levity and inconſideration, than out of any malicious principle, or ſettled diſaffection to his Majeſty.

Among all theſe perſons of Honour that importun'd for Monſieur *Montmorency*'s Pardon, my Captain, Monſieur *St. Preuil*, had the weakneſs to preſume to put in his particular interceſſion too, and begg'd his life of the King in Cardinal *Richelieu*'s preſence, which was thought ſo very ridiculous, as to be made the Jeſt of the whole Court. The King laught at him for it; and the Cardinal, when he heard him offer this requeſt to his Majeſty, reply'd to him, with a true *Richelieu* complement, *St. Preuil, if the King ſerv'd you right, he would ſet your head where your heels ſtand.* I heard this complement my ſelf, which I confeſs to me ſeem'd ſomething Sparkiſh for a Biſhop to make. But it muſt be own'd, that it ill became a ſmall Officer, to take upon him the asking a favour, which ſo many Princes and Nobles could not obtain. Thus much however may be ſaid in his excuſe, that having not only a very great reſpect, but a particular friendſhip for Monſieur *Montmorency*, and having made him his Priſoner, he thought he had ſome priviledge upon this account to ſue for his Pardon; and in ſo doing was more guided by his affection, than judgment. For my own part, tho I had it may be as great a reſpect and as tender a concern for him as he, and had as much reaſon to look upon him as my Priſoner, yet I thought it my duty to ſatisfie my ſelf with the ſupplications of the principal perſons of the Kingdom, and by no means proper to joyn my ſelf with them, any farther than by my good wiſhes and my prayers. I was affected more ſenſibly than it is poſſible for me to expreſs, both by my own private concern, and by that general dejection obſervable, not only in the Court, but even among the common people; which was ſo great, that one day as the King was in his Palace, with abundance of company, we heard all on the ſudden a mighty noiſe, occaſioned by the people, who quite tranſported with grief, came to the Kings Lodgings, and cry'd out, *Mercy, Mercy, Pardon, Pardon.* The King askt what was the meaning of all that noiſe? and Monſieur *de Brezay*, that had been made Mareſchal of *France*, upon the action of *Caſtelnau d' Arry*, told him, that if his Majeſty would give himſelf the trouble to look out at the window, he would have pity upon thoſe poor men. But the King anſwer'd him very roughly, and without all queſtion, more according to the Cardinals ſenſe than his own, *If I would be guided by the different inclinations of my people, I ſhould not behave my ſelf like a King.*

XIV. While theſe important applications were making for ſaving the Duke of *Montmorency*, and thoſe ſo univerſal and unanimous, that it ſeem'd almoſt one voice of Nobles and People, that begg'd of God and the King, the life of a perſon entirely beloved of all the world; the Duke himſelf ſeem'd the only man that had forgot all concern for the preſervation of his preſent life. The convictions of his own breaſt, that he deſerved death; and the knowledge he had particularly, what temper his chief Enemy was of, made him very little ſollicitous about his Pardon: and ſo committing himſelf into the hands of God, he employ'd himſelf wholly for the obtaining a favour, much above this life, which he was about to leave. So that we may ſay, tho all that pray'd for him were not heard as to their particular requeſt, yet that they were in another reſpect much more for his advantage; for at the ſame time that the King deny'd him favour, Almighty God was particularly good to him, having wrought him to a lively repentance for his miſcarriages, and a deſire to atone for them by his death. To this therefore he ſeriouſly prepared himſelf by a general Confeſſion, and for that he qualify'd himſelf by a very particular reflection upon all his paſt life, for two days together. And deſiring to ſtrengthen himſelf yet more againſt a tryal ſo ſharp as that he was to undergo, he requeſted, and received the Body of our Lord, as that holy *Viaticum*, from whence he expected his whole ſupport.

The ſame day, being the 29th of *October*, the Courts being met in Parliament, the Keeper of the Seals came thither, attended with ſix Maſters of Requeſts, and there his Tryal was examined. The next night, all the Souldiers quarter'd about *Tholouſe* receiv'd orders to come into the Town, and were poſted in all the ſtreets and avenues, to the number of twelve thouſand men. About ſeven or eight of the clock next morning, the Count *de Charlus* took Monſieur *Montmorency* from the Town-Hall, and brought him to the Palace in his own Coach. He conducted him to the Chamber

where

where the Court were met, and where the Keeper of the Seals had taken the Chair; and after having plac'd him at the Bar upon a Stool, he withdrew. The Judges all caſt their eyes down upon the ground at his coming in, and moſt of them held their handkerchiefs before their faces, as if they were deſirous to hide their tears, which they could not with any decency let the world ſee upon ſuch an occaſion. The Stool was ſet in the middle of the Court, and rais'd higher than ordinary, ſo as to be almoſt even with the Benches,where the Judges ſat.He ſat upon it bare-headed,and unbound, which is not uſual with the Parliament of *Tholouſe*; before whom none are brought to the Bar unſhackled. The Keeper of the Seals, having firſt askt him the uſual queſtions, which are but matter of form, deſir'd to know whether he had ſign'd the Deliberation of the States of *Languedoc*? to which he reply'd, that he confeſt he had; and that upon ſecond thoughts, he had recollected it, and was to blame for denying it before.

It was then put to him, whether he had not invited Monſieur the Duke of *Orleans* into his Government? he reply'd, No, but that the States of that Province had entreated him to take their priviledges into his protection. Being farther queſtion'd, whether Monſieur had not put him upon taking up arms? he ſaid, he was not diſpos'd to excuſe himſelf by laying the fault upon Monſieur. Being askt, what it was then that put him upon doing what he did? he anſwer'd, that it was his ill fortune, and his own imprudence. When he was preſt to declare the perſons that were engag'd with him, he reply'd, that he own'd all that the Witneſſes had depos'd againſt him. They demanded, whether he had kept any correſpondence with the foreigners upon the frontier? he deny'd it poſitively, and affirm'd, that it was never any part of his deſign to injure the Kingdom at all. He reply'd indeed to every queſtion they put to him ſo modeſtly, and like a man of honour, and with ſo engaging an air, that the Judges had much ado to contain themſelves, when they ſaw this great man in ſo moving circumſtances. When the Interrogatories were over, the Keeper of the Seals askt him, whether he did not acknowledge himſelf in a great fault, and that he deſerv'd to dye? To which he made this feeling return, that he deſerv'd more than could be expreſt. Afterwards being order'd to withdraw, he begg'd to be admitted once more, and then before the Court excus'd the Clerk of the States, whom he had accus'd, and uſed him roughly the day before.

After he was withdrawn, and while they carried him back to the Town Hall, the Parliament proceeded to give their voices. A caſe ſo plain would not bear any long debate; and it was impoſſible but a perſon taken actually in arms againſt his Prince, muſt be condemned. One of the Commiſſioners therefore firſt pronounc'd him guilty, and it was obſerv'd, that in the cloſe of his Sentence the tears ſtood in his Eyes. All the reſt of the company expreſt their conſent, in dumb ſhow, by taking off their Caps; and the Keeper of the Seals confirming the ſame, he drew up the Sentence, and ſigned it before the Court broke up. Then all the Judges made haſte home, that they might at their own houſes give free vent to thoſe tears and groans, which Ceremony put a reſtraint upon in the publick Court of Juſtice. The Sentence being brought to the King, his Majeſty could not bear being a little mollified, and changed two Articles in it. The one, that whereas he was to have been executed in the publick Market place, this ſhould be done privately within the Town Hall; and the other, that Monſieur *Montmorency*'s Eſtate, which was confiſcated, he ſhould have leave to diſpoſe of as he pleas'd. Which accordingly he did by Will, and deliver'd it to Monſieur *St. Preuil* to carry to the King, deſiring him to beg his Majeſty's Pardon in his Name. Nay, which was an action truly worthy of a good Chriſtian, he had a mind to let his bittereſt Enemy ſee, that he died without any grudge or revengeful thoughts againſt him; and therefore gave the ſame Monſieur *St. Preuil* a Picture of St. *Francis*, with charge to make a Preſent of it to Cardinal *Richelieu*, as a teſtimony that he died his humble Servant.

About noon, the ſame day that Sentence was given, two Commiſſioners and the Recorder came into the Chappel of the Town Hall, and ſent for Monſieur *Montmorency* thither; who, kneeling down at the foot of the Altar, and fixing his Eyes upon a Crucifix, had his Sentence read to him. Then riſing up, and turning to the company, he ſaid, *Gentlemen, I beg your Prayers, that God would enable me to ſuffer like a Chriſtian, the Execution of what was juſt now read to me.* The Commiſſioners leaving him with his Confeſſor, one of them as he was going ſaid, *Sir, we are going to obey your commands, we will pray to God to ſtrengthen you.* He, continuing in the Chappel, and looking

looking again up to the Crucifix, and afterwards down upon his Clothes, which were very rich, threw away his Night-gown, and said, *Shall such a sinful wretch as I presume to go to dye gaily habited, when I see my innocent Saviour stript naked upon the Cross? No Father* (said he to his Confessor) *I must strip to my Shirt, that I may do some fit pennance for the Sins I have committed against God.* Just at this instant the Count *de Charlus* came from the King, to demand the Order of the Holy Ghost, and the Mareschal's Staff of *France*. The remainder of his time was employed in committing himself to God, and strengthning his mind against death, by the Contemplation of his Saviour's Sufferings; and in praying him to pardon his Sins. When notice was brought him of the hour appointed for his Execution, he begg'd they would do him the favour to let him suffer about the same time of the day that Christ dyed, which was some two hours sooner than the Order; and this was left to his own choice. Before he went to dye, he wrote a Letter to his Lady, Madam *Montmorency*, conjuring her to be comforted, and to present the concern for his death as an offering to God; to procure rest for his Soul, by moderating her grief in consideration of the Mercy God had shewn him.

XV. He order'd his Hair to be cut short behind, and being stript to his Shirt and Drawers, he went in the middle of the Guards, who saluted him as he past, cross a walk that leads into the Court of the Town-Hall, at the entrance of which he found the Scaffold, which might be some four foot from the ground. When he was come up upon it, attended with his Confessor and his Chyrurgeon, he saluted the company, which were only the Clerk of the Parliament, the Grand Provost and his Archers, and the Officers of the City Train-bands, who had orders to wait there. He begg'd of them to acquaint the King, that he dy'd his most humble Subject and Servant; infinitely troubled for having offended him, for which he begg'd his and their pardon. He enquir'd for the Executioner, who had not yet come near him, and, in great humility, would not allow his Chyrurgeon to do any thing about him, but giving himself up entirely to be dispos'd of by the Executioner, as to the binding part, the putting him into a right posture, and the cutting off his hair again, which was not cut close enough before; he said with great significations of remorse, that so great a sinner as he could not dye too ignominiously. At last he kneel'd down near the Block, upon which he laid his Neck, and after he had recommended his Soul to God, the Executioner immediately cut off his Head; all the company turning away their eyes from the sad sight, all melting into tears; and even the Guards themselves expressing their concern, by deep sighs and groans.

Thus dy'd *Henry* of *Montmorency*, Duke and Peer, Mareschal, and sometime Admiral of *France*, Governour of *Languedoc*, Grandson of four Constables and six Mareschals, first Christian, and first Baron of *France*, Brother-in-law to the first Prince of the Blood, and Unkle to the renowned Prince of *Conde*; after having won two Battels, one by Sea against the *Hugonots*, by which he made way for the taking of *Rochelle*; and the other by Land, against the Empire, *Italy* and *Spain*, by which he forc'd the *Alpes*, and sav'd *Cazal*: Both which actions contributed much to that Glory which the King of *France* hath. Those that were present at his death gave him this testimony, That so much Piety and Courage was never seen upon such an occasion, and in a man of that Quality; and indeed it was but fit, that both Nature and Grace should work wonders in the person of the first Christian, and the bravest man in all *France*. Since our Monarchy began there never was any Nobleman in the Kingdom, with whom both Nature and Fortune had dealt so bountifully. He was born in the year 1595. the wealthiest, best accomplished, most generous Lord in the whole Kingdom; graceful in his Speech, and charming in all his Conversation: A person of that honour and genteel address, that all the world lov'd and admir'd him. He exerted all his powers of Wit, Wisdom, Quality, and every other advantage of Honour and Reputation both at home and abroad, in the service of his Majesty; and that to so great a degree, that he sacrific'd his own interests to the good of the King and State, and for ten years together maintained a War against the Rebels in *Languedoc* at his own proper charge. In short, the King himself was pleased at two several times, to proclaim his praises throughout his whole Realm, in so honourable and advantageous expressions, that it might be truly said of this last design in which he was unhappily engag'd, that it was in some degree excusable, not being able to endure to live, and see the Queen Mother driven out of *France*, the King's only Brother remov'd from Court,

and ſo many perſons of Honour, ſome baniſh'd, ſome clapt up in Priſon, ſome publickly put to death, and all this by the Tyranny of one ſingle Miniſter of State; and that it was his great misfortune to be of opinion, that the taking up arms againſt that Miniſter, was the beſt way of doing a real ſervice to his Maſter.

XVI. After all that has been ſaid it cannot ſeem ſtrange, if the people, and the whole Kingdom where ſo ſenſibly affected with his death. As an inſtance of their being ſo, as ſoon as ever the Execution was over, and the Grand Provoſt had ordered the Gates to be opened, they throng'd in prodigious crowds to ſee the body. Their concern, and the mighty reſpect they had for the great *Montmorency*'s perſon were ſuch, that when they could find no other comfort for the loſs they ſuſtain'd in him, they almoſt ſtifled one another to get near the Scaffold, and to gather up the blood in their Handkerchiefs, and lay it up by them at home. Nay ſome were ſo very extravagantly zealous, as to drink of it, and the leaſt that any body did, was to go away again in tears.

In the mean while, two Prieſts that belong'd to Cardinal *Valette*, came and took the body into the Chapel of the Abby-houſe of *St. Cernin*, where it was firſt embalmed, and put into a leaden Coffin, and afterwards, by a very particular favour, bury'd in *St. Cernin*'s Church, a place that no perſon had been allow'd to lye in, ever ſince *Charlemayne* brought the bodies of the Apoſtles thither; and this was ſo ſtrictly obſerved, that the very Counts of *Tholouſe* could never obtain leave to be laid there themſelves. An eminent mark of reſpect this, for this illuſtrious man, that he ſhould be eſteem'd worthy an interrment, where no body elſe had the priviledge of lying. At four in the morning they began to ſay a great many Maſſes, as was uſual, and among others, the Biſhops of *Pamiez* and *Commenges* ſaid Maſſes. The greateſt part of the Parliament came thither with the common people, to pay their laſt reſpects to the perſon, whoſe condemnation they could not pronounce without tears and extreme regret. And thus ended this bloody Tragedy, which by preſenting the greateſt man in the Kingdom beheaded publickly upon a Scaffold, in the very midſt of that very Province, and the Capital City of it, which was under his Government, ſhews us at the ſame time how much that favour and the grace of heaven, which aſſiſted him ſo powerfully at his laſt hour, is a more deſirable bleſſing, than the good Graces of the Court, which forſook him when he ſtood moſt in need of them. It may not be amiſs to preſent you here with a Copy of Verſes, which may ſerve for an Epitaph upon him, and with them I ſhall conclude this ſtory.

How ſhort Man's Glory, and how frail his State,
Learn here from noble Montmorency's *Fate.*
Theſe are the poor remains of that great Name,
Whoſe Praiſes fill the loudeſt Mouth of Fame.
Such were (if any ſuch) fair Thetis' *Son,*
Such the Victorious Youth of Macedon.
In Life ſcarce equal, equal in their End,
From which nor Force, nor Virtue can defend.
For in rude heaps, the Valiant, Wiſe and Juſt,
With Fools, Knaves, Cowards, undiſtinguiſht, muſt
Lye down at laſt, and mix one common Duſt.
Midſt heaps of ſlain, laviſh of Life, he ſtood,
And, like a Rock, ſcatter'd th' invading Flood.
The God of War obſerv'd th' unequal ſtrife;
Threatned, but would not ſpill ſo brave a Life.
But (oh Reſpect perverſe, malicious, vain,)
That generous blood, which could ev'n Mars *reſtrain,*
Was vilely ſhed, and did a Scaffold ſtain.
Thus Heaven conſults poor Mortals Innocence,
Juſt ſhews, and ſnatches back ſuch excellence:
Leſt by bright Virtue charm'd we proſtrate fall,
The Image court, and ſlight the Great Original.

XVII. Af-

XVII. After the Duke of *Montmorency*'s execution, the King and all the Court went back to *Paris*. And the next year, which was 1633, we met with new disturbances from another Prince, who though he was a Soveraign one, yet was so with dependance upon the King. The Duke of *Lorrain* having violated several Treaties, formerly made with his Majesty, and denying to pay homage to the Crown, upon account of the Dutchy of *Bar*, the King resolved to go do himself reason by force of Arms. He went about the month of *August*, and sat down before the Town of *Nancy*, which was then one of the best Fortifications in *Europe*. I had the honour to attend him constantly, when he gave himself the trouble to go in person, and mark out the lines of our Trenches, which he did with most extraordinary skill; being, as I said, eminently ingenious in all matters relating to War.

XVIII. The Duke of *Lorrain*, perceiving himself in very great hazard to lose his whole Dominions by his own fault, sent his Brother, the Cardinal of *Lorrain* to the King, to propose a Treaty of Peace: He was forc'd at last to truckle under a stronger force, and a more discerning judgment than his own. He resolv'd to come himself at last, and wait on the King in his own Quarters, which were at *Neuville* a league off of *Nancy*, and there made all manner of Submissions. The King receiv'd him with great kindness and respect, and entertain'd him with the same expressions of friendship, as if he had never had reason to take any thing ill from him. He stood for some time bare-headed, and afterwards putting on his own Hat, obliged the Duke to put on his too. But being by several experimental proofs sufficiently convinc'd, of how fickle and crafty a temper he was, he was resolv'd by some contrivance to hinder his return to *Nancy* that day; vilely suspecting that if he let him go back, he might trump up some new device upon him, and shutting himself up in the Town, deny to open the Gates, notwithstanding his word was engaged to the contrary. The Kings Chamber was a very dark room, and therefore pretending he could not see to read some Letters that were brought him, he called for Lights, that so the Duke might not be sensible when night came on. And this was about four of the clock in the afternoon, in the month of *September*.

The Duke of *Lorrain*, who would fain have been going to *Nancy*, seeing the King taken up in reading of Letters, would have taken his leave, and desir'd he would permit him to go home, and give directions for the due performance of what he had promis'd should be done. The King, who was much of opinion, that his going was rather design'd to obstruct, than to further the performance, answer'd him, without taking any notice, *Methinks, Cousin, you are quickly weary of my company; it is not late yet, you have but a league to* Nancy, *and may go it in less than an hour.* Thus the King manag'd the matter so dextrously, that what between caressing him, reading of Letters, and turning the discourse from one thing to another, night drew on before he was aware of it. At length the Duke of *Lorrain* began to be very uneasie, and made a second offer to take his leave, and be going: The King enquir'd of those about him, what a clock it was? and being answer'd, that it was seven, he reply'd to the Duke, as in a seeming surprize, *Oh strange, how time runs away! Nay, it is too late for you to go now, Cousin.* The Duke, who had much rather have travell'd all night, than have staid where he was, in the Kings custody, answer'd, That he knew the Road very well, and as his Majesty had done him the honour to observe, should soon be at his journeys end. The King, who saw him extremely eager to be gone, and had no mind to discover any thing of his own design, brought himself off very handsomely, by asking some Officers that were there, whether the Guard was set? For, upon their informing him that it was, and the Orders all given, he said to the Duke of *Lorrain*, *Cousin, you cannot well leave me to night, it is too late to go; and if you should, now the Guards are set, it would make a great confusion: You had much better lye here, and to morrow morning you may be going very early.* So after a great many fresh attempts to go, he was under a necessity at last to comply with the Kings invitation, not daring, as matters then stood, to give him any occasion of displeasure.

XIX. The Cardinal of *Valette*'s apartment was appointed for the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Lodging; and the King commanded my Lord Duke of *St. Simon*, and the Count of *Nogent*, to keep him company at Supper, and some other Officers and my self to wait upon him. But all this honour done him by his Majesty, was only meant to secure him

him the more effectually. And upon the ſame account twelve *Swiſſes* were ordered to keep Guard at his door, which was to paſs for reſpect to him. The Duke of *Lorrain* invited the Duke of *St. Simon* and the Count of *Nogent* to ſup with him, who ſtaid till eleven at night. In the mean while, ten or twelve Souldiers were privately poſted to ſecure the houſe within, and then as many Officers of us as were there withdrew with the Duke of *St. Simon* and Count *Nogent*.

When his Highneſs of *Lorrain* was gone to bed, I receiv'd orders to keep a ſtrong guard about his houſe with my Company, for fear he ſhould make any attempt to get off under the covert of the night. Therefore conſidering of what conſequence ſuch a Guard might prove, I ſet a Centry at every ſix paces, and poſted my ſelf near one of the Centinels, under a Tree, juſt over againſt a Window of the Chamber where the Duke lay. The jealouſie he had that he was caught, and trickt by the wile of the King, as in truth he was, gave him great diſturbance, and not being able to ſleep in his Bed, he had a great mind to try if it were poſſible for him to make his eſcape. Well, about one a clock at midnight he got up, and came to look out at the Window, that lay directly againſt the Tree where I ſat, and was at leaſt as wakeful as he. At firſt he began to ſing, as if he intended to divert himſelf; and preſently after calling to the Centry, he cry'd, *Centry, Centry, I hear a great noiſe, what is the matter?* I reply'd inſtead of the Centry, and told him it was a body of Horſe that were walking the Rounds. *How many of them may there be?* ſaid the Duke; *About two thouſand, Sir,* ſaid I. *How!* ſaid he, *two thouſand Horſe! this is ſomething more than ordinary; the Guard does not uſe to be ſo great. Excuſe me, Sir,* ſaid I, *it is commonly of this ſtrength. O there muſt be leſs,* reply'd he, *you repreſent it bigger than it is; away, away: And who commands there? Every one in his turn, Sir,* ſaid I; *ſometimes the Mareſchals de Camp, ſometimes tht Lieutenant Generals, and ſo the other Officers in courſe. On my word,* ſaid the Duke, *that is a ſtout Guard, you need fear nothing.* I reply'd, That whereever the King was in perſon, the Guard was always thus big. Afterwards having a mind to pump me, he proceeded thus: *But is not the perſon I am talking with, an Officer?* I reply'd, That I was a poor Cadet, and his humble Servant. *Say you ſo!* anſwer'd he, as if he were ſurpriz'd at that, *by your diſcourſe I ſhould have taken you for an Officer. Well then, Fellow-Souldier, ſince thou art but a Souldier, how long haſt thou been at this trade? Some ten or twelve years, Sir,* ſaid I. *And how long haſt thou ſerv'd in the Guards?* I told him, *About ſome five or ſix years. How!* added he, *methinks thou haſt ſerv'd a great while, to have no reward; prithee how comes it to paſs thou art advanc'd no higher?* I made anſwer, That ſome men had better fortune in the world than others; and that I for my part was one of the unlucky ones; but ſtill I expected every day the ſame good fortune, that I ſaw ſome of my fellows attain to. He askt me, whether we receiv'd our pay duly however? I told him I had no reaſon to complain for that matter, and that if I was unhappy in other reſpects, yet in this I was not. After that, he askt me, how much my pay was? and I anſwer'd, the common pay of Souldiers. *But,* ſaid he, *methinks it is cruel hard for all that, to ſtick at the mark thus one's whole life, and never riſe to any Command; Couldſt not thou be well pleas'd to have ſome employ? Te be ſure, Sir,* ſaid I, *if the King ſaw fit to give me a Command, I ſhould not refuſe it. Very well,* ſaid he, *and hark you Souldier, if you have a mind to it, there are methods for an honeſt man to make his fortune.* I anſwer'd him, That I had the honour to ſerve the greateſt Prince in the world, who hath it in his power to reward, if I am but able to do him ſervice. He return'd very pleaſantly, *It ſeems then thou haſt not ſerv'd him well all this while, for thou haſt been a long time in ſervice, and he hath made thee no amends yet. It is a ſign, Sir, that he hath a mind to try me long and throughly,* ſaid I, *that he may be able to make a ſurer Judgment whether I deſerve his favour. A man loſes nothing by waiting: Therefore I am in expectation every day, and it may be I ſhall be rewarded to morrow. This I am ſure of, that I can never be falſe to my duty, and that this is the only way to raiſe my fortunes.*

The Duke of *Lorrain* underſtood very well by my anſwer, that I knew who I ſpoke to, and that he was to expect nothing from me. Upon this account, tho he was toucht to the quick, end much enrag'd to ſee himſelf ſo put upon, yet he made as though he valu'd our Centinel, and ſaid, *Go thy way for a brave fellow, I love thee for this humour. Good night.* And then he withdrew immediately. A Gentleman that was with him, and who heard this dialogue between us, ſaid to him upon this, *Ah Maſter, you are made Priſoner, there is no poſſibility of getting off.* In the mean while, I went forthwith to acquaint the Duke of *Eſpernon* with the diſcourſe that had paſſed with his Highneſs, that he might inform the King. My Lord *Eſpernon* imagining,

that

that the Duke might poſſibly come to attack me a ſecond time, had a mind ro divert himſelf with the hearing it, and came and poſted himſelf with me under my Tree. The Duke accordingly appeared again at the Window preſently after, and cry'd, *Comrade, Centry, What's the Clock?* I told him, it wanted ſomething of Two. He askt me, whether it was I that he had ſpoke to before? I told him I was the perſon to whom he did that honour. He added, *You are a great while upon duty:* For he was terrible uneaſie, and would have been glad to have had ſome body elſe to deal with. I anſwer'd, That I had not been two hours there yet, and that now I ſhould be ſoon reliev'd. *What's the reaſon,* ſaid the Duke, *that I hear no more of the noiſe there was even now? Sir,* ſaid I, *becauſe the Petrole is gone by, and within a little while it will come round again. In earneſt,* ſaid he, *this is a fine ſtrong Guard, but it muſt be confeſt that they have a great Prince to guard. Well, thou art happy to ſerve under ſuch a King, he underſtands Military Diſcipline the beſt of any Prince in* Europe. *Sir,* ſaid I, *I ſhould be the moſt miſerable man alive, were I not ſenſible of my happineſs to ſerve ſo great a Maſter; and you, Sir,* continu'd I, *are as able to judge of his greatneſs as any body, for you have had ſome knowledge of it. Does not he exerciſe you himſelf?* reply'd the Duke. *Yes Sir,* ſaid I, *he exerciſes his own Regiment of Guards, his Muſqueteers, and all the Regiments. For ought I perceive* (reply'd he) *he keeps you to hard work, and allows you but little time to reſt in. Yes indeed, Sir,* ſaid I, *he often makes us ſweat ſoundly, but he favours himſelf no more than he does us.* Then he askt me, Whereabouts the Cardinals Lodgings were? adding, That he was afraid there was but indifferent Guard kept there; and when I anſwer'd him, That the Guards were equally ſet through all the Kings Quarter; he ſaid with a laugh, *Nay, nay, there muſt be more and leſs, there is not the ſame occaſion to guard all.* After this he enlarg'd mightily in praiſe of the King; and when he had try'd and turn'd me every way, and found that I was proof ſtill againſt all his methods, he ſaid to me at laſt, *Well, fellow Souldier, whoever you are, your ſervant: Good night.* And ſo he went in again.

The Duke of *Eſpernon* had like utterly to have ſpoil'd all, for the jeſt pleas'd him ſo well, that he had much ado to forbear burſting out into a loud laughter. For beſides, that the ſubject of our diſcourſe was pleaſant enough, the manner of our talking together, without ever ſeeing one another at all; and one lying all the while upon the attack, and the other acting defenſively, had ſomething very comical in it. I withdrew too a little after, leaving directions with the Centinel, that if the Duke came again to the window, and had a mind to talk any more, he ſhould anſwer him a little roughly, *Pray Sir be pleas'd to go in and ſleep, this is a very unſeaſonable time of night.* But he never was put to this trouble: For the Duke perceiving himſelf caught, came out no more. The King underſtanding by my Lord *Eſpernon* at his waking, what pleaſant diſcourſe had paſſed, diverted himſelf and the company with it, and was very deſirous to hear the whole ſtory from me. I made all the haſte I could to wait on him, and related the whole matter to him as naturally as I could. When I told him how the Duke had ſounded me, by ſome hints that there were methods for an honeſt man to make his fortunes; his Majeſty told me, that I ſhould have urg'd him a little further, and have pretended to accept his proffer, to ſee how far he would have gone; whereupon I very readily made the King this reply, That if the thing were to do again, I ſhould do ſo, having authority from his Majeſty for it; but that I could by no means think it ſafe before, becauſe perhaps it would have been hard to perſwade him, that this was only put on; and therefore I choſe rather to jeſt within compaſs, and keep on the ſafer ſide, than to venture upon any thing that would ſtand in need of a favourable conſtruction. The King laught heartily, and becauſe he would have the diverſion of telling this ſtory himſelf, which indeed he did very pleaſantly, charg'd me not to ſpeak of it. But when he told it to any of the Lords at Court, he would ſend for me to confirm what he had ſaid. Every body was well pleas'd with it, and the conference between the Duke of *Lorrain* and the Lieutenant of *Pontis*, was the conſtant entertainment of all companies.

XX. The King ſent in the morning to enquire how the Duke of *Lorrain* had reſted, and to tell him withal, That he was ſomething ſurpriz'd to find the people of *Nancy* did not open their Gates according to agreement, after the Letter he had written to them; For his Highneſs had writ once before upon this occaſion, but had forbidden them to comply with his Letter, how poſitive ſoever the orders were, till they ſhould ſee a particular token from him, ſuch a one as was agreed on between them beforehand. The King therefore ſent him word, That he began to ſuſpect he did not in-

tend to keep his promiſe with him: That he deſir'd he would ſhew himſelf a man of honour, and write again to his Subjects of *Nancy* to ſurrender. The Duke wrote a ſecond time, but ſtill without the token I mention'd; which he did, hoping the King would let him go to *Nancy*, to give his perſonal orders for opening the Gates. The men of *Nancy* ſhewing no more obedience to this ſecond Letter, than they had done to the former, the Duke of *Lorrain* was urged afreſh by the King to be true to his promiſe: Whereupon, and upon ſeeing no hopes of getting leave to go to *Nancy*, if he did not make good the Treaty, he at laſt writ a Letter with that token, which was the ſignal, that now he would be obeyed. So they opened their Gates to the King preſently. All his Troops entred the Town, with Pikes levell'd, Ranks cloſed, Match lighted, and in a perfect poſture for fighting, if they had met with any treachery or oppoſition. We poſſeſt our ſelves of all the Quarters and Fortifications, and then gave orders, that, all the Garriſon of *Lorrain* ſhould lay down their Arms. A friend of mine, one *de la Serre*, and one of the principal Officers in the Garriſon, when he heard us cry, *Down with your Arms*, was in a rage, and ready to hang himſelf; and told me, if he had thought they ſhould have been us'd at this rate, the King ſhould never have come in, till he had beat the Walls about their Ears. I ſoftned his indignation a little, and prevailed upon him to bear his misfortune with moderation. Thus the King was abſolute Maſter of *Nancy*, the Government of which place he beſtow'd on Monſieur *de Braſſac*.

The End of the Second Book.

BOOK

BOOK III.

The Sieur de Pontis *is made Commiſſary General of the* Swiſſes *in* France. *He is out of favour with the King for quitting this Command. He goes into* Holland *with Mareſchal* Brezay. *The Battel of* Avain, *where he takes Count* Feria, *Lieutenant-General of the* Spaniſh *Army, Priſoner. The taking of* Tillemont, *and the Barbarities of the* Dutch *Souldiers.* Louvain *is beſieg'd. The Sieur* de Pontis *attempts the Caſtle of* Arſcot *with four hundred Muſqueteers. The Quarrel he had with an Officer of the Army upon this occaſion.*

I. IN the Year 1634, ſome months after *Nancy* was reduc'd, the King was pleas'd to do me the honour, to make me Commiſſary General of all the *Swiſſes* in *France.* He underſtood that many of the *Swiſſes* had a good opinion of, and confidence in me, and that having deſired me very earneſtly to teach them their exerciſes, I could not decline it; upon which account they came oftentimes to my Quarters, where I endeavour'd to inſtruct them according to their deſire. Knowing therefore, that theſe honeſt Fellows had a particular eſteem for me, he ſuppos'd that this kindneſs of theirs would make it an eaſy matter for me to manage them as I pleas'd. So that asking me one day at *Verſailles*, whether the *Swiſſes* continu'd their viſits to me ſtill, as they us'd to do, and if they improv'd at all? and I replying, that they came to me conſtantly ſtill, and that they were a little ſlow, but very good men to the beſt of their capacity; he preſently return'd upon me; *Well, I muſt make you Commiſſary General over them all within my Kingdom, that you may diſcipline them, as you have already done your own Company.* I embrac'd this propoſal with great ſatisfaction, becauſe it was a very honourable Poſt, and expreſt to the King my grateful acknowledgments for the favour he had done me, in making choice of me for this Command. But not knowing very well how to compaſs it for want of Money, I proceeded no farther at that time, being willing to try whether the King would do me any greater kindneſs, than merely to ſhew his good inclinations toward me.

The perſon at preſent in that Office was one *Ferrary*, whom his Majeſty did not like at all. And this among others, was one reaſon why the King pitch'd upon me for it, that I, who was continually about his perſon, might ſucceed a man for whom he had no kindneſs. Some time after the firſt mention of it, he took occaſion to ſpeak to me again, and told me, he would have me ſell my Command of Lieutenant in the Guards, to help towards the purchaſe of my Commiſſary's place. As a particular mark of his favour, he told me too, that he would undertake to help me to a Chapman for my Lieutenant's place, and make the beſt bargain he could for me. I very readily agreed to all theſe propoſals, which were for my advantage, as well in point of gain, as of honour. But I ſaw plainly the conſequences of being engag'd in a buſineſs, that I knew muſt coſt me three times as much as my Command would bring me in. But yet I let the King go on, not daring to oppoſe his pleaſure, and hoping he would at ſome time or other recollect, that he was richer than I; and what was impoſſible for my circumſtances, to him would be very eaſy. He ſent Monſieur *de Chenoiſe* to me, who had a mind to buy a Lieutenancy in the Guards for his Son, the Baron *de Boucaut*; and the management of my buſineſs lying in the hands of ſo powerful an Agent as his Majeſty, the bargain was ſoon agreed at twelve thouſand Crowns; which was more by one third than Lieutenants of the Guards Commands uſed then to go at. The King then urged me to treat with Monſieur *Ferrary* for his Office, and promis'd me a Bill upon the Treaſury, by which the Exchequer ſhould ſtand engag'd to my Creditors, for what Moneys they ſhould advance

towards

towards this purchaſe, if I happened to dye in the ſervice. This put me upon treating in good earneſt, and Monſieur *Ferrary* and I drove the bargain for thirty thouſand Crowns.

II. My Friends in the mean while coming in very thick to proffer me the Money, I ſollicited the King, that he would pleaſe to give me the Bill upon the Treaſury, which he had done me the favour to promiſe me, and likewiſe made my intereſt with ſome other perſons who might be aſſiſting to me in the procuring it. Going one day to wait on Monſieur *de Bullion* for this purpoſe, and meeting Monſieur *de Bellievre* upon the ſtairs, who was afterwards firſt Preſident of the Parliament of *Paris*, I was very importunate with him, that he would give himſelf the trouble of recommending my buſineſs to the Superintendant. He went up with me again at firſt word, and did what I requeſted of him with that uſual civility and good grace, that hath got him the reſpect of all mankind. Though Monſieur *Bullion* was a perfect Creature of Cardinal *Richelieu*'s, who had no kindneſs for me, yet he made me this civil anſwer, That he ſhould be very glad to ſerve me, but if the King granted me this peculiar priviledge above the reſt of his Officers, he would bring them all upon him; that they would expect the ſame favour, which the King could neither give them without dipping his Exchequer in vaſt ſumms, nor deny them without creating me as many Enemies, as there were Officers in the Army: But however, that I might preſent my Petition to the Council, and that they would debate the matter in his Majeſty's preſence.

I do not queſtion but he diſcourſed the thing with the Cardinal, and receiv'd poſitive orders to oppoſe it. For, notwithſtanding the King was fully determined to grant me this favour, notwithſtanding he had acquainted the Cardinal with his intention, who pretended to like it well enough; notwithſtanding by a particular act of condeſcenſion, he had undertaken to put in my Petition himſelf; yet for all that I was baulkt of my expectation. Inſomuch that the King, at his coming out from Council, gave himſelf the trouble of ſpeaking to me in theſe remarkable expreſſions, *We have been taken ſhort, we have loſt our cauſe; but trouble not your ſelf, I will make you amends, I will give you ſomething that ſhall be better for you.* I confeſs it was ſome aſtoniſhment to me, that a Prince ſhould thus loſe his cauſe in his own Council, and in a buſineſs that depended entirely upon his own free bounty; and that, when he had an inclination to grant a favour, and reward the ſervices of one of his Officers, it ſhould not be in his power to effect it. But it is no hard matter to ſee from what cauſe this want of power grew.

But ſtill, tho the King had made me this promiſe, to aſſiſt, and make me amends ſome other way, I did not much care to depend upon a promiſe, which I ſaw ſo plainly, when it came to the puſh, might poſſibly not be in his power to make good. I ſhould have been better pleaſed with ready Money; and finding my ſelf thus engaged, upon the confidence the King had given me at firſt, fearing now that my Creditors might be in danger of loſing by me, I had enough of my Command already, before ever I got poſſeſſion of it. However, the King was ſo urgent upon the thing, that I found my ſelf conſtrain'd, whether I would or no, to get over all difficulties, and enter upon my Office.

III. At my taking the uſual Oath, it was required I ſhould appear in a *Swiſſe* habit which was a Coat of Black Velvet, with a border round it. I had a very rich Cap, which the King had given me, upon which was wrought, a fine large Heron, a Bird of Paradice, and ſome other Ornamental devices. I ſent for a good many Officers, ſome three or fourſcore, and coming at the head of them into the Hall, where the King was, I addreſt my ſelf to him, after the *Swiſſe* faſhion. The King receiv'd me, as he us'd to do Ambaſſadours, ſtanding at the ſide of his Couch, and taking off his Hat to me; he gave me his Hand to kiſs, and then ſaid by way of Gallantry, *Come* Swiſſe, *now ſpeak.* I anſwer'd, That his Majeſty had not allow'd me time enough to learn the language. After I had taken the cuſtomary Oath, I was placed by the King; and as each of the *Swiſſe* Officers advanced to pay him their reſpects, I preſented them to him, intimating their qualifications and excellencies, and giving a ſhort Character of every one of them; to inform the King of their ſeveral tempers, which I was throughly acquainted with, which was a ſort of a little Farce, that the King and Lords who were by, thought a good pleaſant entertainment. For I ſtrove in my

ſpeech,

ſpeech, and all my motions, to mimick theſe honeſt fellows as naturally as I could; affecting to appear a true *Swiſſe*, while I was habited like one.

IV. The King was pleas'd to diſcourſe me very largely about my Office, and told me he intended to make it one of the moſt honourable Commands about the Court to me. And ſo he really did. He annexed ſeveral very conſiderable priviledges to it, and himſelf gave me directions, how to behave my ſelf with regard to the other Officers in the Army, telling me where I ought to give the precedence, and where not. There was but one *Swiſſe* Officer above me, which was the Mareſchal *de Baſſompier*, our Collonel; and as to the Commanding part, I was firſt both of the Regiment of *Swiſſe* Guards, and all the reſt of them that were in *France*, to the number of ſeven or eight thouſand: all which was agreeable to their primitive inſtitution. It was likewiſe the Kings pleaſure, that in Mareſchal *Baſſompier*'s abſence, I ſhould command in chief, as well in time of action, as in matters of ordinary diſcipline: And I muſt needs ſay, this to me was the moſt deſirable Office that I could poſſibly have thought of.

About a week or a fortnight after I was actually in my Office, and had taken the Oaths before his Majeſty, I exercis'd the Regiment, before a great deal of company, and a great many perſons of Quality. I began with the Oath which the Lieutenant Collonel is oblig'd to take, the Ceremony whereof is this: The Commiſſary General, repreſenting the Kings perſon, ſits with his Hat on; the Lieutenant Collonel, and all the Regiment ſtand bare. Then the Commiſſary General, directing himſelf to the Lieutenant Collonel, requires him to take the Oath in theſe words: *Do you ſwear, as you hope for Salvation, to be faithful to the King as long as you live; and rather to dye, than do any thing contrary to his Intereſt; to diſcover, or cauſe to be diſcovered to his Majeſty, whatever you ſhall know may turn to the prejudice of him, or his Kingdom, &c.* After the Lieutenant Collonel hath taken this Oath, as I have deſcribed it, the Commiſſary General orders him to give the whole Regiment the ſame, and then they proceed to their Exerciſe.

V. But tho this Office, which I enjoy'd with all its ancient priviledges, had nothing but what was great and honourable belonging to it, yet I found ſeveral reaſons to be quickly weary of it. The King was every day giving me freſh orders for the regulation of all the *Swiſſe* Souldiers, and would have me bring them to a diſcipline, as ſtrict as the ſevereſt Monaſtery was under: So that I was cruelly perplext with the trouble he laid upon me, and the accounts he expected to be given him of them. His Majeſty talkt of nothing elſe but new reformations, and I found my ſelf a thouſand times more a Slave, than I was formerly. *To what purpoſe then* (ſaid I to my ſelf) *is all this honour, that only enſlaves, and makes me wretched? and why ſhould I ſell my liberty, and all the enjoyment of my life, for a little breath, and empty vanity?* Beſides all this, I ſaw my friends run a great riſque in the Money they had lent me for the purchaſe; for when the King expreſt never ſo much inclination to do me good, he was not ſuffer'd to bring it to any effect; and the favours he intended me were conſtantly oppoſed. Some of my friends too laid before me the unhappy conſequences of the employment I was now engag'd in, very feelingly; and tho my own ſenſe and experience taught me all that, better than they could; yet theſe conſiderations laid all together, produced in me a ſtrong reſolution to throw up this Command, where I found the honour did by no means anſwer the burden; for tho that was great, yet this was not to be endured.

The great difficulty was, which way to bring the King to conſent to it; and but to mention ſuch a thing to him, I ſaw plainly was utterly to loſe his favour: But yet I found my ſelf ready to undergo the worſt that could happen; and waiting upon him one day, I told him, that I was reduced to a very ſad extremity, that having bought my place upon the credit of his word, that the Exchequer ſhould be accountable to my Creditors, they were very importunate with me now to give them ſecurity: *Your Majeſty* (ſaid I) *if you pleaſe, may ſee what becomes me to do in this caſe; and whether it be fair, that I ſhould impoſe upon my friends. I had much rather, Sir, give my Command back into your Majeſties hands, and reſign it with your approbation, than bring my ſelf into a neceſſity of applying to you ſo often for a matter of this nature.* The King, tho much offended at the requeſt I made to him, yet conceal'd his reſentments at that time. He told me, that he had indeed promis'd to turn over my debt to his Treaſury, but that his Council for ſeveral reaſons were againſt it: And as for any other objection, ſince

I was ſo very uneaſie in my Employment, I ſhould think of ſome good man, that he might approve, to ſucceed me.

VI, Having obtain'd the Kings leave thus far, I came to terms with one *St. Denys*, who made me loſe two thouſand Crowns by my Office; for of the thirty thouſand I had bought it at, I could bring him no higher than eight and twenty. When I had come off thus by the loſs, he deſir'd me however to do him one favour, which was, to ſpeak to the King in his behalf, that this Command might be continu'd to him, with the ſame priviledges that his Majeſty in favour to me had grac'd it with. I recompenc'd him good for evil, and promis'd to uſe all my intereſt for the obtaining this advantage, but told him at the ſame time, I was afraid it would not be done; for I pretty well knew the Kings temper, who allow'd me thoſe priviledges, only in conſideration of the long tryal he had had of my faithful ſervices, and that in a ſeaſon, when very few were found to have devoted themſelves ſo entirely to him. And ſo it happen'd, for when I preſented him to the King, and took the boldneſs to beg the continuation of the ſame priviledges, that his Majeſty had beed pleas'd to honour me withal; all that I could ſay to raiſe an eſteem for this Officers good qualifications, and faithful ſervices, was to no manner of purpoſe. He downright refus'd my requeſt, and ſent us away without having patience to hear me out. So that he was to take it as a great favour, that his Majeſty permitted him to hold the Office with its common priviledges, before it fell into my hands.

TheKing in the mean while,who was exceeding angry to find me ſo vehemently ſet upon throwing up my place, tho he had conceal'd it at firſt,yet could not forbear within a few days to declare his diſpleaſure ſo warmly, that I had reaſon to think my beſt way would be to abſent my ſelf from Court for ſome time. That which gave the King the greateſt offence of all, was, that he fancy'd I was now grown weary of his ſervice. He had obſerv'd for many years, what methods were taken to draw off his moſt faithful Servants affections from him; and the experience of that made him apt to ſuſpect the ſame of me; which made him ſay upon my account to the Chancellour, who was pleas'd afterwards to tell it me again; *Is not this a prodigious thing, that I can no ſooner get a good ſervant, but he is preſently corrupted?* But really the King was not ſo juſt to me in this, as he was afterwards; and tho I had the honour of being about his perſon ſo long,yet it ſeems I was not ſufficiently known; for no conſideration could have taken me off from the Duty I ow'd to my Prince; nor could I ever have ſerv'd any other perſon with the ſame zealous affection that I did him. But I was not long out of favour, for his Majeſty ſhortly after ſent me his commands to wait on him, when he went to *St. Geneviere of the Wood.* I ſtaid ſome days at Court without any employ except that of attending upon the Kings perſon.

VII. About the end of *May* 1635, when the War was declar'd with *Spain*, a great many Troops were rais'd, and ſeveral Armies compoſed out of them; one of which was to enter into the *Low-Countries* by *Picardy*. So, being out of Office, I begg'd a Command of his Majeſty, and that he would give me leave to go with Mareſchal *Brezay* into *Holland*; telling him, that I was quite ſick of an idle, and uſeleſs way of living, and long'd to be doing him ſome ſervice. The Kings reply was a little ſurprizing, and who very graciouſly askt me, Whether I was not content to be near him? how I could be ſick for want of ſervice, when I was actually ſerving, and attending his perſon? I anſwer'd, with pretty good preſence of thought, That this indeed was a greater honour than I deſerved; but that my deſire of going into *Holland*, was only to make my ſelf more worthy of his ſervice; and to learn in a foreign Nation, and the moſt accompliſht School of War, ſeveral things, that might qualifie me much better for the employments he honour'd me with. The pretence I uſed was fair and plauſible enough, and the poſture of my affairs at that time as favourable. But the King, who ſaw the Servants, in whom he confided moſt, fall off from him every day, made ſome difficulty at firſt of granting my requeſt, fearing, that when I was at ſo great a diſtance from him, I ſhould be ſo much the leſs zealous for him, and eaſier to receive any bad impreſſions, that men might be apt to inſinuate into me. For indeed the coldneſs he diſcover'd in moſt of thoſe that were about him, inclined him to a very particular regard for the moſt inconſiderable of his Servants, where he found a contrary temper; and therefore it ought to ſeem leſs ſtrange, if he ſtoopt ſo low ſometimes, as to expreſs a kindneſs for a poor mean Officer, as I was,

to

to fix me faſter to him; ſince the unhappy circumſtances of his Government made ſuch condeſcenſions neceſſary to him, as would otherwiſe have very ill become the Majeſty of ſo great a Prince. But how averſe ſoever he was to my making this Campaign in *Holland*, he yielded at laſt to the ſollicitation of ſeveral friends of mine, who knew that I was then quite out of my Element, while ſtaying at Court without any conſiderable employ; and therefore they followed my buſineſs ſo cloſe, as to get me the Kings leave, tho not without ſome degree of loathneſs and reluctancy.

VIII. Mareſchal *Brezay* had a particular kindneſs, I may ſay indeed, the care and affection of a Father for me; and as a teſtimony of the ſincere friendſhip he honour'd me with, preſented me with a very fine Gold Medal, with a Sword engraven on one ſide, and a Purſe on the other; deſigning to aſſure me by this, that both his Sword and his Purſe were at my ſervice. Which no doubt ought to be eſteemed a very ſinguſar favour, eſpecially from a Gentleman of his quality and temper; who kept himſelf pretty much upon the reſerve, and was intimately acquainted with very few people. He entruſted me with the raiſing his Regiment, and made me eldeſt Captain and Major of it, and as it were his *Aid de Camp* beſides. The Army for *Picardy*, which he and the Mareſchal *de Chatillon* commanded between them by turns, conſiſted of at leaſt twenty thouſand Foot, and ſix or ſeven thouſand Horſe.

IX. The Generals deſign'd to beſiege *Namur*, a Town ſituate upon the *Meuſe*. In order to it, when the Army was come within four or five leagues of it, Mareſchal *Brezay* ſent Monſieur *de Vientais*, Monſieur *Lanſac*, and me, with a detachment of three hundred Horſe, to go before, and learn the poſture of the Enemy, and the outskirts of the Town. At the Village of *Avain* we took ſome Priſoners, and underſtood by them, that the Enemy came on with their whole Army, under the command of Prince *Thomas*, their General; Count *Feria*, Son to the Count *de Benevent*, Governour of *Anvers*, the Lieutenant General; and the Count *de Buquoy*, who commanded the Horſe. We march'd all night, and when we were got up pretty near to *Namur*, left our Squadron in a Wood, that we might come ſtill cloſer to the Town, and inform our ſelves better how matters ſtood. We heard immediately the Trumpets ſound, the Drums beat, and all the noiſe and clatter of an Army upon the march, with Baggage and Ordnance. It was Moon-light, and ſtrait we began to diſcover the Army coming over the Bridge croſs the *Meuſe*, and we ſtaid to count as far as forty Troops of Horſe.

After we had ſeen and heard too much to doubt any longer whether it was the Enemy's Army, we made haſte back to joyn our detachment, and recover the Village of *Avain* as faſt as we could. And indeed it was by no means ſafe to ſtop by the way, for the Enemy began immediately to ſend out parties of Horſe to ſcowr the Country, and make a diſcovery of our Army. If I would have been perſwaded by Monſieur *Vientais* and *Lanſac*, we had ſtaid at *Avain*, to refreſh our ſelves after the great fatigue we had undergone; but I made it ſo plain to them, that by this means they were in danger of having their Throats cut by theſe Scowrers, (and that a danger too, that could bring them no honour) that we continu'd our march quite back to the Army. We told Mareſchal *Brezay* what we had ſeen, who at firſt could ſcarce believe the Enemy was ſo nigh; but not being able to give the lye to our Eyes and Ears, he immediately gave orders to prevent our being ſurpriz'd by the Enemy.

The Mareſchal *de Chatillon* with the Rear-Guard was a great way from us; and tho Mareſchal *Brezay* would not have been much concern'd to begin the action without him, yet he ſent to deſire he would come up with all the ſpeed he could. Mareſchal *Chatillon* came himſelf preſently after, and looking upon the Enemy, and how they lay, with his uſual coldneſs, he ſaid very roughly to the Officers that were by; *I am glad to ſee them ſo near, it is better having them here, than at* Bruſſels. The Enemies having poſſeſt themſelves of *Avain*, we were forc'd to draw out our Army into line of Battel, in a very ſtreight Valley, where it coſt our Generals a great deal of trouble, to make amends by their skill and prudence, for the diſadvantage of the ground. Mareſchal *de Brezay* took the Left Wing, and *Chatillon* the Right. Monſieur *de Brezay*, who did me the honour to ſhew me a great deal of kindneſs, (as I ſaid before) thinking I had ſome experience in War, would needs make me that day execute the Office of Serjeant of the Battel, and marſhal all the men, which engag'd me to be up and down in ſeveral places, and parts of the action, to ſee the Generals orders duly obey'd.

In

In the beginning of the Engagement, the Enemies Forlorn Hope made ours give ground, who fell in upon the Detachment that ſupported them in great diſorder. Their Cannon, which was very advantageouſly planted, made at the ſame time ſuch a furious Diſcharge, that a great part of the Troops of our Left Wing were put into diſturbance with it. In that very inſtant a conſiderable Officer who rid cloſe to me, and whom I was to come to ſpeak with, immediately fell into ſuch a terrible Fright, that he ſet Spurs, and rid away as faſt as his Horſe could go. Some that ſaw him began to cry out, *Ah! ſuch a one runs.* Tho I had no great intimacy with him, yet I was concerned to ſee that this ſingle Miſcarriage might ruine him for ever; and therefore immediately anſwer'd as loud as I could ſpeak, *No, No, he does not Run, he is going to the Poſt I have aſſigned him.* And then I ſent a Gentleman after him, who was near me, and one that I durſt truſt, to tell him how I had vindicated his Honour, and deſire him by all means that he would come back to his Poſt immediately, and tell me publickly, That he had diſpatch'd the Buſineſs I had committed to his charge. Accordingly he did return, and ſpoke to me, as if he was giving an account of ſomething he had done, and he owned himſelf obliged to me as long as he lived, for this good office, in ſaving his Reputation at that time.

X. Our Troops taking heart again after this firſt Terror I mentioned, and recollecting with themſelves what a Reproach it would be to them, to have been affrighted with the noiſe of the Guns, and have given way at the very firſt; came on again bravely, and fell upon the Enemy with ſuch indignation and rage, that after a ſtiff reſiſtance on both ſides for a very great while, they were at laſt obliged to draw off, and leave us in poſſeſſion of the Field. I took particular notice of Prince *Thomas*, who, after having fought very bravely, was one of the laſt that went off. He was followed very cloſe at the heels, and forced to leap over a little Wall to get away; in the leap he dropt his Hat and Cane, at the end of which his Arms were engraven upon a golden handle. I, being very near him, took up that Cane, and gave it to Mareſchal *Brezay*, who ſome time after made a Preſent of it to the King. Beſides, we followed ſo hard upon Count *Feria* his Lieutenant-General, that he was forc'd to beg for Quarter of me, crying out, *Spare my Life, Ten thouſand Crowns Ranſom.* So I made him my Priſoner.

But how great and remarkable ſoever this Victory was, yet it coſt *France* very dear, for we loſt a world of gallant Men, who were ſacrificed there for the publick good. A vaſt many Colours and Cornets were taken, and abundance of Priſoners. The chief of them were Count *Feria*, whom I told you of before; *Don Charles* Natural Son to the Archduke *Leopold*, Collonel *Sfondrate* an *Italian*, and Collonel *Brown* an *Engliſh* Man, were likewiſe taken there. As for Prince *Thomas*, and the Count *de Buquoy*, they ſaved themſelves by flight. After the Battel was over, I had a great quarrel with the Commander of the Forlorn Hope, who would needs have it, that Count *Feria* was his Priſoner, becauſe it was the Party he led on, that preſt him and forc'd him to retreat, and therefore he belonged to him as Commander of that Party. I anſwer'd, That I was the Perſon of whom Count *Feria* asked Quarter, and into my hands he ſurrendred himſelf; and farther, that for the determination of the Controverſy, I would refer my ſelf to the Priſoner himſelf. He was asked then, Whoſe Priſoner he acknowledged himſelf? And he immediately made anſwer, That I had given him Quarter, and he ſurrendred himſelf up to me. Thus our Diſpute was decided by the Count's own Declaration, who immediately, and as a mark of his kindneſs, gave me his General's Scarf. He alſo made me a Preſent of a Box of Reliques which he had about him, and which I have kept ever ſince. I was in good hopes to have got Ten thouſand Crowns from the King too, which is a Gratuity uſually given to them that take a General Priſoner in time of Action. But I had juſt the ſame Succeſs on this occaſion, that I uſually met with in the reſt of my Life, where what we commonly call the Fortune of this World, ſeemed continually to flee from before me. As God would have it, Count *Feria*, after ſome Months, made his eſcape, and tho the King frequently promis'd me the ſame Sum of Ten thouſand Crowns, which was but my due Reward, yet never any thing at all came of it.

XI. After this famous Action of the Battel of *Avain*, the Prince of *Orange*, who had been declared Generaliſſimo of both the *French* and the *Dutch* Armies, and who lay at that time above ten Leagues from us, was very much diſpleaſed that our Generals

rals had presumed to engage without him. He was extremely concerned, that he had no hand in so illustrious an Action, and could scarce forbear looking upon this Victory as his own loss. When our Troops therefore were come up, and we drew pretty near his Army, the Mareschals of *France* thought it convenient to send me with their Compliments to him, and acquaint him, That whenever his Excellence saw fit, he should find all our Army in a readiness to receive him, and to pay him all the Respect due to his Character. They order'd me also, that if the Prince were coming on towards them, I should leave him about a League from our Army, and return full speed, to give them notice, that all the Generals and principal Officers might go meet him. Commands were sent out at the same time to all the Soldiers and Officers in the Army, to put themselves in the best condition, and make the gayest and most splendid Appearance they could, as a mark of Honour to the Person whom they owned as their Generalissimo, and then the whole Army was drawn out in form of Battel.

When I came to the Prince of *Orange*, I complimented him in the Name of our Generals, with all the Deference and Respect I could, and told him, how eager they were to submit themselves to him, and to take care that the whole Army should pay him the Honours and Respects due to their Generalissimo. But the Prince, who was much dissatisfied at the Business of *Avain*, was at a stand what Answer to make, or what to resolve upon. Observing him undetermined in himself, I began to grow weary, and told him I waited his Highness's Answer to our Generals. Seeing me a little urgent, he told me he would come to our Army, and at the same time gave Order for a Thousand of his own Horse, or thereabouts, to attend him to the place where we lay. But he presently changed his mind, and by that time he had gone about half a League, he told me, it was something with the latest to join our Army that day, and he would put it off till the next. Then he began to open himself, and express his concern for not being at the Battel; for he said to me, tho in a jesting manning manner, *Your Army has got itself great Renown, and I doubt not, triumphs much at present, for the noble Conquest they have gained. If they had staid, and taken our Assistance, they would have had no cause to repent, or at least they would have tried whether the* Dutch *be good Soldiers or not.* I returned him a very respectful Answer, That our Army was prest so hard by the Enemy, that we could not possibly decline engaging; but that he, as our Generalissimo, had the greatest share both in the Action, and the Honour of the Day; That the *French* did not at all question the *Hollanders* Courage, and this War was like enough to furnish them with a great many opportunities of signalizing themselves. Then I took my leave of his Excellence, and came back to our Generals, who were very sorry the Prince was not pleased to come that day, because each single person, and the whole Army in general, was then the most glorious, and in the best condition to receive him, that ever they had been seen. But the matter was put off only till the morrow, and his Excellence was then entertained with all the Respects that became us, and all the Ceremonies usual upon such occasions.

XII. The two Armies marched afterwards to *Tillemont*, a Town that was made remarkable by the unfortunate manner of its being taken, and the Cruelties and Sacriledges in the sacking of it, such I cannot remember to this day without horror. It was necessary first to possess our selves of the Suburbs, and I, being in the head of the Forlorn Hope, had a great Ruffle with Monsieur *Mottehoudencour*: For he seeing me in the same Rank with himself, and very warm in pushing my advantage, and scaling the Walls first, cryed out, *Sir, Monsieur* Pontis, *You do not march in Order, I am Maistre de Camp, and ought to go before you.* I answer'd him without any disorder, *Sir, Let every one keep to the Post assigned him, keep you to yours, and I will endeavour to make good mine.* My Answer was so far from satisfying him, that it put him into a mighty Passion. He could not away with that Coldness and Resolution with which I spoke, and beginning to swear a little, called out still louder, *That if I did not stop, he should resent the Affront.* I answer'd smiling, *That he would remember it for no other purpose, I believed, than to love me the better for it, when we should both get honourably into the Town, and this was all the Resentment the Honour of his Friendship would allow me to expect.* But he did not take what I said for a Jest, and as each of us were still pressing forward, when I was getting up upon an advanced Work in form of a Bastion, and that he saw me almost at the top, and like to rob him of the Honour he pretended to of scaling first, he fell to calling out again, but more violently than before, *That if I did not halt,*

he would fire upon me. It was really a good pleaſant thing, to ſee us two parlying and contending at this rate, for the credit of the Aſſault; one with all the indifference of a Man in Raillery, and the other with all the fury of a Man out of his wits with Paſſion. I was no more confounded at this laſt Compliment, than any of the former; and told him with the ſame eaſineſs I had done before, *If I were not very well acquainted with Monſieur* Mottehoudencour, *and his generous temper, there would be ſome reaſon to apprehend what he threatned, but I was ſatisfied this was all in Jeſt. I am going Sir,* ſaid I again, *to make way for you, and to open a paſſage.* With that I recover'd the top of the Baſtion, and the Enemy ſeeing themſelves ſtraitned on all ſides, withdrew into the Town.

When I was up, I perceiv'd my ſelf juſt over againſt one of the Gates; and the advantage of this Poſt put Monſieur *Mottehoudencour* ſtill more out of humor; for he was forc'd to fetch a compaſs, and at laſt found himſelf in a Poſt not near ſo advantageous as mine. But I had a prophetick Spirit as it hapned, for our Quarrel that begun with the Action, was very happily compoſed ſoon after, and how that was I will now tell you. Mareſchal *Brezay* having underſtood that there were ſeveral Tan-fats very convenient to ſet Guards in, order'd me to go and obſerve them. Thither I went in the midſt of a deal of Fire and Smoke, and Muſquet Bullets that whiſtled about my Ears, but none of them did me any hurt. Having got to one of theſe Tan-yards, I found it really very convenient for a Guard to be poſted in; I informed Mareſchal *Brezay* of it, and told him at the ſame time, that it would not do well to venture very many Men there, becauſe if the Enemy ſhould make a Sally, they would be in great danger of being all knockt o'th' head.

Monſieur *Mottehoudencour* hapned to be by, and being a little better humor'd, began now to take his turn of laughing, and ſaid pleaſantly to me, *I muſt own I was horribly enraged at thee even now. I thought if I had had thee in my Teeth, I could have crackt thy Bones like Nuts. But come, to make us Friends, thou ſhalt carry me to ſee this Tan-yard*; which was ſaid out of a gallantry, by no means fit for a perſon of his worth and condition: ſo gueſſing pretty well at his meaning, and thinking he would take it ill to be refuſed, I told him briskly, *That I would not make my peace with him upon ſuch terms, as carrying him to have his brains beat out; That this was a method of reconciliation fit for none but an Enemy, and I did not take him for ſuch; That there was no need for him to deſtroy himſelf meerly for a humor.* Mareſchal *Brezay*, who was deſirous to appear as full of Courage as Monſieur *Mottehoudencour*, told me hereupon, *That he had a mind to go too, and I ſhould carry them both thither.* I was a little aſhamed to ſee a Mareſchal of *France* value himſelf upon theſe gallantries, and judging all things to be better than an unſeaſonable Bravado, I anſwer'd him with the ſame freedom I had uſed to Monſieur *Mottehoudencour, That I had forgot the way.* He pretended to be angry, (tho probably he would have had more reaſon to be ſo, if I had ſhew'd him the place we talk'd off;) and told me, he took this really ill, and for one enemy before, I had now got two. I anſwer'd him, without concerning my ſelf much at his diſpleaſure, that it did by no means become a General, as he was, to caſt away his life by way of Gallantry; that young hot fellows only were priviledged to do ſuch things, and that the meaneſt Souldier in the whole Army had an intereſt in the ſafety of his General's perſon. Thus all our difference was made up; he had his End, and I had mine; and after they had both ſatisfied the little vanity they had, they thought themſelves never the worſe, that they had not gratified it at their own coſt.

XIII. The Enemy finding themſelves reduced to great Extremities, and not in a condition to hold out againſt two ſuch mighty Armies, choſe not to ſtand the ſhock of a general Aſſault, but ſallied out of a Back-gate that was not inveſted, and ſo made their Eſcape. Notice of this was brought to Mareſchal *Brezay*, who order'd that they ſhould ſuffer the Gariſon to go off, and ſo make themſelves Maſters of the Town. I drew his Regiment up againſt the Gate, having firſt with great difficulty beaten down the Draw-bridge. But finding this Gate barricado'd on the inſide, and that there was no way to clear it, but by going in, I order'd the Soldiers next the Gate to ſtand very cloſe together, and getting up upon their ſhoulders, with a Soldier that had a Hatchet, I put him in through one of the Holes where the Beams that ſupported the Draw-bridge came through. I had a mind to go in after him, but it hapned that juſt then the Souldiers ſtood a little wider, ſo that I fell down among them, and had like to have been ſtifled. I got up again however, as nimbly as I could, but not being

ing able to draw my Shoes after me, I went in by the ſame Hole without them, and got the Gate broke open, ſo that all our Regiment, and the whole Army came in at it.

It was agreed upon with the Prince of *Orange* before, that the *Hollanders* ſhould not enter the Town, becauſe of the violence and outrage that Hereticks uſe to be guilty of. And the Mareſchal *de Brezay*, deſigning to prevent any diſorder, diſpatcht me immediately with about twenty Souldiers, to ſecure a Convent of Nuns. Here I found a great deal of Scarlet Cloath, and other commodities of great value, which had been brought and laid up there, as in a place of ſecurity; but knowing very well how rude and undiſtinguiſhing Souldiers are in War, I told the good Nuns, that they took the ready courſe to have their Convent plundered; That I adviſ'd them not to ſtay there any longer, and if the Troops came that way, it might not be in my power to prevent their being ranſackt. They anſwer'd me, in great terror and diſtraction, *Ah, Sir! ſave our Lives, and our Honour; alas! we know not whither to go, nor what to do.* I promiſ'd them to do the beſt I could; but own'd to them freely at the ſame time, that I ſaw no great ſafety for them there.

In the mean time the Prince of *Orange*'s Souldiers, upon ſome diſcontent for a ſumm of Money due, from the Town of *Tillemont*, broke in among the reſt, contrary to the agreement. Theſe wretches ſpread themſelves in an inſtant through all parts of the Town, plundered, and murdered Prieſts and Monks with the greateſt cruelty imaginable. And the Nunnery that I guarded being a large one, there preſently ſwarmed thither ſome *Hollanders*, ſome *Cravats*, ſome *French*, all as mad as Devils, and grown void of all ſence of God, Religion, or Reaſon. I oppoſed them as long as I could with the few Souldiers I had, and bore up againſt this crowd of Madmen, till at laſt having burſt the Gates, they throng'd in, and fell upon our Guard, ſome of whom were wounded, and the reſt fled. For my own part, as I was defending my ſelf ſtill with my Sword, reſolving to dye upon the ſpot, rather than expoſe ſo many poor Virgins to their rudeneſs and violence; one of the Officers, a greater brute than the common Souldiers, endeavoured to cleave me down the middle with his Sable, and let fly a blow at me with his full ſtrength, and he had infallibly done it, if I had not broke the force of the blow with my Sword, which was broke ſhort in two by it. Then, finding that I was defenceleſs, they threw themſelves upon me, ſnatcht that piece of my Sword that I had left out of my hand, cut off my Belt, and away they carried it. I threatned to complain of them to his Excellence, which gave them ſome little check; and ſo giving me my life, they ſatisfy'd themſelves with thruſting me out of the Convent. Then finding no oppoſition, they broke all the Gates, ſpoil'd all that came near them, maſſacred all the Nuns they met, ſtole all the rich goods I ſpoke of, and made ſuch a confuſion as is not poſſible for me to deſcribe. It was an unſpeakable grief to me, to ſee one of theſe poor Nuns, that ran about diſtracted, with a Knife ſtuck in her head, and wept, and cry'd out, *Ah Gentlemen, pray ſave my Life.* I could with all my heart have ventur'd my own life to ſave hers, but I was diſarm'd, and at diſtance, or if I had not I could never have done any good againſt ſo great a multitude.

Meeting the Collonel afterwards, with whom I was acquainted, I began to call out to him in a great paſſion, *Oh Sir, is this the order you obſerve in War? After I had by our Generals order brought a guard hither to defend this place, do you allow theſe Raſcals to come fall upon us, and knock us o'th' head as if we were Enemies; to diſarm me by violence, and plunder and tear all to pieces in a Religious houſe, which the Generals have taken into their protection? What would you have me do?* ſaid he, *They are theſe deviliſh* Cravats, *that are worſe than ſo many wild Beaſts. Pray go yonder*, ſaid I, *and lay about you with your Cane: Scatter theſe Villains, that have taken away my arms, and had like to have kill'd me.* He anſwer'd me, That being fleſht as they were now, they would kill him too, if he ſhould go amongſt them; and that he could not imagine how I got out of their hands without being cut to pieces. This was no ſatisfaction to me however, and I was enraged to ſee my ſelf ſo ill us'd, and that a Collonel could not make his Souldiers obey him. I went then immediately to look Mareſchal *Brezay*, being quite out of my wits, and my very Eyes ſparkling with anger. There I make my complaint, That his authority was ſlighted, that I had like to have had my brains beat out at the Convent he ſent me to ſecure; that they had plunder'd all with the extremeſt rage and rapine; and there was no more perſwading theſe Robbers to reaſon, than mad hungry Wolves. The Mareſchal was very angry at this baſeneſs, and drew a part of the Army behind the Convent, and ſecuring this place, gave ſix or ſeven Nuns opportunity to eſcape, who fled to him for refuge, being got away by the back door.

Some

Some two or three days after, being among ſome of the Officers of my acquaintance, and going to the Kings quarter, I happen'd to meet with that Rogue of an Officer that uſed me ſo ſcurvily. I quickly knew my Gentleman, for my concern for ſuch baſe uſage had given me a very lively Idea of his face, and I could not poſſibly forget him: So I went up to him, and in a rage ſaid, *Oh you pitiful Raſcal, you are the Rogue that abuſed me ſo the other day; give me my Sword and Belt.* Upon this, he went to lay his hand upon his Sword, but I preſently leapt to him, and caught him by the Collar, and holding the butt-end of my Piſtol to his head, I told him, that if he did not give me my Sword and Belt immediately, I would break his head. He had no mind to try me, becauſe he ſaw I was in a paſſion, and being confounded, he was forc'd to give me what I required. Then I took him by the Arm, and with the ſame reſolution and authority that I would have ſpoken to a Common Souldier, ſaid to him, *Thou art no better than a Villain, and I will have thee hang'd inſtantly, for the outrage thou haſt committed, contrary to the Generals expreſs orders.* The poor fellow ſtood ſo confounded at my talking ſo boldly to him, that he thought he came off well with asking my pardon, and promiſing me to reſtore my own Sword and Belt, which he had not then about him, but had inſtead of it given me his own. He made me a preſent beſides, of a Silver Powder-box gilt, and a ſtring of Gold twiſt, that tyed like a Bandelier, to appeaſe me. He richly deſerv'd hanging indeed, for the ravage and horrible barbarities, which both he committed himſelf, and his Souldiers by his order. But conſidering he was not under my juriſdiction, and beſides, that he belong'd to the Prince of *Orange*'s Army, I was content for my part to take up with the ſatisfaction he made me, beſides my Sword and Belt, which he ſent me home afterwards. But his Excellence being complained to by Mareſchal *Brezay*, threatned him in my hearing to hang him and his Companions, as they very well deſerv'd. But whether he was as good as his word to him, I cannot tell.

XIV. The two Armies parted at their drawing off from *Tillemont*; the Prince of *Orange*'s went toward *Bruſſels*, as if intending to ſit down before that place; and the *French* Army to *Louvain*. They made a halt for ſome time in the Country between *Tillemont*, *Louvain*, and *Bruſſels*. But as the *French* went off for *Louvain*, the *Spaniards* ſhew'd themſelves in the Rear of them. Mareſchal *Brezay*, ſurpriz'd to ſee them ſo nigh, order'd me to draw three Regiments into an encloſure, to ſtop the Enemies march. I did it preſently, and poſted our men very conveniently, both to cover our Army, and defend our ſelves from any that ſhould attack us. In this encounter I had like to have loſt part of my Baggage, by the breaking of a Waggon-wheel, when the Enemy were within ſix or ſeven hundred paces of us. But running ſtrait to the Ordnance, I bought another for forty Livres, and brought it to ſupply the place of the broken one; ſo that I gain'd time enough to get this Waggon off. Our three Regiments being poſted in the encloſure I mention'd, the Enemy fell in upon us, and there was a ſharp skirmiſh on both ſides. The whole Army in the mean while retreated fighting, being too weak to ſtand a pitcht Battel, and they marcht at a great rate, which made our Regiments begin to grumble, who cry'd out, that I brought them thither to be murder'd. I anſwer'd, that I look'd for the Generals orders every minute; that I could not quit that poſt of my own head; and if the danger was great for them, it was no leſs for me too.

We had not been long in this perplexity, before Mareſchal *Brezay* ſent me commands to bring my men off, and joyn him as quick as I could. The Enemy skirmiſht upon us in the Rear, and when we and the whole Army were come up to a little Village, they made a very briſk puſh upon us, and oblig'd us to leave the Village, and retreat ſtill fighting; till at laſt, having recover'd a very narrow paſs, we fac'd about, and fought upon equal terms. The Enemies having now loſt all the advantage, which their numbers gave them before, thought it the wiſeſt courſe to wheel off, and go charge the Prince of *Orange*'s Rear. But they could not recover him, for he had march'd all night, and put his Troops under covert.

XV. Then the two Confederate Armies joyn'd again, and went to form the Siege of *Louvain* with united force. It was my fortune to ſtay at this Siege but ten or twelve days, for a reaſon that I ſhall give preſently, and therefore I can give no very particular account of it. Only I happen'd, by way of Gallantry, to quarrel with two of our Generals, meerly for bringing them off from a danger they expos'd themſelves

to,

to, out of a pure bravado, and where they would have thrown away their lives very fooliſhly. Mareſchal *Brezay*, and the Great Maſter *de la Melleray*, being gone up to the top of a Retrenchment in a meer brag, I came behind Monſieur *Melleray*, took him up in my arms about the waſte, and carried him quite to the bottom of the Retrenchment; the ſame I did to Mareſchal *Brezay*, and both ſo quick, that they neither of them had time to think where they were, and then told them with the freedom they allowed me to uſe with them; *Theſe are pleaſant Gallantries indeed, that muſt coſt us all our lives; If the Generals be taken off, who muſt command the Army? and what will become of the inferiour Officers and common Souldiers?* The two Gentlemen, in the greateſt ſurprize imaginable, lookt upon one another, and laying their hands upon their Swords, began to run after me to revenge this affront. But I, who had no mind to give them any occaſion of doing any thing out of ſeaſon, and which they would have been ſorry for, after I had done them ſo good ſervice, ſet to running as faſt as I could, for fear the jeſt ſhould be carried too far. I was ſatisfy'd that in their hearts they were well enough pleaſed to ſee themſelves brought off from a danger, which nothing but a vain emulation had put them upon tempting. And when they ſaw me run away at that rate, they were well contented to be out-run, and ſtood ſtill. However I did not care to come into their preſence quickly, to make the matter look better, and in ſhew, at leaſt to return their pretences of offering to do me a miſchief.

A little while after I received a Muſquet-ſhot in the Trenches, it was in the Arm, and did me no great hurt; but when Mareſchal *Brezay* heard I was wounded, he pretended to be very angry at me, and ſaid, it was no great matter if I were kill'd. I am ſure he did not think ſo, for preſently after he ſent his own Chyrurgeon to take care of me, and when I went with my Arm in a Scarf to return him thanks for it, I could not forbear owning to him again, that I was ſo far from being ſorry for what I had done to them, that I thought it was the beſt courſe I could take of expreſſing my honour and value for them, to prevent ſuch deſperate ventureſome actions, as might very well loſe the whole Army. I am amazed indeed, that ſuch great men ſhould be guilty of theſe follies, as if a General had no other way to ſhew his courage but by theſe kind of tricks, fitter for young fool-hardy Souldiers than for Officers, even thoſe of the leaſt quality or conſideration; whoſe lives the King hath a greater intereſt in than the perſon himſelf, and therefore they ought to be made the beſt of, for his ſervice, and the ſafety of thoſe under their command, and not laviſhly ſquandered away upon every ridiculous vanity, and for meer oſtentation.

XVI. I told you I continued but a little while before *Louvain*. For Mareſchal *Brezay* being in ſome diſtreſs for want of Hay and Forrage for his Horſe, gave me in command to go force the Caſtle of *Arſcot*, about eight or nine leagues diſtant from *Louvain*: where there was a great quantity of proviſions of all ſorts, both for man and beaſt. For this undertaking he appointed me twenty Waggons, and about four hundred Muſqueteers; and with theſe I marched by night up to this Caſtle, which was hemm'd in on all ſides with very wide Ditches, and defended by a ſtrong Garriſon. I found means to bring my men up to the Gate, ſome by Boats, and ſome by wading up to the middle upon the rubbiſh of the Bridge that was broken down. Then with great Levers I forc'd the Gate, and when we had made our way in, after two or three hours diſpute, the Garriſon were conſtrained to retire into a Tower, and from thence they capitulated with us. I immediately loaded the Waggons that came with me with Hay and Oats, and ſent them to Mareſchal *Brezay* with a meſſage, that if he would ſend me the Carriages of the Ordnance, there was ſtore enough to load five hundred of them, with Wheat and Hay, and Oats, and Barley, and other proviſions: For there were vaſt Granaries in this Caſtle, and all full, becauſe the whole wealth of all the Country thereabouts had been brought in, and laid up there. Then I began to contrive how I ſhould fortify and barricado my ſelf up, for the defence of my ſelf and our Corn; and Monſieur *Brezay* having ſent a freſh ſupply of Waggons to a very great number, I return'd them back to him all laden as before, which was a very ſeaſonable refreſhment to our Generals, and their Attendants.

XVII. At this time there happened a warm diſpute between the Marquis of *S.* who is now Mareſchal of *France*, and me. He had a mind to ſhare with me, when he ſaw what quantity of forrage and proviſions I ſent to the Army, and coming with his Company to the Caſtle where I was, would fain have been at dividing the ſpoil.

There had been no good underſtanding between us before; becauſe once, when I was to appoint quarters, I had ordered a houſe for him, where he had room enough, and a great deal of forrage, but little convenience of Kitchin or Cellar, becauſe the Maſter of the houſe was not at home. This put him in a paſſion, and provok'd him to reproach me, by ſaying, That I took very good care to aſſign him a dry lodging. When he was come then near the Caſtle of *Arſcot*, which, as I ſaid, was begirt round with large Moats full of water, he ſent to ſpeak with me. I went out to him, but kept a barrier between us, and five and twenty, or thirty Muſqueteers, who were to give fire if he had offered the leaſt violence. Then the Marquis began to give me joy of my ſucceſsful attempt; and told me very civilly, that he was come to be reconcil'd to me, and that he acknowledg'd the difference between us to have proceeded from a fault in him, and a little heat of youth. I perceiving very well that theſe compliments were ſtrain'd, and deſigned to ſerve a turn, anſwer'd him with ſome indifference, That I was very glad for his ſake, he own'd himſelf in the wrong. Tho my anſwer was not very agreeable to him, yet he paſt that by, and at laſt fell upon the matter, that was the true bottom of all his compliments: He deſired to come in, and have ſome loading of forrage. I told him, I could diſpoſe of nothing in that Caſtle without an order from the Generals, for they had ſent me thither, and all that was there belong'd to them; nor could I ſuffer him and his Company to come in, without their poſitive command; but if he pleas'd to come in ſingle, the Gate ſhould be open'd to him alone.

He preſently began to change his note, and told me, with an Oath, I ſpoke like a Prince, and a King. Then he threatned me to enter the place by ſtrength of arms, and make himſelf way with his Sword. The hotter he grew, the more coldneſs I put on; and without any concern I told him, I would not adviſe him to that method, for if he ſtirr'd, I would order my men to fire upon him without delay. The evenneſs of temper with which I anſwered his bluſtering, ſurpriz'd him, and he reply'd, *Thou art as cold as a Well-rope, and yet thou threatneſt to kill me.* I told him, I did my duty without paſſion. At laſt he took the ſafeſt courſe, and withdrew, tho ſtill talking big, which I was not in the leaſt diſturb'd at. But apprehending however, that he might complain to Mareſchal *Brezay*, and prepoſſeſs him againſt me, I immediately writ to him, and gave an exact account of all that had paſt between us. So when the Marquis went to make his complaints to him, and among other things to my diſadvantage, told him, that I guarded the Caſtle ſo ill, that he could eaſily have ſurpriz'd it, if he had had any ſuch deſign. The Mareſchal, who underſtood my management, and the true reaſon of his complaint, by my Letter, told him freely, that he gave no great credit to what he ſaid, and thought me more careful than that came to. He writ back to me by the ſame Meſſenger, and in his Letter was pleas'd to commend what I had done, in refuſing to admit the Marquis, and denying him forrage. With this he ſent me a poſitive order in the Kings name, to receive no perſon whatſoever into the Caſtle, nor give out any forrage, except the party brought an order, either under the Prince of *Orange*'s hand, or Mareſchal *Chatillon*'s, or his own.

The Marquis, who knew nothing of Mareſchal *Brezay*'s anſwer, nor this freſh order, came a ſecond time to the Caſtle, and told me, that he had ſpoke with Mareſchal *Brezay*, and that he was diſpleaſed at my carriage to him; he told me moreover, that unleſs I would rebel againſt the General's order, I muſt open to him inſtantly. This laſt was what I expected, and therefore preſently taking the Letter out of my pocket, I ſhewed it him at a diſtance. and ſaid aloud; *Here's one can tell me Mareſchal* Brezay's *mind better than the Marquis of* S. *Here you may ſee how he commands me to open the Gate, for he commends me for not opening to you the other day, and forbids me in the King's name to admit any body, without ſhewing a particular order from our Generals. Therefore, Sir,* ſaid I, *let me ſee your order, and every Gate here ſhall be opened to you.* The Marquis was in a ſtrange confuſion to ſee himſelf ſo ſhamefully diſproved, by the very perſon whoſe Authority he pretended to; and went away in a rage, without any other ſatisfaction, than that of ſaying ſeveral rude things againſt Mareſchal *Brezay* and me.

XVIII. I was not ſo fortunate however afterwards, as I promis'd my ſelf from being poſſeſt of this Caſtle. But, according to my old fate, what would in all probability have made another man's fortunes, to me turned to no manner of account. The miſunderſtanding there was between the Prince of *Orange* and our Generals, hindered our ſucceſs againſt *Louvain*, and it was agreed to raiſe the Siege. Mareſchal *Brezay*

ſent

ſent me about twenty Waggons, with a detachment of ſome Companies commanded by the Lieutenants, and told me, that the Siege being now upon raiſing, he would have me load thoſe Waggons with Wheat, and Hay, and Oats, and leave thoſe Officers that brought thoſe Companies in the Caſtle, and return to the Camp with the Troops under my command. This news I confeſs was a great ſurprize to me, for I took it for granted *Louvain* would be taken, and then the Caſtle of *Arſcot*, that I had taken ſuch pains to keep, would fall to my ſhare, with a good part of the moveables that were brought in thither, and lay in Cheſts, which I had been very tender of all along, looking upon them as my own, and not caring to break them open till all was over. But I reckon'd without my hoſt; and all my diligence in preſerving them was theſe Officers gain, who as ſoon as ever they got my place, broke open all, and furniſht themſelves at the expence of them to whom theſe goods belonged. I went away much diſſatisfy'd, after having loaded the Waggons Mareſchal *Brezay* ſent with all the ſpeed I could, and put them under a Convoy of the four hundred Muſqueteers, whom I carried back to the Army.

Some leagues from thence we diſcover'd a party of four or five hundred of the Enemies Horſe, that ſeem'd at ſome diſtance from us, and came croſs us to cut off our paſſage. At firſt we gave our ſelves for loſt, and took it for granted, conſidering that we were in a plain, which gave the Horſe a great advantage againſt us, that there was no remedy but we muſt be cut to pieces. But the Guide put me a little into heart, for he told me, that a little further there was a narrow paſs upon a riſing ground, where we might put our ſelves under cover of ſome Woods; and that if we made the beſt of our way, we were time enough to recover the place, before the Enemy got up to us, who muſt of neceſſity fetch a compaſs by reaſon of a Ditch that lay in their way. I immediately drew my men into form of battel, and as I us'd to do, hemm'd them in with the Waggons, ordering ſome of them to get up into the Carriages. Then we whipt on the Horſes, and putting on apace, came up to the place I ſpoke of, and there were met and attackt by the Enemies Horſe. I ordered our men to halt, and exhorted them to behave themſelves well, and make a general fire upon the firſt that came up. I muſt own, I never was better obſerv'd in my life, and that Enemies were never more briskly entertained. For immediately they diſcharged ſo bravely upon the firſt Aſſailants, that a great many of them were laid dead upon the ſpot, and ſo cool'd their courage for a ſecond attempt. So the reſt that were wiſer went off, though much fewer than they came, and left us to keep on our way without more danger or diſturbance.

By this time Mareſchal *Brezay* had intimation, that ſome Squadrons of Horſe had met with me, and concluding we were all deſtroyed, he began to be very angry at me, and laid all at my door, ſuppoſing I came out too late, and had ſpent time unſeaſonably, in ſtaying to enrich my ſelf with the booty of the Caſtle. In this ill humour I found him at my arrival, but when he underſtood we had ſuſtained no loſs, and all was ſafe, he chang'd preſently from a deep malancholy, into an extreme good humour, and told me with ſome degree of amazement, that he could not imagine which way we could bring our ſelves off. I gave him a relation of the whole matter, but at the ſame time expreſt my diſſatisfaction, that the King's men ſhould be expos'd to ſuch hazards, and all for a little forrage.

XIX. The Siege was rais'd quickly after, and the Army was ſent for good quarters towards *Ruremond*, but indeed we fell into very bad ones. This being a ſandy Country, there happened ſo violent a ſtorm, and ſuch mighty hurricanes, that for five or ſix days together we breathed nothing but Sand, inſtead of pure Air. Five or ſix thouſand men were preſently choak'd with it, or elſe died in a little while by diſtempers that this corruption of the Air bred among them. For, beſides what they ſuckt in by breathing at the Noſe, that which was eaten with our meat, which was all tainted continually, infected their bodies to that degree, that they were quickly overrun with it. This weakned our Army, and reduc'd them to ſuch a wretched condition, that they were more like an Hoſpital of ſick men, than a Camp of Souldiers, that made fighting their buſineſs. Upon which ſeveral begg'd to be diſmiſt, and long'd for a little of their own native air to recover their health and ſtrength, which this malignant air had almoſt quite conſumed.

Among theſe many ſick poor wretches, I ſaw one day a man habited like a Beggar, who ask'd an Alms, and was almoſt eaten up with vermin, and all over Scabs. After having

having viewed him well, I knew him, and found he was a Gentleman, that had ſpent his eſtate, and was brought to theſe wretched circumſtances by his own extravagance. I took pity on his condition, and giving my ſervant Money to buy him neceſſaries, I bad him go along with him. We clothed him, and then he expreſt to me a great deſire to go back into *France*, for he was ſure he ſhould dye of want and ſickneſs in that Country. With much ado I got him diſmiſt, for he belong'd to our Army, and Mareſchal *Brezay* had orders to let no body return into *France*. The ſickneſs, and wretched condition he was in, having forc'd him to leave the ſervice, I was very importunate with the Mareſchal that he might go home, who did not know how to deny me for this man, what he granted ſcarce to any body; ſo I ſent him away, and let him have fifty Crowns to bear his charges. But tho he hath recovered himſelf ſince, and lives very well, yet he made it appear, that the greateſt kindneſſes are but little acknowledged; and that a falſe notion of honour tempts men wilfully to forget obligations, which they are aſham'd to remember. For he never came near me, ſo much as to thank me, for ſix whole years, nay he took all occaſions of avoiding my company; and it was above nine years before he paid me what I had lent him, to redeem him out of his misfortunes.

XX. While our Army lay ſick in *Holland*, I loſt and found again a very valuable Horſe, and the beſt I was then Maſter of, after a very odd manner. Some body having taken occaſion to ſteal him from me in the very Camp, ſome days after he was gone I met a Gentleman mounted upon a Horſe exactly like mine. I preſently told him without more ado, that the Horſe was mine, and enquir'd whom he had bought him of. He anſwer'd me very frankly, That might very well be, for he had him dog-cheap of a Souldier, that ſold him for three Piſtoles, and that for the ſame Money he was at my ſervice. I gave him the Money accordingly, and took the Horſe which I thought mine, but really was not ſo. Some time after, as I was ſpeaking very loud, and calling to ſome body in the Camp, my true Horſe, that was thereabouts, and having been long uſed to me, knew my voice, began preſently to neigh and whinny exceedingly, as if he had a mind to let people know, that he heard his Maſter's voice. I was as well acquainted with his whinny too; and ſent a Servant to the place where I heard him, to ſee if I was not miſtaken. He knew my Horſe again, and came back to give me an account of it. Whereupon enquiring out the man that had him in keeping, I forced him, tho with ſome difficulty, to reſtore him to me. So after a little while I had got both my own Horſe, and his likeneſs. But it was not long neither before this latter, by a good pleaſant adventure, found his own Maſter too. For the Officer whoſe really he was, meeting me one day upon his Horſe, challenged him, and made me the very ſame compliment, that I ſhould have done in his circumſtances, That that Horſe belonged to him: And to confirm it, he gave me an undeniable token, which was, that we ſhould find at the bottom of one of his feet a piece of green cloth in the ſhape of a Plaiſter, which was laid there for a hurt he had got on that foot. We found the matter even ſo. He gave me a Caſe of Piſtols, and I let him have his again. And thus by theſe two odd accidents, thoſe that poſſeſt what they had no right to, were diſpoſſeſt again, and the two Horſes were both return'd to their true owners.

The End of the Third Book.

BOOK

BOOK IV.

The Sieur de Pontis *is in the Prince of* Orange's *particular Favour, who invites him to his Service, but he declines it. The King makes him a Captain of the Guards. The Trick that was play'd him, to deprive him of this Favour. A great Conſternation in the* French *Army, when* Piccolomini *and* John *of* Werth *were the* Spaniſh *Generals. The Sieur* de Pontis *is ſent to relieve* Abbeville *with the Regiment of* Brezay. *His Behaviour to the Perſon that got the Command given him by the King out of his hands. They create him trouble at Court, upon occaſion of his Garriſon at* Abbeville. *He is taken Priſoner in a Fight. The Siege of* la Cappelle. *The Sieur* de Pontis *prevents the* Swiſſe's *Riſing.* Arras *beſieged and reduced.*

I. DUring the time our Army endured ſuch hardſhip in Quarters, the *Spaniards* had beſieged *Schink*, a Fort lying upon the *Rhine* ſome fifteen or ſixteen Leagues from *Ruremond*, and carried the place. The Prince of *Orange* was reſolved to retake it, and to this purpoſe marched both the Armies toward that Fort. Then it was that I began to have very free acceſs to the Prince, and (if it be not too much preſumption to call it ſo) a particular intimacy with his Excellence; for with ſuch he was pleaſed to honour me, and that hapned upon this occaſion. He was deſirous to know the Officers of our Army, and their Names, and therefore contrived that they ſhould come in order into a Hall where he was. I, as the reſt, went in my turn, and Mareſchal *Brezay* having been ſo kind to mention me to him formerly much to my advantage; and having likewiſe the honour to be known to him, by my being deputed from our Generals, to expreſs the Army's zeal to receive him as their Generaliſſimo, he did me the favour to diſcourſe with me ſomething more particularly than the reſt, when I came to make my reverence to him. He asked me ſeveral Queſtions about the War, in which I gave him the beſt ſatisfaction I could; and at laſt put it to me, whether, if he ſhould have occaſion to uſe them, I could furniſh him with three or fourſcore ſtout Muſqueteers that had their Arms in good caſe. I anſwer'd, becauſe I knew I could make my word good, that I could ſupply him not only with fourſcore, but a hundred, or two, or three hundred, if he pleaſed to command them. That I durſt be very confident, there was never a Regiment in the whole Army that kept their Arms ſo well, and ſo bright as ours, (which was Mareſchal *Brezay*'s) and that it was made up of very gallant Fellows. The Prince then asked me, what courſe I took with our Souldiers to make them keep their Arms clean, and in ſo good caſe, even when the Army was upon the march; and I told him, that whenever we came to any Village where there dwelt a Gunſmith, I always took care to have all the Arms of the Regiment well ſcowred.

This Conference with the Prince, in which he did me the honour to diſcourſe me upon ſeveral Subjects, brought me ſo far into his favour, that he expreſt an extraordinary kindneſs for me; inſomuch that at my going away, as I was taking leave to make room for another, he bad me give him my hand. I in reſpect refuſed that, and offer'd to kiſs the Prince's; but he would have no denial, but took my hand, and laid his own upon it, with this familiar expreſſion, *I have a mind to be your Friend, and would have you be mine. You have given me better ſatisfaction than any body; I am very well pleaſed with you, for I love People that talk to me freely, as you I perceive have done.*

Ever after that time, whenever the Prince ſaw me, he would call me to him, and ſeem'd induſtrious to give me publick marks of his Favor, ſometimes honouring me ſo highly, as to walk with me a good while together. I ſoon imagin'd, that all this was meant to draw me over to his ſervice, for Princes do not uſe to be ſo extremely obliging for nothing. And afterwards he told me, *That if I would ſtay with him in* Holland, *he would uſe me like a Friend.* This was ſomething extraordinary for a Prince to ſay; and I ſuppoſe the thing he chiefly expected from me, was my fidelity to the perſon I ſerved. And this was the very thing too, that kept me from refuſing this offer, though in truth long experience at Court had taught me, how little ſuch friendſhips of great Men are to be depended upon. Therefore I expreſt my ſelf with all manner of gratitude and ſubmiſſion, but at the ſame time told him, *I was engaged in the* French *Service, and not inclined to quit that.*

However this particular grace of the Prince created me great envy, every one gave his judgment of it as he pleaſed, and it gave great offence, that his Excellency frequently took delight to prefer me above others. Which, to ſpeak freely, I cannot like in a perſon of that character, who, methinks, ſhould be tender of them whom he honours with his Favour, and not expoſe them to the ill will of their acquaintance, by extravagant Commendations. But on the other hand, it is very injurious to fall foul upon them that are innocent, for ſuch a miſcarriage. For if a Prince be either prepoſſeſt in one's Favor, or think one Man really deſerve to be valued more than others, when the perſon ſo valued does nothing but his duty, he is not to be blamed. And thoſe that are leſs regarded, do very unjuſtly, if they take occaſion from hence to hate him. Even Mareſchal *Brezay* telling me, *He could not tell how I had got the Prince of* Orange's *Affections.* I anſwer'd him roundly, but fully, *I have done nothing to him, Sir, but what I do to you every day; that is, endeavouring by the diſcharge of my duty, to give you both ſatisfaction; and if he honour me with his Favour, this is an Argument of his generous Nature, which inclines him to love them that are zealous in his Service.* He returned upon me, *Well, be ſure you keep firm to your duty, for I my ſelf would ſnatch you out of the Prince of* Orange's *Arms.* Whereupon I made him this hearty, but reſpectful Anſwer, *Sir, you are my General, and my particular Patron, and, next to the King, you ſhall always command me. I have too juſt a ſenſe of your Favours, to return them with Ingratitude, and that is a thing I can never do.*

I was much ſurprized afterwards, to ſee a great Carriage and ſix Horſes brought me, as a Preſent from the States, to convey my Baggage. The Prince had procur'd it for me, as a mark of his Favour, and it was maintained at the States charge, without coſting me a Penny. It came indeed very ſeaſonably, for two of my Horſes were ſhoulder-ſlipt, and my Carriage was left behind. And again, when we were come to the Fort at *Schinck*, the States provided me a Boat at their own expence, all the time I continued there.

II. The Siege was formed againſt this Fort about the beginning of *September*, in the ſame year 1635; and at this Siege it was, that the Prince of *Orange* had a mind to try whether I was a Man of my word. For, having laid a ſecret deſign againſt the place, he deſired of me that I would ſupply him out of hand with two hundred Muſqueteers, ſuch as he had ask'd me for, and I did ſo. His Attempt was diſcovered and prevented, but he profeſt himſelf as well ſatisfied, as if it had taken effect. I cannot recollect any thing very remarkable that happen'd in this Siege. Only the Cardinal Infant was bravely repuls'd, who came with his Army to the Relief of the Beſieged; for there was an Agreement before, between the *French* and *Dutch*, that they ſhould carry on the Siege, and the *French* ſhould only concern themſelves with keeping off the Enemy; which they acquitted themſelves of very bravely, and forced them to retire, without doing any thing to purpoſe. When Winter came on, the *French* Army went into Quarters in the Canton aſſign'd them, and the Prince of *Orange* left Count *William* of *Naſſau* to carry on the Siege, who took the Fort by Capitulation, about the end of *April* the next Spring, that is, after about ſome eight Months Siege in all. Our Regiment was diſtributed among four ſeveral Towns, and in each of thoſe I had Quarters; but I ſpent moſt part of the Winter with the Prince of *Orange* at the *Hague*.

III. The King mean while was graciouſly pleaſed to think of me, though I was at a diſtance from him, and gave me a Command of Captain in the Guards. The truth is,

is, after having been ſo long in his ſervice, I had ſome title to expect ſuch a reward. I ſaw abundance of other people leſs faithful than I had been, who yet made very great fortunes by it. And I for my own part ſtuck juſt where I was; the unalterable devotion I had ever ſhewn for the King's perſon and ſervice, being in truth ſo far from helping, that it hindred my advancement. I do not ſpeak this ſo much to complain of ill uſage, as to ſhew what lamentable circumſtances my Prince was in, who, tho he was poſſeſt of a great Kingdom, had it yet infinitely leſs in his power, to make thoſe whom he took for his faithfulleſt ſervants ſome tolerable amends, than his Miniſter had to make his creatures great. The King ſtraight diſpatcht a Mandate under his Privy Seal to me, to return into *France*. Monſieur *Boulogne* my particular good friend, whom I have had occaſion to mention ſeveral times before, writ to me at the ſame time to make all the haſte I could to *Paris*, but took no notice what the particular buſineſs was that requir'd it, only in general terms, that it was a matter that might be of ſome importance to me.

Monſieur *de Ch.* the Kings Embaſſadour in *Holland*, having receiv'd the Pacquet from Court, and (as he us'd to do) open'd the Letters; when he ſaw the King had beſtow'd this Command upon me, dealt very unfaithfully with me. He was deſirous to take this opportunity of advancing his own Nephew, and to keep me in *Holland*, upon pretence of ſome great deſign againſt *Guelderland*; ſo he very baſely kept the Kings Letter for me, to himſelf, and diſpatcht his Nephew to Court, that he might diſcourſe Cardinal *Richelieu* upon thoſe deſigns of his, and get the Command, the King had laid out for me, for his pains. But his Nephew loſt his labour, for the King anſwer'd them with more reſolution than was common to him, that he had diſpos'd of that Command before. Still I labour'd hard to be diſmiſt, for Monſieur *Boulogne*'s Letter made me very eager of returning to *France*; and beſides all that, Money began to grow low with me. But, whether through ſome private oppoſition from the Cardinal, or ſome underhand correſpondence between the Ambaſſadour and our Generals, to obſtruct my return, I could never get leave to go, and was forc'd, ſore againſt my will, and contrary to the Kings expreſs command, to ſtay in that Country all winter. So the King not having (if I may ſo ſay) authority enough to procure my return, tho he heartily deſir'd it, diſpos'd of that Command to another perſon, after having ſtaid for me ſeveral months.

IV. About the beginning of Spring the next year 1636, we took Shipping, and when I waited on the Prince of *Orange*, to take my leave of him, he expreſt ſome concern, that I refus'd to ſtay with him, after ſo many kind offers as he had made me. But knowing that that very conſtancy he eſteem'd me for, was the thing that hindred it, he profeſt himſelf well pleas'd with my conduct. *And if you would have me,* (ſaid he) *I will write to the King in your behalf, and ſignifie your good ſervices to him.* I anſwer'd him great reſpect, That being the *French* Kings natural Subject, I was engag'd to attend his ſervice; but nothing could ever make me forget the many marks of grace and kindneſs that I had receiv'd from his Highneſs: that I had a more grateful ſenſe of the honour he had done me in approving my ſervice, than was poſſible for me to expreſs; and that if he would condeſcend to honour me yet more with his recommendation to the King, this would be an exceeding addition to all his former favours.

V. When we were come into *France*, our Army quartered for ſome time in *Normandy*; but ſhortly we received freſh orders to joyn the Count *de Soiſſons*, and Mareſchal *Brezay* at *la Fere*. Thither I went with our Regiment, and being extremely harraſs'd, I went into a Granary, and there laid me down to ſleep; which happened very luckily upon a double account, for by that means I not only refreſht my ſelf, but eſcap'd a great danger. The Enemies lying in that Country with a powerful Army of forty thouſand men, under the Command of Prince *Thomas*, and the two famous Generals *Piccolomini* and *John of Werth*, plunder'd and ſeiz'd ſeveral Towns, and all fell before them. There had not been known ſo general a conſternation in *France* of a long time; and the power of *Spain* had then got ſuch a mighty aſcendant over us, that it lookt like fool-hardineſs to pretend to oppoſe it. We apprehended they had a deſign to beſiege *Catelet*, and the Count *de Soiſſons* intending to ſend me thither, made great enquiry after me. Mareſchal *Brezay*, who knew well enough where I was, ſhew'd great tenderneſs for my ſafety upon this occaſion; and being of opinion, that

that to ſend me to a place which could not poſſibly hold out againſt ſo great a force, was manifeſtly to expoſe me, he would not own that he knew any thing of me. And there in all probability I muſt have been loſt, for not being of a temper to ſurrender tamely, I ſhould have been likely enough to expoſe the place to have been taken by ſtorm. When great ſearch had been made for me to no purpoſe, another was ſent thither in my ſtead. And the Enemy ſitting down before the place in *July* 1636, quickly made themſelves Maſters of it.

VI. From *la Fere* our Army moved to *Bray*, to prevent the Enemies croſſing the River. Every one fortify'd himſelf in his poſt the beſt he could: For my own part, throwing off my Doublet, I workt ſo hard with the reſt of the Officers and Souldiers of our Regiment, that in four hours time we entrencht our ſelves ſo conveniently in a meadow on this ſide the River, and over againſt a hill, which the Enemies muſt come down, that we lay quite under their Cannon. I had alſo contriv'd to have a great many Stakes driven down in the River, to hinder their Horſe from getting over. Afterwards I diſcover'd a man at ſome diſtance trying the Ford, and went preſently to tell the perſon who commanded the Regiment of *Champagne*, that he ſhould put himſelf in a readineſs, and might expect a ſharp bout quickly; becauſe their poſt was leſs convenient, and lay more open than ours. At the ſame time I ran to Mareſchal *Brezay* to inform him, and receive his commands: But he was in ſuch a perplexity, that he knew not what orders to give. I was a little ſurpriz'd to hear him ſay, *Make good your own poſt as well as you can*; for they were all at their wits end; and I am ſure this confuſion in the Generals, was likely to diſcourage the Souldiers, as much as their dread of the *Spaniſh* forces. The Enemies began to ſhew themſelves, and having planted fourteen pieces of Cannon upon the hill, play'd them upon our Regiment, but it was all noiſe and ſmoak, without any great matter of execution. For we lying intrench'd at the foot of the Hill, and as it were ſtuck down into the ground, the Bullets flew over our heads, and could do us no miſchief. Whereas we on the other ſide had opportunity to fire upon them without being ſeen, and gall'd them terribly. So not being able to force this quarter, they remov'd their Cannon to fall upon the Regiment of *Champagne*, which indeed they tore horribly, becauſe they lay a great deal more expoſed.

Our Generals, ſeeing themſelves preſt in this part, gave order for the Army to march, and retreat to *Neſle*; for there was no likelihood of ſtanding it out, and beſides the Enemies had a ſtrange advantage over us, by I know not what terror that had ſeiz'd all our men. It was their intent to repoſe the Army in this Village, but I told the Count *de Soiſſons*, I had been informed that there was a great Moraſs behind it, and if the Enemy ſhould follow hard upon us, we might endanger part of our Troops by ſo long a defile. Upon this advice, tho they had begun to work upon the Trenches, yet it was reſolv'd the Army ſhould make no ſtop, till we were got beyond this Moraſs. As the Count of *Soiſſons* was ſet at Table, where he did me the honour to ſet me with him, we had all on a ſudden news brought, that the Enemy were come up a great way towards us, that our Out-guards were beaten from their Poſt, and the Forlorn-hope in danger to be all cut in pieces. They were about two thouſand Horſe detach'd from their Army, and bore forward to charge ours in the Flank. Then every one hurrying to Horſe ran to the attack; but we found our men broken. So we were forc'd to retreat fighting, and try to ſecure our Army at *Noyon*. The Enemies were much exalted with ſo much good ſucceſs, and our mens hearts fail'd them ſadly, who had only juſt ſo much ſtrength left, as would ſerve them to make off. The *Spaniſh* Generals ſeeing the Count *de Soiſſons* too weak to ſtand againſt them, and withdrawn with the Army to *Noyon*, went to lay ſiege to *Corbie*, reſolv'd to force a paſſage farther into *France*, and to follow their blow as far as they could.

VII. Some time after this, the King being at *Chantilly*, ſent me his commands to wait upon him as ſoon as I could. His Majeſty having never ſeen me ſince my Journey into *Holland*, asked me a great many queſtions, and enquired after the news of that Country; and, after I had told him the principal matters, he diſcours'd me particularly about the Prince of *Orange*, and gave me ſufficient intimation, that either the Prince had writ, or ſome body from him had ſpoke in my favour. For he asked what charms I had uſed to inſinuate my ſelf ſo far into his affections. Whereupon,

upon, being well aware of the King's jealous temper, and that this might incline him to ſuſpect this mighty confidence, I anſwer'd him with the ſame freedom I had done Mareſchal *Brezay*, That I had uſed no other arts but the faithful performance of my duty, and that I was much beholden to his Excellence for valuing my ſervices that his Majeſty had commanded me to pay him. At laſt the King asked me, why I did not come ſooner, after that Letter he had ſent me? I told him I never received any ſuch Letter from him, and that when I ask'd leave it was denied me, upon pretence that my preſence there was neceſſary. His Majeſty not caring to open his meaning any farther, nor to tell me his deſign of making me Captain in his Regiment of Guards, only reply'd, that I was certainly the unluckieſt fellow in the world, and never had any fortune. I, knowing nothing of the matter, could not make him any anſwer, tho it were eaſy to have replyed, that my fortune was in his diſpoſal, and he might make me happy whenever he pleaſed. Juſt then I happen'd to take notice of a Half-moon that they had made before the Caſtle gate, and could not forbear ſmiling. The King perceiv'd it, and ask'd me what I laught at? I told him, That it was my humble requeſt to his Majeſty, that that Half-moon might be taken down, and not ſtand there for a reproach to *France*; as if the perſon of ſo great a Prince could not be ſafe, without ſuch a Fortification as that was.

The King then ordered me to haſten with my Regiment to *Abbeville*, to carry the *Swiſſes* their pay, and put ſuccours into the Town before the Enemy beſieged it. He ordered at the ſame time a *Valet de Chambre* to be ſent for, who in the preſence of his Majeſty, Cardinal *Richelieu*, and Monſieur *de Chavigny*, quilted ſixteen hundred Piſtoles into my Waſtecoat. With this order away I went, and making the beſt of my way to joyn Mareſchal *Brezay*'s Regiment, we marched day and night, and made ſo good haſte, that we came time enough to ſave the Town. We got into it about two in the morning, to the exceeding joy both of the Inhabitants and the Garriſon, who waited moſt Impatiently for this reinforcement, expecting to be ſurpriz'd every hour, and either forc'd to give up the place, or have it carry'd by ſtorm. We found the Town illuminated with Candles and Torches in all the Windows, as if it had been all of a flame, and nothing could be heard but ſhouts of men, women and children, crying, *God ſave the King*. They had indeed great reaſon to rejoyce, for the Garriſon was much too weak to defend the place, and if we had come one half day later, there had been ſmall hopes of ſaving the Town.

VIII. The next day, about ten in the morning, we ſaw ſeven and fifty Squadrons of Horſe, who came up in full expectation to carry the place. At the ſame time Monſieur *d'Alais*, who had withdrawn thither, and had a ſmall Squadron of Horſe with him, ſallied out, and I followed him with our whole Regiment, divided into ſeveral Battalions. The reſt of the Garriſon were poſted upon the Ramparts, and as many Inhabitans as were in a condition to bear arms, were ordered to ſhew themſelves there too, ſo that nothing was ſeen but Souldiers, reſolv'd to hold it out to the laſt. Several Vollies of Cannon and Muſquet ſhot were given from the Town, rather to make the Enemy believe that they wanted no Ammunition, than out of any proſpect of doing them any hurt. The Enemy debated for two hours what courſe they ſhould take, and in the mean while ten or twelve of the Count *d'Alais* Trumpets ſounded ſeveral Alarms, to ſignify that if they came on, we were ready to receive them. At laſt, thinking this might put a ſtop to their conqueſts, if they attempted a City ſo well garriſon'd, they went off, to carry their victorious arms another way.

IX. I ſtaid at *Abbeville* with Mareſchal *Brezay*'s Regiment about a year, for we were under continual apprehenſions of ſome attempt upon us, becauſe the Enemy had Garriſons in ſeveral Towns near us. Some days after my coming thither, the Officer that would have got my command from me, which the King intended me in the Guards, came thither too with the Marquis of *Brezay*'s Regiment, of which he was Major. Monſieur *de P.* one of the ſtouteſt men of his time, followed him cloſe, having a quarrel againſt him, upon the account of a Box on the Ear, which this Officer was ſaid to have given him. All their acquaintance on both ſides were concern'd to make up the buſineſs. Monſieur *M.* proteſted he never gave the blow, but Monſieur *de P.* not brooking, that the world ſhould think he had received it, reſolv'd to revenge it whatever came on't. Monſieur *M.* who pretended great kindneſs to

me, notwithstanding the dirty Trick he had play'd me, which I then knew nothing of, beg'd that I would interpose in the Case, and proffer'd to refer himself to the judgment of any persons they would chuse, and make any satisfaction they thought fit for him. I was desirous to reconcile the Quarrel by fair means, and used my utmost endeavour to persuade Monsieur *de P.* to it. I walked with him several times to this purpose, and told him, I neither knew the ground of their difference, nor desir'd to know it. But, let the Affront be what it would, it could not be so great, as not to admit of an honourable Accommodation, without coming to the Extremities he aimed at. I advis'd to put it to the judgment of Friends, and told him all that long Experience had qualify'd me to say upon such an occasion, to incline him to terms of Reconciliation, and undeceive him of his Notion, that no way but fighting could save his Honour. He continued deaf to all I said, or if he gave me the hearing, yet (which was as bad) he was still inflexible, and resolv'd to pursue his design. And about ten or twelve days after he did so, and fought Monsieur *M.* without the Town, whom he wounded mortally in five places, and was wounded in two places himself.

X. Monsieur *M.* being thus hurt, I had him brought to my Lodging, and took all imaginable care of him till his death, which happen'd about three Weeks after. I spared neither trouble nor charge to do him service, and had as tender a regard to his Soul as his Body, keeping a Monk constantly in my house all the time of his illness, who never stirred from him. The most surprizing Circumstance was, that Providence should so order the matter, that I should ignorantly oblige a Man so highly, who had disobliged me extremely, and utterly ruined my Fortunes, by designing to get the Command designed me by the King out of my hands, and being the principal occasion of his Majesty's giving it away to another person. This poor Man feeling his Conscience burden'd with this Fault, and the more so, in proportion as he receiv'd fresh kindnesses from the person, to whom he had done such ill offices, resolv'd at last to be plain with me upon the business. Some days before he died, I observ'd him all in tears, and after a great struggle with himself, he spoke to me after this manner: *Ah! Sir, my dear Friend, I can no longer conceal my greatest pain from you, I must, I must at last own to you the Remorse I feel, for having injur'd you in a matter, of which you could never have the least jealousie. I have sought a thousand opportunities to mention it to you, and ask you as many Pardons for it. I conjure you therefore, dear Sir, to forgive a Man, who needs nothing else to make him unhappy, than having been instrumental in ruining your Fortunes.* I, in perfect amazement at this Discourse, and not able to guess what all this meant, answer'd him with an innocent sincerity, *That I believed he loved me too well to be guilty of what he accus'd himself.* But my Answer adding more to his Sighs and Tears, he reply'd, *Alas! that is the very Consideration that cuts me to the heart, that I who had so much reason to love you, should yet suffer my self to endeavour my own Advancement at your Expence. But if you do not forgive me before I tell you the Story, I shall run mad; since the wrong I have done you is so great, that if you do not forgive me, now I am going to give an account to God, I shall have reason to fear he will not forgive me neither.* There was little room for deliberation in the sad circumstances and great disorder he then lay, so that I told him instantly with great compassion, *That I assur'd him, and solemnly protested, I would never resent the thing; and that if he had really done me any Injury, I forgave it him with all my Soul.* Upon this assurance, which I gave after the best manner I could, he discover'd the whole Matter in these words: *It was I* (said he) *dear Sir, that obstructed your Preferment. It was I that hindred you from being now Captain in the Guards. It was I that contrived you should be detained in* Holland, *and by my Uncles means kept the King's Letter from your hands, which order'd you to come to Court, and take possession of that Command.*

I must own this astonisht me strangely. But my Concern to see him in this condition stifled my Passion, and I again assur'd him, *That I forgave him heartily, and instead of loving him less upon this account, should love him more for declaring himself so freely to me, because this was an Argument he knew me, and entertained the opinion of me that I could wish he should.* And I can say with great truth, that I still retain'd the same affection for him, and after his death buried him with all the decency and solemnity of a General; the two Regiments marching with their Pikes trailing, and all the other Ceremonies of great Commanders Funerals. He was at that time deserted by all his Friends and Relations, and Providence so contriv'd it, that the only relief he had came from that very

very Man, who, according to the falſe Notions of Honour in the World, ought to have been his greateſt Enemy. His Father was not wanting indeed to expreſs his thanks to me, and paid me exactly all that I had laid out upon his Son's account.

XI. While I ſtay'd in Gariſon at *Abbeville*, I happen'd to have a great Ruffle with the Officers of the Cuſtoms for Salt. Our Souldiers, who were but indifferently paid, had got into a little way of trading, much for the convenience both of the Citizens, and themſelves. They went and bought Salt at St. *Vallery*, and then ſold it again to the Townſmen at good Rates, ſo both Parties had an advantage by it, only the Cuſtom-Officers were enraged, that they could not hinder that which turn'd to their prejudice. Theſe Gentlemen therefore made their complaint to the Duke of *Angouleſme*, who, for ſome private conſiderations, took their part. For my part, not having wherewithal to pay the Regiment, I let them go on, ſeeing no great harm in the thing, and thinking this as well for the King's advantage, who had ſuch a method for his Troops to ſubſiſt, without either the expence of his own Pocket, or the burdening his Subjects. I gave them no expreſs Orders indeed for what they did, but only connived at it.

Coming about this time to *Paris*, to give his Majeſty an account of the Gariſon, he diſcourſt me upon ſeveral Matters, and kept me with him till almoſt One a clock at night. I told him what Monſieur *M.* had declar'd to me upon his death-bed, concerning the Command he was pleas'd to intend for me, and from thence took occaſion to preſent him with my moſt humble thanks, telling him, *That this at leaſt was out of my Enemies power, to take away from me my Gratitude to his Majeſty.* Speaking afterwards of the Gariſon, I told the King I was driven to great ſtraits for want of Money to pay the Souldiers. And his Majeſty enquiring what courſe the Gariſon took to ſubſiſt then? I anſwer'd him with the freedom he gave me leave to uſe, that they had found out a way to pay themſelves. *They go Sir*, ſaid I, *and buy Salt cheap, and make a little Money of ſelling it again, till your Majeſty have a convenience of ſending them their Pay.* The King laught, and told me, *Hark you, I will not hinder them from playing the Knave thus, but if they are caught by the Magiſtrates, I will not hinder them from being hang'd too.* I anſwer'd merrily, *That they were ſtout Fellows, and I was much miſtaken if they would be caught.* And ſo this went off thus in Merriment.

Not getting to Bed till Three that night, I took it out next day, and ſlept till Eight in the Morning, which prevented my waiting early upon the King; and it was my very good Fortune, that I had an opportunity of diſcourſing him the night before. For the Duke of *Angouleſme* came to the Louvre in the Morning, and told the King a diſmal Story of the Diſorders of the Gariſon at *Abbeville*. I came in this very nick of time, and met ſome of my Friends, who ſaid, *I'le aſſure they are talking finely of you above.* I went up however, not much diſmay'd, becauſe I had diſcours'd the King about it already. When I was at the Chamber-door the King ſaw me, and becauſe he had a mind the Duke of *Angouleſme* ſhould talk over the Matter while I was by, he gave me a Sign, that I ſhould not diſcover my ſelf. I preſently underſtood his Majeſties meaning, and ſlipping behind the Company, got juſt behind my Lord *Angouleſme*, who railed at our Gariſon very warmly. Then the King ſeeming ſurprized, and having a mind to draw him in ſtill deeper, ſaid, *But what! Is not* Pontis *at* Abbeville? *And does not he reſtrain theſe Diſorders? Yes Sir*, ſaid the Duke, *he is there, but he is as bad as the reſt, though they ſay he does take ſome little Care. Be cautious what you ſay*, ſaid the King, *for there is one hears you.* With that I ſhew'd my ſelf to the Duke of *Angouleſme*, and told him ſmiling, *In earneſt, Sir, I am much obliged to you, for the good office you have done me to his Majeſty.* He being extremely ſurprized to ſee one that he never dreamt had been ſo near, began to recant, and in ſome diſorder ſaid, *Oh! Sir, Monſieur* Pontis, *I have been informed thus of you, but, for my part, I never believed it.* The King and all the Company could not hold laughing at this ſudden come-off, and I as readily reply'd, *Oh! Sir, I am the more obliged to you then, for endeavouring to make the King believe what you never believed your ſelf.* He ſhuffled the thing as well as he could, and all went off with a Jeſt, and Monſieur *Angouleſme* complimented me with the aſſurance of his Favour, and any ſervice he could do me.

At my return to the Gariſon, I found the Buſtle greater than before. For the Souldiers taking confidence from their not being forbidden their Trade, acted bare-fac'd, and carry'd on the Matter with a high hand, never regarding either the Officers, or the Archers of the *Gabelle*, becauſe they were not ſtrong enough to encounter them.

them. They went one day to the number of three or fourſcore well armed, a nd all in a body to *St. Vallery*. The Officers of the Cuſtoms ſent as many Archers out after them, with orders to fall upon the Souldiers, and bring them in bound hand and foot. This was ſooner ſaid than done. They met with one another, and fought furiouſly. Several Archers were killed, and ſeveral Souldiers wounded, but the Souldiers had the better of it. When they were come back to *Abbeville*, two of the wounded came to ſhelter themſelves at my houſe, as in a Sanctuary. I began to ſcold at them, and call'd them a hundred Raſcals, that their Rogueries would ruine me, and turn'd them out at a back-door, but yet lodged them in a poor Cottage, where they were privately lookt after. The Officers enraged at the loſs and the diſgrace of their Archers, came to me immediately with open mouths, and told me, My Souldiers had put the whole City in confuſion, threatning that the King ſhould know it. I pretended to be very angry at the Souldiers my ſelf, and proffer'd, if they could apprehend any of the Criminals, I would ſee Juſtice done upon them immediately. I my ſelf went upon the ſearch with them, and tho no diſcovery could be made, yet theſe Officers were ſo well ſatisfy'd with me, and ſo cruelly harraſs'd with the ſcuffles they met with, and where they generally came off with the worſt of it, that a day or two after they came to my lodging to propoſe an accommodation. They told me they ſaw I was a man of honour, and heartily devoted to the King's ſervice and intereſt, and therefore the beſt method they could think of to put a ſtop to all theſe diſturbances, was, to make their application to me, and offer me an expedient which they had found out; which was, That the Souldiers ſhould be allowed to go buy Salt at *St. Vallery*, only inſtead of ſelling it again to the Inhabitants of *Abbeville*, they ſhould bring it into the King's Granaries, where it ſhould be taken off their hands, at the ſame price the Citizens uſed to give. I quickly ſaw how fair a propoſal this was for our men, but having a mind to be little intreated upon the point, I anſwered theſe Officers, That they were very honeſt civil Gentlemen, but the Garriſon had not deſerved ſo much favour, and I was reſolv'd to hang all that I could find had been faulty. But whether they made a favourable judgment of my intention, or whether from ſome other cauſe, they importun'd and conjur'd me ſo vehemently, that at laſt I was forc'd to grant, what I wiſh'd a great deal more than they. I propoſed the matter to the Souldiers, who embrac'd it moſt willingly, and afterwards ſold their Salt to the King's Stores, and drove underhand bargains with the Townſmen beſides, ſo keeping both up to a good round rate. Thus I got both the King's approbation and the Peoples hearts, but eſpecially the Inhabitants, who thought themſelves infinitely obliged to me, for both exerciſing ſo good diſcipline, that the Garriſon did them no injury; and allowing them ſo conſiderable an advantage by their means. I had alſo one particular piece of reſpect paid me during my ſtay at *Abbeville*, which was to have a voice allowed me in the Council of Monſieur *le Seve*, then Intendant of Juſtice, and ſince Provoſt of the Merchants at *Paris*; who, as a particular favour, would have my Vote in his determinations, and by this confidence expreſs the friendſhip he did me the honour to have for me.

XII. In *May* 1637, Mareſchal *Brezay*'s Regiment, which I commanded, was ordered to joyn Cardinal *de la Vallette*'s Forces, who was attempting to enter the *Low-Countries* with a conſiderable Army. The King would have conſtituted me his Lieutenant at *Abbeville*, but I had no inclination to that Poſt; for tho it were honourable, yet it oblig'd me to a private and peaceable life, and robb'd me of the only pleaſure I had, which was to follow the Army, and fight for my Country. But I was much urged to it, and verily believe the City had a great hand in the importunities uſed to perſwade me to this Office. But my conſtant anſwer was, that I would readily take it, provided the Regiment I then commanded might always continue at *Abbeville*; and I would never hearken to it upon any other condition. The Inhabitants, who ſeem'd ſo well ſatisfy'd with my Government, ſeem'd as much concern'd at my leaving them: and the chief of them deſired however to make merry with me before I went; and entertain'd me three or four days as well as they could. The Gentlemen of the *Gabelle*, I ſuppoſe, were not ſo very loth to part with me. But it is a hard task to pleaſe all the world.

I went to joyn our Army commanded by Cardinal *de la Vallette*, and the Duke of *Candale*, and was not long before I paid for the civil uſage, and all the good fortune I had met with for a year and a half in the Town, where every thing conſpir'd to eaſe and

and to divert me. Our Army being come to *Caſtle-Cambray* in the *Low-Countries*, I with two hundred men at the head of the Army, was order'd to ſet a guard farther on, and the Horſe had orders to ſupport us. But this order being ſuddenly changed, and the Horſe ſent off to another Poſt, we ſoon found our ſelves hemm'd in with ſome Squadrons of the Enemies Horſe, and at firſt took them for our own. But we were ſoon undeceiv'd, and finding our ſelves thus ſurpriz'd, threw our ſelves into a place full of Hedges, where we made a good defence a great while. Seeing at laſt, that our Enemies grew upon us continually, I thought it a madneſs to pretend to hold out againſt more than 1000 Horſe, that were all upon us, and we without any proſpect of being reliev'd. So I cry'd out, *Quarter, Gentlemen, Quarter: We have given you proof enough of our Valour, and it is meer fool-hardineſs to ſtand it out any longer.* Seeing them charge us ſtill, I cry'd again, *Quarter, Gentlemen; If you deny it us, we will make work with you; and you may chance to repent it, for we will ſell our lives dear, and fight it out to the laſt man.* Then they ſtopt, knowing what it is to deal with men when they are deſperate; and gave us the Quarter we askt. The Officers and I were detain'd, the Souldiers were ſent back, and they carry'd us to *Cambray*. As ſoon as ever the King heard I was taken Priſoner, he had the goodneſs to ſend Monſieur *de la Sabloniere*, Groom of the Wardrobe, with my Ranſom, and as much Money as I needed for my charges, and to recruit me for the loſs I had ſuſtain'd in the fight. So I continu'd under confinement not above ſix weeks or two months at-moſt.

XIII. At my return in *Auguſt* or *September* 1637, I went to joyn Mareſchal *de la Melleray*'s Army, about the time when he deſigned to beſiege *La Cappelle*. He was then under the Kings diſpleaſure, and Cardinal *Richelieu*, who had a great kindneſs for him, was in ſome perplexity upon the Kings ill opinion of him. The Mareſchal in the mean while, deſirous to make himſelf conſiderable by ſome extraordinary action, thought himſelf obliged to undertake the Siege of *La Cappelle*. The Cardinal was of another opinion; he thought that if this attempt ſhould prove unſucceſsful, it would quite loſe him with the King, and therefore he endeavoured to divert him from that deſign, and writ him word, that he ſhould conſider there was danger in the undertaking, and the place ſtrong enough to bring a diſgrace upon him. The Mareſchal was not thus prevailed upon, and anſwered his Eminence, That tho the Garriſon were a good one, yet he ſaw well enough it might be taken, for ſeveral reaſons which he gave him. And when he had writ this Letter, he laid Siege to the place. The Cardinal being exceeding fearful for a perſon he lov'd, writ him word again, That he advis'd him to let that Siege alone, and gave him ſome reaſons that intimated plain enough, his Eminence did not then ſtand ſo faſt himſelf, as to ſecure him againſt the King's diſpleaſure, if he ſhould miſcarry. For the great advances the Enemy had made upon us for ſome years paſt, had given a ſhock to the intereſt of this great Stateſman, all whoſe wit was little enough, to bear him up againſt the inſults and complaints of a whole Kingdom; and ſo was all his policy too, to get looſe from all the new intrigues form'd againſt him, as I ſhall ſhew in ſome meaſure hereafter. Mareſchal *Melleray*, ſtill unmov'd with all the Cardinal had ſaid, ſent back word, that the place was actually inveſted, and he did not queſtion but to give a good account of it. And after ſeveral other things ſaid upon this occaſion, he added at the bottom of his Letter, as himſelf was pleaſed to tell me, that noted ſentence of the Poet, *Audaces fortuna juvat.*

At this Siege God preſerved me after ſuch a manner, as I can never ſufficiently admire, by ſnatching me on the ſudden from a Poſt where I was oblig'd to be, and where if I had been, my death had been unavoidable. One day, when my Regiment was to come on upon the Guard in the evening, having heard that Monſieur *de Rambures* my particular friend, was indiſpoſed the night before, I went to viſit him. When I came to his Tent, they told me he was at the head of the Trenches. I went thither to him, and found him ſhivering, like a man in an Ague-fit, and told him with great tenderneſs, that he plaid the Fool to be there, when he ſcarce could go or ſtand. *You*, ſaid I, *had more need be in your Bed. Are the Trenches a fit place for a ſick man? If the Enemy ſhould make a ſally, what can you do in this condition?* He told me his illneſs was nothing, and for the Enemy, they were not likely to make any ſallies; that they had been very quiet all the night before, and did not ſeem to deſign any great matters. I told him, that according to the little experience I had, I was of a quite contrary opinion, and I thought there was the greater ground to fear them, for the very

reaſon why he thought there was none at all. That the Enemies being ſo quiet lookt to me very ſuſpiciouſly, and could portend no good; and that skilful Seamen are always jealous of a great calm. While I was talking at this rate very ſeriouſly, the Count *de Buſſy Lamet* interrupted me, taking me aſide with a whiſper, which was to tell me, that he had a Paſty of Red Deer ſent him of a Preſent, and deſired my company at the opening of it, which was to be that morning to breakfaſt.

In the mean while came the Mareſchal *de Melleray*, to whom I ſaid with the freedom he allowed me to take, *Do not you make a conſcience, Sir, of letting a ſick man, as Monſieur* Rambures *is, that had an Ague all night, and hath it ſtill upon him, ſtay here at the head of the Trenches? Pray, Sir, command him to go to bed, for he has at preſent a worſe Enemy than the* Spaniard *to encounter.* Monſieur *Rambures* took me up, and pretending to ſlight his diſtemper, when he thought himſelf concern'd to be upon duty, turned what I ſaid into raillery, and told us he was very well. Monſieur *Melleray* urged him to withdraw, but he would not be prevailed upon to leave his Poſt, and, by not taking our advice, he became quickly after the cauſe of his own death. Then Monſieur *Melleray*, who had laid his deſign upon the Town, told me I muſt needs oblige him in one ſmall piece of ſervice, which was to go immediately from him to the Lieutenant of the Ordnance, and bid him get four thouſand Baskets of Earth ready, by ſix in the evening exactly, for he had abſolute occaſion for them. I promis'd him to go, and as he turned about to ſpeak to ſome body elſe, Monſieur *Buſſy Lamet* told me again in my Ear, that I ſhould ſtay till the Mareſchal was gone, and then we might go and breakfaſt together, before I executed my Commiſſion. But Monſieur *Melleray*, who would have had me gone inſtantly, ſeeing me again, cryed, *What are not you gone yet? I thought you would have flown for my ſake.* I told him I durſt not go before him, and only waited his motions. Whereupon he anſwered, That ſince I was not gone, we would walk both together as far as the end of the Trench, and then take Horſe and go both about our buſineſs. Thus I loſt my Breakfaſt, of which I had need enough, but by a particular good providence; I miſs'd an accident too, which muſt undoubtedly have coſt me my life, as you will ſee preſently.

As ſoon as I had parted with Mareſchal *Melleray*, who went to overlook the Works, I made haſte to the Lieutenant of the Ordinance's Quarter. By that time I was got ſix or ſeven hundred paces, I heard a great noiſe of abundance of Guns. I turn'd about, and ſaw all the Trench and the Curtain on fire, and fancied it was a great skirmiſh, and that the Enemy had charged us in our Trenches. Juſt then was I in greater confuſion than can be expreſt. On one ſide my friendſhip for Monſieur *Rambures* call'd me to the Trenches; on the other, the fear of offending Mareſchal *Melleray*, put me upon obeying his orders. At laſt I reſolv'd, if it were poſſible, to ſatisfy both obligations: Then riding full ſpeed, as ſoon as ever I met with the Lieutenant, I told him without more ado, that Monſieur *Melleray* had ſent me to order in his name, four thouſand Baskets of Earth, to be ready at half an hour after five in the evening; and for fear he ſhould not underſtand me right, I repeated it over again to him. He made anſwer, that the Mareſchal commanded an impoſſibility. I repeated it a third time, without ſtaying to reaſon the caſe with him, that he muſt do what he could, but my orders were to beſpeak four thouſand at half an hour paſt five in the evening; and ſo I left him, galloping back again full ſpeed to the Trench: But all was over. All was broke and in diſorder, and by the way I met poor Monſieur *Rambures* with his Thigh broke, and carrying back to his Tent. The firſt words he ſaid were, *Ah, Sir, poor* Buſſy *is killed, and ſo are all the reſt that you ſaw with me at the head of the Trenches. The Guards let themſelves be ſurprized, and that hath loſt us all. What you told me is come upon me; and I had been wiſer if I had believed you.* I was then quite tranſported with grief, ſeeing one of my friends loſt, another ſo dangerouſly wounded, and ſo terrible a ſlaughter in ſo very ſhort a time. But this was no time to talk, and Monſieur *Rambures* himſelf begg'd me to run to the Trench, and ſee if they did not want me, and whether it was not neceſſary to draw down my Regiment to beat back the Enemy. I ran immediately to put them into a poſture of fighting, and Mareſchal *Melleray* meeting me there, ſaid in great concern, *What Monſieur* Pontis *have not you been where I ſent you?* I told him the thing was done, and I had told the Lieutenant, and repeated it thrice over; that the Lieutenant thought it could hardly be done, but he would endeavour to ſatisfy him the beſt he could. Then he told me there was no occaſion for my Regiment, for the Enemies were repuls'd already; and then, ſpeaking to me, with great goodneſs and affection, ſaid, *We have had ſtrange work here in the little time*

you

you have been away. You are beholding to me for your Life, for if you had ſtay'd at the Trenches one quarter of an hour longer, you had had no better Fortune than poor Buſſy *and* Rambures, *who are both kill'd. Sir,* ſaid I, *I muſt confeſs I am obliged to you, you have loſt one of the beſt Friends and Servants you had in Monſieur* Buſſy, *for he was really a very gallant Man: For Monſieur* Rambures, *he is only wounded.* Monſieur *Melleray* lamented the loſs of Monſieur *Buſſy* very much, ſaying, *That he had indeed loſt one of his deareſt Friends, and the Cardinal one of his moſt faithful Servants.* Then he order'd me to get my Regiment in a readineſs for the Attempt in the Evening, and that he was going juſt then to learn the neareſt way. I had a mind to go with him, and ask'd whether he would not pleaſe to take me with him, that I might receive his Commands. He told me at firſt, there was no need for that. But thinking again upon the matter, he gave me leave to attend him. And after we had taken due notice of the place, and made all neceſſary obſervations, he carried on a Lodgment there in the Evening above a hundred and fifty paces towards the Town, by the help of the Baskets he had order'd, to make a paſſage over a Canal. I ſhall give no farther account of this Siege, not remembring any particulars very conſiderable concerning it, but will now proceed to what befel me the year after, when I was ſent into *Franche-Comte.*

XIV. In the year 1638, about the Month of *June*, I was commanded by the King at *Paris* to go to the Army, under the Duke of *Longueville*'s Command, which beſieged *Poligny* in *Franche-Comte*; and the Commiſſion I had given me, was to obſerve what condition the Army was in, and give his Majeſty an account of it. Some time after my coming thither, having no Employ, but what my Eyes were taken up in, the Victualler of the Army, who pretended to confide in me, deſir'd I would bear him company to the Mountains, whither he was then going for Proviſions. I was very glad of the opportunity, being weary of living idle; and what then ſeem'd only an accidental undeſigning Journey, prov'd of mighty importance to the Kingdom, as I ſhall now ſhew you.

As we travelled through theſe Mountains, it was our Fortune to meet with an honeſt old *Swiſſe* who carry'd Letters. I preſently knew his Face, having ſeen him in the Army a great while ago; and being very deſirous, by reaſon of the diſorders and confuſions of the War, to get his Letters from him cunningly, that I might know whether they contained any thing that might be of uſe to the King, I preſently rubb'd up my old acquaintance, and accoſted him very friendly. *How now honeſt Friend,* ſaid I, *how far are you travelling through theſe Mountains all alone?* I am going to ſuch a place Sir, *ſaid he,* to carry ſome Letters. *I fancy* (ſaid I again) *I have ſeen you a good while ago in the* French *King's Guards; Did not you carry Arms there about ſuch a time?* Yes, Sir, (*ſaid he*) I was there about that time, and ſerv'd in them ſo many years. *I thought I was not miſtaken,* (reply'd I) *I perceive my memory hath not quite forſaken me. Well my old Friend, and how is it? Have you your health well ſtill? Are you ſtrong and luſty?* Ah! Maſter, (*ſaid he*) yes truly, thank God, I am as well as a Man at my Age can expect to be. *Look you Fellow-Souldier* (ſaid I) *we have both of us one comfort, that if we cannot expect to live as long as other People, we have the leſs time to live in fear of death. For my part I find the beſt thing an old Man can do, is to cheriſh himſelf a little, and not give way to melancholy. Tell me therefore prithee, Is there any thing good to be had hereabouts? What Price does Wine bear among you?* The very hearing of that word Wine clear'd up his countenance, and made him look gay, as the temper of that Country is, and telling me, that there were good Proviſions and Wine to be had at tolerable eaſy Rates: *Well,* ſaid I, *we will drink one Glaſs together then, and renew our old Acquaintance; Come on, let us drink a Health to old Age.* Then I brought him to an Inn hard by, and there, after he had drunk ſome Bumpers, I took his Pacquet, and open'd the Letters, and found the *Swiſſes* were upon Riſing, to defend their Rights and Priviledges, which they thought the King of *France* intended to take from them, becauſe the Duke of *Longueville* was at that time beſieging *Poligny*, where there are ſome Saltpits, from whence they were privileg'd to fetch Salt. Theſe poor Fellows are wonderful jealous, and tender of their Liberties, and thought the King deſign'd to incroach upon them by degrees; and therefore they ſollicited one another by Letters, to take up Arms, and ſend Souldiers into ſeveral parts of the Country to maintain their Priviledges.

Conſidering what might be the conſequences of ſuch an Inſurrection, I left the honeſt Fellow faſt aſleep, and went preſently back to wait upon Monſieur *Longue-*

ville,

ville, to whom I made no particular mention of what had paſt, but only told him, that being now of no uſe to the Army, after I had fulfill'd the King's Command, I begg'd he would pleaſe to diſmiſs me, that I might give his Majeſty an account of the buſineſs he had intruſted me with. From the Camp at *Poligny* I made all the haſte I could to *Paris*, and went immediately to wait upon the King; to whom, after having given him an account of the Army, I preſented the Pacquet of Letters which I took from the old *Swiſſe*, and told his Majeſty how I got them into my hands. The King, much ſurprized at the News, and as much pleas'd with the Service I had done him, writ away to the Duke of *Longueville*, and the *Swiſſe Cantons*, to ſatisfy them he had no deſign at all upon their Priviledges; that there was no real ground for their Jealouſies; that he ever did, and ever would love and protect them againſt all Men living. And this quieted the diſturbances which were upon the very point of breaking out in their Countries.

This ſingle Accident would have been enough, perhaps, to have made any Man's Fortunes but mine, but a higher hand order'd things ſo, that what would have been of great ſervice to other people, never did me any at all. And really I could ſit and reflect for ever, and with much wonder as well as delight, upon the different Providences of my life. For, though I was then wonderfully ſtupid, and had no ſenſe of better things, yet now I can plainly obſerve in a thouſand inſtances, the care Almighty God took of me, when I had little or no regard for him. He preſerv'd my life again the year after this, which was 1639, when I was manifeſtly expos'd to extreme danger; and he made the melancholy and diſcontent which I fell into upon an occaſion I am now going to relate, to be the inſtrument of keeping me out of that danger.

XV. A Friend of mine one day entertaining Monſieur *de Feuquieres*, and another acquaintance at dinner, I, who had a deſign to go along with Monſieur *Feuquieres* into the next Campagne, he being a Man of excellent experience, and I deſiring above all things ſtill to improve my knowledge in military diſcipline, invited my ſelf to dine there too, that I might have an opportunity of breaking my mind to him. One of the Company, a particular Friend of Monſieur *de Feuquieres*, did nothing all dinner long but whiſper firſt with me, and then with another, which Monſieur *Feuquieres*, that loved people ſhould always talk aloud, was much offended at. When dinner was done, the ſame Gentleman took Monſieur and Madam.....into a corner of the Room to diſcourſe them privately; ſo another Gentleman and I were left all alone, much diſpleaſed at this way of Converſation. For I, who talkt freely to people of the beſt Quality, and had the honour to be frequently admitted into the confidence of Princes, was not acquainted with ſuch uſage. This Gentleman and I therefore roſe up, and would needs be gone. And though Madam *de*.....endeavour'd to ſtop us, perceiving that I was, and might very well be diſſatisfy'd, yet I took my leave in a pett, without mentioning any thing of my intentions to Monſieur *Feuquieres*. This Reſentment of mine put a ſtop to my Journey, and by not waiting on Monſieur *Feuquieres*, as I deſir'd to do in that Campagne, I eſcap'd being at the famous Battel of *Thionville*, where I ſhould have found it a hard matter to eſcape with life; becauſe I ſhould certainly have kept conſtantly near the perſon of that excellent Man, who was loſt there.

XVI. Upon this I went another way, and for ſome time this Campagne ſerv'd in the Army that lay at *Vervins*, under the command of Cardinal *de la Vallette*, and the Duke of *Candale*. There I was in quality of Major of Brigades, that is, Major of four or five Regiments, whoſe office it is to receive the General's Orders, and ſee them duly executed by the Troops under his command. We had beſides another Army at *Maubeuge*, which the Enemy had blockt up, being encamped between us and them. It being therefore our great concern to join theſe two Armies, there was a Council of War call'd by Cardinal *Vallette*, to adviſe how we might get to the Relief of that at *Maubeuge*. Monſieur *Gaſtion*, the Marquis *de Praſlin*, and two other Gentlemen came and offer'd their ſervice to our Generals, to get through the Enemy, and carry intelligence to the Town that we were come up, and ready to relieve them, that ſo they might be ready upon a day appointed, and the Enemy be attackt on both ſides at once. The Generals accepted this offer, as very advantageous for both Armies; and they being well mounted, ſpurred on ſtrait upon the Enemy. The Centinel perceiv'd them, and gave notice to the Guard, who mov'd to cut off their paſſage. The Mar-

Marquis of *Praſlin*, and two others, by the help of a rare good Horſe, got through them. But Collonel *Gaſſion*, whom the Enemies had incloſed, made as bold an attempt as the other. For throwing himſelf with Cloaths, Boots and Spurs on into the River, with his Bridle round his Arm, he ſwum over to the other ſide, and ſo came round another way to our Army.

The other Army at *Maubeuge*, underſtanding our motions by Monſieur *Praſlin*, and the day we deſigned to attack the Enemy, put themſelves in readineſs, and ſtood to their arms, in expectation of our falling on. As we drew up near the Enemy, there roſe ſuch a terrible fog, that one could not ſee ones way ten yards before them. The whole Army was much diſturbed at this, fearing they might fall into an Ambuſcade before they were aware. The Regiments under my command were very troubleſome, tearing my head to pieces with ſhouts and queſtions, not knowing where they were. And, which made it ſtill worſe, the Generals were a great way off, for we went at the head of the Army, and marched firſt. At laſt, wearied with their bawling, I had a mind to try if I could make any diſcovery, and went about ſome forty paces before the Troops, and ſtreight I began to deſcry ſome of the Enemies Troops very near me. Then I call'd out to my men, *Forward, forward, To me, to me.* I ordered them to ſound a charge, and we laid on ſo briskly upon them that met us, that they made ſmall reſiſtance, and went off in the miſt, ſo opening a paſſage for us. For the Troops at *Maubeuge* attacking them behind at the ſame time, they durſt not venture to engage two Armies at once.

XVII. This Campagne of the year 1639, about the month of *July*, the Mareſchal *de Chatillon* after Monſieur *Feuquiere*'s Army was defeated, had orders from the King to beſiege *Yvois* in *Luxemburgh*. I was at that Siege, and wounded there by a Muſquet bullet in my Leg. But my wound was not ſo bad, as to diſable me from executing the King's Commiſſion of razing that place to the ground. I interceeded however for the ſparing the Portal of a Church, where I was not a little ſurpriz'd to find the Arms of our Family, plac'd there by one of my Relations, that built it, having been a Canon of that Church. The King, who came to *Yvois* after it was taken, would not grant my requeſt till he had ſeen the Portal. And he being of a good humour, as he was pleaſing himſelf with walking over the ruines of the Town, I took the liberty to tell him, that tho no place could refuſe acceſs to his Arms, yet ſuch walks as thoſe ought not to be allowed his perſon; and I ſhould deſerve to be puniſht, if, having the honour to be his guide, I led him over ruines and precipices. The King reply'd very pleaſantly, *It is but reaſonable Princes ſhould follow thoſe whom they have choſe for their guides.* When the King had viewed what places he had a mind to, and this Portal among the reſt, he granted my deſire. But the fatigue and heat of working about the demoliſhing of this Town, which I never favour'd my ſelf in, threw a ſudden ſwelling, and great inflamation into my Leg. So Monſieur *de Seve*, with whom I had contracted an intimate acquaintance at *Abbeville*, lent me his Coach, and I went to *Sedan*; whither the Count *de Soiſſons*, Duke of *Guiſe*, and ſome other perſons of honour retir'd, during their diſgrace at Court. I was particularly known to all the company about the Count, and received ſo many viſits, that I had not time to keep my bed. The Count was pleas'd to viſit me himſelf, and no queſtion had an end to ſerve in it, for this honour was not without a deſign at the bottom. I, who was pretty well acquainted with the blind ſide of great men, fell into diſcourſe of his Highneſſes great exploits, and enlarg'd much upon the action of *Bray*, and ſeveral other things, which I thought moſt likely to pleaſe him. But I knew well enough how to diſtinguiſh between my reſpects and gratitude for his kindneſs to me, and my main duty, and natural obligations. Therefore when he ſent me a purſe full of Piſtoles next day, telling me, that I might poſſibly have occaſion for Money, in the condition I was in, I would not take it: But ſent it back again with this Compliment, That ſince it did not become a private man, as I was, to refuſe a preſent from one of his Quality, I begg'd him, not wanting Money at this time, to do me the favour to keep that Purſe for me, till I had more occaſion for it. And it was very happy I behav'd my ſelf thus to him: For Mareſchal *Chatillon* did me the favour to write me word as a friend preſently after, that my ſtay at *Sedan* made a great noiſe at Court, and the King took it ill my Lodging ſhould be the rendezvous of the Count's Family. This news confounded me, and made it neceſſary for me to be gone next morning for *Paris*, deſiring only a Gentleman to make my excuſe to the Count *de*

Soiſſons, and acquaint him, that an order from the King occaſioned my ſo ſudden leaving of the place.

XVIII. The next year, which was 1640, I went to the Siege of *Arras*, which was inveſted about *June* by Mareſchal *Chatillon*, and Mareſchal *Melleray*. The two Generals intending to ſurprize the Town, parted their Forces, and made a ſhew of beſieging ſome other place. So a good part of the Garriſon within this ſtrong Town drew off to reinforce ſome other Garriſons which they were in fear for. But *Arras* was much ſurprized to ſee themſelves inveſted all on a ſudden at the ſame inſtant of time with two Armies in two different parts, ſo that it was impoſſible to put in any ſuccours to them. They preſently drew the Lines of Circumvallation, and Trenches for the Camp. Imagining this Siege might be a work of time, I built me a wooden houſe glazed, and two pretty lodging rooms in it, into one of which Monſieur *Chatillon* uſed to withdraw ſometimes, and there ſteal a Nap to be free from diſturbance.

The Count of *Iſembourg*, Governour of *Arras*, having ſallied out before we inveſted it, to reinforce the Garriſon of *Bethune*, which he apprehended we had a deſign upon; was terribly inraged to ſee *Arras* thus blocked up, and reſolved to put ſome relief into it; but all the paſſes were ſo ſtrongly kept, that he could find no way of doing it with ſafety. Therefore he ſollicited the Count *de Lamboy*, Commander of the *Spaniſh* Army in the *Low Countries*, to come and raiſe the Siege. The Count accordingly came and encamped ſome leagues from *Arras*, and detached ſome Troops to charge our Trenches. We were at a Council of War in Mareſchal *Melleray*'s Tent, when this alarm was given. As ſoon as ever I heard the noiſe, I thought of getting to Horſe, and repairing to my Poſt. Monſieur *de Comminges Guitaut*, my very good friend, ſeeing the riſque I ran of falling into the Enemies hands, who would cut off my paſſage, cryed out, that I ought not be ſuffered to run ſo upon certain death. So the Generals proffer'd me a Convoy of Horſe to ſee me ſafe at my Quarter: But I depended upon the goodneſs of my Horſe, and deſired they would let me go alone, aſſuring them, that I thought this method the leſs dangerous of the two; and ſo away I went immediately. I had a moſt excellent Pad under me, for which I have ſince refus'd fourſcore Piſtoles, and I had reaſon to value him at more, for he ſaved my life upon this occaſion. For as I galloped to recover my Quarter, a Squadron of Horſe ſpy'd me, and rid up full ſpeed to ſtop me, preſenting their Piſtols, and crying, *Stand, ſtand.* I did not care for obeying thoſe orders, ſo long as there were any hopes of eſcaping left, and therefore ſpurr'd on with my Piſtol in my hand, and without regarding them, paſt by. There was a little beyond this a very ſteep Hill, which I muſt of neceſſity get up to ſave my ſelf; for the Horſemen ſtill purſued after me, and had blockt up the common road. Finding my ſelf thus ſtreightned, I put my Horſe to it, for his own and his Maſters life: And the poor creature, as if he had been ſenſible of our danger, ſcrambled up this ſharp aſcent ſo faſt, that he had like to have burſt for want of breath. The Enemies were amazed to ſee me get up at this rate, and not daring to follow me this ſteep way, they went up another part of the Hill, to try if they could ſtop me once more. But I getting up a great while before them, gave my Horſe a little breath, and made much of him for the good ſervice he had done me, and then put on again; ſo that I got the heels of them quite, and at laſt reach'd my quarter.

Our Generals, hearing I was purſued by a Squadron of Horſe, were concern'd to know what was become of me. But Mareſchal *Melleray* coming to my quarter a little after, found me at the head of my Regiment, which I had drawn out, and put into a readineſs to do their duty. But there was no occaſion for it at that time, for the Enemy only ſhewed themſelves, and percieving our Camp was in a poſture to recieve them, they wheel'd off again.

XIX. In this Siege I loſt ſeveral things, contrary to my cuſtom, for I us'd to have the good fortune of keeping what I had. One day I ſent out my Servants to get forrage for my Horſes, which were in all about eighteen or twenty. I charg'd them not to carry out above two or three, that if any unlucky accident ſhould happen, I might not hazard the loſs of them all at a time. My Servants for all that, greedy of bringing home more booty, took out ſeven or eight. Some Troops of the Enemy came upon them, and my ſtout blades took no further care but to ſave themſelves, and left my Horſes for pawns. Among the reſt there was one draught Horſe, the beſt

beſt of that ſort in the world; he was naturally ſtout and fierce enough for a War Horſe, and only wanted tail and ſhape to make him fit for a General. This Horſe not being uſed to the *Spaniſh* Dialect, and percieving he was got into Enemies hands, began to fall on with his feet and teeth, upon every body that came near him, and grew ſo mad all of a ſudden, that thoſe who had taken him not being able to rule him, let him go again, and ſaid they were ſure it was the Devil in the ſhape of a Horſe. He was tyed to another, and ſo brought him off too; and they were ſeen come full tilt into the Camp, and ſtreight to my Stable, which they were very well acquainted with the way to. I was much pleaſed with the ſtoutneſs of the Beaſt, and bad a Servant go ſee if the reſt had taken the ſame freak, and got away too; but we heard no news of them.

Another time, as I was one night upon the Guard in the Trenches, I loſt all my belly-timber. My men had made ready my dinner over night, againſt next day; and I us'd always when I was upon the Guard my ſelf, to invite all the Officers that went upon duty, with me to dinner. Next day expecting my dinner with ſome impatience, I had news brought me, that all my proviſions were ſtoln. They took from me above forty Hams, a Powdring-tub full of Salt Meats, and a great many other things, to a conſiderable value. However I had ſome good luck with my bad; for our Generals, and ſome of the principal Officers, hearing my misfortune, ſent me in a ſufficient recruit for my loſs: and I found it was for my Intereſt to be robb'd, when there was more got than loſt by it.

XX. The Beſieged one day deſign'd a conſiderable Sally, and expected the ſhifting of the Guards, as the propereſt time, becauſe then there is always ſome little confuſion. They came out of the City with about eight hundred men, and made up directly to the quarter where we lay. Seeing them come on ſo briskly, I cry'd out to our *Mareſchal de Camp*; *Sir, theſe honeſt fellows hope to have a good bargain of us, and intend to beat us ſoundly, if we will but let them*; *I will go meet them* (ſaid I) *and make them a Compliment*: And directing my ſelf to the Officers of our Regiment, *Come Gentlemen*, (ſaid I) *let us go back into the Town with them.* With that I went out of the Trench, and moſt of the Officers and common Souldiers follow'd me. The Enemies ſeeing us come on, as brisk to the full as they, were ſatisfy'd with the civility we intended them, and turn'd ſhort to another part of the Camp, where they were not ſo well prepar'd for them. There, to give them their due, they fell very foul upon the Regiment of Guards, who gave way, till at laſt thoſe that ſupported them beat them back into their Trenches. I had obſerv'd two or three Officers of my Regiment take no notice, when I call'd to go out of the Trenches, and yet when no danger was nigh, none talkt ſo big as theſe men. I thought it became me to make them know their duty; and when I came back, ſaid in ſome heat, as you may imagine; That ſince it was a rule the Regiment ſhould obey him, whoſe place it was to command them, I pretended a right to ſee this diſcipline duty obſerv'd; and I would have that man ſhot, that did not march when I gave the word. *If you will not obſerve commands* (ſaid I) *take my place, and I will take yours.* This reproof, given with ſome paſſion, becauſe indeed I had always a ſtrict regard for diſcipline, created me ſeveral Enemies: and they ſaid among themſelves, *He could but talk thus if he were our General.* I told one of theſe Officers too, to move him the more, that it was in my power to ruine his honour; and that he was very ſtout when there was no danger, and ſhrunk back when there was. He, being conſcious in himſelf that what I ſaid was true, excus'd the thing, and begg'd me to ſpare him.

XXI. Beſides this, I had a great diſpute with Monſieur *de F.* the Lieutenant Collonel of my Regiment, upon an occaſion that ought not to have bred any quarrel. The Souldiers made perpetually complaints to me for want of their pay, and I thought of an expedient to get ſome Money, and deſir'd the Lieutenant Collonel that he would motion it to the Treaſurers of the Army. He, bought off perhaps by the Treaſurers, inſtead of ſeconding me in the thing, took me up, and askt me very briskly, What I had to do with that? telling me farther, that it was always my cuſtome, not to content my ſelf with my own buſineſs, but to concern my ſelf in other people's. I anſwer'd him with much the ſame air, That it was my buſineſs to take care of the Regiment's good; and ſince the Souldiers had complain'd to me, I was concern'd to ſee it remedy'd; and if others did not what they ſhould do, it became

came me to put them in mind of it. He ſtill went on with provoking language; and told me I ought to keep my own Office, for other people knew well enough how to diſcharge theirs, and had no need of my advice. Seeing him thus unreaſonably averſe to the common intereſt of the Regiment, and without any manner of provocation, I thought it was my turn to be ſharp too, and told him, that, no diſparagement to his quality, there were perſons of great honour that thought it no diminution to ask my advice; *And you your ſelf*, ſaid I, *Sir, can do it ſometimes, without ſuppoſing it any reflection upon you.* Upon this we both grew warm, and there was reaſon enough to apprehend ſome miſchief would have come of it, but that the Generals, having notice of the thing, reconcil'd us again; and we have been very good friends ever ſince.

XXII. But the Biſhop of *Auxerre*, who was his Relation, hearing of our quarrel, took ſo violent a picque againſt me, and ſo unbecoming his Character, that he reſolv'd to do my buſineſs effectually with Cardinal *Richelieu*, who hated me already, as much as he lov'd this Biſhop. His Brothers, with whom I was intimately acquainted, gave me notice of it, and told me ſeveral times, that I muſt look to my ſelf, for he would ruine me; and he was a terrible man, when he was ſet upon miſchief; which I thought a moſt extraordinary qualification in a Biſhop. I deſir'd them to do me good offices to him, and am ſure they would have done it with all their hearts, if it had been in their power; but they told me, they had no manner of influence upon him; that he was of a fierce inflexible temper, and like enough to ruine them too, if they ſhould give him any offence. You may well imagine how eaſie I was with the thoughts of ſuch an Enemy, whom I could call to no account for his injuries neither, becauſe his Robe was his protection. The only way left then was to try what ſubmiſſions would do; and I can truly ſay, it is incredible how many of thoſe I made him, and how many ſeveral engines I ſet to work to ſoften this barbarous man; fearing him eſpecially upon Cardinal *Richelieu*'s account, whoſe power I had reaſon to dread: Nay, I went once to his houſe, with Monſieur *d'Orgeval*, to proffer him any ſatisfaction he could deſire. I proteſted, that what paſt between his kinſman and me, was without any the leaſt intention to affront him; but I was come to wait on him, and expreſs my very great concern, that he thought himſelf injur'd in it. He pretended to be ſurpriz'd, and told me, I had not injur'd him at all; but as I was arguing the matter with him, and came cloſer to the point, he very rudely turn'd his back to me all on the ſudden, and went away into his Chamber. Thus I loſt all my labour upon him, and what his Brothers had told me was true to a tittle, That he would be my ruine; for he occaſion'd my being in diſgrace, as I ſhall ſhew after the taking of *Arras*.

But the true reaſon why this Biſhop would never be reconcil'd to me, was an unhappy neceſſity he had brought himſelf under of hating me immortally, by the diſcourſe he had with the Cardinal upon my account, to ingratiate himſelf there the more effectually. For among other things he told him, I was ſo abſolutely devoted to the King, that whatever he commanded I was ready to do it. This was the very worſt thing that could have been ſaid of me to his Eminence, who was fearful and jealous, and apprehended nothing more in any body about the King, than this readineſs to ſerving him, which was laid to my charge. I explain my ſelf no further upon this point now, but you will ſee hereafter, he ſhewed me how he underſtood it, by reducing me to thoſe circumſtances which I ſhall ſhortly deſcribe, and making me as unhappy as it was poſſible for me to be; and depriving me as much as he could of my laſt refuge, his Majeſty's protection and aſſiſtance. The moſt remarkable circumſtance in all this paſſage was, that when a Cavalier and an Officer of the Army, as Monſieur *de P.* his Relation was, could ſo ſoon lay aſide all his reſentments againſt me; a Biſhop, whoſe character ſhould inſpire him with diſpoſitions to Charity and Peace, ſhould hate a man that only fancied had injur'd him, beyond all reconciliation, and value himſelf upon revenging it to his utter ruine. This ſo very diſtant behaviour of a Gentleman of the Sword, and one of the Gown, might be Theme enough for reflection, to a man that underſtands better than I, how far the wiſdom and vertue of a Biſhop ought to extend.

XXII. The King having ſent out a very large Convoy one day for recruiting the Camp with proviſions, and a Squadron of above five thouſand Horſe along with them:

them. Mareſchal *Melleray* went likewiſe out of the Camp to meet them, with three thouſand Horſe more. The Enemies Army ſnatcht this opportunity to charge our Trenches. As ſoon as they were diſcovered at ſome diſtance, the Marquis of *Grammont* who commanded the Horſe, ſaid to Mareſchal *Chatillon*, with whom I then was waiting for orders. *Sir, Yonder is the Enemy coming, we ſhould go meet them with ſome Squadrons of Horſe to break their firſt puſh, and prevent their forcing our Trenches.* The Mareſchal *de Chatillon*, who all the world knows was of a ſtrange cold ſtiff temper, anſwered without any concern, *Sir, our buſineſs now is not to engage the Enemies Army, but to defend our Lines. But, Sir,* ſaid Monſieur *Grammont* again, *it is with a deſign to defend them that I would march out againſt them; the firſt aggreſſor is commonly the better man. Say you ſo, Sir,* reply'd Monſieur *Chatillon, and if you be repuls'd, who ſhall defend the Trenches then? Look you,* ſaid he, pointing to *Arras, That Town is our Miſtreſs, and our buſineſs is to take that; win it we muſt at any rate, though it ſhould coſt us the laſt drop of blood in our bodies. We have nothing to do to go ſeek out Enemies, our work muſt be to ſtand ſtill till they come, and ſee what they have to ſay to us. Ah, Sir,* ſaid Monſieur *Grammont* in a great paſſion, *this is perfect Envy. You injure me in ſtopping me upon this occaſion. I will aſſure you I will complain to the King of it. Well, Sir, I am content you ſhould complain,* reply'd the Mareſchal, *but I beg I may know when you do it, and be by: But in the mean while, Sir, upon my honour, I command you to your poſt, and ſtir not.* Monſieur *Grammont* withdrew much diſpleaſed, and ſaid, he muſt obey the General, but he would complain, and that loudly.

By this time the Enemies fell on about Monſieur *Rantzau*'s quarter, and charg'd ſo furiouſly, that they cut ſeveral Regiments to pieces, plundered all that quarter, and prepared to advance ſtill farther, to try if they could put any ſuccours into the place. The Fort of *Rantzay* was taken and retaken ſeveral times, but at laſt we continued Maſters of it. I attended Monſieur *Chatillon* all the time of the engagement, which laſted about five hours, and had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the whole action without being concerned in it, becauſe our quarter was not attackt, lying a league off. Some of them came to Monſieur *Chatillon*, crying, all was loſt, and that the Enemies were coming on to force us? he reply'd with great indifference, *Stay, ſtay till they have done*; and preſently after he ordered a body of Reſerve, conſiſting of four thouſand Horſe, to charge the Enemies all at once. The thing was no ſooner ſaid than done. They charged immediately ſo briskly, that they cleared the Trenches of them, recover'd ſome Cannon that were loſt, and drove them a great way beyond the Camp. Then we ſaw plainly, and Monſieur *Grammont* himſelf confeſt, that it was an inſtance of Mareſchal *Chatillon*'s wiſdom to oppoſe the Horſe going out of the Camp, for their ſtay was the very thing that ſaved all from being loſt.

XXIII. At laſt when we had ſprung a Mine, and made a large breach, and had two more ready to ſpring, our Generals ſummon'd the Town to ſurrender, declaring to them, that if they were able to hold out after two Mines more, they had ſome reaſon not to comply; and if they doubted the truth of what they ſaid, they would give them ſafe conduct, and an opportunity of convincing themſelves. Some perſons came therefore from the City, and took a particular view of all. And then being ſatisfied it was impoſſible for them to hold out any longer, they agreed to a Capitulation, preſently after they had made their report; for they allowed them no more than an hours time to conſider of it, for fear a longer delay ſhould give them opportunity to defeat the ſucceſs we expected from thoſe two Mines. So after they were come to a perfect agreement on both ſides, and the Articles drawn, the City was delivered into the King's poſſeſſion again, in the month of *Auguſt*, 1640. Cardinal *Richelieu* had promiſed the Government of it, if it were taken, to Monſieur *St. Preuil*, and he kept his word with him, and put him into it preſently after it was reduc'd. Monſieur *St. Preuil*, who as I have ſaid before, was my very particular friend, had given me intimation of it before, and urged me mightily to ask the King for the Lieutenancy of the Town. This was what I could have been well enough pleaſed with, upon the account of the friendſhip between us; but not prevailing with my ſelf to beg it, I deſir'd him to ask it for me, telling him, he who had ſo eaſily ſecured the Government for himſelf, might very well obtain the Lieutenancy for me. He that knew well enough how the Cardinal ſtood affected to me, durſt not engage in ſuch a requeſt upon my account; and ſo, after the reduction of *Arras*, the Lieutenancy under the King was diſpos'd of to Monſieur *du Pleſſis Belliere*; and I ſtaid there for ſome time in Garriſon with my Regiment, which was ſtill that of Mareſchal *Brezay*.

The End of the Fourth Book.

BOOK V.

The Sieur de Pontis *is in disgrace. An account of his Conference with a ghostly Father, upon occasion of a great Fault, which he and the Sieur* de St. Preuil *designed to commit. The cunning management of a Minister's Son, who over-reaches Cardinal* Richelieu, *and a great many other persons in* France. *Monsieur St.* Preuil *is in disfavour, and several considerable particulars related, that were the cause of his Ruine. Monsieur* le Grand *invites the Sieur* de Pontis *to make one in that Party that was forming against Cardinal* Richelieu. *Upon this Occasion the Sieur* de Pontis *writes a most bitter Letter, which the Cardinal gets into his possession. The King's Journey to* Rousillon. *The Cardinal's tottering Fortune, and his Victory over his Enemies at last. A long Conference between him and the Sieur* de Pontis, *whom he tries once more to draw over to his Service and Interest. The Cardinal's death, and shortly after that the King's.*

I. IT was not long after the reducing of *Arras*, before I felt the mischievous Effects of that Prelate's Malice, mention'd in the former Book. He set Cardinal *Richelieu* so violently against me, that I found my self in a moment stript of all, and not allow'd to see the King, any more than the Cardinal, that hated me. Who, by a piece of confidence that a Man could scarce believe, did not scruple to flie so high, as to make use of his Authority against one of his own Officers, and one for whom he knew very well his Majesty had a particular Favour and Esteem. Being one day come to *Paris* by the King's express Command, to make large Recruits, and carry them to *Arras*, I employ'd some time in executing this Commission; and some few days before my return to *Arras* with my new Levies, had a mind to entertain the Treasurers of the Army at *Aubrieres*, a League out of *Paris*. I treated them as nobly as I could, sparing no cost to welcome Persons, whose Favour and Friendship it was my interest to secure; and little thinking, God knows, of the Misfortune that was then coming upon me; and which made it but too necessary to have husbanded that Money more prudently. This day of jollity and pleasure, was succeeded by another very black one to me: For while I was set at Table with my Friends, and my thoughts wholly bent upon mirth and diversion, there came a Messenger to the house to speak with me from Monsieur *de Noyers*. I rose immediately, and enquired what his business was; and he deliver'd me an Order under Monsieur *de Noyers* his own hand, the substance whereof was, That the Cardinal sent to tell me in the King's Name, that I need not trouble my self to carry the new Recruits I had raised to *Arras*; and bade me take notice, that I must be sure not to go out of *Paris*, without the King's particular leave to do so.

This Message struck me like a Clap of Thunder, and I stood perfectly stupid and confounded at it. At last, when I was come to my self a little, I told the Messenger I would not fail to obey the Order he had brought me; and then striving to overcome my self as well as I could, that I might not break good company, I sat down with my Friends again, without expressing any concern. But in spight of all my endeavours to the contrary, they perceiv'd it in my countenance; and presently told me, they saw plain enough by me, I had heard some ill News: But I put it off as well as I could, and would not discover any thing of the matter to them.

About

About the ſame time that this Order was brought me, the Cardinal had diſpatched Billets to the Exchequer, to forbid them paying me my common Aſſignments. So I ſaw my ſelf all at a puſh brought as low again as I was when I firſt came young to *Paris*; and not daring to make my appearance at the *Louvre*, was diſmal melancholy to ſee my Fortunes utterly broken in a moment of time. The King, however, ſtill retain'd the ſame kind inclinations towards me, and ſought all opportunities to aſſure me that he did ſo. But he ſtood in ſuch awe of the Cardinal, who had preſum'd to ſhock him ſo boldly upon my account, that he found it neceſſary to act a little underhand upon this occaſion, and durſt not own his kindneſs for me publickly. So that having a mind to ſpeak with me, he ſent me a private intimation, and appointed me a convenient time and place to meet him at; that he might, by all means, conceal it from the Author of my diſgrace. One would very hardly believe, that a King ſhould be reduc'd to all theſe little Contrivances, for fear of one of his Miniſters: But the abſolute Authority this Cardinal had got over the whole Kingdom, and the Pride he took to make the King himſelf ſenſible of it ſometimes, is well enough known to juſtifie the truth of what I ſay.

II. One day particularly his Majeſty deſir'd to ſpeak with me, and ſent me Orders by *Archambaut*, the firſt Groom of his Bedchamber, (a perſon whom he lov'd, and had a particular confidence in) to be in ſuch a Gallery at *St. Germains*, an hour before day. I was punctual to my time, and when I came near the Centinel, deſir'd he would have no ſuſpition of me, telling him it was by the King's command, that I came thither at ſo unſeaſonable an hour. The Centinel, upon hearing my Name, told me he had directions to let me paſs, but entreated me to walk at ſome diſtance, becauſe the Rules of the Guard admit no Man to come near a Centinel. So I walk'd in expectation of the King's coming out, who came out ſuddenly, and took two or three turns with me, as it were by ſtealth; and after ſome other diſcourſe told me, He intended to carry me with him to *Verſailles*, but that Night had alter'd his reſolution, and therefore bade me go to his Privy-Purſe, who would furniſh me with ſome Money. The condition I was in, made me diligent to obſerve ſuch an Order as that was; and accordingly I receiv'd 500 Crowns. Which I lookt upon as a plain demonſtration, that he did me the honour to have kind remembrances of me ſtill; and that if it was not in his power to prevent my Misfortune, yet he had a very tender ſenſe of my Sufferings.

And here by the way, I cannot forbear mentioning a Viſit I made to Monſieur *Noyers*, who was not my Enemy at the bottom; and therefore I was ſo free with him, to ask the Reaſon of my being us'd at this rate. His Reply was like what the Fathers of the Inquiſition at *Rome* uſually make: *You muſt needs think* (ſaid he) *the King hath ſome ground for what he does.* But Sir, *ſaid I*, I am not conſcious to my ſelf that I have done any thing to deſerve this. *O look again* (ſaid he) *examine your ſelf, and recollect better. It is not a likely thing all this ſhould come upon you without ſome very great provocation.* He quarrell'd with Mareſchal *Brezay* upon my account, becauſe he, who lov'd me very well, thought Monſieur *Noyers* was my Enemy, and did ill offices; though really I dare be bold to ſay, that he never hated me in his heart.

III. *Idleneſs*, they ſay, *is the Mother of Evils*; and ſo I found, by experience, in the time of my diſgrace. For having then no manner of employment, there happen'd a very unlucky buſineſs, which yet Providence ſo diſpos'd, as to make it the occaſion of great good to me. There was a certain Lady of quality, both rich and beautiful, with whom Monſieur *St. Preuil* was in love, and would fain have married. A Couſin of *St. Preuil*, and a very pretty Gentleman, was in love with her too, and made the ſame pretenſions to her: Their Paſſions thus meeting in the ſame Object, created, as it generally does indeed, a mortal hatred and jealouſy between the two Rivals. And Monſieur *St. Preuil*, impatient of any other Pretender, reſolv'd to fight him, and determine their difference this helliſh way. It is you know one of the common teſtimonies of the friendſhip of the world, to engage ones beſt Friends in this kind of wickedneſs; and accordingly he choſe me for his Second, upon this bloody occaſion. But before the deſign was put in execution, we ſpent two Months in an employment, that I cannot without horror ſo much as mention now; which was to fence every day together, that we might learn ſome extraordinary Paſs, by which each of us might quickly diſpatch our Man. There was nothing but horrible conſequences to be expected

pected from ſo deviliſh and miſchievous an exerciſe, if God by a mercy, which I can never adore ſufficiently, had not prevented our putting it into practice at laſt; and how that was brought about I will now inform you.

About this time he put it into my mind to go to Confeſſion, and ask the advice of ſome good grave Father with regard to our deſign. I went to the *Feuillans* of *St. Honorius* Street in *Paris*, and deſired the firſt Monk I met, that he would do me the favour to bring me to the ſpeech of the moſt pious and moſt learned perſon of their Monaſtery, becauſe I had a matter of great conſequence to impart to him; as indeed I had felt ſeveral pangs of conſcience about the matter. Accordingly he ſent a very reverend Father to me, and, as the ſtory will ſhew you, a very honeſt man. He was an old Gentleman, one *Boromæo*, whoſe very aſpect was able of it ſelf to ſtrike terror into ſuch an old Sinner as I was. After our firſt ſalutation, I begg'd the favour of him to hear my Confeſſion, to which he conſented. After having revealed to him among other matters, the preſent engagements I was under, and what wicked induſtry had been uſed to prepare my ſelf for a Duel; the good Father, full of horror and amazement to ſee me in ſo wretched a condition, ſaid with much vehemence, and great indignation; *With what face have you dared to come before the Tribunal of Jeſus Chriſt, while you continue under this wicked thought of committing ſo deteſtable a fault, and exerciſe and fit your ſelf every day to deſtroy both the body and ſoul of one of your Brethren? You are in a worſe condition than the Devil himſelf. For that accurſed Spirit deſires the ruine of others, becauſe he is ruin'd beyond all redemption himſelf. But you are within the boſom of the Church, and a Member of Chriſt, and yet you, notwithſtanding all this, are contriving to damn one of your own Brothers, and one of your own Members. If this had been ſome rencounter, which could not have been foreſeen nor prevented, and you had lain under an abſolute neceſſity of defending your ſelf; or if it had been any ſudden tranſport of paſſion, your crime had been much leſs; and the guilt, tho great even ſo, had yet made you with ſuch mittigations more capable of mercy. But to fit and prepare your ſelf for ſuch a curſed action in cold blood, and for a long time together to uſe art and exerciſe, that you may ſtab your Brother to the heart with greater ſureneſs and dexterity; Is this to act like a man? Is this agreeable to the Character of a Chriſtian? I cannot give you any Abſolution, while you continue under ſuch Circumſtances: No, God forbid: I ſhould draw your guilt upon my own head if I did; and my Abſolution would be to the full as wicked as your action.*

At the hearing of theſe words, pronounced with great zeal and emphaſis, I was perfectly thunder-ſtruck, ſo amaz'd and confounded, that I ſcarce knew where I was. But God was pleaſed to aſſiſt me: And I was ſo far from oppoſing any thing the good Father had ſaid to me, that I told him with great temper; He had oblig'd me very highly in the ſharpneſs he had uſed; that I was now convinced the deſign I had was what both God and Man muſt needs abhor; and that now all the hopes I could pretend to, were from the great Mercy of God, and the benefit of his Prayers. The good Father ſeeing me ſo ſenſibly affected with his reproofs, began to ſpeak to me in a milder tone, and with great compaſſion ſaid, *Your fault, Sir, it muſt be confeſt is ſo great, that it ſeems to be above all forgiveneſs; but nothing is impoſſible with God. You muſt implore his Mercy, you muſt have recourſe to Prayers and Tears. And yet, alas! which way can you ask his Mercy? With what confidence can you pray, or come into his preſence, with ſo black a guilt about you?* Perceiving my ſelf moved with the affectionate behaviour of this good Father, and the prevailing power of Truth, I roſe up, and he riſing at the ſame time, I embraced him with moſt ſincere kindneſs, and told him, That I found no reaſon to hope from any thing in my ſelf, but I repoſed great confidence in his Prayers, and I begg'd them of him moſt heartily. He embrac'd me again, and with the compaſſion of a true Father anſwered, *Well, Sir, I promiſe to remember you in the holy Sacrifice of the Maſs. It is to be hoped that God, for the ſake of that blood which Chriſt hath ſhed for Sinners, will hear my Prayers.* I begg'd to know his name, that I might have the happineſs of viſiting him ſometimes. He told it me, and withal, that he ſhould be exceeding glad to ſerve me, and ſo I went home, very much mov'd with what had paſt.

IV. Monſieur *St. Preuil* came, according to his cuſtom, to practice with me as before, and was much ſurprized to hear me ſay, I intended to trouble my ſelf no farther about that matter; that I had diſcourſed a man who had dealt plainly with me, and being very well ſatisfied with one Lecture upon the ſubject, I had no inclination to provoke another. *St. Preuil*, whom all the world knew to be an obſtinate man, and who

who very ſeldom troubled himſelf with going to Confeſſion, anſwered me merrily; *Nay, now we are come to a fine paſs, what new fit of devotion hath poſſeſt thee now, man? Thou art grown mighty conſcientious. But prithee where is this man? I would fain ſpeak with him too. Would you?* ſaid I, *well, and you ſhall if you will. I am pretty confident he will ſtun you as well as me, though you were ten times as wicked as you are. But who is it,* ſaid he again; I promiſed to carry him to him, and then told him who it was, and withal, that this good Father had not ſpared me, and I was very ſure would be no more tender of him. *I proteſt,* ſaid *St. Preuil, thou art bravely hoodwinkt with thy Monks, this was the only qualification wanting to compleat thee. Hark you,* ſaid I, *do not think to put it off with a jeſt. I am much miſtaken if he do not diſarm you preſently, as much as he has done me. Put on all your Courage, and hector as much as you pleaſe, you muſt do it to purpoſe, if you are able to ſtand before this Monk. Well,* ſaid he, *that's as time ſhall try.*

I carried him to the Monaſtery, and Father *Borromæo* coming into the Garden to us, *Father,* ſaid I, *I have brought you here a wickeder wretch than my ſelf; though I own that before God I may have more to anſwer for than he. Pray try if you can convert him.* And then I went into another walk, leaving them to talk freely together. *St. Preuil* having opened his caſe to the good Father, he took him up ſo roundly, and gave him ſo lively a repreſentation of the horrible wickedneſs of that crime in particular, and his whole converſation in general, and the dreadful judgments that threatned him for them, that as ſtout as he was he brought him down; and he that came thither with a deſign to ridicule the Monk, was confounded above what can be expreſt. Inſomuch that after we had taken our leave of the Father, he ſaid to me in our way home; *I have it up to the hilts. He hath talkt to me at ſuch a rate, that if I would be ſure of my Salvation, I ſhould think the only thing I need do, were to turn Capuchin.* I was aſtoniſh'd to find this Monks diſcourſe had made ſo deep an impreſſion upon his mind. For, beſides that from that inſtant he laid aſide all thoughts of this Duel, it made ſome conſiderable alteration in him; for till then he had been a rank Atheiſt, and uſed his utmoſt endeavours to corrupt me. I went ſeveral times afterwards to viſit Father *Borromæo,* and was always very much edified by his converſation. But ſtill both Monſieur *St. Preuil* and I were grievouſly out of the way, which, as I perceive ſince, we ought to have taken, if we would have lived like Chriſtians indeed. And we ſhall ſee preſently the tragical end of this unfortunate man, whom I always lookt upon as my friend, and who falling afterwards into Cardinal *Richelieu*'s diſfavour, as I was at preſent, came at laſt to a moſt unhappy death.

V. I formerly took notice of ſome Horſes that I loſt, while we were beſieging *Arras:* But now, while I was out of favour, I loſt a moſt extraordinary one, which I call'd *Milleſleurs,* becauſe he was curiouſly ſpotted, and mark'd with all ſorts of Colours. The manner how he was loſt, and return'd to me again, giving an occaſion to ſpeak of the perſon that ſtole him, obliges me to give a ſmall account, which I dare ſay will be entertaining enough, concerning the man who had not the fortune to cheat me, till he had exercis'd his faculty firſt upon almoſt all *France.* He was the Son of one *Regis,* a Miniſter in the City of *Orange.* He had liſted himſelf in the Emperours ſervice, againſt his own natural Prince, the King of *France.* At the battel of *Wolfenbuttel* our men took him Priſoner, and he was to have been beheaded, which is the puniſhment uſed to Subjects that bear arms againſt their own King. But this young man, who had abundance of wit, made uſe of it in this extremity, and pretended he was a Relation of Monſieur *Leſdiguieres,* calling himſelf the Baron of *Champoleon.* The Count *de Guebriant,* hearing he was related to Monſieur *Leſdiguieres,* ſaid, He was too much obliged to Monſieur *de Leſdiguieres,* not to ſpare the life of any Kinſman of his. So he committed him to the care of Monſieur *de Choiſy de Caan,* Chancellour to Monſieur the Duke of *Orleans,* and Intendant of the Army at that time, that he might conduct him to *Paris.* When they came to the laſt Inn near *Paris,* Monſieur *Choiſy de Caen* excus'd himſelf to the young Gentleman, that he had no convenience of lodging with him at his quarters, becauſe he had a Family there, a Wife and Children of his own, and it was the cuſtom of *Paris* for every man to lodge at his own houſe; but that he ſhould be glad to ſee him as often as he pleaſed; and ſo gave him at parting ten Piſtoles to ſupply his preſent occaſions.

VI. Our young Baron, being a perſon of a great deal of wit, and a moſt prodigious memory, one that talkt pertinently upon all ſorts of ſubjects, and knew all the

Princes of *Germany*, and understood all the different Interests of their several Governments, resolv'd to put a trick upon the Court of *France*, which he did with wonderful dexterity and address. He found means, by some friends, that he quickly got at *Paris*, to gain access to Cardinal *Richelieu*: With him he discoursed over all the concerns, and most private Intrigues of *Germany*, and that with so much ingenuity, such solidity, and in so taking a manner, that he perfectly imposed upon him: And made him believe that he was an exceeding fit person for his purpose; that he was acquainted with most of the Princes of the Empire; that he could for a word speaking procure five or six thousand Horse, that this Duke, that Count, and the other Prince, were ready to furnish him with. The Cardinal had a mind to be satisfy'd in the truth of what he said, and to that purpose he conferr'd with some of his Confidents, who were perfectly well acquainted with all the affairs of *Germany*, about it. He read over besides several Memoirs that he had by him, concerning all these several Princes; and at last finding all agree with what this young Baron had told him, he grew very confident and secure, and therefore having no manner of jealousy about him, he spoke thus to a person of his own Court; *This young man hath an exact knowledge of all these matters, we must employ him, and he may be of great use to us.* To put him into a good disposition for his service, he gave order to Monsieur *des Noyers* to draw a bill for four thousand Livres for him. He finding the jest turn to so good account (and being a most extraordinary dextrous person at every thing) presently counterfeited Monsieur *des Noyers* his Letter, and instead of four, put in twelve thousand Livres, and subscribed it *Noyers* as well as Monsieur *des Noyers* himself. For in truth he could do whatever he had a mind to, his wit, his fingers, his whole body was entirely at his disposal, he counterfeited all sorts of hands to a miracle, plaid extreme finely upon all kinds of Musick; and in short he was out at nothing, but did all with a natural easiness, a gracefulness and exactness peculiar to him.

He was not content to over-reach the King's Treasury only, but cheated several private men at the same rate, under prerence of being sent by the Cardinal to transact some important affairs in *Germany*. Among others he attempted to catch the Duke of *Bouillon*, but this bout he was caught himself, and fell very pleasantly into his own Net. He went to wait on Monsieur *Bouillon*, and made him a very handsome and elaborate compliment to incline him to grant his request, which was to give him a Letter of recommendation to *Sedan*, whither he said the Cardinal sent him, to take that place in his way to *Germany*, and there negotiate some affairs which the Court had intrusted him with. The favour he desired of Monsieur *Bouillon* was, that when he came to *Sedan*, he might have a good Convoy to secure his passage forward. The Duke *de Bouillon* could not refuse him, because of the Cardinal, whom he durst not offend, and therefore writ to his Lieutenant at *Sedan*, and commanded him to furnish that Gentleman the Bearer with a good Convoy, because he was sent into *Germany* upon business of great consequence. Our Baron had no sooner got this Letter, but he counterfeited another extreme like it, and in that wrote to the Lieutenant; That the Bearer was a Gentleman of great quality, one for whom the Cardinal had a particular affection and esteem, and was sent by him to dispatch some very important business in *Germany*; therefore it was his order, that he would furnish him with what Convoy he should desire himself to secure his passage thither, and deny him nothing he wanted; for he thonght it very fortunate, that such an occasion as this offered it self, whereby he might shew the Cardinal how ready he was to serve him. But he could not tell how to counterfeit the Seal, so conveniently as the writing; and therefore was at the trouble of having one made on purpose, from the impression upon Monsieur *Bouillon*'s original Letter.

After this was done away he went to *Sedan*, where when he had delivered the forged Letter to the Lieutenant, he upon reading it promised to see his Master's commands duely obeyed. The young Baron was in great haste to be gone that night, but the Lieutenant told him that was impossible, for their best Horsemen were abroad in the Country, and would not come back till the evening, and besides the remaining part of that day was time little enough to get all things ready; but he promised him all should be at his service next morning early, and so should three hundred Pistoles, which was the summ he desired to be furnished with. The young Baron was very uneasy under this delay, fearing that before next day his trick might some way or other happen to be discovered. But there was no remedy, and therefore making a vertue of necessity, and endeavouring to keep up his character, he went to wait

on

on the Dutcheſs of *Bouillon*, who was then at *Sedan*, and received him with great civility and reſpect.

In the mean while, as ill luck would have it, the Duke of *Bouillon*'s Secretary came that very night from *Paris* to *Sedan*, about ſome buſineſs of his Maſter's. He preſently underſtood, that a Gentleman was come from *Paris* a little before, with a Letter from Monſieur *Bouillon*, and orders in it to his Lieutenant to ſend a good Convoy with the Bearer, and ſupply him with two or three hundred Piſtoles, if he deſir'd it. He was much ſurpriz'd that his Maſter had mentioned nothing of the matter to him, and ſaid immediately, that he by no means underſtood the meaning of this being made a ſecret to him, that he knew Monſieur *Bouillon*'s temper pretty well, and that he did not uſe to ſcatter his Piſtoles ſo liberally, and that he had a great mind, for his own ſatisfaction, to ſee this Letter. They ſhewed it him, and upon ſight of it; *Well*, ſays he, *I cannot deny this Writing and Seal to be my Maſter's, but ſtill I am mightily miſtaken if this be not a forged Letter; for though it be my Maſter's hand, I am ſure it is not his ſenſe.* Then he went to wait on the Dutcheſs of *Bouillon*, and told her his thoughts freely. But this Lady who was cruelly afraid of the Cardinal, was very urgent, that the Gentleman might have what he wanted. *We do not ſtand very well with the Cardinal already*, ſays ſhe, *and this unaappy accident will quite ruine us. We had better run the riſque on't, and pray let them give him whatever he would have.* The Secretary anſwered very reſolutely, that he did not queſtion but the fellow was a Cheat, and he deſired to ſee him before they parted with any thing.

Next day, when the Baron came to enquire if all was ready, the Lieutenant told him, he had given orders for every thing, and that he might be going as ſoon as he pleas'd; but Monſieur *Bouillon*'s Secretary came thither the laſt night, and deſired to ſpeak with him before he went. This news a little diſordered him, but ſetting a good face upon the matter, he reply'd very briskly, That was very well, and he ſhould be exceeding glad to ſee him. They brought them together, and when the Secretary had viewed him well, he ſaid before all the Company; *Sir, I came from* Paris *ſince you did, and am a little ſurpriz'd my Maſter ſhould never take any notice to me of the Letter you have brought. I am pretty well acquainted with his temper, and muſt own, I can very hardly believe he would have kept this from me. And beſides, I never ſaw you at our houſe, though I were there at that time.* The young Baron in great wrath to find the trick diſcovered, anſwered him, *What it ſeems you take me for a Cheat then? I would have you to know I am a Gentleman. I will complain of this uſage to the Cardinal. Sir*, ſaid the Secretary, *I will venture what you pleaſe, that this Letter was never written by my Maſter, tho both the Seal and the Hand are very like his. You are very rude to me* (ſaid the Gentleman) *and this affront you ſhall pay dearly for. Well, Sir*, (ſaid the Secretary) *though it ſhould coſt me my life, you ſhall not go till I have firſt written to my Maſter, and in the mean while you and I will be Priſoners together.*

Still Madam *Bouillon* cry'd, *Pray let him go, give him all he wants; this man will be our undoing*: But the Secretary was ſo obſtinate, that both were put under confinement, as he deſired, till they could hear farther from the Duke of *Bouillon*. Some time after, there came a Miniſter to make Madam *Bouillon* a viſit, who being in great grief about this buſineſs, communicated to him the occaſion of all her fear and trouble; and begg'd he would take the pains to go ſee this man that they had ſecur'd. This Miniſter was well acquainted with the young Baron's Father at *Orange*, and had been formerly acquainted with him himſelf. So when he was come into the room, and had lookt a little earneſtly upon him, he recollected his face, and told him he deſir'd a word with him in private. When they were alone, *Ho Sir* (ſaid he) *are not you ſuch a mans Son? Are not you aſham'd to bring a ſcandal upon your family, by ſuch a pittiful action?* The young man was much confounded, and confeſt the whole matter to him; begging him to excuſe the neceſſity that had driven him to theſe courſes; and aſſiſt him in his preſent condition, by getting him free of the ill circumſtances he lay under. He told him too, tho the Letter now under examination was, he muſt confeſs, a forg'd one, yet the Duke of *Bouillon* did really give him one much to the ſame purpoſe; and that Cardinal *Richelieu* did indeed make uſe of him for ſome buſineſs in *Germany*; the affairs of which Country he underſtood perfectly well, and had recieved from the Cardinal a conſidetable ſumm of Money to carry on this deſign. The Miniſter promiſed to get him his liberty. And having informed the Dutcheſs of *Bouillon*, and the Secretary in the truth of the whole ſtory, it was thought the beſt way to diſmiſs him quietly,

quietly, and make as little noiſe of the thing as they could, for fear of diſobliging the Cardinal.

VII. Upon this he hired him a place in the Coach to go back for *Paris*. But growing no wiſer by his late misfortune, he cheated the Maſter of the Coach, as well as he had done other people. For ſeeing the Book-keeper much perplexed in telling the Money, becauſe people had paid in ſeveral ſorts of coin, and odd pieces, he, who was exceeding ready at every thing, pretended great civility, and told the man, the tale of that Money was very eaſy. He took all the Money, and having ſorted it out into ſeveral parcels, according to the ſeveral kinds of Money, made all the ſumm come right preſently. Afterwards taking it all in both his hands, and powring it into the Bag, he contrived to ſlip ſome of it up into his ſleeves, which was never found out till they came to *Paris*; and then emptying the Bag, they found a great deal wanting. But he for his part was got off by another wile in this Journey.

There was an honeſt old burly *Swiſſe* rode by the Coach ſide, and our Baron in great civility and compaſſion told him, he ſaw that travelling on Horſeback was very inconvenient to him, and if he pleaſed to accept his place in the Coach they would eaſe one another, and ride in the Coach by turns. The *Swiſſe*, who was a good plain man, at firſt excuſed himſelf from accepting the offer; but at laſt the Baron was ſo obliging, and ſo importunately civil, that there was no refuſing him. So he alighted and came into the Coach, and the Baron took his Horſe. When they came to pay at the Inn, he called to the *Swiſſe*, *Do not trouble your ſelf, Sir, I will lay down for you, and we will reckon by and by.* Thus he did ſeveral times, till at laſt this honeſt fellow, with the true ſimplicity of a *Swiſſe*, gave him his Purſe, and told him he would have him take as much as he was out of pocket already, and what he might be more till their Journeys end. But the young man, when he had got the *Swiſſe*'s Horſe and Purſe both, which was the very thing he would be at, took no farther care than to make off, and ſo he left the Company, and galloped before quite to *Paris*.

Then it was, that he found an opportunity of trapping me, as well as other people. He took lodgings in a Taylor's houſe, and had a room well furniſhed, making his Landlord believe, he was a perſon of great Significance, that he had orders from the Cardinal to go into *Germany*, upon a Commiſſion of conſequence; that he was to have the command of ſeven or eight thouſand Horſe there, and if he pleaſed would make him his Intendant; he promiſed him mighty matters, and puff'd him up with wonderful expectations, till by degrees he had hookt him in to provide him a noble Equipage, a great many fine Cloathes, and abundance of Plate. This generous Taylor, promis'd himſelf to raiſe his fortunes this way, and never thought his Money in any danger, with a perſon that paſt for ſo great a Favourite and Confident of the Cardinal's, He had a mind to provide him better Lodgings, and brought him to a very well furniſh'd Houſe, where I then lay, and ſo plac'd him ſtill more conveniently for the acting his part. He was of ſo pleaſant a Wit, ſo happy a Memory, ſo well vers'd in Hiſtory, and had ſuch an excellent faculty of ſetting off all he had a mind to ſay, that all that heard him talk were charm'd with his converſation: Every body ſtrove who ſhould enjoy him moſt, his company and friendſhip was courted, as a perſon of the beſt quality and reputation; and he manag'd himſelf ſo well, as always to be thought ſuch a one. In ſhort, he had an art of bewitching all the world to that degree, that the moſt nice and ingenious perſons were ready to ſerve him, and thought it an honour to do it even with their Purſe, as well as any thing elſe. I was as deep in as other people, and as abſolutely charm'd with his company, and profeſſions of friendſhip to me. Then he went conſtantly to wait upon Cardinal *Richelieu*, and ſome other great people at Court, and put upon them as cunningly as upon any of the little ones.

At laſt, when he had got a good quantity of Plate and Cloathes together, and ſent them away before him, and provided a handſome Equipage, he ſet his heart upon my Horſe *Milleſleurs*, which was really one of the beſt and beautifulleſt Pads that ever went upon a Road. He borrowed this Horſe to go wait upon his Eminence at *Ruel*, and had ordered his Equipage to ſtay for him at a place he had appointed them. No body could ſuſpect any thing from a man that behav'd himſelf ſo genteely, and I, was as eaſie as others, never ſcrupled the lending him my Pad, but thought it an honour to oblige him. And I paid for my hononr: For, inſtead of going to *Ruel*, he made directly for *Flanders*, and troopt off with all that he had borrow'd. But by good

good Fortune the Knave was taken Priſoner by a Party out of *Aire*, or *Bethune*, and my Horſe was afterwards retaken by another Party from *Arras*; and there fell into the hands of an Officer, for whom I had procur'd the Command of a Company.

In the mean while, hearing no news of my Horſe, and knowing how the poor Taylor, and ſome others that had been concern'd with him, were left in the lurch, I began to be ſatisfy'd that I was robb'd as well as they. I wrote away into *Catalonia*, *Provence*, *Flanders*, *Germany*, and every place where I had any acquaintance, that if they could light of my Horſe, (for he was very remarkable, and generally known) they ſhould ſeize him, and ſend him back to me, for he had been ſtolen away from me. Shortly after Monſieur *Bourgailles*, who ſucceeded me as Major of the Regiment of *Brezay*, and to whom I had given my Command of firſt Captain freely, being then at *Arras*, wrote me word, that the Officer I had ſpoke of, had my Horſe. I ſent away to him preſently, and thought he had more honour, and more friendſhip for me, than to keep my Horſe, which I valu'd ſo much, from me. But truly his anſwer was, He had ſwapp'd another for him, and there was no reaſon he ſhould loſe by the bargain. A little after, this Officer's occaſions call'd him to *Paris*, and the Major ſent me word he came upon my Horſe. I went ſtrait to his Lodgings, as ſoon as I had this notice, and not finding him within, examined the Stable. There I found my own Horſe, and bade the Groom ſaddle him, and when his Maſter came in, tell him I had taken him out to go to ſuch a place, and he would not be angry. So I went home with my *Milleſleurs*, but never heard any more of my Captain, who did not think fit to come and make his demands, for what he knew well enough he had no right to. I loſt this fine Horſe afterwards, when I was taken Priſoner, and carry'd into *Germany*, an account whereof you will find in the ſequel of theſe *Memoirs*.

VIII. The particular friendſhip that had been all along between Monſieur *St. Preuil* and me, ever ſince my being Lieutenant in his Company of Guards, obliges me to give an account of his diſgrace, and his death, which happen'd at this time, while I my ſelf was out of favour. I imagine that a Relation of the whole matter will not be thought tedious or impertinent, and ſhall therefore lay down the ſeveral heads of Accuſation brought againſt him, becauſe the great intimacy between us, gave me an opportunity of knowing the whole truth of the Caſe, and as well what might be ſaid in his juſtification, as what he was really guilty in.

You muſt know then, that Monſieur *St. Preuil* was grown odious, and at laſt loſt his Head upon four or five Articles; and all this by the judgment of God, who thought fit to make an Example of the moſt obſtinate Man that perhaps ever was in the Army. Though the greateſt part of the matters alledg'd againſt him, and which brought him to ruine, were not, in truth, ſo much to his diſadvantage, as the World generally believ'd. The firſt Article was this: A Monk of the famous Abby of *St. Vaſt* at *Arras*, bearing a grudge to his Prior, and reſolving to be reveng'd on him, came to ſee, or ſome other way gave information to Monſieur *St. Preuil*, that there were a great many Arms in that Abby which had lay'n conceal'd there, ever ſince the *Spaniards* had been in poſſeſſion of the Town. To confirm this, he left a Note with him, that ſignify'd the ſeveral places exactly where theſe Arms were to be found; and he aſſur'd him, that there were a great many more beſides, conceal'd in a Nunnery of the ſame Town. Upon this News, Monſieur *St. Preuil* made a Viſit to the Prior of that Abby, and told him, *He was much ſurpriz'd at an Information that had been brought him concerning ſome Arms that lay hid in his Monaſtery; and that he muſt deliver all thoſe Arms to him, becauſe they were the King's Right.* The Prior would own nothing of the matter, and Monſieur *St. Preuil* told him at laſt, *He knew well enough where to find them*, and went away in a paſſion. But preſently after he came again with his Guards, and ordering ſearch to be made according to the Monk's inſtructions, he found, and carried them away, and gave the Prior very rough and threatning language, telling him, *That he would lay all the Monks Monaſteries in the Town flat to the ground; and that they were only a Neſt of Roguiſh Monks that were Traytors to the King, and held Correſpondence with the* Spaniard. Still this Prior ſtood it out, that he knew nothing of the matter, and poſſibly he might ſay true; for it is a very common thing for ſuch Religious Houſes to change their Superiors frequently, and ſometimes to keep the new comers in ignorance of many things done the time of their Predeceſſors.

From this Abby, Monſieur *St. Preuil* went to the Lady Abbeſs of the Nunnery which the ſame Monk had told him of, and ſaid, *He was much concerned to hear that they ſhould offer to conceal a great many Arms that belonged to the King, and that he was come in his Majeſties Name to demand them.* The Lady anſwer'd, *That truly ſhe had been but a Year Abbeſs, and for her part was privy to nothing of that kind; That ſhe believed her Nuns knew nothing of it neither, but if he would pleaſe to come, and ſatisfy himſelf, the Gates ſhould be opened, and no oppoſition made there to the Service and Intereſts of his Majeſty.* Monſieur *St. Preuil* took the liberty they offer'd him, and coming at mid-day with a great deal of company, he went into the Monaſtery, and took all the Arms away, which were found exactly in the place he had been directed to. But this created Monſieur *St. Preuil* a world of Enemies, and rais'd a mighty Clamor againſt him. The Nuns Relations gave out, That he broke into the Monaſtery by Force; that he abuſed the Nuns, and expos'd them to be abuſed by vile profligate Fellows. There was indeed one Nun in that Monaſtery exceeding handſom, and all the Town knew it well enough; and this was it that gave ground to that part of the Accuſation. But I, who knew Monſieur *St. Preuil* throughly, dare engage for him, that he could never have been guilty of ſo brutiſh an Action. 'Tis poſſible he might throw out ſome reproachful words againſt the Nuns, in the paſſion he was in, to find Arms conceal'd in their Monaſtery. But this was excuſable in a perſon of his haſty temper, and upon ſuch an occaſion as the Service of his Majeſty was concern'd in; and this was ſo far countenanc'd above, that when this buſineſs came to be known at Court, the King immediately ſent his Mandate to depoſe the Prior.

IX. He was more to blame in the ſecond Article alledg'd againſt him. There was a Mealman of *Arras*, who, under pretence of going to buy up Corn in the Enemy's Frontier Towns, us'd privately to carry them intelligence concerning the condition of the Town and the Garriſon. Monſieur *St. Preuil*, upon information given of this, ſecur'd him, and would have had the Law took its courſe. But the Man's Wife, who was one of the prettieſt Women in all that Country, fell at his Feet in tears, and begg'd him, for her ſake, to ſpare her Husband's life. Monſieur *St. Preuil*, vanquiſht with her tears, ſaid, *Look you Miſtreſs, I do pardon your Husband for your ſake, but let it be your care that he be guilty of this no more, for I won't pardon him again.* It was ſaid, that he was too familiar with this Woman, and that her Husband was ſenſible of it; nay more, that he kept on his former correſpondence with the Enemies, and was adviſed by them, to ſuffer his Wife to be thus abuſed, and pretend ignorance, that ſo by her means he might gain a more perfect underſtanding of the Governour's deſigns, and be more capable of doing them ſervice, for which they promis'd to reward him abundantly.

This poor Fellow however was caught a ſecond time, and put in Priſon. But for all Monſieur *St. Preuil*'s brave Reſolutions to puniſh him, if he were found faulty any more, he pardon'd him then too, not being proof againſt the entreaties and tears of his Wife, whom he lov'd. But he threatned him however, *That nothing ſhould ſave him from the Gallows, if he did ſo any more.* Three or four Months after, the Mealman, depending ſtill upon the Governour's kindneſs for his Wife, ſet the old Trade on foot again, and carry'd on the ſame correſpondence as before. But then he found himſelf miſtaken in his Meaſures; for he that was content to diſpenſe with his Wife's fidelity to her Husband, only to ſecure him in the breach of his own to his King, in hopes of a great Reward from the Kingdom's Enemies, was at laſt rewarded with a Halter for all the good ſervices he had done them. A Spy, that was taken at *Arras*, diſcover'd him, and depos'd that he came thither upon this Rogue's perſwaſion, and upon the confronting of them, the Mealman was convicted of Treaſon againſt the State, and as ſuch by the Intendant of Juſtice and Preſident of the Place, was ſentenced to be hang'd.

The condemnation of this Man, as well as he deſerv'd it, yet ſet People bitterly againſt Monſieur *St. Preuil*; and every body ſaid, he had hang'd the Husband, that he might have a freer enjoyment of the Wife. Which was very far from true: For though he carry'd himſelf very ill upon her account, as was notorious from the Preſents he made her, yet he did not hang her Husband for any other reaſon, than his own manifeſt guilt. Nay, in truth, he had no hand in condemning him, for all that was done by the Intendant of Juſtice, and the Preſident. But Providence brought on Monſieur St. *Preuil* inſenſibly to his ruine, becauſe of his impiety, and great extrava-

travagances. And I muſt own it as a particular mercy, which I can never be ſufficiently thankful for, that having great reaſon to love him, and being extremely obliged by him, I was yet in no degree a partaker in his Follies, notwithſtanding the mighty intimacy between us. It was not long of him that I was not engag'd in his Faults, for during my diſgrace I ſtole down to *Arras* to ſee him, and he then took great pains to draw me into the ſame diſorderly courſes with himſelf. But my ſenſe of Honour, and the conſtant regard I had for Juſtice, made me abhor the Crime I ſaw him engag'd in; and I diſcourſt him with ſo much earneſtneſs, and gave him ſo lively a repreſentation of the conſequence he had reaſon to apprehend from his vicious exceſſes, that we had like to have quarrell'd downright. *I have no mind* (ſaid I at laſt) *to loſe my Head with you. And if you do not take heed, ſome end will come of this, that cannot turn either to your Honour, or your Advantage, and really I could find in my heart to have no more to do with you.* What then, *reply'd he with ſome concern*, have you a mind in good earneſt to make an eternal Quarrel, and renounce all Friendſhip with me for the future? *No*, ſaid I, *it is not poſſible for me to hate you; and I am ſo far from doing ſo, that I ſhould be wanting to one of the greateſt duties of a Friend, if I ſhould forbear reproving you upon theſe occaſions. But then I cannot be ſo complaiſant neither, to ſhew my friendſhip, by engaging in things that I am very fearful will turn to your diſhonour. 'Tis ſtrange to me*, ſaid I again, *that you ſhould not conſider how every body's mouth is open'd againſt you. They are eternally complaining of many things which you ought to redreſs. All this muſt be naught at laſt.* Theſe words made ſome impreſſion upon him, but not ſo much as I could have wiſht for his ſake they had done. For if he had conſider'd what I ſaid as he ought, inſtead of being angry, and taking it ill from me, he ſhould rather have turned his paſſion againſt himſelf, and have taken care to mend.

X. The third Article was grounded upon nothing but meerly a misfortune, and *St. Preuil* was in no fault at all about it. The Mareſchal of *Melleray* having taken *Bapaume* upon Capitulation, it was agreed, that the Garriſon ſhould next morning at eight of the Clock draw off, and go to *Doway*. There was notice given at the ſame time to the Governours of the frontier Towns to ſtop the Couriers, and ſend out no Parties, becauſe this Garriſon was to go from *Bapaume* at the hour aforeſaid, and would be at *Doway* by three in the Aftereoon. But ſome hinderances happening, the Garriſon could not move till three or four in the Afternoon, and ſo was forc'd to lye abroad all night about a league ſhort of *Doway*. The Convoy allowed them by Mareſchal *Melleray*, being ordered only to ſee them ſafe within a league of *Doway*, was gone back. That evening a Spy brought Monſieur *St. Preuil* word, that four hundred of the Garriſon at *Bethune* were making a Sally upon ſome deſign; whereupon a Council was called, at which I my ſelf was preſent, being then at *Arras* upon a viſit to the Governour, and we were all of opinion, that they might make ſome attempt upon the place, and that it was the ſafeſt way to put the men all in a readineſs, and command that they ſhould ſtand to their arms:

About midnight came another Spy, and he ſaid there were four hundred men and ſome Horſe ſally'd at the Gate over againſt *Arras*. So, after calling the Captains together, it was reſolv'd to go out, and face the Enemy. I went along with Monſieur *St. Preuil*; and we were about ſix hundred Foot, and three hundred Horſe. When we were at ſome diſtance from the place where the Garriſon of *Bapaume* was encamp'd, Monſieur *St. Preuil* and I rid on before with a detachment of Horſe, and when Monſieur *St. Preuil* ſaw the fires of their Camp, he ſaid, *Theſe are certainly Enemies, we muſt charge them briskly before they are aware of us.* I was not altogether ſo eager as he, and therefore enquir'd of him, whether the Road between *Bapaume* and *Doway* did not lye thereabouts, for poſſibly it might (I told him) be the Garriſon from *Bapaume*. He ſaid, that was impoſſible, for his Letters ſaid they march'd out at eight in the morning, and were to be at *Doway* by three in the afternoon the day before. Then we joyn'd our Troops again, and made ready for fight.

The Garriſon of *Bapaume* ſeeing us come on to charge them, put themſelves in a poſture to receive us, and march'd forward with an intent to defend themſelves; but however they firſt ſent a Trumpet that belong'd to Mareſchal *Melleray*. The Trumpet ſeeing our men come on hotly, durſt not come up to them, but wheel'd about to recover the Rear of our Troops. So at firſt there were ſeveral ſhot made on both ſides. Thoſe of *Bapaume* ſeeing the action come ſo warmly on, and ſuſpecting we did not know who they were, call'd out, *Bapaume, Bapaume.* Aſſoon as ever Monſieur

ſieur *St. Preuil* heard this word, he ſounded a Retreat; but the Souldiers were ſo elevated, and hot, that there was no keeping them from plundering the Baggage. At laſt, when we began to cool a little, we conſulted what was fit to be done in this caſe. For my part, I told Monſieur *St. Preuil*, that it lookt to me like a very ugly buſineſs; that Mareſchal *Melleray*'s honour was at ſtake, and the miſchievous conſequences of injuring that, ought to be prevented by any ſort of ſatisfaction. Monſieur *St. Preuil* was much of the ſame opinion, for he ſaw the dangerous effects of it as well as I.

He went therefore immediately to wait on the Governour of *Bapaume*, and ſpoke to him in theſe very ſubmiſſive terms; *Sir, I am extremely concern'd at this misfortune that hath happen'd: I heartily ask your pardon, but I ſolemnly proteſt there was no malicious deſign on our ſide. I had notice ſent me yeſterday, that you would be at* Doway *yeſterday by three in the afternoon without fail, and it is now ſix in the morning. Who could have imagin'd that you ſhould be in the field all this while? Beſides, I had intelligence that there was a party ſally'd out of* Bethune. *We thought you had been that party, and the rather, becauſe you drew up againſt us, without ever ſending a Trumpet. You had all the probability in the world againſt you. As for what is paſt, Sir, I aſſure you, that neither you nor any of your Souldiers ſhall be loſers by it: For I will order reſtitution to be made you immediately. You know your ſelf one cannot govern men always, when they are in the firſt heat of action: This put it out of my power to contain mine now, ſo ſoon as I deſir'd to have done it.*

The Governour, who was a man of honour, made a very civil return, That he was very well ſatisfy'd it was purely a misfortune; that the Trumpet they ſent was afraid and ſo did not deliver his meſſage; and that he thought himſelf much oblig'd to him for his civility. Monſieur *St. Preuil* order'd all that was taken from them to be reſtor'd, and paid ſome of the Souldiers out of his own Money for what they had loſt; which the Governour reſented ſo kindly, as publickly to acknowledge his generoſity. Monſieur *St. Preuil* however was aware what advantage his Enemies might take of this unhappy accident, to run him down at Court for it, and therefore he entreated the Governour of *Bapaume* to give him in writing what he had ſaid by word of mouth, and ſign it with his own hand, that if there ſhould ever be need of any ſuch thing, he might produce it in juſtification of himſelf. Which he immediately did, with great expreſſions of kindneſs; and did not only ſign it himſelf, but took care that all the Captains with him ſhould ſubſcribe it too.

But, tho the innocence of Monſieur *St. Preuil* was ſo clear in this particular, yet his Enemies made uſe of his misfortune to bring a malicious accuſation againſt him: And, which happen'd very unluckily for him, he was upon no good terms with Monſieur *Melleray* before. For the Mareſchal going to take a view of a City in *Flanders*, went through *Arras*, depending upon *St. Preuil*, who was much his friend, for ſeven or eight hundred Horſe, to attend him to the place whither he was going. But he was much concern'd at *St. Preuil*'s refuſal, who told him, he could not poſſibly let him have them; for if the Enemy ſhould attempt the place, when the Garriſon was ſo much weakned, he might hazard the loſs both of the Town, and himſelf. This denyal gall'd the Mareſchal much, and the more, becauſe he had told Cardinal *Richelieu* at his coming away, That as for Horſe, he was ſecure of them from the Garriſon of *Arras*.

XI. The fourth Article was really the ſtrongeſt and moſt conſiderable of them all; and I was a witneſs of that too, being at *Arras* when the thing which gave foundation to it hapned, upon an occaſion that I ſhall now relate, tho I hinted ſomething toward it before. I was ſaying, that Monſieur *St. Preuil* and I had no very good underſtanding between us, and I came almoſt to downright breaking with him for his extravagances. Some little time after my return to *Paris*, Monſieur *St. Preuil* writ to Mareſchal *Brezay*, that we had had ſome little ruffle, and he would be glad to be reconcil'd to me, and to make his peace by procuring me the Lieutenancy of *Arras*, which Monſieur *de Pleſſis Belliere* was content to lay down for my ſake, provided he might be conſidered for it, which he would undertake to do; therefore he deſir'd him to diſpoſe me for the accepting of this Command; and knowing what an abſolute power he had over me, there was no queſtion but I would do whatever he would have me. Mareſchal *Brezay* did me the honour to make the motion, without taking any notice of Monſieur *St. Preuil*'s having written to him about it: And he urg'd it ſo far, that I reſolv'd upon a Journey to *Arras* for this purpoſe. Monſieur

St. Preuil

St. Preuil receiv'd me as he us'd to do, that is, with great civility and reſpect, and we ſupp'd together in very good company. As we were at Supper he ſpoke to Monſieur *de Aubray*, Commiſſary of War, who was at Table with us, and deſired him to muſter ſpeedily, becauſe the Captains complain'd mightily; and Monſieur *d' Aubray* reply'd very civilly, He would do it whenever he pleaſed.

Next day very early all the Officers in the Garriſon beſet Monſieur *Aubray*'s lodging, making a clamour, and demanding the Money that was due to them. He, inraged in all likelihood to ſee himſelf ſo importun'd, anſwered them pretty roughly, That he had his orders, and it was not their buſineſs to correct his Commiſſion, that he would take his own time to prevent falſe muſters, and do it when they leaſt expected it. The Officers, as much provoked with his anſwer, as he was with their demand, came ſtreight to Monſieur *St. Preuil*, and complained to him of Monſieur *Aubray*, that he would not pay them; that he always cheated them, and put them off, *&c.* Monſieur *St. Preuil* went preſently to Monſieur *Aubray*'s lodging, and deſir'd me to go along with him, which both I and the Officers did. He told him at firſt, that he was come to ſee if he would pleaſe to appoint a muſter that day. Monſieur *Aubray* made anſwer, that his order was his direction, and he ſhould take his own time. *How!* ſaid Monſieur *St. Preuil, you gave me your word, it ſhould be done when I pleaſed. Sir,* ſaid the Commiſſary, *I muſt not depart from the King's orders, I muſt look after my own buſineſs, and you to yours. I will make you do it,* ſaid *St. Preuil.* So from compliments they fell to ſharp words, and at laſt from words they fell to blows. For Monſieur *St. Preuil* being extremely paſſionate, was tranſported ſo far as to Cane him; and if I had not immediately ſtept between to part them, this ſcuffle had gone a great deal further. I was the only man indeed that was for it, or took Monſieur *Aubray*'s part at all, for all the Officers were exceeding glad to ſee him ſo ill uſed. I foreſeeing what ſcurvy conſequences this unhappy buſineſs might have, and that this ſingle action was enough to ruine Monſieur *St. Preuil*, did all that ever I could to make it up, before Monſieur *Aubray*, who was related to Monſieur *Noyers*, writ any thing of the matter to Court; and I brought Monſieur *St. Preuil* ſo far, as to agree to make him any ſatisfaction. But he would accept of none, threatning continually to complain to the Cardinal, and the King. At laſt, finding it was not in my power to bring this buſineſs to any good concluſion, I went my way back to *Paris*, without troubling my ſelf any farther about the affair that brought me to *Arras*, where I could plainly foreſee, there would in a little time be great changes and confuſion.

XII. Going one day to wait on Monſieur *des Noyers*, as I was coming in at the Chamber, I ſaw him in diſcourſe with the Count *de Charoſt*, and therefore ſtood ſtill at the door. They happened juſt then to be talking of Monſieur *St. Preuil*, and Monſieur *Noyers* in a great heat, ſaid ſo loud that I could hear him, That he made mad work in the Garriſon at *Arras*; that he had raiſed ſeveral impoſts upon the City; that he broke into a Monaſtery by force, and abuſed ſome of the Nuns; that he firſt debauch'd a Mealman's Wife, and then hang'd her Husband to have her more abſolutely at his command; and that he had abus'd a Commiſſary of the Army. The Count *de Charoſt* ſeeing me as this diſcourſe paſt, ſaid, *Yonder is one hears you, who can inform you of him, for he was his Lieutenant.* Monſieur *des Noyers* anſwered, *Ho, I know Monſieur* Pontis *was* St. Preuil's *Lieutenant, and therefore he will be ſure to excuſe him.* Then I went up to them, and ſaid to Monſieur *Noyers, I muſt confeſs I had been particularly obliged to Monſieur* St. Preuil, *but yet I ſhould be very far from excuſing any thing he had done ill in, becauſe I was ſenſible, whatever I was indebted to him, I owed the King a great deal more. Well then* (ſaid he) *is not it true that he broke into a Monaſtery, and forc'd ſome of the Nuns? Sir,* ſaid I, *I dare give you my Oath, nay I will forfeit my hand if he ever did. I know very well he went thither to take away ſome Arms that lay concealed in their Monaſtery; but the King himſelf declared his approbation of that, by the Mandate he ſent to remove the Prior from the Abby of* St. Vaſt, *and the Abbeſs from her Nunnery.*

Upon this Monſieur *Noyers* grew warm, and maintain'd that he ſaid nothing but what he certainly knew to be true; and he had it from very good hands, that he hang'd the Mealman on purpoſe to enjoy his Wife. I anſwered, he did not hang him, till he had been caught three times, and plainly convicted of holding correſpondence with the Enemies. I kept my ſelf ſtill to thoſe things I was well aſſured of, and ſaid not a word of the reſt, to ſhew him, that I was concern'd to juſtify the innocence

only, and not the real faults of Monſieur *St. Preuil.* But Monſieur *Noyers*, who was violently prejudiced againſt him, inveigh'd againſt him ſtill warmly, inſomuch that at our going out the Count *de Charoſt* told me, It would become me as *St. Preuil*'s friend, to deſire him, that he would take ſome courſe to compoſe this buſineſs, and loſe no time in making his peace. I went preſently, and told Mareſchal *Brezay* all I had heard Monſieur *Noyers* ſay againſt *St. Preuil.* He told me I had beſt go to him as faſt as I could, and let him know from him, that it was abſolutely neceſſary he ſhould come to *Paris*, and reconcile himſelf with Mareſchal *Melleray* and Monſieur *Noyers*, whatever came on't; that all his friends would uſe their intereſt for him, and that if he himſelf, that was the Cardinal's Brother-in-law, had thoſe two Enemies, they would have it in their power to ruine him. I entreated him to write a Note, that Monſieur *St. Preuil* might be more inclin'd to believe me. But he utterly refuſed that, and ſaid, *No, not I; for though I ſay this to thee now, if thou ſhouldſt tell any one that I ſaid it, I ſhould give thee the lye.* I told him, I hoped there would be no occaſion for that, for I ſhould be ſure to tell no body.

Immediately then away went I poſt to *Arras*, and after diſcourſing Monſieur *St. Preuil* till three a clock in the morning, I brought him at laſt to reſolve for *Paris* next day. We took Horſe and travelled together accordingly. but after a little while he changed his mind: For by that time he had gone ſix or ſeven leagues, he turn'd his Horſe head all on a ſudden, and told me, He would not ſtir from *Arras*, for when once they had him at *Paris*, they would take his Government away from him. All that ever I could ſay would not perſwade him otherwiſe. For in truth he was ſtruck from Heaven, and condemned already by a decree of the divine Juſtice. So we both went back to *Arras*; and I finding it was impoſſible for me to prevail with him, or do him any good, was loth to ſtay and partake in his miſery, and therefore return'd to *Paris*.

XIII. In the mean while his Enemies made it their buſineſs to poſſeſs the King, and Carninal *Richelieu* againſt him, eſpecially Mareſchal *Melleray* (who was grievouſly offended at him, for the accident to the Garriſon of *Bapaume*; and ſtill remembred his being denied the Convoy of Horſe he requeſted of him) gave this Stateſman ſo ill an opinion of him, that it was an eaſy matter for Monſieur *Noyers*, when he backt all the reſt with a freſh charge, to ruine him compleatly. The King and Cardinal being thus diſpleaſed with him, Mareſchal *Melleray* had orders to ſecure him as he went into *Flanders*, to have an eye upon *Liſle*.

When the Mareſchal was come near *Arras*, he ſent to Monſieur *St. Preuil* to order quarters for the Army. Every body then thought him loſt, and ſome of his friends adviſed him to ſhut the Gates, telling him, that ſince he muſt dye, he had better do it with his Sword in his hand, than by the ſtroke of an Executioner. But he very bravely reply'd, he would never be guilty of taking up arms againſt his King; that he knew Mareſchal *Melleray* was a man of generoſity, and he would go meet him himſelf. Accordingly he did with fourſcore or a hundred Horſe, and when he alighted to compliment him, the Mareſchal diſmounted too; and after thoſe compliments were over, they rode on together. Monſieur *Melleray* told him, he was order'd to lodge part of the Troops in *Arras*, and ask'd him if he had made any preparation for it. Monſieur *St. Preuil* anſwered, that he had taken care for every thing. He asked him again what Regiments he ſhould bring into the Town. *St. Preuil* reply'd, that his own ſhould lodge there by all means, and that he had drawn all the Souldiers of the Garriſon into a corner of the Town to make room for them.

When they were come to the *High-ſtreet* of *Arras*, the Troops were diſtributed on all ſides, and when all was ſecured, Monſieur *Melleray* immediately told Monſieur *St. Preuil*, that he was ſorry his duty obliged him to tell him, that he had the King's order to ſecure his perſon. So poor *St. Preuil* was apprehended, and afterwards carried to *Amiens*, where he continued Priſoner ſeveral months. I would fain have gone to ſee him in Priſon, and begg'd the King's leave to do it. But his Majeſty referr'd me to the Judges that were to try him, and they denyed me, becauſe no body was ſuffered to come at him. It was certainly a great mercy, that he fell thus into diſgrace with men, when his fortune and advancement had made him proud and haughty, and baniſh'd all thought of his Souls ſafety. And ſuch he acknowledg'd it before his death, telling his Confeſſor in Priſon, that God had ſuffer'd this misfortune to come upon him, to awaken his thoughts and remembrance of him, for he had all along forgot-

ten

ten God, and liv'd in wickedneſs. All this happen'd while I was in diſgrace. For tho orders were ſent me not to ſtir out of *Paris*, yet I very often took journeys privately; but with this caution, that I firſt gave notice of it to ſome of my friends, that had the beſt intereſt, as Mareſchal *Brezay*, and the Count *de Charoſt*, that if there was occaſion, they might excuſe it to the Cardinal.

XIV. About the ſame time Mareſchal *Brezay*, who (as I have ſaid before) honoured me with a very particular affection and eſteem, would needs undertake one day to make my peace with the Cardinal, in whom he had a very good intereſt. He bad me meet him one morning very early at the Capuchins in St. *Honorius* ſtreet, and he would take me along with him to *Ruel*. This offer was very welcome, becauſe I was quite tir'd with the pittiful ſort of life I then led at *Paris*. I came exactly to the time and place appointed, and ſo did he, and away we went both together to *Ruel*. But we found he had undertaken more than he was able to perform: For as we follow'd the Cardinal, who was walking in his Garden, after the firſt addreſs, and a little diſcourſe, Mareſchal *Brezay* told him, There was one *Pontis* behind his Eminence, who was very deſirous to pay his duty to him. The Cardinal, aſſoon as ever he turn'd about, and ſaw me, cry'd *Your humble Servant*; the very compliment with which he always diſmiſt the people he hated. I underſtood that language well enough, and knew he meant by it, that I had nothing to do but to walk off. Which I did as faſt as I could; and taking Horſe rode a good round rate back to *Paris*, fancying I heard the Cardinals *Humble Servant* perpetually ſounding in my Ears. Mareſchal *Brezay* told me afterwards, I was to blame in going away ſo ſoon; I told him, if the door had not been open, I would have jumpt over the wall; and that there was no ſtaying for me after ſuch a Compliment.

But another worſe buſineſs with his Eminence happen'd to me ſhortly after, which might very well have been my utter ruine, and yet by a ſtrange turn of Fortune turn'd to my advantage, and brought me into favour again. I confeſs, whenever I reflect upon it ſtill, I cannot imagine which way it was poſſible for me to get clear of ſuch a miſcarriage ſo luckily; and how a mighty Miniſter of State, who had ſought all occaſions to undo me, ſhould yet, when he found one ſo much for his purpoſe, make no other uſe of it than to expreſs his kindneſs, and try afreſh to win me over to his ſervice. The manner of it was thus:

XV. Monſieur *Cinqmars*, Grand Querry of *France*, was at that time violently bent againſt the Cardinal, and was forming a ſtrong Cabal againſt him, who ſtood then the common Mark for all the great Men at Court to aim at. He knowing me to be one that ſtuck cloſe to the King's ſervice, and conſequently the Cardinal's Enemy, thought it might be for his purpoſe to engage me in his deſign of ſupplanting this Man, whom no body was able to endure. And ſuppoſing my preſent diſgrace might incline me yet more, ſent a Confident of his, one *Fouquerolles*, Lieutenant of a Troop of Light-Horſe, and told me by him, That ſince my Misfortunes were owing to Cardinal *Richelieu*, who intended my utter ruine, I ſhould come in to him, who was able to ſupport me againſt this Tyrant, promiſing me beſides a great many fine things, which there is no need of mentioning now. This was when the King deſign'd his Journy to *Perpignan*, and ſo he pretended to engage me to go thither.

I was much perplex'd what courſe to take upon this occaſion. For it was eaſie to foreſee Monſieur *Cinqmars* his ruine, and I made no queſtion but he muſt at laſt be cruſht by ſo formidable an Enemy. But then I was afraid too, that the Grand Querry after having open'd himſelf ſo freely to me, ſhould take ſome pique if I refuſed him. However, till I had time to conſider better of the matter, I thought the ſafeſt way would be to ſhelter my ſelf under the King's command not to ſtir from *Paris*. So I told *Fouquerolles*, that Monſieur *le Grand* had done me a greater honour than I could deſerve, in remembring me at a time, when almoſt all my Friends had forgotten me; that I ſhould be ſenſible of it as long as I liv'd, and retain all the gratitude that ſo particular a Favour requir'd. But the King having expreſly charged me not to go from *Paris*, I could not then comply with the offer he made me, but I entreated him to believe, that if I could undertake that Journey without a breach of duty, I ſhould be entirely at his diſpoſal, and therefore I deſir'd he would give me time to ask my Friends advice about it.

I then

I then wrote to Monſieur *Vitremont* my particular acquaintance, to deſire he would diſcourſe Monſieur *de Vennes*, another of my Friends, upon the buſineſs. I would not mention Monſieur *Cinqmars*, but only told them in general, That I was at a great loſs what to do upon this juncture of the King's going to *Perpignan*, whether I ſhould attend him, notwithſtanding the Order that was ſent me, and which, I was ſatisfy'd, came only from the Cardinal. But the Error I committed was, that writing in a paſſion, I inveigh'd bitterly againſt him, and laid him out in his true colours, mentioning him in ſcurrilous terms, as Hat, and Redcap, and the like. I took all imaginable care that this Letter ſhould be deliver'd into the perſon's own hand to whom it was directed; but notwithſtanding all my caution, the Cardinal got it, who kept a ſtrict eye upon me; and though I had given this freſh provocation, yet by a new and ſurprizing fetch of Politicks, he turn'd all his Rage to Favour, and an opportunity of perſuading me to be a Creature of his, as I ſhall ſhew preſently.

XVI. The King was then at *Fountainbleau*, and intended to ſet out from thence for *Perpignan*. He did me the Favour to ſend his truſty *Archambaut* to me, to bid me make ready to attend him. I askt *Archambaut* whether he had brought me this Order in writing, who told me, No. Then ſpeaking freely to him as a Friend, I ſaid, That having a written Order not to ſtir from *Paris*, and no written one to go, if the Cardinal ſhould think fit to call me to an account for this, I ſhould ſoon ſee my ſelf deſerted by the King himſelf, and left to the mercy of one who was ſure never to forgive me, and therefore I could not go from *Paris* without another kind of Order than that he brought me. But I have thought upon a method (ſaid I) to bring my ſelf off in this buſineſs. I am ſatisfy'd thou lov'ſt me, and therefore prithée tell the King that you found me very ill. And, in truth, I am ſo much worſe than if I had a Fever, and my circumſtances were better. And this was my real ſenſe at that time, my heart was ſet upon nothing but Favour at Court; and while I was out there, I could never think my ſelf tollerably well. So little impreſſion had the inconſtancy of ſuch Favour made upon me, though I had great and long experience of it, both in the caſe of ſeveral great perſons, and in my own. The Sieur *d'Archambaut* promis'd to deliver the King this meſſage, as I deſir'd him. So when he came back to *Fountainbleau*, he told the King he found me very much out of order, and yet that I expreſt ſo great inclination to wait upon his Majeſty, as ſoon as I receiv'd the meſſage, that it was very plain I was ſtill the ſame Man, and as zealous to ſerve him as ever; but in all probability if I ſhould venture upon this Journey, in the condition I then was, it might endanger my life. All this was exactly true, though not in that ſenſe the King underſtood it. His Majeſty expreſt himſelf very well ſatisfy'd with my fidelity and good inclinations. But was loth I ſhould hazard my life to ſo little purpoſe, and therefore commanded *Archambaut* to write to me in his Name, that he charg'd me not to travel till I was perfectly well again. And this was not till after his return from *Perpignan*; and then there was an end of my diſgrace, juſt where another Man's was moſt likely to begin.

XVII. The King travelling by way of *Rouſſillon*, and the Town of *Coliovre* being taken from the *Spaniards*, there happen'd a Quarrel between Cardinal *Richelieu*, and the Grand Querry, who both deſired the Government of this place for one of their Creatures. Monſieur *le Grand* having made his application firſt, carried it from the Cardinal, who was anſwered afterwards by the King, that he had put it out of his power, by promiſing it to another before. The Cardinal knew well enough that the Grand Querry was that other, and lookt upon himſelf as extremely affronted, that one, whom he had raiſed, and was ſince become his Enemy, ſhould get this Government out of his hands. He thought himſelf abſolute Maſter of all, and that it was a Condeſcenſion to ask what was in his own power, and was much enraged at the King's refuſing him: and concluding, that the malice of his Enemies was at the bottom of all this, he began to apprehend a ſhock in his Fortunes, for he was very ſenſible that there were ſtrong Cabals againſt him. For this Reaſon he reſolved ſhortly after to withdraw into a place of ſafety, that if any thing ſhould happen, he might ſecure himſelf by a retreat. Theſe are great Myſteries, and ſuch as I do not pretend to give an account of here.

All that is pertinent for me to add is, that before he took that laſt refuge, he contriv'd, by a very cunning fetch, to play me againſt the Grand Querry, and uſe my name to carry

carry his point againſt an Enemy, whom he could not with any patience ſee gratify'd before himſelf. Tho all my diſgrace was owing to him, yet knowing that the King had no averſion to me; and that it was uneaſie to him to have me kept thus from about him, and all by a conſtraint in which himſelf had no hand, he thought he might poſſibly obtain that in my behalf, which had been deny'd him before: And would not baulk the doing a kindneſs to an Officer that he hated, if he could but retort the affront and repulſe he was afraid of, upon his chief Enemy. He pretended therefore to be concern'd for me, and to have me in his thoughts upon this occaſion, and with his uſual ſimplicity, (when the King had refus'd him this Government for his own friend) ſaid, *But pray Sir, does your Majeſty never think upon poor* Pontis? *he hath nothing, and wants this; and beſides, that his ſervices may give him a title to this Government, for his reward, he will take more care in it, and manage it better than any body elſe?* The King ſaw thro this diſguiſe preſently, (as himſelf did me the honour to tell me afterwards) for he knew my preſent misfortunes were all his work; and this was nothing but his own Intereſt, under the pretence of compaſſion, which he put on upon this occaſion. The King had no mind to let him know he ſmelt the deſign, and therefore ſeeming to reliſh the propoſal very well, he reply'd very readily; That as for the man (meaning me) he had no objection againſt him; but he had paſt his word already, and it was no longer at his diſpoſal. So the Cardinal, that had with ſo much artifice pretended a kindneſs for me, and all to ſerve himſelf indeed, ſaw at laſt this Plot, tho ſo well laid, fall through; and was forc'd to take other methods for the ſuppreſſing his Enemy; as he afterwards did, and as our Hiſtories ſhew; where you find a long account of the tragical end that the Grand Querry, and his Confident, Monſieur *de Thou*, came to at laſt, and what occaſioned the fall of thoſe great men.

XVIII. When the Cardinal had taken care of their Tryal, he return'd to *Paris*, and went from *Lyons* the very day appointed for their execution. His March from *Lyons* to *Paris* was one of the moſt remarkable things that ever was heard. He being not well, contriv'd to travel without ever ſtirring out of his Bed, which was, to be carry'd as he lay, Bed and all, by ſixteen men. He went into no Houſe where he lodg'd at the door, but Monſieur *Noyers*, one of his deareſt Servants, performing the office of a Harbinger, went always before, and took care to break down the ſides of the Houſe, and make a paſſage by the Windows of the Room where he was to lye. Then they built a Scaffold too in the Street, and ſteps to go up to it, that ſo by this paſſage his Eminence and his Bed of State might be brought into his Chamber.

There were Chains ſtretcht all along the ſtreets of *Paris*, to hinder the crowd and clutter of people, who came from all patts to gaze at the triumphal Entry of a Cardinal, and Miniſter of State, laid at eaſe in his Bed, and returning in pomp after the Conqueſt of his Enemies. I was there among the reſt when he went by, and ſtood in *La Verrery-ſtreet*. He was not ſo ſick, but he could look round about upon the crowd, and ſeeing me among them, he call'd to the Lieutenant of his Guards, who went cloſe by his Bed; *I ſaw Monſieur* Pontis *juſt now, go tell him I would have him come to the Cardinals Palace, at my alighting.* The Officer came, bawling among the people, and enquir'd if I were there. I heard him name me, and ſhew'd my ſelf, and then he deliver'd me the Meſſage the Cardinal had commanded him. My friends began to blame me, for being ſo unwiſe to appear, ſaying, that ſome miſchief was now coming upon me; That the Cardinal muſt needs have a bad meaning, that I was too hot, and ought not to have tempted an unneceſſary danger. I, on the contrary, who had all the confidence of an innocent man, and never ſuſpected my Letter's being intercepted, told them I was reſolved to go, and ſee what the Cardinal had to ſay to me; and accordingly went ſtraight to his Palace, at the very time he came thither. There I preſented my ſelf among the reſt, but there being abundance of company, either I was not diſcern'd in the crowd, or, if I was, he would not ſpeak to me before ſo many people, but put it off to ſome more ſeaſonable time. As he came in, he ſaid with a ſeeming ſatisfaction; *Ah, God be bleſt, there is no pleaſure like being at one's own home.* And as the perſons, through the midſt of whom he paſt, proſtrated themſelves with a very profound reſpect, he only ſaid to them, *Your humble Servant*; but it was with an air very diſtant from that that he ſaid it to me in, when he chas'd me with this Compliment out of his Garden.

XIX. When I saw he took no notice of me, I desired the Lieutenant of his Guards to let his Eminence know, I had been there in obedience to his command. He promised he would, and entreated me to come again next day for an answer. I came several times before I could be admitted to speak with the Cardinal, who for several days was taken up with visits from persons of quality, that came to make their Court to him, after so long a Journey. At last, as I was one day with Monsieur President *Mole* in the Antichamber, word was brought, that his Eminence asked for me; so being introduced, even before the President himself, as soon as I came in, they that were near his bed withdrew into a corner of the room, all but two Pages that were in waiting at the beds feet. I came near and kneeled down, and kist his Robe. The first question he asked me was, Why I did not go with the King to *Perpignan*? I told him, that having received an order not to stir from *Paris*, and not any other afterwards to warrant my going, neither from his Majesty nor his Eminence, I durst not presume to go. *And is that*, said he, *the true reason why you did not go?* I told him, I had no other, but my fear of disobeying the King and his Eminence. *But is there not* (said he again) *some private reason that prevail'd with you to stay behind? For if the Kings consent was all you wanted, I am sure he is too gracious to have denied you. There must needs be some secret cause, which you have no mind to discover. Your Eminence knows very well* (said I) *that it was by no means fit for such a one as I, to desire the King would give me leave to be about him, when I had been forbid his presence, for some reasons, which it did not become me to enquire into. I am sure* (reply'd he) *the King would not have taken it ill from you, and you might easily have found friends, who would have undertook to speak for you, without applying to the King in your own person. My Lord* (said I) *that's very true, but I beg leave to tell your Eminence, that I have all along made it my business, to trouble those that honour me with their friendship as little as I could, and seldome to make use of them upon my own account. I am sensible the King is very gracious to me, and for that reason have received his corrections as well as his favours thankfully, because the greater his goodness has been to me, the greater I am satisfied is my fault, when I have offended him. I am very glad* (said the Cardinal) *to find this is your temper, for no body can have too grateful a sense of the King's favours. But methinks for all that, a man is to blame, when he does not shew a just value for the happiness of being near his Majesty; and that it looks too like a slight, when one is so unconcerned, and it is indifferent to him whether he enjoy his presence or not. And there is a great deal of difference between being troublesome to ones friends, and desiring them to intercede for him upon such occasions: And therefore I cannot believe but you had some other reason, which you would not have me know; for in short, no Prince is so far provok'd, but that there may be means found to soften him again.* He did me the honour to talk after this free manner, and we lookt as if there had been a sort of friendly contest between us, he still upon the attack, and I upon the defensive part. At last, finding his questions were so often repeated to no purpose, and that I stood my ground, he said, Since I would not satisfy his questions, he would not satisfy me why he sent for me. But bids me go from him to Monsieur *Noyers*, and he should tell me; commanding one of the Pages of his Chamber, whose name was *la Grise*, to go with me to Monsieur *Noyers* lodgings.

XX. This mighty earnestness of the Cardinal's to know what kept me behind at *Paris*, cost me a great many reflections. I had no intimation yet of my Letter, that I wrote upon this account, being got into his hands, and I fancied all his uneasiness might proceed from an accident some time before, which made him very jealous of me. Being one day with the King, his Majesty beckned me after him into the Wardrobe. It was a place where I never had been, and so did not presume to follow him. But he ordered the Gentleman Usher to call me in. Then sitting down very thoughtful upon a Chest, he began to ask me, What was the meaning, that all the Captains to whom he had given Commissions had quite forsaken him, and that scarce any of them gave any attendance about his person? I made the best excuse I could for them, telling the King in general, that the old Officers were quite worn out with hardships and wars, and no longer capable of doing the business of their places; several had lost their limbs, and were maimed in the service, and some perhaps might be weary with the fatigue of the Army. The King replyed, and asked me more particularly, What should be the reason that such a man (naming him) left his service, and was gone off to the Cardinal's. I said to him freely, and without any hesitation, *He could be no great gainer by the change, that left the Master, and put himself under the Servant.*

These

Theſe were my own words, and ſuch as I am ſure the King was well pleaſed to hear. This poor Prince then began to reckon upon his fingers the perſons that had deſerted him, lamenting in ſome meaſure his own misfortune. And I muſt needs ſay, tho I tryed to excuſe them as well as I could, yet I was much affected to ſee ſo great a Monarch abandoned by the greateſt part of his own Servants; and could not but be amazed, (conſidering the honour and affection I bore him) how any body could betray ſo poor a ſpirit, as to prefer the ſervice of a Subject before his, though that Subject were never ſo great. He ſeem'd to me to be extremely penſive and uneaſy, all the time we were together, turning the diſcourſe perpetually from one ſubject to another, ſometimes ſitting quite mute, and ſometimes asking ſome foreign queſtions; ſo that, knowing that he did not uſe to talk at this looſe rambling rate, I concluded ſomething lay heavy upon his mind, which he was loth to declare, though he would have been glad, if I could by degrees have ſtumbled upon it. For the King having at that time a great deſign in agitation againſt Cardinal *Richelieu*, there was reaſon to imagine he had a mind to intruſt me with ſome ſecret relating to that matter.

But it happened that our diſcourſe was interrupted all on a ſudden, by Count *Nogent*, who peep'd either through a crack in the door, or the Key-hole; which the King perceiving, asked if any body were there. Then Count *Nogent* ſcratching at the door, the King in a ſurprize roſe up ſo haſtily, that he had almoſt beat me backward, diſcovering by his behaviour, that he was concern'd at our being found together in that place. As ſoon as Monſieur *Nogent* was come in, he told the King, the Cardinal had ſent him to know whither his Majeſty intended to ſtay within, becauſe his Eminence would wait on him. The King ſaid, the Cardinal ſhould be very welcome. Afterwards this Count asked me privately, what the King was talking of with ſo much vehemence and geſture, giving me to underſtand, that he ſuſpected ſomething from our diſcourſe. I confeſs I had a great mind to check his curioſity, and tell him he meddled with what did not concern him: But fearing a man of that intereſt with the Cardinal, I only anſwered, That the King, as he uſed to do, talked ſeveral things about the Armies, the Souldiers, and the Officers. He ſuſpected this to be no better than a put off; and replyed, That there was ſomething elſe in the wind. And when he came back to the Cardinal, he raiſed ſome jealouſies of me, telling him he found me alone with the King in the Wardrobe, and that his Majeſty had committed ſome ſecret of conſequence to me.

XXI. This private and familiar conference with the King it was, that I imagined the Cardinal had a mind by degrees to get out of me, when I waited him upon the occaſion before mentioned. When the Cardinal's Page had brought me to Monſieur *Noyers* his lodging, his Eminences Livery made me way through all the crowd, that waited to be admitted. Every one made me room, in reſpect to the Page that introduced me. And going with him directly up to Monſieur *Noyers* his Chamber, after our firſt compliments, when he underſtood the Cardinal had ſent me to him, he took me with him into his Cloſet. There he began to put the ſame queſtions the Cardinal had done before, asking me over and over again, Why I did not go with the King to *Perpignan*. I found preſently, that this was a thing agreed between the Cardinal and Monſieur *Noyers*, and that I had reaſon to think they had ſome private intelligence of the buſineſs. I thought it the idleſt thing in nature to ask me ſo many times the reaſon of a thing, which they knew better than I, and if I durſt have been ſo bold, could almoſt have found in my heart to be downright angry: But I conſidered who I ſpoke to, and kept within bounds for fear of the Cardinal, and ſtuck cloſe to the anſwer I had made his Eminence; That having been ſerved with an order from the King, ſigned by Monſieur *Noyers* himſelf, not to ſtir out of *Paris*, he muſt have been the firſt that would have condemned me if I had gone. Still he turn'd and wound me about a hundred ſeveral ways, in hopes to make ſome diſcovery from me: But when he ſaw me proof againſt all his croſs queſtions, after a great deal of this diſcourſe, he reacht a File of papers that lay upon his Table, and drew off that fatal Letter written to Mr. *Vitremont*, concerning the King's Journey, and full of reflections upon the Cardinal; and giving it into my hand, ſaid, *Look upon that Letter a little, ſee if you know your hand and ſeal again.*

No tongue can expreſs the confuſion I was in, when this Letter was produc'd againſt me, which I could not think ſhould ever fall into thoſe hands, without Witchcraft; for I thought my ſelf ſecure, both of the perſon with whom it was entruſted to con-

vey,

vey, and of him to whom it was ſent; but the latter hath proteſted to me ſeveral times ſince, that he never receiv'd it. At laſt, not being able to deny my hand, nor uſed to flinch upon theſe occaſions, I rather choſe to own the whole thing freely, and ſaid very bluntly, *'Tis true, Sir, I own this Hand and Seal to be mine: This Letter I muſt confeſs was written by me, and conſequently I am oblig'd to own all the contents of it, tho my Head were to pay for it before night.* Monſieur *Noyers* was well enough pleas'd with this frank acknowledgment, but yet he took me up pretty roundly, and ſpoke with all the vehemence imaginable: *This is fine* (ſaid he to me) *here you have had the impudence to uſe the Cardinal at this rate, who is the greateſt and beſt Genius in the World; one that does good to all mankind; and one that raiſes ſuch as are worthy of his favour, out of the duſt, and advances them to the higheſt and moſt honourable poſts; one that is ever labouring, and makes it his whole buſineſs to ſatisfie all the Kings Subjects; and obliges his very Enemies; nay, one that at the very time when you were reviling him after this ſcandalous manner, try'd to do you ſervice, and begg'd the Government of* Coliovre *of the King for you. And is it poſſible that little inferiour Officers ſhould fall foul upon the power above them ſo inſolently; and ſo far forget themſelves, as to reproach and affront thoſe perſons, that their Prince thinks fit to truſt with the care and management of his Kingdoms?*

I anſwer'd him, That I confeſt my ſelf to blame to uſe ſuch language of a perſon, to whom I ow'd all poſſible reſpect; but I begg'd him not to take it ill, if a poor Priſoner as I was, let fall any indiſcreet complaints, and cry'd louder than was becoming. That this was the only liberty left the afflicted, to unload their breaſts by lamenting their misfortunes. That the world does not think any body the more guilty, nor at all reſent it, if they forget reſpect a little upon theſe occaſions; becauſe then it is not ſo much the perſon that ſpeaks, as the paſſion. *This, Sir,* ſaid I, *is the only eaſe poor Priſoners have left: Their tongues are not confined, they expreſs themſelves freely, and no body thinks the worſe of their cauſe for it. Nature, Sir, puts us upon complaining when we are hurt; and it looks like ſtupidity to ſuffer and ſtand mute all the while. In ſhort, I own I had not ſo much temper as I ſhould have had; but I dare ſay you your ſelf have ſo much goodneſs, as to excuſe me in my misfortune, when I was ſenſible of nothing I had done to deſerve it, and yet ſaw my ſelf ſtruck to the ground on a ſudden, and oppreſt with a load ſo heavy, as that of my diſgrace is to me.*

Monſieur *Noyers* was moved with my way of expreſſing my ſelf, and beſides I do not queſtion had ſecret inſtructions to make the beſt of this occaſion to invite me into the Cardinals ſervice; ſo he told me, he would ſpeak to the Cardinal in my behalf, and undertook to make my peace moſt willingly; to ſhew me by this inſtance that he rerlly lov'd, and was not leſs my friend now, than he had ever been. So I took my leave, and told him I ſhould acknowledge my obligations to him. I went home, and was amazed at the ſeveral little fetches, and politick deſigns of this great Stateſman, who hated me for my fidelity to the King, and had long waited for a fair pretence to undo me, and yet choſe rather to improve this occaſion that offer'd it ſelf to him, into a means of fixing me to himſelf, than of my utter ruine.

XXII. I went ſeveral times to Monſieur *Noyers*, and always found ſo many people waiting upon buſineſs that I could never ſpeak with him. At laſt, one day I met Mareſchal *Brezay* and Mareſchal *Melleray*, who both told me, they could not imagine what I had done to gain upon the Cardinal, but he was quite another man with regard to me, and often ſpoke of me with a great deal of kindneſs. Monſieur *Brezay* told me, he would introduce me to him; Monſieur *Melleray* ſaid, No, he would do it. So after a ſmall ſtruggle, they agreed to carry me to wait on him both together. We all went to the Cardinal's Palace, and at our entrance into the Chamber they ſaid to him; *My Lord, here is Monſieur* de Pontis, *we have brought him to your Eminence, very ſorry for having offended you, and ready to make a tender of his ſervice to you. I will be ſecurity for his fidelity,* ſaid Mr. *Brezay*, *And ſo will I,* ſaid Mr. *de Melleray*. All this while I ſaid not one word, giving them no authority for the engagements they were ſo ready to make in my behalf, nor confirming them no further than by a reſpectful ſilence.

Then the Cardinal, directing himſelf to me, ſaid in a jeering inſulting tone; *Well, Monſieur* Pontis, *you have ſtood in your own light all this while. You thought to get more, and raiſe your fortunes more effectually, from another hand, but you had been no loſer by the bargain, if you had applied your ſelf to me.* This compliment, I own, ſtirr'd a great deal of indignation in me, to ſee my conſtant devotions to the Kings ſervice made a jeſt of, and that

that they thought me a man to be corrupted. But I muſt keep in my paſſion, and therefore anſwered with all the outward demonſtrations of reſpect, that were due to him; That I was all aſtoniſhment at the honour his Eminence had done me, in having ſuch a one as me in his thoughts, that I muſt acknowledge my ſelf very unworthy his favour; but yet my Conſcience did not tax me with having ever been wanting in my obedience to his commands; and that I had endeavoured to pay his Eminence all the ſervice in my little power. But indeed I thought my ſelf obliged not to forſake the King's ſervice, for this would have been the higheſt ingratitude, ſince his Eminence himſelf could not but blame me for that, as knowing, that both my fortune and my life depended upon his royal bounty. The Cardinal pretended not to underſtand me, and made anſwer, that what was paſt ſhould only ſerve to make us better friends hereafter, and that he would have me come and ſee him again.

But I, who did not underſtand his Court, nor the modes of it, reſolved to frequent it but very little more for the future, than I had done heretofore. And I thought it convenient to acquaint the King with the whole matter; who would not have been well ſatisfied, to have had me conceal the particulars of an accident, in which he was ſo nearly concern'd. Having given him ſome little hint of it, he took me into his Cloſet, and there I gave him a full relation, of all that had paſt between the Cardinal, Monſieur *Noyers*, and me; at which he laught heartily to himſelf. But when, among other paſſages, I told him what Monſieur *Noyers* had ſaid concerning the Governours place of *Coliovre*, which he aſſur'd me, the Cardinal had begg'd of his Majeſty for me; the King was ſo full of indignation at this groſs diſſembling, that he could not forbearing crying out, *Ah, the Knave!* Then I askt him if he would give me leave to go wait upon the Cardinal, as he had urg'd me to do; telling him, that if his Majeſty pleaſed, I would never ſee his Eminence's face more, except in a Picture. But the King anſwered, that I had better not ſcruple that, but go wait on him as others did, to take off all jealouſie of me, and keep my ſelf at leaſt in that degree of his kindneſs, which he now profeſt for me.

XXIII. From that time, which was about the month of *September* 1642, matters went very well with me at Court: For I was conſtantly about the Kings perſon, who carry'd me with him ſeveral times to Cardinal *Richelieu*'s, when he went to viſit him near his death; but he did not uſe to take me into the Chamber where he lay. The day this great Stateſman dy'd, ſome hours before his death, I was in the Kings Bedchamber, Monſieur *Noyers* came in great joy, and told him, the Cardinal was upon recovery, for he found himſelf now much better, and had taken a Medicine that did wonders upon him. The King, who was ſatisfied the Cardinal's diſtemper was mortal, when he heard this news, continued juſt the ſame, without any alteration in his countenance, either of Joy or Grief. Some time after came another, and he told the King, that his Eminence was dead, and he ſaw him expire. The King did not depend upon this firſt account, but ſtaid for a ſecond, and a third; and when he heard it confirm'd on all hands, he contented himſelf with this reflection to ſome that ſtood by him; *Then there is a great Politician dead.* Preſently after Mareſchal *Melleray*, and Mareſchal *Brezay*, who had been his creatures, came and threw themſelves at the King's feet, and begg'd his protection. The King took them up, and told them, that he had always had an eſteem for them, and would always continue to love them, provided they would ſerve him faithfully. In this he ſhewed a great deal of goodneſs, for he never expreſt the leaſt reſentment of their having been ſo abſolutely at the Cardinal's devotion. And there is no queſtion, but there is a great deal of policy in managing ones Enemies ſometimes, when any extraordinary accident obliges them to change their meaſures, and come over to our party.

XXIV. I was not long happy in the Kings favour after the Cardinal's death. This Prince ſcarce ever enjoy'd any health afterwards, but waſted away in a kind of Conſumption, which at laſt brought him into a moſt lamentable condition. He ſtood one day in the Sun, that ſhone in at his Chamber Window, to warm himſelf, and I coming in to wait on him, not obſerving that, ſtood directly between him and the Window; whereupon the King ſaid, *Ah* Pontis, *do not take that from me, which thou canſt not give me,* I did not underſtand his Majeſty's meaning, and being concern'd I did not, continu'd ſtill in the ſame place. Then the Count *de Treſmes* told me, it was the Sun I took from the King; and I withdrew immediately. This poor Prince grew ſo lean, and worn, that he could not forbear bewailing himſelf; and would

ſometimes uncover his naked bony Arms, and ſhew them to thoſe of his Court, that came to viſit him.

When he lay upon his Death-bed, Monſieur *Souvray*, firſt Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, having given the word one day, that all the company ſhould go out, that the King might take a little reſt; and drawing to the Curtain on that ſide of the Bed where I ſtood, to ſignifie that I was to go with the reſt; the King immediately drew back the Curtain, and commanded me to ſtay; for he had no inclination to ſleep, but had a mind to be eaſed of the crowd and clutter of company. Then he began to talk familiarly with me; and ſeeing from within his Bed, through his Chamber at the Caſtle of *St. Germain*, St. *Dennis*'s Steeple, he askt me what that was? *I* told him St. *Dennis*'s Church; he ſaid, looking death already in the face, *Then there is the place where I muſt lye.* Then drawing his Arm out of his Bed, he ſhew'd it me, and ſaid, *Here* Pontis, *ſee this Hand, and this Arm, what Arms are here for the King of* France? I obſerv'd them, but with unſpeakable anguiſh of mind, for he was juſt like a Skeleton, with skin drawn over the bones, and cover'd with great white ſpots. After this he ſhew'd me his ſtomach, which was ſo miſerably lean, that you might eaſily tell all his bones. And then, being no louger able to contain, I burſt out into a violent paſſion of ſighs and tears; and made his Majeſty ſenſible, at my leaving him, that I was extremely afflicted to ſee him in that condition, which gave me more pain, if that were poſſible, than he felt himſelf.

I ſay nothing here of the conſtructions that were put upon his diſtemper: Theſe are ſecrets not eaſie to be known, nor of any great uſe if they were known. This we are ſure of, he dy'd when God ſaw fit, and in his diſpoſal is the life and death of the greateſt, as well as the meaneſt men. 'Tis to little purpoſe, that we trouble our ſelves to know the true cauſes of the deaths of Kings, when we know that all thoſe cauſes are ſubordinate to the will of him, who is the King of Kings. He was very negligently attended in his illneſs, and ſcarce ever had any thing given him warm, and in good order. This, I confeſs, added much to my trouble, to ſee a King, with ſo many Officers about him, worſe lookt after than the meaneſt Shop-keeper in *Paris*.

I was not in his Chamber when he dy'd, for all company was kept from him: But I can ſay with great truth, That death of his afflicted me to ſuch a degree, that for three months together I was almoſt ſenſeleſs: For I lov'd this Prince moſt tenderly, and was always paſſionately fond of his ſervice; and I will preſume to ſay, I ſhould be exceeding happy, could I bring my ſelf to be ſo zealouſly affected for the faithful ſervice of him, where no man ever loſes his labour; and who deſerves our love infinitely more than all the Princes of the Earth. God, no doubt, intended by this moſt ſenſible inſtance of the zealous and diſintereſted affection I bore to his Image upon Earth, to teach me how much better I ought to love himſelf, the great Original. And really, I have often wondred to ſee what a ſtrange temper I was of toward this Prince: For tho I valu'd my ſervices ſo high, as to think all the favour he ſhew'd me but a poor recompence for them; yet ſtill I was ſo thankful for them, that when ſome have found fault with him upon my account, I have ſeveral times anſwer'd, *Is it not honour, and reward enough for ſuch a worm as I, that ſo great a Monarch will admit me near his perſon?* Thus, whatever conſideration I had for my ſervices, ſtill I lookt more upon his accepting them, and always valu'd that moſt; and thought all I did was but a diſcharge of that obligation, which the being born his Subject laid upon me. Thus, without ever attending to it, I practic'd that to an Earthly King, which the Goſpel hath taught me ſince, ought to be practic'd to the Heavenly one; to look upon our ſelves as unprofitable ſervants, and infinitely happy to be thought worthy of fighting under his banners, and performing his divine commands.

The End of the Fifth Book.

BOOK

BOOK VI.

The Mareſchal of Vitry, *engages the Sieur* de Pontis *to attend his Son, the Marquis of* Vitry, *and undertake the Command of the Queen's Regiment. The Vigor with which he quell'd a Mutiny among the Souldiers, and aſſerted the Marquis of* Vitry's *Authority, in oppoſition to all the Officers. The Siege of* Rotheuil *in* Germany. *A part of our Army routed at* Tubinghen. *The other part under the Sieur* de Pontis *his Command, defend themſelves bravely againſt three Armies, and at laſt ſurrender upon Terms. What happened to him while a Priſoner in* Germany. *He is forced to pay his Ranſom twice over.*

I. I Was not long, after the King's death, out of employment. And though, after ſo many years ſpent in the Service to no purpoſe, I had reaſon enough to grow weary of it, yet I was engaged afreſh, without any other deſign, than leading the remainder of this miſerable life as well as I could; thus going along with the ſtream of the World, which carried me away with it, as it did ſo many other People. Mareſchal *Vitry* ſurprized me one morning before I was up, and as, I being aſhamed to be found ſo, threw my ſelf out of the farther ſide of the Bed, telling him, he put me out of countenance, and what a Jeſt it would be, if the World ſhould know how he had caught me, he told me he had a buſineſs of moment to impart to me. Then drawing back the Curtain, and urging me to lie down again, he promiſed he would ſpeak to me unſeen, that he might not make me uneaſie. Then he told me he came to ask a kindneſs, and would not ſtir till I had engaged to gratifie him. I, who only deſired to get quit of him as ſoon as I could, told him, without knowing the buſineſs, that I was his very humble Servant, and would do whatever he pleaſed to command me. So, in ſhort, I forced him to be gone, for having got my word, he went away well ſatisfied, without explaining himſelf any farther at that time.

Shortly after he told me, that the thing he deſired, and that I had blindly engaged for, was to be firſt Captain of the Queen's Regiment, of which his Son was to be *Maiſtre de Camp*. And conjured me, by all the friendſhip I had for him, to take upon me the inſtructing of his Son, who being unexperienced, would want to be ſupported and managed by one well skill'd in the profeſſion. This Propoſal, I confeſs, ſtartled me, for though I had paſs'd my word, yet thinking ſuch kind of employments a little below me, I did all that ever I could to get off again. But I could not go back from my promiſe, and the Mareſchal took care, by abundance of civility and kind promiſes, to oblige me to acquieſce in it. For he aſſured me, the Regiment ſhould be wholly at my diſpoſal, that his Son ſhould bear the Name only, and I have the Government; that I ſhould diſpoſe of the Companies as I pleaſed; and that the accepting this Employment, and inſtructing his Son, would be the greateſt Service I could poſſibly do him. There was at that time a great difference between the Duke of *Angouleſme* and him, for having been Governour of *Provence*, and not beloved by the People of the Country, the Court had taken the Government from him, and put in Monſieur *d' Angouleſme*. This occaſioned ill blood, for the Mareſchal of *Vitry* ſaid, the Duke of *Angouleſme* had done him ill offices at Court. He intended to drive this Quarrel higher too: but having no great reaſon to expect Juſtice would be done him, the matter by degrees was dropt, and came to nothing.

II. In

II. In the mean time, while the Queen's Regiment was raiſing, I went to divert my ſelf at a Friend's Country-houſe, and made a Nephew of my own, Lieutenant of my Company, who was afterwards kill'd in the King's Service by a Muſquet-ſhot. While I was in the Country, Orders came from Court, for me to go to *Sens*, and carry four Regiments, that lay there in Gariſon, to *Troyes*. I ſent the Marquis of *Vitry* word of it, that he might bring his Regiment thither too, and, in obedience to my Order, went to *Sens*. Quartering one day in a Mannor belonging to Monſieur *Bellegarde*, Father to the preſent Archbiſhop of *Sens*, this Lord came, and told me, that Mannor was his, and he deſired I would not quarter upon it. I anſwered with all imaginable civility, that theſe Quarters were aſſigned us for four days, but upon his account I would endeavour to get the Order changed, and remove the Regiments next morning. Nay, if he pleaſed, I would try to take them off immediately, but it grew late, and the Men had ſupped, ſo that ſtaying that Night could be no great prejudice. He thought himſelf much obliged by my Anſwer, not expecting ſuch a Compliment from an Officer that had his Orders, and ſo many Troops under his Command. For I confeſs, I have often wondred very much my ſelf at the rough behaviour of ſome Officers, who think the having power in their hands, gives them a priviledge to be rude and beariſh, when they might as well ſometimes ſhew ſome reſpect to perſons of worth and honour; and, though they cannot go back from their Orders, yet they might at leaſt execute them in a civil and gentle way.

III. While we ſtaid at *Troyes*, there happened a great Mutiny among our Men. A common Souldier of our Regiment, a wicked hardned Raſcal, had got drunk, and ſtabb'd a Woman big with Child into the Belly, which killed both the Woman and the Child ſhe went with. This was too horrid an Action to be excuſed by the Wine, and ſo I took the Rogue, and had him tryed at a Council of War. The greateſt part of the Officers, that were young and raw, inſtead of indignation at ſo black a Crime, openly appeared in favour of the Fellow that committed it, thinking (it may be) their honour concerned, to ſtand by a Souldier, in oppoſition to the Townſmen, that demanded Juſtice upon him. All the Souldiers mutiny'd to ſave their Comrade; for my part, I had ſo great a deteſtation of ſuch Outrages, and was by no means of a humour to bend under a mutinous Souldiery, that I urged to Monſieur *Vitry*, that this was his firſt Campagne; that if he did not aſſert the King's Authority, not only the Officers, but the very common Souldiers would deſpiſe him; that he would draw the *Odium* of a whole Town upon his head, who might prefer their Complaints at Court, if he let ſuch a Fault go unpuniſhed; that this occaſion, in ſhort, was of mighty conſequence to him; and that commonly, all one's following management depended upon good beginnings. Monſieur *Vitry* was very much of my mind, and reſolved Juſtice ſhould have its courſe, notwithſtanding all the importunity of the Officers; and that he depended upon me for the compaſſing this buſineſs.

This was, in truth, a good generous and bold Reſolution for a young Lord, like him, to undertake the oppoſing himſelf againſt the whole Regiment; but ſince he did me the honour to repoſe great confidence in me, and that his Father had directed him to do nothing without my advice, he thought I would not engage him in a matter which did not make for his honour. Accordingly I took the buſineſs upon me, and carry'd it on with ſo reſolute and ſo high a hand, that I had the Malefactor condemned to be hanged and ſtrangled, and made all thoſe Captains that appeared in his favour to ſign his Sentence. But ſeeing theſe Officers came however to Monſieur *Vitry* for his Pardon, though they could not deny condemning him neither; fearing that thoſe importunities might prevail upon his youth and good nature, I conjured him not to vilifie his Authority upon this occaſion, and adviſed, that he would rather go divert himſelf at his houſe near *Brie-Comte-Robert*, telling him that poſſibly there might be ſome miſchief; that I ſaw People were heated, that moſt of the Officers were new and unexperienced; and therefore I thought it my duty to urge his going, that if any thing ſhould happen amiſs, his Reputation and Authority might not be concern'd in it, but all the ill conſequences might fall upon me. I gave him ſo many good Reaſons for what I ſaid, that at laſt I prevailed with him to go, and leave the whole burden of the thing upon me.

Find-

Finding my ſelf left in full power, and not fearing any yielding in any body above me, I ſet my ſelf to the ſupporting the King's Authority, as I ought, and muſtered up all the courage and reſolution I had, fearing nothing ſo much, as not to be feared as I ought. When the time of Execution was come, I drew up all the Regiments, reſolving to dye, rather than ſubmit to the humour of raw Officers, and mutinous Souldiers. The Criminal being brought out, they began to make a great Noiſe, and the Sedition running high, they made ready for Blows, and putting their Match to the Pan, cryed all together, *Mercy, Mercy.* I ſtood ſingle againſt ſo many Men in Arms, and ready to give Fire, moſt of the Officers ſeeming pleaſed with the Souldiers Revolt, and openly approving it. But having learnt by long experience, that Boldneſs and Reſolution is all in all upon ſuch occaſions, and that Authority once exerted preſently quells Sedition, ſeeing one Blade make a greater buſtle than the reſt, that opened his throat, *Mercy, Mercy*; I broke through the Crowd, and going boldly up to him, ſeiz'd him by the Collar before them all, and ſaid to him, in a commanding tone, *Say you ſo Sir? Do you pretend to mutiny? Have you the impudence to rebel againſt the King's Orders? You ſhall be hanged immediately, without more ado. Prepare your ſelf to dye.* Then I exalted my voice, and ſhewing my anger in my eyes, *That Man* (cryed I) *that dares to ſtir, and does not behave himſelf quietly, I will ſhew him that I know how to do Juſtice upon him, and preſerve the King's Authority from being ſlighted. Who do you think you have to deal with, Gentlemen? It is no leſs than the King himſelf that you oppoſe.* Immediately I had my Man bound, who in great confuſion fell at my feet, and had no other concern now, but to beg mercy for himſelf. I pretended to be inexorable, and leading him toward the Gibbet, told him, there was no mercy to be expected for him, and therefore he ſhould recommend his Soul to God, for hanged he was like to be, and that preſently.

When I had ſeized this Fellow, all the reſt were ſo daunted, that they preſently grew quiet and ſilent, no body daring to open his mouth, except the Man that thought he ſhould be hanged, who begg'd to be ſpared with tears and cryes. In this interval the Malefactor, upon whoſe account all the Sedition had been raiſed, was juſt going to be turned off, and ſeeing there was no hopes of life, was deſirous to disburden his Conſcience, and declared before all the World, That as for the murther upon the big-bellied Woman, drink was the cauſe of it; but he thought himſelf obliged to diſcover ſeveral other Crimes beſides, to vindicate the innocence of ſeveral perſons who had been falſly charged with them. There he confeſt publickly ſeveral Murthers he had been guilty of, and then the Executioner did his office.

When the time came for the other to be hanged too, I, ſeeing the Mutiny compoſed, thought it better not to be too haſty, nor carry things too far, for fear of exaſperating People; beſides, that I was really ſoftned with the concern and ſubmiſſion of this Cadet, who had not yet had time to come to himſelf. So for the preſent I contented my ſelf with confining him; and told him, that ſince no formal Tryal had paſs'd upon him, I pardon'd him, upon condition he ſhould ſerve a whole year, and not quit this Regiment; which he moſt willingly embraced, as a very gentle Pennance upon him. After this ſo reſolute and ſucceſsful Action, the chief of the City of *Troyes*, the Preſident, Counſellors, Chamberlains, and ſeveral others came to my Lodging, to thank me for the ſeeing Juſtice done upon ſo wicked a Wretch, and expreſt mighty acknowledgments and gratitude for it; I told them, I had done no more than my duty, and was obliged to ſee Juſtice done, as I then did.

IV. Monſieur *de Vitry* came afterwards and joined us again at *Bar*, when our Troops were come thither. And there I told him, That ſince he had been forbidden by his Father, for the Reaſon I hinted before, to join the Duke of *Angouleſme*, I had beſt go wait on the Prince at *Longvic*, and receive his Orders. He was of my opinion, and ſtaid with his Troops at *Bar* till my return. So I waited on Monſieur the Prince, and told him, I came to acquaint his Highneſs, that our Troops were advancing; that Monſieur *de Vitry* was at *Bar* with the Queen's Regiment; and that he was deſirous not to command it himſelf, but to wait upon him, if he pleaſed to give him leave. The Prince told me, he ſhould be very glad to ſee Monſieur *Vitry*, and think it an honour to have him with him. And then gave me a Ticket for our Motions and Quarters.

V. I was not away above ſeven or eight days upon this Journey; but yet my abſence gave occaſion to a new ſedition in the Queen's Regiment, againſt Monſieur *de Vitry*. The Officers had a great diſpute about precedence, and not ſatisfied with ſtanding to Monſieur *Vitry*'s determination, becauſe he was young, and had not authority enough to regulate them; they, without his knowledge, deputed one *Fortiniere* a Lieutenant among them, to complain to his Majeſty. Monſieur *Vitry* being as yet unexperienc'd, knew not what courſe to take, nor how to manage himſelf to get clear of this affront, and expected my return with great impatience. In this condition I found things when I came back, and ſoon was informed of the quarrel by the Officers, who had a mind to poſſeſs me in their favour, and came immediately to ask me, if I, who was one of them my ſelf, would not take the part of all the Officers of the body. At firſt I ſuſpected ſome quarrel with Monſieur *Vitry*, and not caring to engage my ſelf, *Gentlemen* (ſaid I) *I perceive here hath ſomething happened in my abſence. I can give you no poſitive anſwer till I have conſulted Monſieur* de Vitry. *You would be the firſt that ſhould blame me, if I ſhould proceed ſo raſhly. It is ſtrange you can neither give, nor ſubmit to command; and that being appointed by the King to keep up diſcipline among the Souldiers, you your ſelves break it every day, and refuſe obedience to the perſon who hath authority to command you.*

I went then to give the Marquis of *Vitry* an account of my Journey, who was very well pleaſed at the Prince's anſwer. I expected he ſhould mention this matter to me firſt, and took no notice of it my ſelf. And ſo he did, telling me he had met with ſome difficulty ſince I left him; That all the Officers of the Regiment had carried it ſo high, as to ſend a Deputy to complain at Court, without his knowledge. *How, Sir,* ſaid I, *are not you* Maiſtre de Camp *of the Queen's Regiment? Hath not the Kings Commiſſion ſubmitted all the Officers to your command? Are not all their fortunes owing to you? their Commands were in your gift, and it was in your own power, as well to have preferred any other perſons as thoſe: Such an affront therefore, Sir, to your authority, which is indeed the Kings Authority, ſhould by no means have been endured. A man muſt put himſelf forward, and exert all his power upon ſuch occaſions as theſe. How* (ſaid I) *ſend a Deputy to Court without ever conſulting you! Oh, Sir, you muſt not put it up; farewel to all reſpect and authority, if this be ſuffered. If you keep theſe people under your firſt Campagne, they will ſtand in awe of you hereafter; but if they exceed their duty, and once get the upper hand of you, they will be continually mutineering, and you will never be able to reſtrain them. There is no middle ſtate in theſe caſes, you muſt either govern them, or they will govern you.* Monſieur *de Vitry* anſwered, *Alas! What would you have me do? I was all alone; no body took my part; and I waited for your return. Oh, Sir,* (ſaid I) *what does your being alone ſignify, when you had your command to bear you out? What is a ſingle Officer in oppoſition to ſo many private Souldiers, and yet muſt not he be accountable with his life to the King, for the diſcipline and good order of all the men under his command? Are not all the Officers of your Regiment bound to ſubmit to you, and have not you the Kings Authority to command them? There is no ground for fear Sir, when a man hath right on his ſide, and the Kings power to back him in it? Mutineers muſt be reduced by methods of prudence and reſolution. But ſince they have put a ſlight upon your Youth, I will take a courſe to make them reſpect your Perſon, and repent of their Diſobedience.* Then I deſired he would ſend away a Courier to the Mareſchal of *Vitry*, and I would do my ſelf the honour of writing to him, and repreſenting the whole matter. *Come* (ſaid I) *for fifty Crowns you ſhall make theſe Officers know themſelves*; and ſo Monſieur *Vitry* agreeing to it, I wrote to his Father the Mareſchal to this purpoſe.

My Lord,

BEing obliged to go for a few days to Longvic, *and there receive his Highneſs the Prince's Orders, there happen'd in my abſence an unhappy diſorder among the Officers of your Sons Regiment: They have ſhewn themſelves ſo diſreſpectful to his Authority, ſo ungrateful to their Benefactor, and ſo unmindful from what hand they enjoy the benefit of their Commands, as, unknown to him, to depute one* Fortiniere, *a Lieutenant, to make their Complaints to the King and Queen, concerning their Precedences: Thus caſting a ſlight upon my young Lord your Son, who is the proper Judge of ſuch diſputes. If this Deputy hath not been to wait on your Lordſhip, this is ſtill a farther*

ſlight

ſlight upon your Authority too; for tho they refus'd to be determined by the Son, yet they ought to have demanded Juſtice from the Father. The concern I have in the Intereſts of your Family, made me think it my duty to give your Lordſhip an account of this Inſolence; that they may be convinced of your Authority at Court, and what will be the conſequences of your and your Son's honour being thus injured. Pray, my Lord, ſee this Fellow caſhier'd, and let all the world know, that if any ſhall preſume to oppoſe the Authority of a perſon whom the King hath ſet over him, he muſt expect to be puniſh'd as ſuch inſolence and diſobedience deſerves. I am My Lord,

Your Lordſhip's moſt Humble, and moſt Obedient Servant,

De Pontis.

Upon the receipt of this Letter the Mareſchal of *Vitry* went immediately to the Queens Court, and there found that *Fortiniere* had been caballing, and made a mighty buſtle. But the powerful arguments on his ſide, backt with his Quality, and Credit at Court, prevail'd ſo far upon the Queen, as to undo all that *Fortiniere* had done; and beſides that, to obtain leave for confining him, which he did accordingly. After this he gave me the favour of a moſt kind obliging Letter; much extolling my affection for his Son, in ſtanding by him againſt all the Officers of the Regiment, and conjur'd me to continue my kindneſs to him; he told me, there was no danger now from *Fortiniere*; that he had impriſon'd him, and undeceiv'd the Queen in ſeveral things, of which ſhe had been prepoſſeſt. At the ſame time he writ to his Son upon my account, in ſuch a manner as made me rather full of confuſion, than proud; telling him, that till this conſiderable accident, he did not perfectly underſtand the perſon, to whoſe care he had committed him. That there are but few ſuch friends to be found, who will prefer another mans Honour before their own Intereſt; that he thought himſelf more oblig'd to me, than it was poſſible for him to expreſs; and that he commanded him above all things, to reſpect, obſerve, and be directed by me. When I had read this exceeding civil Letter, that the Mareſchal did me the honour to ſend me, I burnt it preſently; loving to oblige the perſons who do me the favour to love me, but fearing ſuch commendations, as rather expoſe a man to the envy and hatred, than recommend him to the eſteem and affection. of the generality of people. Some time after, the Mareſchal ſent back *Fortiniere*, whom I reprimanded ſeverely; giving him to underſtand, that he was more to blame than all the reſt of the Officers; firſt, in that he who was an old Officer was ſo far from teaching the new ones their duty, that he joyned himſelf in the revolt with them; and ſecondly, in that undertaking to carry the complaints of the reſt, he made all their guilt his own. He excuſed himſelf as well as he could, and would fain have been admitted into favour again, and have had a Company. But neither Monſieur *Vitry*, nor I, would ever give him one. For in truth he deſerved to be puniſhed, much more than to be rewarded.

VI. Monſieur *de Vitry* then went (as I ſaid before) to the Prince, and I followed him with all the Regiments; and here I cannot forbear taking notice of one thing, which I ſaw in my Journey at *Vauderange*, becauſe it is ſomething unuſual. This Town lies upon the confines of *Lorrain*, ſome fifteen leagues from *Metz*. The people of it are pretty equally mixt of Catholicks and *Hugonots*. The ſame Church ſerves them both. The Curate of one Congregation, and the Miniſter of the other live together in very good friendſhip. On *Sunday* the Catholicks go to Maſs from eight in the morning till ten: And at ten the Catholicks leave the place, and make room for the *Hugonots*; and ſalute one another with great civility as they paſs. The Miniſter preaches to the *Hugonots* in the very ſame Pulpit which the *Curæ* had preach'd to the Catholicks in before, only they have the Body of the Church and no more for their uſe, and the Quire and Altar is uſed by none but Catholicks. And again, when the Catholicks have gone to Church at eight a clock one *Sunday*, the next they do not go till ten; and ſo conſtantly they change their hours of devotion by turns. In a word. there is ſo great an equality of behaviour among them, that when I had been entertain'd by the *Curæ*, the Miniſter came, and invited me to dine with him too; and after this ſort of viciſſitude every thing is done among them.

VII. When

VII. When we had joyn'd the body of the Army then with the Prince, who was to leave the Command of it to the Mareſchal of *Guebriant*, the Mareſchal entertain'd his Highneſs, and all the principal Officers of the Army, at *Salbourg*, a Town ſome ten or twelve leagues from *Longvic*. He did me the honour to invite me, and would needs make me perform the Ceremonies of his houſe. It was one of the moſt ſplendid Dinners that ever was made: There were two Tables with the ſame Services in two different Rooms. The Prince's Table had about twenty perſons at it; for only his Highneſs, the Mareſchals, the Lieutenant Generals, and Mareſchals *de Camp* ſat there; the other was the Maiſtres *de Camp*, where Monſieur *Vitry* ſat, and I with him, being appointed as I ſaid to welcom the Gueſts, and conduct them into the Dining-room. For as ſoon as notice was brought me, I immediately left my Napkin and went to meet and introduce them. In the Princes Dining-room were ſeveral Drums and Trumpets, which all ſounded when his Highneſs drank. And ſome ſix nd twenty or thirty more were placed without, as were alſo ſeveral Inſtruments, which anſwered them within, and all together made a moſt delightful Muſick.

When they were at the deſſert, Monſieur *Rantſau* Lieutenant General came into the Court. I knew the Prince had no kindneſs for him, and therefore as ſoon as they brought me notice, went and whiſper'd Mareſchal *Guebriant* in the Ear, that Monſieur *Rantſau* was below: He was much perplexed, and ſaid, *Let him alone, and make as if you did not ſee him.* So I went and ſat down again. Monſieur *Rantſau* was much out of humour, that no body came to receive him. At laſt he grew weary of waiting, and came briskly up into the room whhre his Highneſs was. As ſoon as Monſieur *Guebriant* perceived him, he and the reſt roſe, and put on ſome ſurprize, and every one offering him a Glaſs, they told him, He was come a little with the lateſt, but there was enough left ſtill to dine on. At the ſame time they ſet before him Partridge, Pheaſant, and all ſorts of Wild Fowl, and being one that lov'd to eat well, he was taken very good care of.

VIII. After all this great entertainment all the Troops marched, and when they were come to the Plain of *Benfelt* near the *Rhine*, the Army was drawn out, and every one took his leave of the Prince, who was to go back from thence. Several would have attended him back, but he would ſuffer none of the Company to do it. My friends however, underſtanding we were to go into *Germany*, writ to me very earneſtly to come back, telling me I had ſeen *Germany* already, and to go thither again was but loſs of time. Monſieur *d'Eſpenan*, to whom the Prince was very kind, and who was indeed his particular Favourite, ſaid, he would ſpeak to him for me; which he did, and with great difficulty got me leave. But upon ſecond thoughts, conſidering how ill Mareſchal *Vitry* might take it, if I deſerted his Son at that rate, I reſolved to continue my Journey, and ſore againſt my inclination, to paſs the *Rhine*. But, by endeavouring to keep the Mareſchals favour, I loſt the Prince's, who lookt upon himſelf to be affronted, and was very much diſpleaſed with me. When I came among the reſt, to take my leave of his Highneſs, and kiſs his hand, he not knowing my deſign, ſaid in a low voice, *Do not you go with me, I have granted you a diſmiſſion.* I anſwer'd, His Highneſs had done me a greater honour than I deſerv'd, in granting a favour to me, which had been deny'd to others: But in conſideration that my return might create great complaints againſt his Highneſs, and much envy to my ſelf I begg'd his leave to ſtay behind. The Prince, offended, as if I had not a due ſenſe of ſo very particular a favour, grew downright angry, and ſaid, *You are an ungrateful man, I did that for you, which I would do for no body beſides, and now you do not thank me for it*; and preſently turning away from me, complain'd to Monſieur *Eſpenan*, that he had askt a favour for me, which I ſlighted as ſoon as it was granted. And really this prov'd a moſt unhappy accident to me, tho in truth my fault was not want of gratitude, ſo much as exceſs of generoſity: For I did not ſo properly ask my ſelf to be diſmiſt, as give way that another ſhould ask it for me; and when I declined the making uſe of this grant, I did not conſult my own choice or pleaſure, but was content to force and forego them, rather than diſoblige the Mareſchal *de Vitry*, by leaving his Son, and breaking my promiſe. But it muſt be confeſt, I made a very falſe ſtep, in giving way that his Highneſs ſhould be apply'd to for a matter of ſuch importance, before the thing and all its conſequences were duly weighed; which I cannot but ſay gave the Prince juſt occaſion to find fault with me, and to tax me with levity at leaſt.

IX. When

IX. When all the Army had taken leave of his Highneſs, they paſt the *Rhine* at *Offenburg*, ſome leagues diſtance from *Strasburg*: And from thence, under the Command of Mareſchal *Guebriant*, went and ſat down before *Rotheuil*. The Marquis of *Narmouſtier*, Brother to Monſieur by the Mothers ſide, and *Mareſchal de Camp*, ſent me with fifteen hundred men, to paſs the *Black Forreſt*, and oppoſe the Enemy's coming, while all things were putting in a readineſs for the Siege. We had like to have been all loſt in the Snows, and had the greateſt difficulty in the world to get out of them, they lying upon theſe Mountains in ſome places above three foot deep. When we had ſpent ſome little time in this wretched poſt, Mareſchal *Guebriant* ſent to ſeek us out, and ſupport us with ſome freſh Troops; and we made a very brave Retreat in ſight of the Enemy, who purſued us no farther than the Forreſt. Thus we came to the Siege of *Rotheuil*, where nothing conſiderable was done on the Enemies ſide, except one Sally, in which our men were in very great diſorder. I had ordered my Nephew, (whom I mentioned formerly) to go along with me, and view the Guard; ann when we got thither, I found the Regiments that were upon duty, and but new raiſed, extremely negligent, and almoſt as little upon their guard, as if they had been in a peaceable Country. Obſerving this, I cry'd out to them, *Why how now Gentlemen, ſure you have forgotten that you are upon the Guard: The Enemies would make a fine advantage of you, if they ſhould attack you in this condition.* Oh we have Centinels, and Guards lye before us, ſaid they to me. *Ay* (ſaid I) *but your advanced Guards will be beaten, before you can ſtand to your arms.* After that, I took a view of all the advanced Guards, and the places where the Centinels ſtood, and made my Nephew note them down in his Pocket-book; that ſo when my Regiment ſhould mount the Guard, I might be inſtructed in all the Poſts.

Juſt then my fears came to paſs; for ſix hundred men or thereabouts made a Sally out of the Town, and came powring in upon that quarter, where I ſtill was; and having eaſily forc'd the *Corps de Guard*, advanc'd briskly to charge the groſs body. I and my Nephew ſaw our ſelves encompaſt in a moment: For the diſorder was ſo great, and every body ſo unprepar'd, that the Captains, Lieutenants, and private Souldiers, who were but lately come to that trade, all ran together, without hearing one word I ſaid to them, or at all regarding the endeavours I made to rally, and put them into heart again. And really, when I ſaw ſo many men quit their poſt ſo eaſily, who yet at other times made mighty pretenſions to Gallantry and Courage, I could not forbear calling out to them, *Oh rare! Gentlemen, what! I perceive then, the Officers ſet the private Souldiers an example for running away.* I and my Nephew not being capable of ſuſtaining the force of ſo many Enemies upon us, both retreated; and going through ſome winding ways, we found our ſelves purſu'd, and blockt up by four luſty Rogues, that lookt as if they would fain be cutting our Throats; and were ſupported by ſome more behind them. Upon this we leapt a hedge juſt by, and recover'd a foot way, narrow and riſing, from whence we might diſcourſe them from the higher ground: And there turning back upon them, we ſtood our ground. Thoſe that dogg'd us ſo cloſe before, did not think it convenient to attack us upon this hill, and ſo went off about their buſineſs.

In the mean while, that Quarter being all loſt, we haſtned to Monſieur *Vitry*, to give him an account, and putting our Regiment into a poſture, made ready to try for our Trenches again. When neceſſary orders were given, we brought on our men to the charge. There was a broad way which we ſhould have gone, but it was directly commanded by a Spur-work, planted with eight or nine pieces of Cannon; upon the very mouths of which we ſhould put our ſelves, which was not fit for us to do. For the declining this paſs, I wheel'd off the Regiment a half turn, and breaking down a hedge, we went that way, tho all the Officers and Souldiers were not eaſily perſwaded to it, becauſe we lay all open. The Enemy being forc'd to turn their Cannon gave us ſome time to advance in: But however we could not do it ſo quick, but that three of their pieces were levell'd at us, and took off three of our hindmoſt Ranks. Every one preſt forward without ever looking behind him, and ſcarce any body perceiv'd it beſides me; who went ſmiling to Monſieur *Vitry*, and told him in his Ear, *Three of our Ranks are ſcattered, but pray Sir, make no words of it, for fear the reſt, who know nothing of the matter, be diſcouraged.* Our paſſage, tho ſo much expos'd, was ſucceſsful enough, and we charg'd the Enemies ſo vigorouſly, that what we had loſt was quickly recover'd again, and they beaten back into the Town. This was much for the honour of the Queens Regiment, and for Monſieur *Vitry* in particular, who commanded it.

X. Mareſchal *Guebriant* had a mind one day to go take a view of a poſt that lay much expos'd, to place a Battery there, but I conjured him not to go, for fear he ſhould come back no more. He yielded to my advice, and I went thither in his ſtead. Upon obſervation of the place, I found it very fit for his purpoſe : But diſcover'd at the ſame time, a ſort of Window, with a Culverin planted in it, that threatned me. This put me to ſome ſtand, and I knew not how to get backward or forward, for fear of meeting death either way. At laſt I came off without hurt, for it ſeems that blow was reſerv'd for a Mareſchal of *France*, and not an inferiour Officer. I made my report to Monſieur *Guebriant*, and he reſolv'd to go thither himſelf. I oppoſed his intention all I could, and repreſented the danger to which he expos'd his life ; for there was no way to get under covert of that piece of Ordnance. But he made anſwer, That his honour lay at ſtake for the taking of the Town, and would hearken to nothing I ſaid to him. So go he did, and there met with the death I had given him warning of : For this Culverin was diſcharg'd upon him, and broke his Left Arm all to ſhatters. When he was brought back to his lodging, and I went to ſee him, he ſaid to me with great unconcernedneſs ; *Well, my Friend, my Life is at an end ; this place was deſtin'd for my Death.* He lived ſome days after. In the mean while his being hurt was kept very private, and the Enemies, who heard nothing of it, ſet a Capitulation on foot from that very day. He lay in his bed, and ſigned the Articles before them with his Right hand, with ſo great reſolution and evenneſs of temper, that they never diſcerned his hurt, but thought only, that he kept his bed for ſome ſlight indiſpoſition. When the Town was ſurrendred he was carried into it, and there died a little while after, triumphing in ſome ſort, both over *Germany* and *France*. For all the other Lieutenant Generals were much diſpleaſed at his beſieging this place, and lookt upon him with a very jealous eye for it.

XI. After Mareſchal *Guebriant*'s death, Monſieur *R.* .... ſucceeded in the Command of the Army, and upon decamping from *Rotheuil*, one part of us went into quarters near *Tubighen*, with Monſieur *de R.* .... and the other, where Monſieur *Vitry* and we were, went to *Meninghen*. In this fatal place it was, that our Army received a terrible blow, which was owing chiefly to the General's ill conduct, whom Wine made too negligent of the duty of his command. For, inſtead of watching over his Troops, and ſecuring them as he ought to have done, he minded nothing, but ſlept as it were continually in the midſt of the Enemies ; who fell on with a mighty force in his quarter, cut his Troops to pieces, and took him Priſoner. Our quarter was ſome four leagues diſtant from his ; and we came to be informed of this diſaſter by the following accident. That very day at four in the morning, I had ſent the Serjeants to his quarter for bread for the Camp, with orders to be back by nine or ten a clock at fartheſt : They did not keep their time, and I began to be very uneaſy, the more ſo indeed, becauſe I had heard the noiſe of Guns. I went to Monſieur *Vitry* and told him, without queſtion ſomething ill had happened ; that thoſe Guns we heard could have no good meaning in them, and my advice was, that a man ſhould be diſpatcht away upon one of his fleeteſt Horſes, to bring us word how matters ſtood. Monſieur *Vitry* liked the propoſal : But all the other Officers both of ours, and the reſt of the Regiments that lay with us, cried, the beſt way was to make off, that if the Enemy ſhould attack us there, while we were cut off ſo from the main body of the Army, there was no remedy, but we muſt all be cut to pieces.

I oppoſed this advice of theirs ſtiffly, and told them on the contrary, that having had orders to continue in their Poſt, we could not, without ſome aſſurance of the General's being taken, quit it, without incurring the danger of being puniſhed for Cowards, Traytors and Deſerters; that therefore the firſt thing to be done was to get a knowledge how matters were with him, that ſo if the General were aſſaulted we might move to his relief ; and if he were taken, we might ſecure an honourable retreat. At laſt, whatever they could urge, did not hinder me from carrying my point ; and ſo I diſpatcht a man upon one of Monſieur *Vitry*'s Courſers, with a charge to make no ſtay, that we might have ſpeedy notice what was fit for us to do. This fellow made great haſte to the General's quarter, and greater back to us again, and told us, the Enemy had got all into their hands, and the whole quarter were taken Priſoners.

XII. Our

XII. Our next care then was for a ſeedy retreat. It grew late, and would require good haſte to reach the Forreſt, which was three leagues from us. So all things were managed with great hurry; and, there being a narrow Bridge to paſs, near the riſe of the *Danube*, the Regiment of *Mazarin*, commanded by *St. Germain*, whoſe day it was to march in the Van, made haſte to get over the Bridge firſt, and make room for the reſt who were to ſupport them. I went my ſelf to view the ground, where it was to be drawn up as ſoon as it was got over, and came back to them again. But the Enemies Horſe waited for us at the paſſage, and the Regiment were no ſooner got to the other ſide, but immediately a thouſand Horſe charged them, and cut them to pieces. Since then there was no hope of paſſing there, we all thought the beſt way was to get to *Menighen*, and there barricade our ſelves up the beſt we could, to gain either a fair capitulation, or an honourable death. Monſieur *Vitry* commanding all theſe Troops in chief, and having, as I obſerved, been ordered by his Father, to do nothing without my intention, I found the Office of a General would devolve upon me, in this important exigence. And beſides, it is very uſual in ſuch extremities, to reſign ones Office freely into the hands of a more experienc'd perſon, and one in whom the Souldiers repoſe a greater confidence. I told Monſieur *Vitry* we muſt provide for the worſt, and manage this occaſion dextrouſly, which might chance to be the moſt honourable action of our whole lives. Then calling out aloud to the Souldiers, *Come friends, and fellow Souldiers*, ſaid I, *we muſt dye; but if they will not give us our lives, we muſt ſell them as dear as we can.* Every one then laying a helping hand, in a danger where all were equally concern'd, the Gates and Avenues were all barricado'd, and I went my ſelf, and poſted all the Centinels, the Guards, and the Reſerves, in the moſt advantageous and important places. I endeavour'd to encourage them all, by my words, my example, and that extraordinary Courage, which I really felt, and thought it was convenient to ſhew upon this occaſion. And to give Monſieur *Vitry* his due, I muſt needs ſay he ſeconded me in every thing; for tho he was young, and this the firſt Campaign he had made, yet he ſignaliz'd himſelf above the reſt; and exceeded all the expectation that men could poſſibly have of him, both by his bravery, and great preſence of mind.

XIII. After we had made the beſt proviſion we could for ſecuring our little body of the Army, in which there were more ſick and wounded than fit for ſervice, for we were not above ſixteen or ſeventeen hundred fighting men at moſt; about nine or ten a clock at night, there came one of the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Trumpets, to ſummon us in his Highneſs's name, that we ſhould ſurrender at diſcretion; and if we refuſed, to threaten us, that the Army ſhould come upon us next day, and then no quarter was to be expected. When I heard them ſummon us to a ſurrender at diſcretion, I cryed out in a rage, *Yes, I warrant you, we ſhall ſurrender at diſcretion! What! ſhall they diſpoſe of our perſons and lives as they pleaſe? No, no. We were not born Gentlemen, and* Frenchmen *to yield like Cowards, and be uſed like Raſcals. No. We will dye, dye with our Swords in our hands; and a dear bargain they ſhall have of us. Let them come with their whole Army as ſoon as they pleaſe: We'll ſhew them what it is to attack deſperate men, they ſhall have a taſte of our Courage, and perhaps repent that ever they tryed it.* All the Officers and Souldiers, who reliſht this ſort of diſcretion no more than I did, and were beſides animated by the warmth I expreſt my ſelf with, reſolved to dye, rather than ſurrender themſelves at this rate, without fighting. So the Trumpet went back, and we put our ſelves into a poſture of defence. Next day three Armies of the Enemies appeared before *Meninghen*, that is the Emperours, the Duke of *Bavaria*'s, and the Duke of *Lorrain*'s, who was Generaliſſimo; and the day after that, fourteen piecs of Cannon came up, which were planted againſt the Village, and beat all the Walls and Houſes about our Ears, in five hours time.

About two hundred paces from the Village there ſtood a Chappel, where the Enemy had ſet a guard of fourſcore men, and they ſtood very conveniently to do us miſchief. I was not able to endure to ſee the Enemies inſult over us, by coming up ſo cloſe, and told Monſieur *Vitry* it was a ſhame, to ſuffer a guard of theirs ſo near the Town; and dangerous too, to let them continue there, and that threeſcore ſtout Boys muſt be ſent, either to diſlodge them, or dye in the attempt. All the Officers received this advice but coldly, and I ſuppoſe every one ſpoke for himſelf, fearing it would be his fortune to be ſent, and therefore urged many reaſons to aggravate the difficulty

difficulty of the undertaking. I saw presently their opinions were more the result of fear than judgment; and being desirous to set them a pattern, *Well, Gentlemen*, said I, *I understand the meaning of all this. It seems I must go my self, and I will shew by the success, that the advice was good.* Immediately I took threescore men, with several Trusses of Straw, and went in the night, with all the boldness that became a man, who had not only his Enemies to encounter, but his own men to encourage too; for their spirits began to sink at the number of their besiegers, and the little hope there appeared to get off from this difficulty honourably. When I came up near the Chappel, I found the guard but carelesly kept, because they were under no apprehension of any sallies out of the Town: So we fell on briskly, and cut them in pieces. Then I set fire to the bundles of Straw, and burnt the House down; shewing both our enemies and friends at once, what advantage we had got, above the expectation of either. All my Comrades were envy'd for the honour of this action, and they who objected most against it before, would have been glad to have had a hand in the attempt.

An action so bold as this, and perform'd by so few, when they were besieged by three Armies at once, gave the Enemy such a damp, that they immediately retir'd three hundred paces, for fear of some great Sally, and not knowing what to think of the valour of men so desperate as we. And indeed in all such cases, where the strength is so unequal, the want of numbers must be made up with Courage; and the exposing one's self to the greatest dangers ought not to be esteemed rashness, because in those Circumstances, this is the only way left for mens preserving themselves, or consulting the safety and honour of all the rest.

Next day (as I said) the Cannon came up, and made such a destruction among the houses of this Village, which were no better than Clay, and Earthen Walls, that nothing was to be seen, but ruines and rubbish. Yet even from hence I took occasion to encourage several, telling them, That these ruinous heaps were now as good to us as so many Ramparts against the Enemy, when they attackt us. Monsieur *Vitry* desiring me to go up into a little sort of a Turret over one of the Gates, to observe how the Enemy lay; I, who saw a little better than he did, what danger I should be expos'd to, said, *Sure Sir, you have no mind I should ever come down again. Well then, farewell Sir*; and immediately, that I might encourage others, and shew them this was a time to venture, and fear nothing, I went up. But I was more fortunate than I expected, and receiv'd no hurt; so I plac'd a Centinel there, and then came down again.

A little after, the Centinel told us, the Armies came on, that every thing was ready for the Assault, and the Forlorn-hope already drawn out at the head of them. We put our selves into a posture for receiving them, and a bloody business it must needs have prov'd, considering how resolv'd we were, not to betray the honour of our Prince, nor surrender our selves tamely to our Enemies at discretion. But before the Assault, they sent a second Trumpet, to tell Monsieur *Vitry*, that the Duke of *Lorrain* entreated him not to drive things to the last push; that he might be confident his Highness would use him with all the Honour and Civility he could possibly expect; and several other things, which went no farther than the security of Monsieur *Vitry*'s own person. Seeing no terms propos'd, but what concern'd him alone, and no notice at all taken of the rest of the Troops, I askt the Trumpet, whether he brought us the same terms that he brought our General; the Trumpet reply'd, They would use us all like men of honour. This answer made us resolve upon a surrender; with this Condition, That the Officers should pay their Ransome, and the private Souldiers should have their Lives.

The reason why our Enemies chang'd their measures so suddenly, was the mistake our extraordinary Courage led them into; for they thought by our holding out two days and two nights against three Armies, that we could not possibly be less than five or six thousand fighting men; and that the destroying of so many, when reduc'd to despair, and entrencht behind timber and rubbish, must needs cost them abundance of blood. It was agreed then, to confirm our capitulation the better to us, that hostages should be given on both sides. The Duke of *Lorrain* sent us one, and ours being a great while getting ready, he that came from the Enemy was much dissatisfied, and complained of the delay that was made in sending ours in exchange. At last, his patience was quite tired, and growing jealous perhaps of so long a delay, he would fain have been going back again. But I, who foresaw what would be the consequence of this, stopt him, and presented a Pistol to his head with these words: *No, Sir, by your leave,*

you

you ſhall not go, and you ſhall ſtay here upon this very ſpot. That would be a pretty thing indeed, for you, after you have made your obſervations here, to go back like a Spy, and tell the Enemy our condition. You ſhall ſtay, Sir, whether you like it or no. This put a ſtop to him, and but for this we ſhould probably have been all loſt; for to be ſure, if the Enemy had known how few we were, they would never have agreed to the Capitulation. So when our Hoſtage was ſent too, we ſurrendred. The ſick men were left at *Meninghen*, and all the reſt conducted by ſome Troops of Horſe to the Enemy's quarters, and all ſaluted the Duke of *Lorrain* as they paſt by him. Five or ſix of us that were principal Officers were allow'd to ride, and wear our Swords. So we endeavoured in our preſent misfortune, to make as good a ſhew, and march as gracefully as though we had not been Priſoners.

XIV. That evening the whole body deputed me to go pay their reſpects to the Duke of *Lorrain*, and beg that he would ſee his promiſe made good to us. His Highneſs anſwered, That he knew how to obſerve Articles; but I reply'd, That notwithſtanding the word he had engaged, ſeveral of our Officers had been very much abuſed; that ſome had been robb'd, ſome ſtript, nay, and others kill'd: And therefore I was come moſt humbly to beſeech his Highneſs, that ſuch Violences might not be ſuffer'd, contrary to the Law of Nations. The Duke ſeem'd much amaz'd, and anſwer'd me in a paſſion, *What! have they ſtript them? Have they kill'd them? Do you know who they are that have done this? Stay here with me, that if you know any of them, I may puniſh them for it before your face.* His Highneſs immediately publiſh'd a prohibition through all the Army, charging that our men ſhould not be touch'd upon pain of Death.

The ill conduct of the Enemy's Generals, and the licentiouſneſs and diſorder of their private Souldiers, produc'd a very great confuſion among our men: Some loſt their Cloaks, ſome their Hat and Feather, ſome their Coats, and ſcarce any body eſcap'd the outrage of theſe bruitiſh men; who thought they had a right to plunder us becauſe we had ſurrendred, tho that was not done, but upon an engagement of being uſed honourably. The ſight of this Injuſtice provok'd me to undertake the defence of my fellows, thinking my ſelf ſufficiently ſecur'd by the freſh aſſurances his Highneſs had given me: So ſeeing ſome of them abus'd, I went ſtrait to their relief, and as if I had been an Officer on the other ſide, fell to Caneing the Rogues, with that boldneſs and authority, that honour and zeal for Juſtice gave me. Our men too ſeconded me in the matter, pretending not to know me, that I might be the more capable of ſerving them. But fearing ſome treachery behind, becauſe I found my ſelf perpetually encompaſt with Robbers, I unbuttoned my Cloak for fear of foul play, and leſt any one ſhould ſuddenly catch at it, and drag me down backward. This foreſight was very ſerviceable to me: For as I was going between two high and thick hedges, a Horſe-man, that lay conceal'd behind, whipt off my Cloak in an inſtant, and rid away with it by the hedge ſide. I turn'd back in great wrath, and wiſh'd I could have leapt the hedge, to correct that Raſcal, who had the impudence to lay hands on me, againſt the Generals expreſs command to the contrary. But not being able to do more, I contented my ſelf with giving him hard words, and put it off as well as I could, with ſaying, that my Cloak was heavy, and very inconvenient to me.

Diſcovering a Captain of ours abuſed by a Horſe-man, who was taking away his Coat embroider'd with Silver, I ran to him, and after five or ſix good blows with my Cane, made him quit his prize, and reſcu'd my man that had like to have been ſtript. But, being out of all patience with this diſorder and ill uſage, I went to the Duke of *Lorrain* again, and told him, That every body ſlighted his order; that the Capitulation was broke every hour, and no promiſe they made was kept with us; that I had been robb'd of my Cloak my own ſelf; and that the outrages my fellow Souldiers endured were ſuch, that I was forc'd to importune his Highneſs once more, that we might be us'd like men of Honour, as he had engaged we ſhould. The Duke ſeem'd to be exceeding angry, and ſaid, He would hang them every Mothers Son. And in truth, preſently after he did juſtice upon one Trooper, that had the impudence to take away one of our Officers Cloaks, before his very face; for riding after him immediately with his Piſtol in his hand, ſome five or ſix hundred paces, he got up to him at laſt, and broke his head; which put a ſtop to their violence for that day.

XV. The Enemy reſolved to retake *Rotheuil*, and ſo we were all carried thither. But we had like to have been quite famiſhed by the way, and had not ſo much as one bit of Bread to eat; ſo that when we met with any Brambles, or Sloe-trees, by the way, there was ſure to be ſo many Skirmiſhes of People fighting for Sloes, and Black-berries. This unwholſom dyet threw me, and a great many others, into a Flux, which was a great affliction to us in Priſon. But what I feared moſt of all was, leſt the Duke of *Lorrain* ſhould find me out to be the perſon that had banter'd him formerly, and hindred the making his eſcape at the Siege of *Nancy*, of which I gave an account before. For this Reaſon I took great care to have my Name concealed, and had my ſelf called, *The Captain of the Crown*. For the ſame Reaſon I declined being his Highneſs's Priſoner, which was what he did me the honour to make me a proffer of, when *Rotheuil* was taken; and they came to debate of caſting Lots for the Priſoners, to divide them into three parcels, that the Emperor, the Duke of *Bavaria*, and the Duke of *Lorrain*, might each of them have their ſhare. For though it had been much better for me to have fallen into the hands of a perſon, who had uſed me with all poſſible civility, yet fearing I might come to be diſcover'd afterwards, and he might reſent the ill office I did him at *Nancy*; when he did me the favour to ask me, If I would be his? I took the liberty to anſwer, That his Highneſs did me too much honour; that I pretended to no Priviledge above my Fellows, and deſired rather to take my chance, as the reſt did. So I fell to the Duke of *Bavaria*'s ſhare. And a young Gentleman, a Relation of mine, who was Lieutenant in our Regiment, being the Duke of *Lorrain*'s Priſoner, I, thinking he would be near his perſon, and conſequently in leſs danger of being plunder'd, gave him two hundred and fifty Piſtoles of mine, and a Jewel worth as much more, deſiring he would keep that Money for me, and take care to be near the Prince, to avoid the danger of robbing.

When he had got my Money, and my Jewel, he compounded with the Colonel, whoſe Priſoner he was, telling him, he was a poor Cadet; but if he would promiſe him his liberty, he would try to gratifie him with fifty Piſtoles, which he would borrow of Monſieur *Vitry*, for he had the honour of being known to him. The Colonel, who deſired nothing ſo much as ready Money, and perhaps never thought he ſhould find this Man ſo good a Chapman, promiſed to carry him ſafe away, upon condition he would pay him thoſe fifty Piſtoles. It was eaſie for him to find ſuch a Sum, and thus he got his liberty. He came back into *France*, and betraying a great indifference for him who was left behind Priſoner in a ſtrange Country, minded nothing but his own pleaſure, as if the Money would never have an end. Nay, when that was gone, he found another method of getting freſh Supplies for his Expences, and went to the Treaſury, and there, in my Name, took up my Penſion. And when his Friends and Relations reproached him, with taking no care to get me my liberty, his conſtant Anſwer was, that I had Friends enough to take care of me; and all he could do, would ſignifie nothing. Which I take notice of here, to put thoſe People out of countenance, who are capable of ſuch dirty actions; and to ſhew that a true Friend is often more faithful, and more tenderly concerned in ſuch caſes, than our own Relations.

XVI. After the taking of *Rotheuil* by the Enemy, I and my Companions that fell to the Duke of *Bavaria*'s ſhare, were carried to *Ausburg*. As we were upon the Road, though I was almoſt at death's door my ſelf, yet I lent my fine Horſe *Milleflears*, to one of the company, who pretended to be very ſick; but inſtead of reſtoring him to me, that we might take our eaſe by turns, he took no farther care than his own convenience, though at my expence; and went on a good way before, without ever ſtaying for me. I was almoſt quite ſpent, and propoſed to five or ſix of my Comrades to go reſt and refreſh our ſelves a little, at an Inn hard by. But the refreſhment I went for, coſt me very dear. For after we had eat and drank, and came to pay the Reckoning, I took a Crown in gold out of my Pocket, and threw it down upon the Table, as we uſe to do in *France*, and ſaid to the Landlady, *Pay your ſelf out of that, and give me the reſt again*; and afterwards taking the remainder, and putting it in my Pocket, without ever counting it, five or ſix *German* Troopers, who were drinking in the ſame place, obſerved the indifference I ſhew'd about Money; and gueſſing by this piece of gold, which they ſaw me throw down upon the Table, that we might be

be ſome of the *French* Nobility, and had a good many Piſtoles, they were reſolved to ſet upon us, and rob us.

After we were gone a good way, theſe *Germans* came galloping up to us; I had ſtaid a little behind, and happened juſt then to be all alone. The Troopers as ſoon as they came near call'd out, *Your Purſe.* I, who was much ſurprized at ſo unexpected a compliment, preſently leapt a Ditch, and drawing my Sword, called to my Comrades, *Here, To me, Gentlemen, to me,* and then began to defend my ſelf as well as I could, without ever conſidering how many were upon me. They ſhot twice, but did not hurt me. And for all they could do to get within me, ſtill I kept them off, with my own motion, and the management of my Sword. All this while my Comrades, and that very man among the reſt whom I had lately reſcued from the Trooper that would have ſtript him, inſtead of making up to my relief, fled into the Marſhes, and left me ſingle to the mercy of five drunken *Germans*, armed with Hangers and Muſquetoons, and Piſtols. I defended my ſelf after this manner for half a quarter of an hour, and it may be, at laſt, they might have been tired as well as I, if one of them coming behind me, and ſurprizing me, had not laid at me with his Hanger to cleave me down the middle: I turned about, and received the blow upon my Sword, which was broken with the force of it, and that gave them an opportunity of falling all upon me. They rifled me, and took away ſeven or eight Piſtoles which I had left, and unbuttoning my Breeches ſearched me for more, and took from me the Gold Medal given me by Mareſchal *Brezay*, which I ſpoke of formerly. But ſtill they left me that which was moſt valuable, my life; being no doubt particularly reſtrained by God from killing me, which in all probability they muſt needs have done otherwiſe, conſidering the reſiſtance I made, and that they were drunk when they fought with me. I found ſuch heat and reſolution in this diſpute, that if my Companions had not deſerted me as they did, I almoſt fancy, we ſhould have been at leaſt as likely to diſmount theſe Horſemen, as to have been robbed by them.

Upon this I went and made my complaints to Lieutenant Collonel *Mirck*, whoſe Priſoner I was, and told him how I had been robbed and abuſed by ſome Troopers, who had taken away my money, and among other things a Gold Medal, which I was more concerned for the loſs of, than for any thing elſe. He told me, I was to blame not to put that into his hand. Search was preſently made for the Rogues, which he ordered more for the ſake of the Medal, which he had a mind to, than for any thing elſe; and one of them was taken and hang'd for an example, but I never could get any of my things I had loſt any more.

When we came near *Ausburg*, the Priſoners that were on Horſeback had orders to alight and walk, and ſo they led us into the Town by four and four, behind our Enemies, who marched thus triumphing over us into the Town. There was no remedy but this bitter Cup muſt be drank, as well as all the reſt, which I was not at all prepared, or ever lookt for, when I ſurrendred my ſelf upon a promiſe of our being honourably uſed. Afterwards I preſented Collonel *Mirck* with my pretty Horſe. They put us all in Cellars, where we had no Bed but Straw, nor any light but what could come to us through the Chinks and Grates of the Cellars. That is, in plain terms, they threw us into Dungeons, to extort from us a higher ranſome.

In this wretched condition did we live three long months, and had nothing to ſubſiſt upon, but the Alms we ſent to beg about the Town for poor Priſoners. For the people are generally charitable in that Country, and there were ſome good women, that would bring us Bread, and Beer, or Cyder in their Aprons, and let it down to us through the Grate by Ropes. We ſent to ask ſome Charity of the Monks, who could do whatever they pleaſed in that City. But from them we had nothing but hard-heartedneſs; and the *Lutherans* ſhewed themſelves much kinder and more compaſſionate than thoſe Monks, who value themſelves upon acting like great Politicians in theſe caſes. Which enraged me to that degreee, that I and ſix or ſeven more of us were reſolved to be revenged on them for it, as you ſhall hear ſhorly.

XVII. When we had lain in theſe Dungeons two or three months, and ſuffered inconveniencies and miſeries greater than can be expreſt, and all this while none of my friends ever thought of me, or ever made application at Court, either that I might be ranſomed, or exchanged; God alone remembred us, and ſent me a man full of Charity, who, as he was viſiting the Priſoners, out of a principle of piety and compaſſion,

Compaſſion, was moved with the ſad condition to which he ſaw me reduced. He was a Picture-drawer in *Bretagne*, who came to trade in that Country, and took compaſſion on me, without the leaſt acquaintance in the world. When he ſaw in what a wretched and poor caſe we lay, he asked me at firſt, Whether if he ſhould furniſh me with fifty Crowns, I could pay him again at *Paris?* I was ſurprized, and almoſt ſtruck dumb at ſo charitable a Propoſal, from a perſon whom I had no knowledge of. But after a little conſideration, I told him honeſtly and frankly, That if I lived to come back into *France*, I would engage to pay him; but if I ſhould die in this place, his fifty Crowns would be loſt. *I will not deceive you, Sir,* (ſaid I) *nor ſhall my preſent miſery and want tempt me to deal unfairly with you.* The good Man, after pauſing with himſelf a good while, reply'd, *Well, Sir, come, it's no great matter; I am ſatisfy'd with your promiſe to ſee me duely paid, if you live to go back into* France; *and if you chance to dye, though I ſhould loſe fifty Crowns, I ſhall not think my ſelf one whit the poorer, when they are beſtowed in Charity upon one, whoſe Circumſtances need them ſo much.*

Then he ask'd me, if I had any Friends in any of the Cities in *Germany?* I anſwer'd, No, not any. He enquired again, if I knew any body at *Amſterdam?* I told him, I had ſome acquaintance with one Monſieur *de Cumans*, a very civil Gentleman, and a Merchant there. *I am very glad of that,* (ſaid he) *for I know him too, and will write to him about you.* I expreſt my thanks for his great Charity as well as I could; and from that minute lookt upon this Man, as one ſent by Providence, to comfort me in that great extremity. Next day he was as good as his word, and brought me fifty Crowns, part of which I diſtributed among my Fellow-Sufferers, thinking my Charity to them, a proper expreſſion of gratitude for that beſtowed upon my ſelf. This good Man writ away preſently to *Amſterdam*, and told the Merchant, that he had ſeen one *Pontis* at *Ausburg*, who gave a great character of his generoſity, and ſpoke of him, as one of the beſt and civilleſt Gentlemen he had ever met with; and who at preſent ſtood in great need of his aſſiſtance, being a Priſoner of War, and in a very lamentable condition.

XVIII. And here I will give you an account how the friendſhip grew between this Merchant of *Amſterdam*, and me. When I went with Mareſchal *Brezay* into *Holland*, (as was before related at large) I obſerved ſomething exceeding generous and deſirable in this Man's temper, and contracted a particular acquaintance with him. Little did I think, when I made him my Friend, that I ſhould by ſo doing, provide my ſelf with a Deliverer one day; and that ſeven or eight years after, I ſhould be indebted to his liberality, for my freedom from ſuch deplorable circumſtances, as I have now been deſcribing. But God, I doubt not, thought of that for me, and gave me in it ſuch an inſtance of his Providence and Mercy, as I can never ſhew my ſelf ſufficiently thankful for. After my return out of *Holland* to *Paris*, he ſent his Son to me, and deſired I would take care to have him taught the Art of dying in Scarlet, after the faſhion of the *Gobelins*, conjuring me to have an eye upon him, and to ſatisfie for his Board. I undertook this readily, and was a Father to this young Man, looking after him as my own Child; and omitted no poſſible care for improving him in his profeſſion, and making him an honeſt Man. I ſupply'd him with Money for all his expences, and eſpecially, I attended him like a ſecond ſelf, all the time of a long and dangerous ſickneſs, which he lay ill of at *Paris*, ſparing neither for care, nor trouble, nor coſt upon him. His Father afterwards deſiring me to commit him into the hands of ſome honeſt Man, to go along with him to *Calais*, from whence he was to take Ship to return into his own Country; I did not think my ſelf too good for this office, but travelled along with him, and never left him, till I ſaw him ſet Sail; and then I writ to his Father, and ſent him word, that I thought my ſelf obliged by the mutual friendſhip between us, to bear his Son company as far as the Ship. It will be no ſuch great wonder, if after all this, the honeſt Merchant behaved himſelf ſo generouſly, as I am now going to ſhew you he did, when he underſtood to what a deplorable condition I was reduced in *Germany*.

XIX. About ſix weeks after the Limner of *Bretagne* had been ſo charitable to give me the 50 Crowns I mentioned, in Priſon, and ſo brought us out of the Cellars into a Chamber, under a good Guard; the Merchant's own Nephew came to *Ausburg*, and deſired of the Governor the Count *de Fouques*, that he might have leave to ſpeak with me. It was granted; and he came in one evening, as we Priſoners were at Supper

per upon a Beef's Head with very ſcurvy ſawce; of which I could eat none, being at that time very ill; and coming into the Room with a Torch before him, he askt whether Monſieur *de Pontis* was not there: I preſently went to him, and convinc'd him I was the perſon he enquir'd for. After he had ſaluted me, he told me who he was; and that his Unkle underſtanding my misfortune, had ſent him on purpoſe to make me a proffer of his Credit, his Help, and his Purſe. Finding my ſelf extremely obliged by ſo unuſual a generoſity, I anſwered, That I could in no degree deſerve, that he ſhould take ſo long a journey upon my account; but indeed I had undergone ſo much hardſhip ſince my being a Priſoner, that I was not in a capacity to refuſe an offer ſo much to my advantage; which yet was contrary to my cuſtome, for I had never uſed to make uſe of my friends for my own Intereſt.

After a world of complements on both ſides, I told him, that the perſon who had acquainted his Unkle with my misfortune, had been ſo charitable to lend me fifty Crowns, tho unknown, and the firſt favour I would beg, was to ſee him paid. He did ſo: And then telling the Count *de Fouques*, that he would be reſponſible for me, he brought me, and my companions, (whom I furniſhed with ſome Money) out of Priſon. For upon the credit of Monſieur *Cumans* I received eight or ten thouſand Livres, which I made uſe of to ſupply our preſent occaſions, and to pay ſome part of my Ranſom, that I might be ſtill more at large; being loth to lay down the whole ſumm, becauſe I liv'd in continual hopes of being exchang'd for ſome Priſoner of Quality; and ſo was content to wait, tho it were ſomething the longer, for the honour of being ſet free that way.

All this while I was much importun'd to give my *Parole*, that ſo I might be at perfect liberty, to go about without any Guards; which I could have been very well pleaſed with, for it was by no means agreeable to my humour, to be always attended, and under reſtraint. But I could not prevail with my ſelf to give it a great while, for not being ſo ſecure of the reſt as of my ſelf, and not caring to part with my Comrades neither, I was afraid, if any of them ſhould afterwards make his eſcape, for want of Money to pay his Ranſom, I might be thought to have a hand in it, and their fault be charged upon me.

XX. In this interval, when I had my liberty in ſome degree only, it was that we laid a deſign for cauſing ſome inſurrection in the Duke of *Bavaria*'s Territories, out of our reſentments againſt the Monks I told you of; who had provoked us exceedingly, by denying that relief which we had reaſon to expect from Catholicks, and Prieſts, and Monks. For they were not ſatisfied with lending us nothing themſelves, but pretended a mighty zeal for the Duke of *Bavaria*'s Intereſts, in whoſe Dominion their power was in a manner abſolute: They gave out, when we were taken out of the Cellars into a Chamber, that the Count *de Fouques* had done very ill to allow us any inlargement; and that no methods could be too ſtrict to ſecure our perſons, conſidering we were *French*, and might occaſion diſturbances in the State. Of this freſh Charity of theirs our hoſt inform'd me, who had himſelf a great concern for our miſerable condition. And obſerving with much indignation how far their politick zeal tranſported them againſt us, I reſolv'd to be reveng'd on them whatever came on't, and thought I might juſtly make them ſmart, for their baſe and barbarous behaviour towards Priſoners and Strangers of their own Religion. Tho it muſt be confeſt at the ſame time, that I had pitcht upon a violent courſe to bring this about. But in ſhort, if I was to blame in my meaſures, my zeal for Juſtice I thought would bear me out; and I think I could ſay, that I was not ſo much concern'd to vindicate my own private cauſe, as that of the publick, of Charity, and of Religion; all which theſe Monks by their carriage to us, had made ſo manifeſt a breach upon.

We were allow'd to walk abroad ſometimes with ſome Guards; and one day, when they happen'd to be at ſome diſtance from us, I ſaid to my fellow-priſoners; *I do not know what you think of it Gentlemen, but for my own part, I am fully reſolved to be reveng'd upon theſe Monks of* Ausburg, *that are a ſcandal to our Religion, and have not ſhew'd us half ſo much Charity as the* Lutherans. *If you will take my advice, we ought all to combine together, and try if we can do the King a piece of ſervice, by endeavouring to reduce a Town into his Majeſty's poſſeſſion, where theſe Monks exerciſe ſo rigid, and ſo uncontrouled a power. The greateſt miſchief that can come upon us is but Death: And Death is an honour in ſuch a cauſe; beſides that it will be our advantage too, by putting a period to ſo much miſery. Let us then chooſe to dye, rather than endure ſo unjuſt a Tyranny. Let us vindicate Religion and Piety, and ſerve*

our King, even in this diſtant Country, where we are ſtrangers, and priſoners for his quarrel. I had no ſooner ſaid this to them, but they were all of the ſame mind with me, and expreſt the ſame inclination for the ſervice of their Prince.

At the ſame time we contriv'd together to feel the pulſe of ſome *Lutherans*, and try to engage them on our ſide. To this purpoſe went up to a *German* Captain, who was walking at ſome diſtance from us; and having at firſt diſcourſt him upon indifferent things, we very luckily diſcover'd, that the man whom we had a mind to engage, had the ſame deſigu himſelf, and would fain be ſounding us upon the matter. When therefore when we had gained an opportunity of talking freely with this Officer, and he had open'd his breaſt as freely to us,he aſſur'd us of his reſolution to aſſiſt us, and that nothing in his power ſhould be wanting to that purpoſe. Afterwards I found means to break the ſecret to a Maſter *Echevin*, who was a man of great Gallantry, and had formerly commanded in the Army: For I, knowing that theſe imperious Monks were grown intolerable, and odious to all the world, ventured to ſpeak of it to him, and finding him no leſs violently ſet againſt them, I imparted our reſolution, which he liked of very well, and promis'd to ſecond me to the beſt of his ability, profeſſing himſelf horribly tir'd with the preſent Government. So being ſecure of ſome friends in the Town, and pretty ſure beſides, that all the *French* Souldiers, that might happen to be then at *Ausburg*, would readily joyn with us, it was agreed, that our Town-friends ſhould get one of the Gates into their poſſeſſion; that we Priſoners, who were a good many, ſhould ſecure another; and that I ſhould firſt give the Prince notice of the whole deſign, that he might move that way to our relief, and countenance and farther our attempt, by appearing at the time when we were to put it in execution.

All our meaſures were exceeding well taken, and having communicated the deſign to but few perſons, (for fear of ſome treachery) we had great reaſon to hope for good ſucceſs. In the mean while I contrived a way to ſend a man privately to the Prince to acquaint him with the whole matter, and deſire that he would ſecond our undertaking. But his anſwer was both a ſurprize and an affliction to us, for he ſent us word; that the King's buſineſs would not allow him to come to our aſſiſtance; that his Majeſties Armies were otherwiſe engaged, and harraſſed, and but in an ill condition; that I ſhould conſider therefore very well before I attempted any thing, for fear we ſhould hazard being all loſt. And thus our deſign fell through. And, tho at that time we were extremely diſſatisfied that it did ſo, yet upon cooler and more ſerious reflections upon it ſince, I cannot but acknowledge there was more heat and raſhneſs, than wiſdom in the attempt; and all this occaſioned by paſſionate reſentments at the barbarity of a parcel of hard-hearted Monks: So that the ſucceſs would have been uncertain at the beſt, and our own utter ruine might very probably have been the conſequence of it.

And now, after having refuſed a long time to engage my *Parole*, for the reaſon I mentioned before, I and my Comrades reſolved to do it laſt, not being able to endure the ſlavery and conſtraint of Guards any longer. But before we engaged, I argu'd with them very earneſtly, that they ought rather to dye, than not be true to it; and that it was a moſt unbecoming thing, for men of honour, as we pretended to be, to engage for any thing, except they are fully reſolv'd to make it good. One of them afterwards had a mind to make his eſcape, and it was in my power to do it as well as he; but I oppoſed him in his intentions, and would by no means give way that he ſhould be guilty of ſo much baſeneſs: Nay, as a further diſcouragement, I told him upon this occaſion, a ſtory that I ſhall always remember; which was, that my Maſter the late King caſhier'd an Officer, that made his eſcape after his *Parole* was paſt; and declar'd, a man that had been falſe to his own honour, was not fit for his ſervice.

Aſſoon then as our *Parole* was given, and we at liberty, I began to ſee company, and frequent the Duke of *Bavaria*'s Court. I got acquainted with ſeveral great perſons, and particularly the Count *de Coeurſe*, a favourite of the Prince. The Duke of *Bavaria* himſelf, to whom I was a little known, receiv'd me very graciouſly; and being informed, that I was the man who commanded in the buſineſs of *Meninghen*, he would ſeveral times have perſwaded me to ſtay at his Court; telling me often, *You ſee no body thinks of you in* France; *I am confident they will let you dye here, and never exchange you for any Officer of mine. Therefore if you will take my advice, even ſet up your reſt here. I will put you into ſuch an Employ as ſhall pleaſe you; nay, you your ſelf ſhall be your own chooſer.*

chooſes. Nothing could be kinder and more engaging, than my uſage from this Prince, and the importunate offers he made me to enter into his ſervice. But whatever reſentments I either had, or had cauſe to have againſt the Court of *France*, where in truth I was quickly and perfectly forgotten, yet I could not prevail with my ſelf to ſtick to a Court-life, nor reliſh any propoſal of that nature, how much ſoever it might turn to my advantage: Beſides I lived in hopes ſtill that my friends would do ſomething for me. And it is moſt certain, if Mareſchal *Vitry* had not unfortunately died about the time we were made Priſoners, he would have uſed his intereſt very vigorouſly for me, and would have taken care, that the action of *Meninghen* ſhould have had its due character and value. But my misfortune was, that the Mareſchal being dead, Monſieur *R*....: who knew not how to anſwer it to himſelf, that he ſhould be ſo ſhamefully ſuprized, when Monſieur *Vitry* and I ſhewed ſo much reſolution and conduct in holding out againſt three Armies with a handful of men, did all he could to diminiſh and ſtifle this action; and ſo by robbing others of the honour due to them, hoped in ſome meaſure to conceal his own ſhame.

XXI. At laſt, finding my ſelf utterly forſaken, and forgotten by all my friends, I reſolved to ſend away a Courier to *France* at my own charge, and write to Monſieur *Servien*, and Monſieur *d' Avaux*, to beg that they would ſpeak to the Queen in my behalf, and contrive to have me exchanged for ſome other Priſoner. Monſieur *Servien*, I ſuppoſe, either becauſe he was taken up with buſineſs of greater conſequence, or becauſe he had no good news to ſend me, never anſwered my Letter. Monſieur *d' Avaux* did me the favour to write back to me, and ſent me word, he had written to Court in my favour, but there were ſo very many Priſoners, and every thing at preſent in ſuch confuſion, that he very much queſtioned, whether he ſhould be able to do me the ſervice he deſired, but however he would endeavour it heartily. Still I lived in expectation, and could not believe it poſſible, that an Officer who had ſpent all his life in the Army, and whoſe ſervices were well known to all the Court, (not to ſay any thing of this laſt, which I thought might deſerve ſome ſort of reward) ſhould be neglected and forgotten. But the event taught me by ſad experience, that I reckoned without my Hoſt; and as much as I had ſeen of the world, I was not then ſufficiently convinc'd, that impriſonment or death, for the honour of one's Prince, and the good of their Country, is too often lookt upon as a recompence ſufficient for all the ſervices a man hath done them.

While I lived in hopes of good news from Court, I went to viſit ſeveral places in *Germany*, particularly *Munick*, where his Highneſs of *Bavaria* uſually makes his reſidence. I had the honour to diſcourſe with his Highneſs pretty often, and very freely upon ſeveral occaſions that offered themſelves. Monſieur *de Fouques* and I were talking one day before him of ſeveral fine Horſes, rare Birds, and many other Curioſities, which the King of *Spain* had preſented to the King of *France*; and Monſieur *Fouques* was ſaying, that though theſe two Kings made war upon one another, yet there was no hatred between them; and adding afterwards, that he could not believe the King of *France* had any deſign upon *Germany*. I took him up there, becauſe I thought ſuch diſcourſe was not for the honour of the Kings pretenſions; and anſwer'd him boldly before his Highneſs; *For my part, Sir,* (ſaid I) *it is my opinion, that the King my Maſter hath ſtill a great ambition to recover that Throne at one time or other, upon which his Anceſtors have ſat heretofore.* The Duke of *Bavaria* preſently turned this into raillery, and ſaid, He was not at all ſurpriz'd at my anſwer, for in truth he expected no other from me; that I was a true *Frenchman* upon all occaſions, and continued ſo ſtill, tho driven into *Germany*; and he perceived I had a mind to take ſome ſort of revenge upon them that had made me Priſoner. And indeed I never ſtood much upon ceremony, where the honour of *France*, and the Arms of the King were concerned. For how juſt provocation ſoever I might have at that time, not to ſpeak any thing to the advantage of the *French* Court, yet I could never deveſt my ſelf of that natural inclination and tenderneſs for my Country, which always diſpoſed me to vindicate its honour upon ſuch occaſions, where the character of a good *Frenchman* depends upon having a leſs regard to ones own private intereſts, than thoſe of ones Prince and Nation.

XXII. At laſt I grew quite weary of this ſort of life in a ſtrange Country, and finding we were no more any body's care in *France*, than if we had been dead; and underſtanding too, that we were to be ſent to the lower end of all *Germany* to bear Arms there

there, I resolv'd to come to terms for my Ransome, and perswaded my fellow Prisoners to do the same, having lent seven or eight of them Money, by the help of Monsieur *Cumans* correspondent, who had orders to deny me nothing I desired of him. That very day the Collonel invited us to dinner, and when we had din'd, he bad us take leave of our friends, and come again to his Lodging, telling us we should eat a Pasty with him in his Garden, and drink a parting Bottle to the King of *France*, and his Highness of *Bavaria*'s health. At the same time he made great excuses for not using us as we deserved; assuring us, our ill treatment proceeded from no malice or contempt, but was to be imputed to the Custom of the Country, and the common right of War, which intitles a man to the getting an honourable Ransome for his Prisoners: Adding, that if it were his fortune ever to be Prisoner in *France*, he should not take it ill to be so used, for the enhancing his Ransom. I told him, without taking any great notice of his complement, That we had been very hardly used indeed, and I durst promise him, if ever he were so unhappy to be our Prisoner, he would have reason to commend our usage, and soon discern the difference between the customs of *France* and *Germany*. But however, since it was the custome to use Prisoners of War thus, I would promise him, we would retain no grudge against the Country in general, nor himself in particular; nay, that if I met with any opportunity of serving him, I would do it with all my heart.

Thus we left him, intending to return again when we had taken leave of our friends: But as soon as we were got out of his house, there happened a sad misfortune both to him and us: For as he was leading his Wife down stairs into the Garden, his Spurs threw him down, and he fell quite from the top of the steps to the bottom, and there struck his Head violently against a little Pillar, and broke his Skull with the blow. He was speechless presently, and within four and twenty hours dyed. We came back presently, and finding the poor man in this lamentable condition, we resolv'd to go off without delay, for we had our Pass-ports; and were afraid of what happen'd accordingly, that they should confine us again. But the Collonels Lady prevail'd upon us to stay, almost whether we would or no. And the Officers of the Garrison in the mean time wrote away to the Duke of *Bavaria*, to desire he would give them leave to stop us, for now the Collonel was dead, we were going away, without paying our Ransome,

His Highness not being informed, from any other hand, how the case really stood, granted their request; and so, after all the barbarities we had undergone before, we suffered at last the greatest injustice that could possibly be done us, and were forced to be ransomed over again. And I am sure I may say, the losses I sustained this year were greater than my circumstances could possibly bear; for after eighteen Horses (some of which were very valuable ones) and all my Baggage had been taken from me, I was constrained to lay down my Ransom twice over. Nor do I put into this account the Money I lent my Companions, part of which I lost too into the bargain.

The End of the Sixth Book.

BOOK

BOOK VII.

The Sieur de Pontis *returns into* France ; *he expreſſes his Reſentments againſt the Court a little too boldly, and at firſt refuſes to engage any more in the ſervice. He is commanded to go guard the Mountains of* Provence *and* Dauphine *during the firſt War of* Paris. *A Generous action of the Chevalier* de Pontis, *his Brother, who had been taken by the* Turks. *An account of what happened upon the Marriage of the Sieur* de Pontis *his Niece, and the troubleſome buſineſs that this Marriage engaged him in.*

I. WHen my Ranſom was paid the ſecond time, I made all the haſte I could out of a Country, that had given me ſo muth reaſon to diſlike it. So away we went for *France*, one or two of my fellows and I, leaving Monſieur *Rubentel* who was falling ſick, behind us at *Uberlinghen*. I gave him what Money he was likely to have occaſion for, and left my ſelf only juſt enough to carry me to *Lyons*, depending upon meeting a freſh ſupply there. When we were about a days Journey from *Ausburg*, a *French* Souldier that had made his eſcape overtook us, and ſeeing him on foot and bare of Money, I bought him a Horſe that he might bear us company, and bore his charges the whole Journey. Which accident, and the loſs of one of my Horſes that died upon the Road, drain'd me quite dry by that time I got into *Switzerland*. Not knowing who to apply my ſelf to, I concluded at laſt to go wait on Monſieur *Cumartin*, Embaſſador from the King in that Country ; and told him, Though I had not the honour of his acquaintance, yet neceſſity compell'd me to implore his compaſſion upon poor Priſoners that came out of *Germany*, and wanted Money to finiſh our Journey into *France*. After ſeveral other queſtions had paſt, he asked how much I wanted ; I anſwered him, we ſhould have occaſion for about five hundred Crowns. Tho he ſeem'd to boggle a little at firſt, becauſe I was not known to him, yet he received me after a very obliging manner, and furniſhed me with a thouſand, or twelve hundred Livres, which ſerv'd me till I reacht *Paris*. I went preſently after to wait upon the Queen, who asked me a great many particulars about the Country from whence I came, and hearing all that had happened, promiſed to be mindful of me, and immediately gave me ſix hundred Piſtoles. But alas! this was but like a drop of Water to the Ocean I had loſt, and that I ſtood in need of at that very time to equip me out afreſh, for going into the Army once more, which the Queen would needs engage me to do.

Monſieur *Cumans* in the mean while, who had ſupplied all my wants of Money in *Germany*, according to his uſual generoſity, writ to me, to deſire I would not be uneaſie, nor ſtreighten my ſelf upon his account, but bad me pay him when I could ; and if I were not in a condition to do it, he ſhould reckon himſelf fully paid, in having had it in his power to do me ſervice. And here I cannot forbear obſerving, what a mighty difference there many times is, between that Friendſhip which great men do you the honour to make profeſſions of, and that which plain honeſt men really have for you. For at the very ſame time that I lay deſerted, and utterly forgotten of ſome Noblemen, who knew very well, that I had frequently done them ſervice, at the expence of my own life ; even then did a Stranger, a *Dutch-man*, and a Trading man, behave himſelf to me throughout the whole buſineſs, with a largeneſs of Soul more like a Prince, than one of his condition ; and all this in gratitude for the care I took of his Son. But notwithſtanding Monſieur *Cumans* great Civility, I, who could never endure to be outdone by my friends, in the little emulations of generoſity and kindneſs, and was deſirous to pay off my debts faithfully, ſold

an Eſtate which I had in *Beauce*, for fifty thouſand Livres, and paid Monſieur *Cumans* his Correſpondent at *Paris*, what Money I ow'd him. At the ſame time I put two of my Nieces that were poor, and had been recommended to my charity, into the Habit, placing one of them in a Convent of *Urſulines*, and the other in St. *Mary*'s Monaſtery, both in *Provence*. Thus when I had moſt occaſion for Money my ſelf, I was deſirous to make ſome acknowledgment for the charity I had lately received from Strangers, and the eminent protection of God over me.

At my return from *Germany*, I found that the Relation I had truſted with my Money, had made uſe of it for his own pleaſure, and was extremely enraged to ſee ſo baſe a diſpoſition in him; nor would I ever be reconciled, till he had reſtored me my Jewel, and engaged to give two hundred Piſtoles to my Nephews. When this was done, I had a mind to let him ſee, that this unworthy behaviour had not alter'd my affection for him; and, as a pattern of generoſity for him to copy after, gave him the firſt Company of the Queen's Regiment, which had all this while been reſerved for me. For I had no inclination to go abroad with Monſieur *Vitry* the next Campagne, being much offended at what I had heard, that his Mother Madam *de Vitry*, had not ſpoken ſo well of me to the Queen, as ſhe might have done; and finding ſo ill a return made me for the ſervice I had done her Son, at the hazard of my Liberty, my Eſtate, and my Life. But ſtill I continued to love and honour Monſieur *Vitry*, and he expreſt all the Sentiments of a Perſon of Quality, and a true Friend for me.

I forgot to tell you, that when I came back to *Paris*, my honeſt Picture-Merchant came to ſee me, and congratulate my return. I was extremely glad it was in my power to entertain him, and expreſs'd by all the poſſible civilities how much I thought my ſelf obliged by the charity he ſhew'd me, when in a ſtrange Country, and unknown to him. Afterwards I bought a Caſe of Pictures, very curious ones, which coſt me four hundred Livres, and made him a Preſent of them. But this good Man had a generous Soul, and would by no means accept of them, telling me in his honeſt plain way, *Pray, Sir, do not oblige me to take this; Come, I am richer ſtill than you are; and your occaſions for money are greater than mine.* So we conteſted this point of generoſity ſome time, I carried the cauſe at laſt, and engaged him, whether he would or no, to take what he could not refuſe, without putting a ſlight upon me.

II. Being to receive one of my Penſions, I went to *Fountainebleau*, where the Court was at that time, to ſollicit the Queen for payment. Her Mujeſty having given me aſſurance that ſhe would remember me, I was in continual expectation of ſeeing her promiſe made good. But after two months ſtay at *Fountainebleau*, and a great deal of money ſpent to no purpoſe, in hopes of receiving my due, I grew weary at laſt of ſo tedious a delay; and thinking I had got a fair convenience of putting her Majeſty decently enough in mind of her promiſe, I preſented the Ticket for my Penſion, and told her, She was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay ſhe would think of me, but ſince I perceived a multitude of other buſineſs of greater concern, in which her Majeſty was involved, had been the occaſion of my being hitherto forgotten; I was come to return the Grant which my Maſter, the late King, had done me the favour to beſtow upon me, that ſo ſhe might gratifie ſome other perſon with it, of more deſert than I could pretend to. The Queen was a little ſurprized, and ſaid to me in ſome heat, *You are very impatient, wait a little longer.*

I did ſo, and was reſolved to ſee what would become of this ſecond promiſe. But at laſt I grew impatient again, and ſeeing my ſelf ſo long put off in the getting ſo ſmall a ſum as five hundred Crowns that were due to me, was reſolved to apply my ſelf a third time to the Queen, and contrary to the advice of my Friends, which I ought to have followed, rather than my own opinion, went a little too warmly to offer my Grant again. She took it, but in the ſudden paſſion ſhe was in, threw me the Paper back, and full of indignation, to ſee me ſo importunate, ſaid, *Oh! the late King hath often told me indeed, that you were haſty and paſſionate.* *Madam*, ſaid I, *the late King was my Maſter, and his taking notice of me, though but to reprove my failings, was an honour greater than I deſerved. But, Madam, I dare aſſure your Majeſty, if he found any fault with my humour, he never could find any failing in my fidelity.* The Queen ſaid, She did not ſpeak ſo with regard to my fidelity, but ſhe blamed my paſſion. Thus was I paid for my obſtinacy, and taught to my coſt, to take my Friend's advice another time. And yet methinks there was a great deal to be ſaid in my excuſe, and ſome allowance might be

be made for a Man that finds himſelf driven to extremities, and is mad to ſee ſuch a return made for his Services.

Upon this Reprimand, I kept aloof off; and Monſieur *d'Etampes*, the Maſter of Requeſts, coming into the Room ſome time after, made up towards me, and began to enter into diſcourſe with me. I ſaid to him with a ſmile, *Have a care what you do, Sir, do you know that you are talking with a Man in diſgrace, and one that the Queen hath but juſt now been in a great paſſion againſt? Say you ſo?* (reply'd he very pleaſantly) *Well, I would diſcourſe with you for that very reaſon, that I may convince you my friendſhip for you is not the leſs for all that.*

III. The Queen, who was gone into her Cloſet, came out in the evening with only one light before her, and was very intent upon reading a Letter. I took her for Madam *Senecay*, becauſe her Majeſty did not uſe to appear ſo ſlenderly attended. I could be pretty free with that Lady, and came behind her, as if I would look into the Letter ſhe had in her hand, and ſaid, *Madam, Will not you do me the favour to ſpeak for me to the Queen?* Her Majeſty turn'd ſhort at this Compliment, and I ſtood much confounded, and moſt humbly begg'd her pardon for my inſolence; telling her, that ſeeing her alone, which was very unuſual, I took her for one of the Ladies of her Court. The Queen, who ſome way or other was grown calm in three or four hours time, and perhaps diſpleaſed at her ſelf for having ſpoken to me in ſo much paſſion, ſaid to me in the moſt civil and obliging way that poſſibly could be, *This is a Letter come to me juſt now, and brings me word that my Son* Anjou *is well, and began to wear Shoes this very day.* It was too great a favour for me to expect, that her Majeſty ſhould diſcourſe thus to me after my intemperate heat; but ſhe favour'd me yet farther, and bade me be in the way when ſhe went to the Play, and ſhe would ſpeak to the Cardinal in my behalf.

I was there exactly at the time, and her Majeſty having ſpoken to the Cardinal as ſhe promiſed, his Eminence called me to him, and told me the Queen had remembred me, and ſpoke kindly of me to him, and that if I would be at his Levee next morning, he would give order to have me admitted into his Bed-chamber. When I found things go ſo well on my ſide, I could not forbear rallying my Friends a little, who had moſt of them deſerted me, telling them briskly, That I perceived their kindneſs was of more uſe to others than me; and inſtead of employing and depending upon my Friends, I had always found it the beſt courſe to ſollicit my own buſineſs my ſelf. Next day I waited upon the Cardinal, who wrote me a Ticket with his own hand, by vertue of which I had my Penſion preſently paid me.

IV. But ſtill I was much diſſatisfi'd and out of humor, to ſee my ſelf continue no way employed, nor at all conſidered for my Service, and eſpecially to find that laſt action of *Meninghen* quite ſtifled and diſparaged, by an envious General; who had no other way to cover his own diſgrace, but by detracting from our deſerts. I foreſaw too, that they intended to engage me in the next Campagne, though my loſſes by my impriſonment had put me out of a condition to equip my ſelf for the Service. Then I was out of all patience I confeſs, and full of reſentment at this hard uſage. I went and made my complaint to a great Miniſter of State, and with all the ſtrength of reaſon I could, repreſented to him the deplorable Circumſtances which my Service to the late King had reduced me to. This perſon, inſtead of giving me any ſatisfaction, fell foul upon me for ingratitude, and told me, That ſince the King deſigned to employ me in this Campagne, I had nothing to do but to obey. Upon this I reply'd very hotly, and indiſcreetly, That all the World took notice how unjuſtly I had been dealt with; that an old Officer, as I was, ought not to be uſed at this rate; and as for the next Campagne, I was poſitively reſolved not to be concerned in it; that I had loſt all, in loſing my Maſter the late King; and was very little ſollicitous now for any thing that could happen to me.

This Anſwer provoked him to that degree, that he procured a Warrant againſt me, to clap me up in the *Baſtile*. I had notice of the thing, and at firſt made a Jeſt of it, thinking this was meant only to fright me. But being afterwards aſſured by one of my Friends, that it was really true, and if I were found at my own lodging, I ſhould be confined in two hours time, I thought it unſeaſonable to carry it big any longer, and went privately to a Lord's houſe that belonged to the Court, who told me, he was very much my Friend, but had not intereſt enough to protect me, and

was afraid I could not be safe with him. Then I went to Monsieur *Harcourt*, and desired I might take Sanctuary with him, who received me with great kindness and generosity, lodged me in a private Room, sent my Dinner and Supper up constantly into my Chamber, and did me the honour to come and sit with me every morning and evening.

Here I continued to play least in sight for several weeks, till Mareschal *Melleray* coming one day to the Count *d'Harcourt*'s, and I having the honour to discourse him, he told me he would engage to speak for me, and make my peace with the Queen. Accordingly he carried me to the *Louvre* in his own Coach, and presented me to her Majesty, who did me the favour to tell me, that she had given out no special Order against me in particular, but only a general one, to secure all the Officers that refused to go with the Army. Thus the passion I fell into, though it gave me great apprehensions of being utterly out of favour, yet gave me some comfort at least, to find my self in good graces at Court, and perfectly at liberty again.

V. After this I was order'd to go into *Provence*, and carry over some Troops, consisting of five or six thousand Men, into *Catalonia*. I cannot, at present, recollect any thing very remarkable, that happen'd to me upon this occasion. This was during the first *Paris* War, when every body knows the whole Kingdom was in great disturbance and confusion. I received a Command besides, to guard the Mountains of *Provence* and *Dauphine*. For this Service I raised a Regiment of Foot, and a Troop of Horse: But found a vast difference between these Troops, and those I had commanded under the late King. For then the strict Discipline he kept up, gave me an absolute Authority over my Souldiers, but now I was wearied out with perpetual complaints of these Fellows, who gave themselves up to Rapine and Licentiousness, and thought they were priviledged by the disorder these Civil Wars occasioned, to shake off all manner of obedience. I could not endure this insolence, nor was in a condition to keep these Brutes under as formerly, being slenderly supported, and very ill paid, and therefore chose rather to quit the Employment, which I could not honourably discharge. So I delivered up my Regiment to another Officer of a temper something more passive, and less nice in point of Discipline than mine. While I was thus employed in maintaining the King's Rights about *Provence* and *Dauphine*, I married one of my Nieces to a Gentleman very well descended of the Family of *Poligny*. This Niece was Daughter to my eldest Brother's Son. And as I now married the Daughter, so by an accident much of the same nature, I had married the Father several years before. There was something so very observable in both these Matches, that I think they deserve a particular Relation here, and therefore I will give you the Circumstances of both, and begin with that of the Father.

VI. I forgot in these *Memoirs* to tell you, that I had a Brother who was one of the Knights of *Maltha*, concerning whom I think my self obliged to relate one very remarkable Story here. He was a Person of great Wit and Learning, could speak several Languages, and among the rest the *Turkish*, as perfectly well as his own Mother-Tongue, the *French*. This inclined him to make some stay at *Constantinople*, where he applied himself to consider that place and state thoroughly, and with great judgment observed the strong and the weak sides of it. I remember he hath often told me, and made a report of the same nature, to the great Master of their Order, that if the Christian Princes would once unite together, it were a very easie matter for them to make themselves Masters of that famous City; and that he always thought the support of the *Ottoman* Empire was owing, not so much to any strength of its own, as to the divisions among its Enemies. He had the reputation at *Maltha*, of a Man of bravery and courage; and for my own part, I think in my Conscience I was but a Coward, and a meer Chicken in comparison of him.

In one of his probational Expeditions aboard a Vessel of their Order, he was attacked, and taken by some *Algerines*. He immediately threw his Cross over-board, knowing, that the *Turks* hate the Knights mortally, and either kill them, or set very extravagant Ransoms upon them. He had some good Fortune with his bad, for he fell into the hands of a Master much more generous and civil, than the generality of those barbarous People use to be. The *Turk* asked him, what he could do? he answered, he had skill in Horses, and could manage them, and teach them all that would make them valuable; that he could draw too, and design, and do a great many such

ſuch things. The *Turk* who had travell'd and was well accompliſhed, was very well ſatisfied with ſo dextrous a Slave; and buying up ſome young Horſes, the Knight managed them to his Maſter's content, and convinced him he had pretended to no more than he was able to perform. Thus three years paſt on, in which the Knight made ſeveral attempts to eſcape, but could not.

At the end of this term, the *Turk* highly pleaſed with his Slave's ſervice, ſaid to him, *I am very well ſatisfied with you, and am ready to give you good proofs of it, if you have any kindneſs to ask me.* The Knight anſwered him, That he was infinitely obliged to him, and thought a Slave ought to ask nothing more of his Maſter, than that his ſervices may be well accepted. *I commend your Modeſty* (replyed the *Turk*) *and underſtand your meaning, tho you dare not ſpeak it out. Serve me one year more, and then you ſhall ſee what I will do for you.* One may eaſily imagine what care and pains this Knight took all that year, to confirm himſelf in his Maſter's favour. So when that was expired, his Maſter ſent for him into his Chamber, and ſaid to him, *You have ſerved me not like a Slave, but a man of honour; and now I will uſe you like ſuch a man, and reward the care and affection you have ſhewn in my ſervice. Tell me therefore to what place you deſire to be conveyed, how you would be habited, and what you have occaſion for. Ask every thing freely, and you ſhall have it as freely of me, as you ſhould from the beſt friend you have in the world.* Being told, that he was deſirous to go to *Marſeilles*, he clothed him according to his own mind, and found out a Veſſel for him, paid his fraight, and gave him more Money than he asked for. And thus he was ſent back, as highly favoured by this *Turk*, as the *Turk* had been ſatisfied before with the faithful ſervice of the Knight, without ever diſcovering who, or what he was.

VII. Upon his arrival at *Marſeilles*, he writ me word how extremely diſſatisfied he was with my elder Brother, who was not ſo generous and kind to him as he ought to have been, and betrayed a great deal of coldneſs and indifferency for his ſufferings, during the time of his Slavery. The hot diſpoſition which I knew the Knight to be of, and the angry terms in which he expreſt himſelf in his Letter, made me apprehenſive ſome miſchief might come of this. So I askt the King (for it was in his life time) that I might take a Journey into *Provence*, and went thither poſt. When I was once upon the ſpot, it was no hard matter for me to compoſe all quarrels: For I furniſhed the Knight with whatever he deſired; and when I had equipped him ſufficiently for his return to *Maltha*, I was inclined to oblige my elder Brother too with new proofs of my affection. I begg'd that when his Son was a little grown up, he would ſend him to *Paris*, and promis'd to ſee him inſtructed in Philoſophy, and all other exerciſes of a Gentleman, that were fit to accompliſh him for the world. He was very willing to embrace the propoſal, and accordingly ſent him to me, when he was about thirteen or fourteen. I took all imaginable care of him, and ſpared nothing for him, but had him educated as my own Son. This happened ſome months before the Siege of *Rochelle*, of which you have an account in the firſt part of this Book.

VIII. But before I give a relation how this Nephew of mine was marry'd, I muſt tell one ſtory more, which tho it be ſtrictly true, yet I am ſenſible will look ſomething Romantick; and that is, how my Brother, the Knight of *Maltha*, found an opportunity of making the *Turk* whoſe Slave he had been, a grateful return, by an act of generoſity, greater than that had been ſhewn him before. Five or ſix years after he had been ſet at liberty, happening one day to be at *Marſeilles*, and walking with a friend of his upon the Key, he ſaw a Veſſel make into Harbour, and ſome Souldiers coming to ſhore, with ſeveral Slaves that they had taken. There was amongſt the reſt one *Turk*, who preſently awakened in him the Idea of ſome face he had ſeen before, but he could not ſuddenly recollect whether he were the very perſon he imagin'd him to be or not. At laſt coming up cloſer, and taking a nicer view, he found it to be his old Maſter. Upon this, he threw his arms about his neck, and embracing him in a great rapture of joy, he ſaid; *Providence hath ordered, that you ſhould meet me at* Marſeilles, *becauſe you were ſo generous to diſmiſs me from* Algiers, *and uſed me with all the kindneſs and reſpect of a Friend. And now you ſhall be convinced that God does not let good works go unrewarded; and that a* French-man *thinks it a reflection upon him, to be outdone in civility by any forreigner whatſoever.* Then he enquir'd whoſe this Slave was, and what his Ranſome; which when he had paid, he gave him a noble Entertainment, ſhew'd him all the curioſities of *Marſeilles*, and then ſupply'd all his occaſions, gave

him a great deal more than he had formerly receiv'd from him, and ſo ſent him back ſafe to *Algiers* again, according to his own deſire. The Duke of *Guiſe*, who was then at *Marſeilles*, had a mind to ſpeak with this *Turk* himſelf; and having ſeveral times heard the ſtory from the Knight, was us'd to ſay, *Well, now I believe you, becauſe I have ſeen your* Turk, *and am an Eye-witneſs of your kindneſs, and what you do for him in return; but otherwiſe I ſhould have look upon your ſtory as no better than a fiction, and a kind of Romantick adventure.*

IX. The Knight ſome years after had a conſiderable Lordſhip in *Provence*, for ſeveral belonging to the Order lye there; and happen'd to engage himſelf unfortunately in the quarrel of a friend of his, to whom he was Second in a Duel; where though he got the better of his adverſary, yet he received a wound, that ſome days after coſt him his life.

I confeſs I cannot ſufficiently expreſs my abhorrence of this cuſtom, or rather of this madneſs, that puts ſo many gallant men upon theſe fatal engagements. I have been told, that within the time of the late Queen Mother, *Ann* of *Auſtria*'s Regency, there were reckon'd up nine hundred and thirty Gentlemen, that were kill'd in Duels, within the ſeveral Provinces of this Kingdom; and no doubt a great many more there were, whoſe deaths were either conceal'd, or elſe imputed to other cauſes. Such a number of men, ſcattered through the parts of an Army, in ſeveral Poſts, I fancy were enough to win a conſiderable Battel. And really, the wiſdom and juſtice of the preſent King *Lewis* XIV. is in this particular highly to be commended, who by a ſeverity becoming both a Chriſtian and a Prince, hath reſolved never to pardon any Duelliſts; and ſo hath found a way to make theſe Combats now as uncommon, as they us'd to be frequent in the reigns of his Predeceſſors. And for my own part, I cannot but have an exceeding honour and value, for thoſe many Lords and Gentlemen, whoſe Courage is out of all danger of being call'd in queſtion, that have made a publick Declaration under their hands, that they could never look upon thoſe men as perſons of Valour, who place their honour in playing of prizes, and by a brutiſh ſtupidity laviſhly throw away thoſe lives that were deſign'd for the nobler purpoſes, of ſerving the Kingdom, and the defence of their Prince.

Let us dye in Gods name, at the mouth of a breach, or in a fair Battel, at the head of a Company, or a Regiment, where our Death is honourable, and our Life a Sacrifice paid to God and our Princes, who have a right to it. But who in his ſenſes would ever expoſe himſelf to theſe bloody encounters, where not only our Life, but our Fortune and Honour are loſt with it too; and in which we cannot loſe our lives, but we muſt loſe Heaven and our Salvation at the ſame time.

X. Now I come to ſpeak of the favourable circumſtances, which concurred to the matching firſt of my Nephew, and afterwards of his Daughter to both their advantage; and they are ſuch as were likely enough to be thought no leſs Romantick, than my account of the Knight of *Malthe*, did not that ſincerity and ſtrict regard to truth, which I have been known to obſerve all my life long, ſecure me from any ſuſpicion of falſhood. It happened then, while my elder Brother's Son, who was ſent to me out of *Provence* to *Paris*, continued under my care, that a Lady of *Dauphine* came thither with her Daughter, about a great Suit of Law then depending, concerning the Guardianſhip of this young Lady, which was like to be taken away from her. I had heard ſome diſcourſe of the thing, and thinking my ſelf obliged to take their part, as being my Country-women, had a mind firſt to dive into the true reaſon of the Mother's carrying on the cauſe ſo zealouſly. Making a viſit one day, I took the freedom to ask her, if the intereſt of her Daughter was the only proſpect ſhe had in this Suit; ſhe anſwered me very frankly, that ſhe ſought no advantage of her own, and valued nothing comparably to her Daughter, and for her ſake alone it was, that ſhe gave herſelf all this trouble. I believ'd what ſhe ſaid to be true, and anſwer'd her with as much ingenuity and openneſs, that ſince ſhe proceeded upon ſo generous a principle, I would ſhew as much generoſity to her, and ſerve her both by my ſelf and my friends, as heartily as if her concern were my own.

Accordingly I began to make my words good, and ſet all my friends to work in behalf of this Lady. Her adverſaries reſolv'd to trouble and tire her out, both by delays and expences, which are always very great at *Paris*, eſpecially for ſuch as are not ſettled inhabitants there; and uſed all arts to ſpin out the cauſe to as great a length as they

they could. The whole Court removing to the Siege of *Rochelle*, as I ſhewed formerly, this Lady found it neceſſary to follow them thither, that ſhe might not ſeem to deſert her Cauſe, which then lay before the Council. The extravagant charge of this buſineſs, and at a time when ſhe wanted Money too, forc'd her one day to confeſs to me the great concern ſhe was in to ſee her eſtate waſted thus to no purpoſe, and her ſelf reduced to want of Money, to ſupply her preſent occaſions for this Journey. I encouraged and ſupported her under it the beſt I could, aſſuring her I would do my utmoſt to bring this troubleſome conteſt to an honourable concluſion. Then I asked her what Money ſhe wanted, and upon her deſire that I would lend her five hundred Crowns, I furniſhed her preſently after with two hundred Piſtoles. And at laſt I made ſo good intereſt among my friends, that the Lady carried her point.

XI. She eſteemed her ſelf extremely obliged by the ſervice I had done her, and reſolved upon the moſt effectual return of my kindneſs that was poſſible to be made. For having ſeen my Nephew ſeveral times, who came to me from *Paris* to *Rochelle*, and was then about ſixteen years old, ſhe would needs marry her Daughter, who was a great fortune, and for whoſe intereſt I had been ſo ſollicitous, to this young Gentleman. The great confidence ſhe had in me made her open her thoughts freely, and ſhe profeſt her ſelf highly pleaſed, that ſhe had this way of making an acknowledgment for all the trouble I had been at upon her account, and her Daughters. I confeſs this propoſal was ſome ſurprize to me, for it was what I never lookt for, nor had the leaſt deſign in the world to hook it in, by any ſervice I had endeavoured to do her. I thought this civility very obliging, and told her, ſhe did me a great deal of honour; and that the young Lady her Daughter deſerved a much better match than my Nephew, who was but young yet, and no body could tell what ſort of man he might make. She took my complemental anſwer for a refuſal, and told me, She perceived I lookt higher, and thought her Daughter a match not worthy my Nephew. I preſently rectified this miſtake, and convinced her I ſpoke ſincerely, that it was my real opinion her Daughter deſerved much better, and all could be ſaid of my Nephew was, that he was a Youth of good hopes, and one that I durſt promiſe my ſelf might do very well in time. *But Madam*, ſaid I, *ſince you have done me the favour of ſo generous an offer, I agree to, and accept it with all the gratitude in the world; and only beg that in conſideration how very young both of them are, you would be ſatisfied with my Nephews continuing ſome time longer at* Paris *to perfect himſelf in his learning; and this, Madam, without laying any reſtraint upon you, ſo that if in the mean while any other perſon whom you think better of be propoſed, you are at full liberty to entertain him, nor ſhall I think my ſelf ill dealt with at all.* She proteſted ſhe was fixed in her choice of my Nephew, and deſigned her Daughter for no other man, and that nothing could poſſibly hinder it, except my refuſal.

Some time after her return home ſhe ſent me word, that great applications were made for her Daughter, and ſhe was under ſome apprehenſions of having her ſtolen; therefore intreated for the preventing of ſo great a misfortune, that the Marriage between her and my Nephew might be concluded. This Letter came to me before the Siege of *Rochelle* was ended, and I reſolved upon ſending my Nephew into *Dauphine* forthwith. To this purpoſe I provided him a handſome Equipage, and haſtened his Journey all I could, that a match ſo much for his advantage might not be loſt. All neceſſary preliminaries were put in good readineſs before his arrival, and then no time was ſlipt, but the very next day after his coming they were contracted, and ſome few days after that were married.

XII. My Nephew and this Lady of *Dauphine* had a Daughter called *Anne de Pontis*, who is indeed the occaſion of my relating this extraordinary accident of her Father's Marriage; for now I am to tell you, that as my protection to a Lady in a Suit of Law brought about the Father's match, during the Siege of *Rochelle*; ſo the like protection of another Lady called *Poligny*, while I was ſent to guard the Mountains of *Provence* and *Dauphine*, occaſioned the Marriage of the Daughter too, for this Lady gave her Son to my Niece, as a reward for my care and kindneſs upon that account.

The *Poligny*'s are a very good Family in the Province of *Dauphine*, and poſſeſt of a conſiderable Eſtate called *Vaubonnes*, which is a ſort of little Kingdom, being a diſtinct Royalty conſiſting of fifteen Villages, all incloſed with precipices and natural trenches,

trenches, and no paſſage into them, except by three ſeveral Bridges of Stone. Monſieur *Poligny* was then ſome ſixty five years old, and had a Son to whom he gave the name of his Lordſhip *Vaubonnes*; but there was in the Family beſides him, a Natural Son called *Richard*, whom Monſieur *Poligny* made Steward, or Bailiff of this Mannor, and who managed his buſineſs ſo, as in a few years to be worth above two hundred thouſand Livres. Monſieur *de Vaubonnes* being yet but very young had a Governour with him, who took a great deal of care of him, and educated him as was fit for his quality. When he was grown up to about twelve years old they gave him a Gun, and his Governour carried him abroad ſometimes to teach him to ſhoot, by practiſing upon Thruſhes and Black-birds.

One day as they were out upon this ſport, they met Mr. *Richard*, who took the freedom to come very boldly, and ſhoot all over their grounds. This young Gentleman provoked at his confidence, asked by whoſe leave he came a fowling there, told him he was diſpleaſed with it, and bad him take care he did not hear that he did ſo any more. *Richard*, who was an inſolent fellow, and of a converſation as ſcandalous as his birth, replyed very warmly; That this was no new thing, for he had always uſed to fowl there, and wondred he ſhould pretend to find fault with it. Monſieur *de Vaubonnes* replyed, He could not tell whether he had uſed to do ſo, or no; but he adviſed him to come there no more, for if he did, his Gun ſhould be taken away from him. *Richard* replyed inſolently, That he would break any man's head, that ſhould offer to take his Gun, let him be who he would. The Governour hearing him talk at this ſawcy rate, told him, Sure he forgot himſelf, and did not conſider he was ſpeaking to his Lord, that he was but Bailiff of *Vaubonnes*, and held all he had under Monſieur *Poligny*, and owed all his fortunes to him. *I know well enough* (ſays *Richard*) *from whom my fortunes come, and do not intend to be taught by you, and you meddle with that which does not concern you. When young Maſter is grown up, I ſhall ſpeak my mind to him upon this buſineſs.* The Governour anſwered him, That Monſieur *Vaubonnes* his concerns were his; that if he did not intereſt himſelf in them, he did not deſerve to be about him; and he adviſed him to behave himſelf as became him, or it would be the worſe for him. Upon this they came to hot words, and parted for that time with much anger on both ſides.

XIII. From that moment *Richard* reſolved to be reveng'd upon Monſieur *Vaubonnes* his Governour, being moſt enraged at him, becauſe he had heated him; and beſides, he lookt upon the young Gentleman under his care, as no better than a Child. One day he came with a deſign to aſſaſſinate him, and had the impudence to come up ſo far as the very Court before the houſe, and ſeeing him with the young Gentleman at the door, he diſcharg'd his Gun at him, kill'd him, and fled away. The inſolence and blackneſs of this attempt, provok'd Madam *Poligny* extremely. She proſecuted the fellow by all the ordinary courſes of Law, and at laſt had him ſentenc'd to be hang'd, by the Intendant of the Province. The Murderer ſaw he was gone, unleſs he could remove the Cauſe out of that Province; and ſo went to *Fountainebleau*, there to put in an Appeal before the Council, pretending that Madam *Poligny*'s intereſt was ſo great in the Parliament of *Grenoble*, that he could not expect any fair hearing there. This happened a little before the firſt *Paris* War, and I was then at *Fountaine-bleau*. But not knowing any thing of this wretch, nor his crime, nor having yet the honour to be related to Madam *Poligny*, he obtain'd the Kings protection, and leave to bring it before the Council; and all the while took care never to ſtir without three or four luſty Foot-men at his heels, and ſome friends beſides, as wicked and deſperate as himſelf.

Shortly after Madam *Poligny* ſent me a Letter, giving an account of the baſeneſs and wickedneſs of the action, conjuring me to uſe my intereſt at Court againſt this Murderer, who had been condemn'd to be hanged at home, and remov'd his Cauſe to the Council by an Appeal. The aſſaſſination was ſo horrid, and I ſo affected with it, that I reſolv'd to vindicate this Lady to the utmoſt of my power. Underſtanding that Monſieur *de Gue*, Maſter of the Requeſts, had the matter referr'd to his examination, and was to be the Reporter of it to the Board, tho every body adviſ'd me to object againſt him, and told me *Richard* had been very powerfully recommended to his favour, yet I would never do it, for I knew him to be a perſon of honour and integrity, and a very good Judge. I went to wait on him, and told him, the Reputation he had for juſtice and honeſty, made me very confident he would do Madam

Poligny

Poligny right; that her Adverſary was ſo great a Villain, that he could not pretend to deſerve any favour; and that for my own part, I had no farther concern, than meerly what the juſtice of the cauſe gave me; but after being entreated by that Lady to give her what aſſiſtance I could, I did not decline to become the Accuſer of ſo baſe and bold an invaſion upon the Houſe of a Lord in the Country, and his own Feudatory Lord too. *Therefore, Sir,* (ſaid I) *I require juſtice at your hands, and ask it againſt a Villain and a Murderer, that is unworthy of all mercy.*

Juſt as I was preſſing the matter thus warmly, *Richard* came into the room where we were, attended as he uſed to be with a company of fellows as bad as himſelf. As ſoon as I ſet my eyes upon the guilty wretch, I took courage afreſh, and raiſing my voice, *Look you, Sir,* (ſaid I) *I deſire you once more to do juſtice. Here's the very Murderer, that hath the confidence to appear before you with a Sword on, after having made no better uſe of his arms than baſely and cowardly to ſacrifice a man of honour to his own revenge. Againſt this fellow I require juſtice, who tho he be the King's Priſoner, and convict of an Invaſion, hath the inſolence to go armed ſtill. Pray, Sir, command him to behave himſelf like a Priſoner, and keep that reſpectful diſtance that is due to his Majeſty's Council.*

Tho *Richard* had been (as I ſaid) very ſtrongly recommended to this Maſter of Requeſts, yet ſo bold an addreſs from one who had no Sword on at that time himſelf, made ſuch impreſſion, that both Judge and Criminal ſtood a while confounded. But at laſt, as juſtice will be heard, and the perſon to whom I ſpoke being an honeſt man, he could not forbear telling *Richard*, that I was in the right, and therefore he forbad him the wearing his Sword before him any more. Which made him go away very much down in the mouth, and highly enraged at me, for getting him to be ſo ſhamefully diſarmed.

The Reporter then promiſed me juſtice ſhould be done. But being deſirous ſtill to make more ſure of it, I ſet my friends upon him too, particularly Monſieur *de Lionne* who was then at Court; and who, after ſome coldneſs between the Maſter of Requeſts and him, upon a former quarrel, was reconciled to him, upon this application that I engaged him in. I made uſe of Mareſchal *Villeroy* too, who honoured me with his particular friendſhip, and undertook this buſineſs of Madam *Poligny* with the greateſt civility imaginable. For having invited me to meet the Reporter at dinner next day at his Houſe, when we roſe from table to waſh, the Mareſchal ſaid to Monſieur *du Gue, Well, Sir, you muſt needs rid me of the importunate ſollicitations of this man* (meaning me.) *He makes me believe I have ſome intereſt in you. Does he ſay true? And may I depend upon not being denied by you? You do me honour and juſtice in thinking ſo, Sir,* ſaid the Maſter of Requeſts; *I can no more deny any thing you ask, than you can ask any thing fit for me to deny. Very well, Sir,* ſaid the Mareſchal, *all I deſire is, that you would for my ſake take care of Madam* Poligny's *buſineſs, and ſee that ſhe hath juſtice done her. They ſay the fact ſhe proſecutes for is ſo horrid, that the Raſcal is not fit to have any mercy ſhewn him.*

To make my ſtory ſhort, I will only add, that this Reporter, who was a very good Judge in his own diſpoſition, ſaw himſelf ſo warmly plyed for juſtice, that *Richard*'s appeal was thrown out, and the cauſe diſmiſt to the Parliament of *Grenoble*, there to be re-heard, and he to ſtand and fall by that Tryal. This news confounded him ſo, that finding he had no other evaſion left, and that he was loſt to all intents and purpoſes, he reſolved to ſubmit himſelf, and come ask my pardon. Accordingly he did, and took all the humbleſt ſubmiſſive ways to prevail upon me. He conjured me not to caſt away all pity for him, but to write to Madam *Poligny* in his behalf, aſſuring her from him, that he was very ready to make her what ſatisfaction ſhe pleaſed; that he acknowledged his fault with great remorſe, and confeſt the Devil had put him upon committing it.

I asked him with ſome indifference, whether he conſidered what he ſaid, and if he ſpoke heartily, *For* (ſaid I) *if you engage me in any promiſes for you, and do not ſee my word made good, I ſhall then turn your Adverſary my ſelf, and you will make but a bad buſineſs of it.* He proteſted he ſpoke ſincerely, and was reſolved to be true to his promiſe. Upon this aſſurance I proffer'd to write to Madam *Poligny*, being really moved with compaſſion at the forlorn condition I ſaw him in, and deſiring to put a good end to a Tryal of ſo horrid a nature. Accordingly I acquainted the Lady how I found Mr. *Richard* diſpoſed, and deſired her rather to proceed gently, and think of ſome accommodation, and do an act of mercy to a wretch that profeſt a hearty repentance for his fault, and a great inclination to make her any manner of ſatisfaction.

XIV. Some time after this it was, that the King ſent to me to paſs ſome Troops over into *Catalonia*, and *Italy*. In the mean while *Richard* had ſent my Letter to Madam *Poligny*, who eaſily granting his requeſt, ſaid, They would try whether this man would behave himſelf any better, and keep the promiſe he had made to me. To this purpoſe they choſe four Referees, and the Duke of *Leſdiguieres* for Umpire over them, to make an end of this difference. But he, thinking the ſumm in which they amerced him too great, evaded this arbitration, and found a trick to get an Inhibition, and appeal, without their knowledge; pretending to the Kings Councel, that he had ſince found ſeveral Papers for his juſtication, which never had been produced in any Court before. And growing inſolent upon the ſucceſs of this underhand dealing, he dwelt boldly in his own houſe, within three Muſquet-ſhot of *Vaubonnes*; and walk'd every where unconcern'd; but ſtill taking care to be attended with ſix or ſeven of his friends, as fit for a halter as himſelf.

The good old Gentleman Monſieur *Poligny*, who was ſtill alive, of a peaceable diſpoſition, and one that hated Quarrels or Law-ſuits, was much perplexed; and was for three days together blockt up as it were in his own houſe, by this Raſcal; who ſcowred the Country, and was in perpetual readineſs to do miſchief. I was then in *Provence*, near *Marſeilles*, taken up in executing the Orders, which I was ſaying the King had given me. Madam *Poligny* ſeeing all *Richard*'s fair promiſes come to nothing, and that her ſelf, her Husband, and her Son, were expoſed to his inſolences and his outrages perpetually, came to me, and acquainted me how very ill a poſture her affairs were in; conjuring me, by all the ties of the relation between us, as well as thoſe of friendſhip, to aſſiſt her all I could in reſcuing her from the violences of this Tyrant.

I told her, She knew me too well to queſtion the zeal, with which I was ready to ſerve her as long as I lived, and that her intereſt was as dear to me as my own, and therefore I would do all that poſſibly I could for her upon this occaſion; but finding my ſelf at that time engaged in the Kings buſineſs, and indiſpenſably oblig'd to conduct his Majeſty's Troops, and be faithful to his Orders; in obedience to which I had foregone even my own Intereſt; all I could do at preſent, was to ſerve her with my friends; and do that by writing, which if I were at my own diſpoſal, I would have done by word of mouth. I told her farther, I durſt depend ſo entirely upon my friends kindneſs, as to promiſe my ſelf, that my ſollicitations by way of Letter, would be as ſucceſsful to her, and as effectual with them, as if I were there to move them in perſon.

XV. But the Lady I diſcourſt with was too well acquainted with *Richard*'s inſolence, and paſſionate diſpoſition, and the neceſſity of my preſence, to ſatisfie herſelf with my offer of managing her buſineſs by Letter. And tho ſhe could not draw me off from the Kings Commiſſion, and ſaw it impoſſible to gain what ſhe deſired juſt at that preſent time; yet ſhe took a courſe ſhortly after, to fix me to her family by cloſer obligations, and engage me in the defence of all her intereſts. She came to ſee me, and ſaid, She muſt needs impart to me a deſign, which I ſhould have no great cauſe to diſlike: That ſhe conſidered, her Son at this age was not in a condition to reſiſt the violence of ſo furious a man as *Richard*; that ſhe found ſhe wanted ſuch a one as me, to put a check upon his inſolence; that ſhe had thought upon a way to bring us cloſer together than ever we were before, and that was to marry her Son to my Niece *Anne de Pontis*, (Daughter to the Nephew you heard of) that both of them were much of an age; and this new relation would make the concerns of their family become mine. I thought the propoſal very obliging, and advantageous, and told her, my Niece did not deſerve ſo great an honour; but if I refuſed it for her, it was only becauſe I durſt not accept it. She preſently underſtood the conſent I gave, and ſeem'd much pleaſed with it; ſo that taking me at my word, ſhe urg'd the concluding of the match ſpeedily, which we did without any great matter of formality, being very well ſatisfy'd in one anothers integrity, and fair dealing. I told her, I hoped ſhe would not find herſelf miſtaken in the good opinion ſhe had of me; and I durſt be bold to promiſe, that as ſoon as ever I had diſcharg'd my duty to his Majeſty's Commiſſion, I would employ my ſelf heartily in her buſineſs, and would rather dye, than not bring her off with honour.

The

The Marriage being thus concluded, and all the Ceremonies over, young Monſieur *Vaubonnes* and my great Niece, who had about ſixty thouſand Livres to her portion, were marry'd with a great deal of ſtate of ſolemnity. And when I had performed the Kings commands, in conveying over the Troops, I reſolv'd to ſee my Nephew and his new Wife put into poſſeſſion of their Eſtate. I carry'd him to *Vaubonnes*, and took ten or twelve of my friends, and all our men, well armed and well mounted, along with me. Mr. *Richard*, upon the news of our coming, ſhut himſelf and his Bullies up in his own houſe, and thinking that no time to appear, he went away privately the night after, to avoid any miſchief, that he apprehended might come to him upon our account.

But underſtanding ſhortly after, that my friends were gone, and I left alone at *Vaubonnes*, he took courage, and return'd to his houſe again. Next day he had the impudence to deſire he might viſit me, and that I would give him leave to walk abroad. I told the man that brought the meſſage, that I would not adviſe Mr. *Richard* to come where I was; and that if he took the confidence to do ſo, he might chance to repent it. He began to ſwear at this anſwer, and rail at me luſtily, ſaying, I was a very pretty fellow to forbid him ſtirring abroad; and that, when time ſhould ſerve, he would ſee which of us two was the better man. This however was more boaſting than true Courage; and it appeared afterwards, that he was brisk only then, when he thought his the ſtronger ſide.

One Holiday, he ſent to tell me, he ſuppoſed I would not be againſt his going to Church at *Vaubonnes*; I anſwered, it was my advice, that he ſhould go to Maſs ſomewhere elſe, for I would never endure that a Murderer, who had cowardly aſſaſſinated a man of honour in the Caſtle of *Vaubonnes*, ſhould appear in that Church, to beard the Lord of the Mannor, whom he had affronted by that violence. I commanded my Souldiers, who were ſtout fellows, to be upon their good behaviour, and led Madam *Poligny* and my Niece to Church, reſolving to dye rather than ſuffer this Villain to come there. When I was in the Church, word was brought me, that *Richard* was coming. I anſwer'd the fellow that told me, *Go tell him I expect him, and he ſhall find me here.* At the ſame time I diſpatcht a bold fellow, and my *Valet de Chambre*, to a narrow ſtreet, through which *Richard* was to paſs, and ordered them to ſecure that poſt immediately. *If* Richard *come there* (ſaid I) *tell him I have ordered you to keep that Paſs, and that you deſire he would go no farther. If he retire, let him go, and do not purſue him, but if he pretends to advance forward, or any way abuſe or affront you, fall on vigorouſly, and we will bear you out.*

Our two Souldiers being gone to their Poſt, *Richard* got intelligence of it, and durſt not venture forward, for fear of being forc'd to make a ſhameful retreat. He ſatisfy'd himſelf with railing after his uſual way, and giving me a great many hard words; and I could eaſily bear what I did not hear. Seeing himſelf driven to extremity, he grew raging mad; and that which made him worſe was, that ſome Officers of *Leſdiguieres* Regiment, hearing what had paſt, came to ſee me, and offer me their ſervice againſt this Brute of a fellow. So he was forc'd to hide again, and durſt appear abroad no more.

XVI. One day they had made an agreement to go all together and breakfaſt at a Village about a league off from *Vaubonnes*: I was againſt it at firſt, apprehending ſome miſchievous attempt from ſo enraged and deſperate a man, and being loth to be drawn into any troubleſome brangling buſineſs, that might create a ſuit at Law: At laſt I agreed, becauſe I could not ſtand out againſt all the reſt, who were very eager upon the frolick. But we trifled away ſo much time in walking up and down, and diſcourſing by the way, that when we came to the place, it was a fitter hour for dinner than breakfaſt. Monſieur *Poligny* and I perſwaded them to return home, for we ſhould be ſure to meet with better proviſion there, and immediately we two moved back again. But young Monſieur *Vaubonnes*, concern'd for the loſs of his breakfaſt, without taking any notice of it to us, told the Officers, it was not fair to go back again without drinking one Glaſs; that breakfaſt was ready, and they might eat a bit while we went on before. So they ſtaid to bait, and let Monſieur *Poligny* and me go all alone, who imagin'd they would have follow'd us immediately.

When we came over againſt *Richard*'s houſe, which overlooks the high-way, he got ſight of us, and diſcovering no body elſe that follow'd for above a quarter of a league, reſolv'd to come and attack us. With this intent he and five or ſix of his friends

ſriends made a Sally, and ſtood in the high-way at a turning, where we were to paſs. They were all on foot, but well arm'd with Swords and Piſtols, and one of them had catcht up a Halbert. Seeing the place and poſture they had fix'd themſelves in, I preſently concluded, there would be the Devil to do, for there lay our way, and I was not of a humour cut out for retreating. Poor Monſieur *Poligny*, whoſe years requir'd nothing more than peace and quiet, was much diſſatisfy'd that our friends had forſaken us, and ſo, to ſpeak the truth, was I too. But this was no time for conſideration, and all we had to do was to make amends for their abſence by our own reſolution and courage. When we came up within ſome forty paces of *Richard*, the Rogue pull'd his hat down over his face, and then cocking up the brim, walk'd in the middle of the Road, with an air of more fierceneſs than was natural to him, and caſting a malicious ſtare upon me, as if he could have torn me in pieces: and his inclination I am ſure was good to have done it, but I was more than ordinarily fortify'd upon this occaſion. We came on our uſual pace ſtrait towards him, and at laſt he drew a Piſtol all on a ſudden, and came up with it to me, ſwearing and curſing like a mad man. Seeing my ſelf in ſome extremity, I clapt both my Spurs to my Horſe, who was exceeding nimble, and underſtanding his Maſters pleaſure by that ſignal, threw himſelf with incredible force and ſwiftneſs into the middle of the armed men, overturning ſome, frighting away others, and driving them to creep away as well as they could, and hide themſelves under the hedges.

But I kept cloſe to *Richard*, who was the cauſe of all this quarrel, and braved it more than any of the reſt; and taking him by the Collar of his Doublet, I gave him ſuch a turn with all my ſtrength, that his heels went over his head, and flat upon the ground I laid him; then I rid my Horſe over his body ſeveral times, and could have been well enough pleaſed to have broken a Leg or an Arm of him, but had no deſign upon his Life. But it was otherwiſe ordered, for my Horſe always leapt over him, without ever treading upon his body at all. My Cloak was twice ſhot through, and my Horſe much wounded. I had alſo one thruſt with the Halbert, which had like to have gone through my Neck, but providence directed the ſtroke, and it only pierc'd the top of my Doublet. Indeed my Horſe was never more ſerviceable to me than now, for he turn'd and wheel'd like an Ape; and I manag'd him at will, to run down firſt one, then another, before they could recover themſelves, juſt as if he had been a reaſonable creature.

But yet in the midſt of all this hurry and danger, there was one thing very Comical; which was, to ſee the good old Gentleman Monſieur *Poligny*, who, as ſoon as ever he ſaw me make up to theſe fellows, and lay about me with my Sword and my Horſe, regarding the trouble that this action might bring upon him, more than the preſent ſervice I did him, cry'd out with all his might to *Richard* and the reſt, *Gentlemen, you ſee I am no way concern'd in this ſquabble*; *Bear witneſs it is Monſieur* Pontis *that does all.* And then directing himſelf to me, *Ah Sir*, (ſaid he) *you ſpoil all, you have utterly undone me*; *I had the Law on my ſide before, and now they will proſecute me.* I anſwer'd him without any great diſturbance, *Well, well, Sir, be ſatisfy'd, they ſee you are not concern'd*; *the fault is wholly mine, if it be a fault, I take all upon my ſelf very willingly*; *I am the perſon from whom they are to look for ſatisfaction, and I am content to anſwer it all for your ſake.*

At laſt our friends who had ſtaid behind came up, and ran to the noiſe, juſt as the ſcuffle was over, and the aſſaſſinates got off. They were aſtoniſh'd at our good fortune, and very ſorry that they had miſt this only occaſion, in which they could have been ſerviceable to us. But honeſt Monſieur *Poligny* could not be quiet, nor forbear telling all the world how much this quarrel went againſt him, and reproach'd me ſeveral times with having been the ruine of him, for that this fellow would now take the Law upon him, and be reveng'd for all by a freſh proſecution. Madam *Poligny*, who was a Lady of a maſculine and generous Soul, when ſhe had an account of the whole action, commended and thankt me very heartily, for having thus repreſt the inſolence and rage of this Villain.

XVII. *Richard*, who was very good at taking all advantages of Law, loſt no time, but went away the very next night to *Grenoble*. There he clamoured againſt me, for aſſaſſinating his perſon, and put in a Petition to the Parliament, who, without any farther information, granted him a *Habeas Corpus* againſt me, unleſs I put in my Appearance for ſuch a day. I had ſeveral friends and relations at *Grenoble*, and particularly

larly Monſieur *Calignon* a Councellor, who immediately gave me notice of all the proceeding, and that an Uſher (whom he had managed) would come to ſerve this Decree upon me, at ſuch a time. I immediately ſent away two or three men ſome leagues from *Vaubonnes*, (for ſo he had adviſed me to do in his Letter) to pretend the taking away this Inſtrument by force from the Uſher, that came to ſerve it. All our deſign in this was only to gain time, that ſo we might not be brought to a hearing, before the Judges could be informed of the true ſtate of the Caſe. The Uſher, who was privately in correſpondence with us, when the men ſent by me met him, cryed out, that they offered violence to a man in his Office; and, the better to carry on the jeſt, very formally made a verbal Summons upon the place. This however deferred the proceedings a while, which was all we propos'd to our ſelves by it. And *Richard* fill'd the Country with his noiſe and railing at this violence, and our being guilty of ſo great a contempt and affront (as he call'd it) to the authority of the Parliament.

Monſieur *Leſdiguieres* had receiv'd a very partial and falſe account of our firſt quarrel, and writ me word, he was extremely ſurpriz'd to hear ſuch reports of me; that the violences I had committed in the Country were in every bodies mouth, and all the world cry'd ſhame of them; that he indeed could ſcarce believe them, becauſe he had always had a good opinion of me: But if thoſe rumours were true, and I went on at that rate, he ſhould be forced to make uſe of that power the King had given him, as Governour of the Province. It is eaſie to conceive, how much I was aſtoniſhed to find ſo juſt, ſo innocent an action, warranted by all the Laws of Nature and Nations, (for indeed it was no more than my own neceſſary defence, when my life was attempted) ſo much run down by all the world, as if I had done ſome very heinous thing.

But to diſabuſe Monſieur *Leſdiguieres*, and prevent the ill conſequences thas *Richard*'s caballing and unjuſt ſollicitations might bring upon me, I wrote a very reſpectful, but at the ſame time a very vehement anſwer in my own defence, acquainting him, That I perceived my Enemies had traduced me to him, and inſtead of giving him a true relation of the matter, had diſguiſed it with lyes, and poſſeſt him againſt me by ſeveral falſe inſinuations; That I had the confidence to hope, a perſon of ſo much honour and juſtice as I knew him to be, would be ſo far from condemning, that he would commend me for what I had done, when he was more truly informed. Then I related the fact with all its circumſtances at large, and all that had paſt between us before this encounter, and cloſed my Letter with expreſſions to this purpoſe. *And now, my Lord, I beg your leave to ſay, that I muſt have behaved my ſelf juſt thus upon ſuch circumſtances, and ſuch provocations to the beſt Nobleman in the Land, and never a man in the Kingdom could have forced me to take other meaſures. The King is my Maſter: And it is my duty to preſerve my honour and my life for his ſervice. If I had acted any otherwiſe, than as I did upon this occaſion, I ſhould deſerve to be uſed like a Coward and a pitiful Fellow, both by the King, and by your ſelf (My Lord) to whom I have the honour to be the moſt humble of all your Servants*, &c.

My Letter was as ſucceſsful as I could wiſh, for it undeceived Monſieur *Leſdiguieres* perfectly, ſo that he ſent me a very kind and civil anſwer, telling me, he was very well pleaſed to know the truth of the matter; and, now he did ſo, he aſſured me, that this accident would only contribute to the increaſing that regard and good opinion which he had always had of me and my conduct.

XVIII. This I thought was my time to drive *Richard* to his laſt ſhifts, and take him down in the midſt of all his triumphs, and therefore I entered my action againſt him, and knowing he had been guilty of great ravage in the Country, I brought all them in whom he had oppreſſed, or any way wronged. After all their complaints had been atteſted, and informations publickly given in according to form of Law, I had them all preſented to the Parliament, and the witneſſes to them.

In the mean time Monſieur *Calignon*, Madam *Poligny*, and ſeveral other friends of ours, employed themſelves very vigorouſly and ſucceſsfully in my behalf, and brought the Cauſe into a readineſs for being heard. Then the wretch ſeeing no hopes of eluding the matter, and that all his applications and ſhifts could not ſignify any thing in arreſt of judgment, but the Gallows muſt be the reward of his wickedneſs, thought the wiſeſt part he had left to play, was once more to throw himſelf at my feet, and ask forgiveneſs; and ſubmit to any other conditions, though never ſo hard, provided I would but ſpare his life.

At firſt I was extremely provoked becauſe of his falſhood and baſeneſs, in breaking his promiſe to me before. and the inſupportable inſolence of his behaviour ſince; I could not prevail with my ſelf to hearken to any terms of accommodation whatſoever, and thought that both a regard to juſtice, and the quiet of the Country, made the hanging of ſuch a fellow abſolutely neceſſary. But at laſt his continued importunities, and the deſperate condition he was in, giving me ſome little grounds to hope ſtill, that this would be a warning, and mend him for the future, I began to be ſoftned, and think of taking ſome milder courſe, and ſhew him ſome mercy. I told him therefore, that though he had loſt all his credit by the breach of thoſe promiſes he made, when he came to me at *Paris*, upon this very account of ſaving him once before, I was yet content to grant, what he could have no juſt pretence to expect; but in the firſt place he muſt reſolve upon three things: Firſt, That he would abſolutely, and for ever quit that Country. Secondly, That his Eſtate ſhould be ſold; and then in the third place, That all the fees, and other charges of the Tryal, ſhould be paid out of the money that roſe upon that ſale.

Richard, who though he was hard put to it, yet thought however, he had better buy his life at the expence of his eſtate, than be hanged with a Purſe about his neck, told me, He was reſolved to ſubmit, and ready to do all this, upon condition his life might be ſaved. And this was the full and final concluſion of all this troubleſom buſineſs. His Lands were all ſold, the Charges of Suit were paid with part of the money. He asked Madam *Poligny*'s pardon, left the Country preſently, and hath never been ſeen there ſince. And in truth, conſidering what a wretch I had to deal with, I ſtood in need of a great deal of good management, reſolution and perſeverance, to bring him to, and get a head over that inſolence of his, that nothing was able to daunt or ſubdue. His rage, his heat of temper, and his deſpair working upon a buſy and deſigning head, made him fit for all ſorts of wickedneſs and extravagance. And it was a ſignal inſtance of the Divine Juſtice, that this haughty, this bloody-minded wretch, ſhould at laſt be brought to ſtoop, and glad to ſubmit to the pleaſure of that very man, whom he would have been beſt pleaſed to deſtroy, and whom of all the world he hated moſt.

The End of the Seventh Book.

BOOK

BOOK VIII.

The Sieur de Pontis *comes to* Paris. *The ſudden death of one of his Friends, puts him upon retiring from the buſineſs of the world. He goes into the Country to a Friend's Houſe. He defends that Houſe from ſome Troops of Monſieur* Turenne's *Army, who made an attempt to plunder it. He withdraws wholly from the world. His Piety during that retreat. A Letter written by him to a Governour of two young Noblemen at Court, containing directions for educating Perſons of Quality. His Death.*

I. AFter all this trouble that I had run through upon occaſion of my Neice's Marriage, I returned to *Paris* again, and carried young Monſieur *Vaubonnes* thither with me, to learn his exerciſes. But he fell into a moſt unhappy buſineſs there, and was very innocently engag'd in an accident, that had very near coſt him his life. There lodged a Gentleman in the ſame houſe with him, that had a great quarrel depending. He deſired my Nephew one day to lend him his Piſtols, and without mentioning one word of this quarrel, prevailed with him to bear him company. My Nephew, who was young, and ignorant of the world, lent him the Piſtols, and thinking no hurt, nor knowing whither he was going, went along with him, attended by a *Valet de Chambre*, that I had recommended to his ſervice, who was a very ſtout young fellow. When all three were come to the houſe, this Gentleman deſired my Nephew would go in with him, becauſe he ſaid, he had ſome buſineſs there. When they were come in, and unhappily had met the perſon againſt whom the quarrel was, he preſently fell into a paſſion, and talked like a mad man, in a moſt provoking manner. From words they came to blows, and he ſetting one of his Piſtols to his head, ſhot him ſtone dead. This was all done in an inſtant, but ſeeing the noiſe bring in a great deal of company, my Nephew, in great confuſion at ſo ſudden, and fatal an accident, was for recovering the door. He and his man drew immediately, and ſtanding cloſe by one another, they made their way out through all the people, that came crowding in to ſee what the matter was: They made the beſt of their way to my Lodging, and the Gentleman that had done the thing got off, and made his eſcape another way.

My Nephew, though he was very little to blame, yet durſt not ſay any thing of the matter to me: But the dejection and diſorder that ſhewed it ſelf in his countenance, preſently gave me ſome uneaſie ſuſpicions. At length, the *Valet de Chambre* ſeeing the importance, and the ill conſequences of ſuch a buſineſs as this, related the whole matter as it paſt; and then my Nephew diſcovered his part in it, and vow'd he was in no fault at all; that he was not in the leaſt acquainted with the Gentlemans deſign, who had committed the Murder, till they were come all together, and the very time of action; and his going along with him was intended for no more than a walk, or making an indifferent viſit. I was much ſurpriz'd at this ill news, and knew not what courſe to take: At laſt I reſolv'd to go wait on the Abbot *Servien*, who was a relation of my Nephew, and who was the great inducement to us, to bring him out of *Dauphine* to *Paris*. After I had told him the buſineſs, and we had conſulted with ſome friends what was beſt to be done, it was thought the ſafeſt way for this young Gentleman to make all the haſte he could into *Dauphine* again: For tho he were never ſo innocent, yet conſidering how far he had been unhappily engag'd to appear in the thing, it would have been very difficult for him to juſtifie himſelf, and convince the Judges that he had no ſhare in the crime.

II. Now

II. Now as this tragical accideut drove my Nephew from *Paris* home again, ſo another which, though the death were natural, yet appeared to me more terrible, prevailed with me ſhortly after to withdraw wholly from the world. It pleaſed God at laſt to bring me out of the wretched condition in which I had lived ſo long, without any other notions of goodneſs, than what proceeded meerly from honour and natural generoſity, and a virtue meerly moral and humane. And to this purpoſe he made uſe of the ſurprizing death of a friend, for whom I had a tender affection and particular honour, to put me into ſome ſaving terrors, and make me reflect upon my ſelf. The infinite deaths of my friends, which I had been an Eye-witneſs of in the Army all along, made no deeper impreſſion upon my mind, than juſt what ſerved to lament the loſs of the men I loved; but this pierced me to the very heart, and made me think of bewailing my ſelf and my own circumſtances, and to entertain my mind with very ſerious conſiderations of what, for ought I knew, was as likely to be my own fate, as any other man's.

Going one day to viſit this friend at his Country-houſe, with no other deſign, than to enjoy a little diverſion and good company, I ſpent ſome time with him and his Lady, as pleaſantly as I could. When I deſign'd to return for *Paris*, I was providentially ſtopt by the very perſon, who had the chief part in the diſmal tragedy I am going to relate, and by that means became the firſt inſtrument of my Converſion. For fancying me to grow weary, and ſuſpecting I might ſteal away in the morning without taking a formal leave, he order'd my Bridles and Saddles to be hid, and uſed his utmoſt endeavour to divert and make me eaſie. He told me, his Brother was to draw a Pond the next day, and engag'd me to go along with him, and ſee them fiſh. I had the honour to be intimately acquainted with his Siſter-in-law, and as we were taking a turn together in the Garden, and talking very freely upon ſeveral ſubjects, ſhe told me all on the ſudden, that ſhe obſerv'd ſome very odd look about her Brothers Face and Eyes, and askt me if I did not diſcern it too. I told her, I had but very ſmall skill in Phyſiognomy, but I had not diſcovered any thing unuſual in him. Still ſhe carry'd the diſcourſe on farther, and ſaid, She thought he had death in his face. I took a more nice view of him when we met again, and told her, that all the diſmal looks ſhe ſaw, were more in her own imagination, than her Brothers face.

The event however convinced me, that ſhe was a great deal more critical than I, whether ſhe ſpoke thus through ſome unaccountable natural inſtinct, or whether being more uſed to him, ſhe diſcovered ſomething extraordinary, which I could not find out: As we two were going back alone in his Coach after dinner, he was ſeized with a kind of convulſion, and a trembling all over his body, which laſted about as long as a *Miſerere*. What his Siſter had ſaid came freſh into my mind, but trying to turn it off with a jeſt, that I might not fright him, I cryed merrily, *Why how now, Sir, what's the matter? You mutter and make faces like a Jugler ſhewing his tricks. Come, come, let's divert our ſelves, and do not be melancholly. Let us alight and walk to get us a heat.* So the thing went off, and made no great impreſſion upon him: But I began to be under ſome apprehenſions, and had ſad preſages of this unhappy accident.

III. Next day, as we were ſitting by the fire after dinner, he, his Lady, and I, having all of us received Letters from *Paris*; *Come* (ſays he) *Monſieur* Pontis *ſhall read us his news firſt.* I needed no great entreaty, and read my Letters, which had nothing of any conſequence in them. Then he read his own, where there was no great matter neither. As his Lady was beginning hers, in which ſhe had all the Court-news, he had a mind to make himſelf merry, and turning to me, *Look you here* (ſays he) *you ſee how old Age is deſpiſed; no body regards us now, we are no ſooner out of ſight, but out of mind too. There's none of us, but my Wife in favour.* The Lady who was very reſerved, ſeem'd offended at a diſcourſe that reflected upon her modeſty, and clapt her Letter together again; *Nay, Sir* (ſaid ſhe) *if you talk thus, I will read you no news of mine I promiſe you: This to me is very fine.* He ſeeing her take it in earneſt, turn'd the diſcourſe, and engaging to hold his tongue, prevail'd with her to read her Letters. Then he ſaid, he muſt go write to his Brother, and ſhe having Letters to write too to ſome friends of hers, went with me out of his Chamber, and there we left him to write all alone.

Thus no doubt Providence order'd it, to ſave a Lady ſo very affectionate and vertuous as ſhe was, the being preſent at an accident, enough to have kill'd her too. I

was

was no ſooner gone down ſtairs, but meeting a Foot-boy, I bad him go into his Maſters Chamber, and ſee if he wanted any thing. He went up preſently, and the firſt thing he ſaw when he came in at the door, was his Maſter ſtretcht all along upon the floor, lying upon his back before the fire, with his hands croſs his ſtomach, and dead, as if he had lain there four and twenty hours. So ſurprizing a ſight frighted him extremely, and inſtead of going in, he ran away, and came to me in a perfect diſtraction, crying, *Sir, Sir, my Maſter is dead. Come quickly, for God's ſake, come quickly. What ſayſt thou Child?* (cryed I) *How! dead!* And running ſtrait to the Chamber as faſt as I could, I came in, and found the body in the poſture deſcribed juſt before. *Ah Lord God!* (ſaid I) *what a ſight's here?* Preſently the news flew round the houſe, and all the family came running in; nothing but ſighs, and groans, and tears to be ſeen or heard, and every one almoſt out of their ſenſes with the ſuddenneſs of the accident.

But one thing ſurpriz'd me above all the reſt, when I took a particular view of the body, which was, that exactly upon his two Ancle-bones there was a little burn, about the bigneſs of a Half-Crown, and as round as if it had been drawn with a pair of Compaſſes: His Shoes and Stockings on both Feet had a hole quite through them in this place, and the burn went into his Skin as deep as the thickneſs of a Six-pence. That which made it ſtill more amazing was, that his Feet lay a great diſtance from the fire, and I could not poſſibly deviſe how they ſhould come to be burnt that way. You may imagine what a conſternation the whole houſe was in: They ran about like people out of their wits: They brought Drugs upon Drugs, Cordial Waters, and all ſorts of Medicines, to make him take them. They heated Napkins, and rubb'd his Stomach with them, to try if there was any bringing him to himſelf, as if it had been a ſwooning fit. But all they could do was to no manner of purpoſe, for he was ſtark dead, and mov'd no more than a log.

By this time his Lady, who could not be kept long in ignorance, ran in an extreme paſſion into the chamber where the dead body lay. But I put my ſelf between, took her in my arms, and laid her upon the bed in her own room, with theſe words: *By your favour, Madam, this is no place for you, you can do no good here now, pray to God for his ſoul, he needs that moſt, and it is the greateſt kindneſs you can ſhew him.* The very ſame day, a little after this, the Chamber where the dead man lay took fire, in a beam under the Chimney. And the next day, which was that of his Funeral, the Chimney was on fire again, ſo that we were perpetually purſued with misfortunes, one upon the neck of another. I ordered all matters as well as I could, and ſo as to expreſs my reſpect due to the memory of the deceaſed perſon, taking care to bury him decently, though without any great ſolemnity.

IV. But ſuch an amazing death as this ſat cloſe upon my Spirits, and made ſtrange impreſſions upon me; it put me upon making very grave reflections upon the uncertainty of the preſent life, and how unſtable all things here below are. Thus I uſed to argue often with my ſelf: Why! this man was luſty and well but a quarter of an hour ago, and yet he is dead in an inſtant. What hinders but I may dye in as little a time as he? I then who am alive and well juſt now, perhaps may be gone a quarter of an hour hence. Ah poor wretch, what will become of thee then! What indeed can become of thee in this condition, ſo unprovided, ſo void of all thoughts of death? It is high time now to think of it to purpoſe. Perhaps Almighty God intends this death as a particular call and warning to thee. One thing I had from his Confeſſor's own mouth, which added to my wonder and aſtoniſhment ſtill more. For he told me, that one day as he was confeſſing, they both heard three loud knocks at the Chamber door. He roſe immediately to ſee who it was, but opening the door, found no body. When he was come back, and had put himſelf in a poſture to go on with his confeſſion, he heard a knocking again, ſtill louder than before. This made him riſe again to ſee who knockt ſo very violently, and finding no body the ſecond time, he cryed to his Confeſſor, *Ah, Father, this doth not concern you.* And accordingly he took it as ſent to him for a warning, and notice of his dying ſhortly after.

V. A very particular friend of his and mine, coming thither ſome few days after, I related to him all the circumſtances and manner of his death; and he, who was a perſon of great piety, took occaſion from thence, to diſcourſe me concerning the vanity of the world, and how perfect a nothing the moſt flouriſhing fortunes of it are; he

repreſented to me very lively, the frailty of mans life; how very quickly he is changed from a ſtate of vigour and perfect health, to a dead Carcaſs, and a cold Grave. To this purpoſe he diſcourſed with me above an hour together, and finding my mind already ſoftned and prepared by that ſurprizing accident, this conference affected me ſtill a great deal more, and I began to reſolve every day more and more, to diſengage my ſelf from the world for all together.

In order to it, I applied my ſelf to a perſon of great Piety and Learning for advice; who told me firſt of all, that a man who had ſpent all his days in a Camp and a Court, as I had done, ought to think very well before he attempt any ſuch thing. I anſwered, That my Converſation it was true had been very much to blame, but they were ſuch old Sinners as I, that ſtood in greateſt need of aſſiſtance. He in his great wiſdom replyed, That Jeſus Chriſt was come to call Sinners indeed, but it was highly neceſſary that I ſhould examine very thoroughly, whether this intention of withdrawing came from God; and whether I did not rather forſake the world in revenge, or in a peeviſh humour, becauſe the world had before begun to forſake me. That beſides, one who had taken ſome liberties, and converſed with people of quality, and great variety of company, would find it extremely difficult, if not abſolutely impoſſible, to undergo ſo great a change all on the ſudden, as that ſolitude I pretended to retire into would prove; that the beſt way would be to try to wean my ſelf by degrees, firſt live as privately as I could at my own houſe, keep home, and break off the cuſtom of making viſits, and going into company, and then ſpend ſome months in the Country, at ſome friends houſe. This advice I could not but allow was very prudent: And though I felt my ſelf very eager and impatient to take my leave of the world once for all, yet I took other meaſures, and followed his counſel.

I began to look back upon my paſt life, and could not without amazement reflect upon the ſix and fifty years which with ſo much eagerneſs I had ſpent in the Camp and Court, and all this to raiſe a trifling and tranſitory fortune, without taking any manner of care for another life; or having any effectual impreſſions made upon me by death, which I was ſo frequently put in mind of, by inſtances ſet before my Eyes in the Army every hour. I took a view of the many hazards and apparent dangers to which my life had been expoſed in all that time, ſome of which you have ſeen in theſe *Memoirs*; and then looking up to the infinite mercy of God, which had preſerved me from death a thouſand and a thouſand times, to give me an opportunity at laſt of working out my ſalvation, I felt my ſelf perfectly loſt in thought, and my mind oppreſt with the mighty, the many mercies of God to me, many as the moments of my life, for each moment I ſaw plainly might very well have been that of my death and utter ruine. Then I proceeded very ſeriouſly to compute, what benefit I had reaped of all my labours and long hardſhips, of all that ſervice which with ſo much fidelity and diligence I had paid, and eſpecially to my Maſter the late King. And here was a goodly account indeed. For I had devoted my ſelf entirely to a Prince, who I knew muſt dye, and when he did ſo, all I had left me was the ſorrow for his death, and the ſad conſideration of having loſt him for ever. This ſorrow then however gave me a clearer ſight, how good and merciful a Providence it was, that I ſhould out-live this Prince, for I am ſure the chains that tied me faſteſt to the Court, were broken at his death. And I found my ſelf much more at liberty, much better diſpoſed now to attend to the call of God in that ſurprizing death of my friend, which he made uſe of as a means to diſengage me perfectly from the world: The world which I had loved ſo paſſionately before, though it had made me ſo ill returns for my kindneſs.

VI. Being ſome months after upon a Journey from *Paris*, to ſpend ſome time in the Country, there happened an accident at *Melun*, juſt as I had done Supper, which gave me very great diſorder. I had ſent my Servant to look after my Horſes, and take care they wanted nothing, and as ſoon as he was gone out, a general weakneſs ſeized me all over, and ſuch a ſinking of my Spirits, that I thought I ſhould have dy'd immediately: Not being able to cry out, or call any body, I ſaid to my ſelf, *What! ſhall I be ſo miſerable to dye without any help? Perfect, O my God, the mercy thou haſt begun in me, and take me not away in this condition.* I was very ſtrong, conſidering my age, and ſo put my ſelf forth to riſe from my Chair, and ſtaggered along to the Bed-ſide, threw my Arms round one of the Bed-poſts, and there with buſtling about, and keeping my body in motion, with the bleſſing of God, I ſcattered the Vapours, that roſe, and had

like

like to have choak'd me. I took no notice of this to my Servant when he came in again, but only order'd my Bed to be warm'd, and went into it, and next morning went on my Journey, towards the place I intended for.

After ſome months ſpent in the Countrey, where, by reaſon of the frequent viſits of my friends, I found my way of living leſs private than in the Town; I came back to *Paris*, and addreſt my ſelf again to the ſame perſon I had conſulted before; and begg'd him to help, and take ſome care of me; aſſuring him, that my way of life was as yet nothing different in effect from what it had been formerly; and that in ſhort I found it neceſſary to take up ſtill more ſtrictly, and live after another kind of rate than I had hitherto done. After ſome diſcourſe together upon the matter, he adviſed me to take more time, and conſider of it a little longer ſtill. And thus he put me off from time to time, till at laſt the ſecond *Paris* War came on.

VII. Madam *Saint-Angel* had deſired me (being a relation) to go do a little buſineſs for her at her Eſtate of *Saint-Angel*; and there I preſently found my ſelf perplexed again with troubles that I never thought to be concerned in any more. For Mareſchal *Turenne*'s Army, who were guilty of very great diſorders in their way from *Bourdeaux*, ſurpriz'd me here ſo ſuddenly, that I had ſcarce any time to provide for my own defence. All the Court of *Saint-Angel* was immediately full of Cattel, and the Granaries fill'd with the wealth of all the Inhabitants thereabouts. Apprehending the Houſe was in danger of being plundered, I went to meet the Troops upon their march, and to try if I could find any of their Generals of my acquaintance at the head of them. The firſt I met was Mareſchal *Hoquincour*, whom I went and paid my reſpects to, and told him, that being accidentally in the Country at Monſieur *Saint-Ange*'s houſe, who had the honour to be known to him, having ſucceeded his Father in the office of Firſt *Maitre de Hotel* to the Queen; I came moſt humbly to intreat the favour of him, to take that houſe into his protection, and ſecure it from being plundered. Monſieur *Hoquincour* reply'd with an Oath, *How ſhould I ſecure Monſieur* St. Ange*'s houſe, when I could not ſecure one of my own, and above twenty more of my friends and relations that have been all rifled? There's no ſuch thing as diſcipline in this Army: The Souldiers are mad with perfect hunger, and are but ſo many Robbers. Sir*, ſaid I, *ſince they are Robbers, and hungry Wolves, you will not take it ill I hope, if we defend our ſelves, and kill as many of them as we can.* He anſwer'd me, *Do your beſt, in Gods name, defend your ſelves from their violence and rapine; and if you can keep them from plundering of* St. Ange *do.*

But I quickly ſaw what a folly it would be, to pretend to hold out with thirty or forty Souldiers, againſt ſo many Troops that might powr in upon the Houſe, and therefore reſolv'd to try ſome other way for ſecuring the Caſtle. I went to Monſieur *Vaubecourt*, *Mareſchal de Camp*, who was a friend of mine, and deſir'd his aſſiſtance in this difficult point; but he gave me no better ſatisfaction than Monſieur *Hoquincour* had done before; For he told me, he was very ſorry to ſee me ſo unluckily engag'd; and aſſur'd me, there was never an Officer in the Army could ſecure me from plundering. *However* (ſaid he) *I will give you ſome of my Guards if you pleaſe; tho I muſt tell you beforehand too, that I gave a Gentleman, who made the ſame requeſt, two of them yeſterday, and yet his houſe was pillaged, and both my Guards knockt on the head.*

Juſt then Monſieur *Turenne* went by about forty paces off, and knowing me at that diſtance, call'd me to him, and askt me what made me there; raillying me for my paltry equipage, for in truth I had a raſcally Horſe under me, and not ſo much as a Bridle on him, for I could not come at my own, it being lockt up in the Caſtle, the Draw-bridge to which I had ordered to be broken down. I anſwered Monſieur *Turenne*, that I happen'd to be at Monſieur *St. Ange*'s houſe, and was much diſtreſſed for the paſſage of his Army. He had ſhew'd me great kindneſs all along, ever ſince I had the honour to be acquainted with him, and his Brother Monſieur *Bouillon*, at the Prince of *Orange*'s Court, who was their Unkle, and who (as I obſerved formerly) was exceeding gracious to me. So he offer'd me his ſervice immediately, and askt what he could do for me. I told him, if he would favour me with three Regiments, I would poſt them at three Mills hard by, and by that means I ſhould at once ſave the Caſtle, and do the Army ſervice, by taking care that they ſhould have a good quantity of Meal and Bread. Monſieur *Turenne* embraced my propoſal preſently, and told me he was very glad of it, for proviſions were ſcarce with them; and entreated me, that ſince I was well acquainted with the Country, I would ſet the Guards of the Army in the moſt convenient places. I did ſo very willingly,

willingly, but firſt took the Regiments of *Turenne*, *Vxelles*, and the *Marine*, and ſet them about five hundred paces from the Caſtle, to block up the avenues. I choſe to keep them at this diſtance, for fear the very men I ſet to guard the houſe, ſhould be the firſt to rob it. Then I went to ſet the *Corps de Garde* for the Army, in the places where the Enemy might advance; and having appointed five hundred *German* Horſe a very forward poſt, the Commander began to ſwear in his own tongue, and ſaid, They perceived I knew where to ſet them to be knockt on the head. Tho I did not underſtand the language he ſpoke, yet I eaſily gueſt his meaning, and without taking any notice, ordered a thouſand Foot to ſuſtain thoſe five hundred Horſe, and three hundred Horſe more to ſupport them again, with the ſame number upon both Wings; which preſently won me the Collonels favour, inſomuch that he came and gave me his hand, and proffer'd to do me any ſervice.

VIII. When I had diſcharged my truſt, and ſet all the Guards and Centinels upon a little River juſt by, I went back to the Caſtle with an Officer, whom with ſome others I invited to ſupper. But was told to my great ſurprize, that the Souldiers were come on the backſide of the houſe, and had made a breach already in the Wall of the Baſe-Court, which they were upon entring at. I was enraged to ſee that all my meaſures were broken, and all my care to no purpoſe, and that the three Regiments had not begirt the Caſtle quite round, as I gave order they ſhould. In this paſſion, not knowing what to reſolve, I took this courſe at laſt. I told the Officer with me, it was to no purpoſe to undertake the beating off thoſe men, with a few Firelocks in the Caſtle; and therefore if any thing could, Authority, and not Oppoſition muſt do the work. *I know a little back door* (ſaid I) *which we muſt go through, and ſo go ſtrait into the breach. Pray be ſo kind to follow me, and be pleaſed to do as you ſee me do.*

So through this door we went, and directly to the place where the Souldiers had made a large paſſage, and running upon them with my Cane in my hand; *How Raſcals* (cryed I) *what do you think to play the Rogue here, while the Enemy are forcing the Quarter?* And ſo laying on as hard as I could about their pates, and then puſhing them with the flat of my Sword, we alarm'd them ſo effectually, that they never attempted to defend themſelves, but to make their eſcape, and recover their Quarter. This was the only way that could have been taken to manage theſe Rake-hells; and while their principal Officers acknowledged their own ſelves, that they could not maſter them; and by their want of Authority ſuffered the greateſt diſorders, and outrages to paſs without controul; I found out a means to ſhew them by this inſtance, how they ought to preſerve their Authority upon ſuch like occaſions. Some of them telling me, they wondred how I durſt uſe ſuch an arbitrary method over Troops which were not under my command; I told them again very freely, That I had commanded long enough to make Souldiers obey me; and had at any time rather quit my Commiſſion, than endure to ſee my ſelf maſtered by thoſe that ought to ſubmit to me. That ſeeing no other way to get clear of the difficulty I was in, I had without any great conſideration pitch'd upon this; and that at ſuch times a man muſt venture all, and reduce all that experience hath taught him into practice. Afterwards I ſent Monſieur *Turenne* nine Veals for his own Table, and made him ſome other preſents in acknowledgment of his civility to me. I took care likewiſe to provide the Army with Meal and Bread, according to my promiſe. And the Troops decamping from thence two days after, I went back to *Paris* ſhortly after, not caring to engage any more in troubles of this kind, but purſuing my deſign of retiring from the world.

IX. This was in the time of the ſecond *Paris* War, when it was reported that the Prince intended to attack it with his Army, and to come in at one of the Suburbs. Being then at a houſe in that part of the Suburbs, I ſaw every body in a terrible conſternation. I told them, provided they would keep cloſe in their own houſes, there could be no danger; for the Gates were too ſtrong to be eaſily forced, and all they had to do was to defend their own dwellings. But when the Enemy ſhould enter the place, they ſhould ſatisfy themſelves as the Souldiers made any hole in the Gates to clap in a Plank, as their way is at Sea, when a Gun hath made a breach in a Ship. For as there, all their care is to keep out the water, and prevent the Veſſels ſinking; ſo, when an Army powrs in upon any place, the main buſineſs is to hinder the Souldiers

diers from getting into their houſes, for ſo long as they are in the ſtreets, the Officers allow them no leiſure to do miſchief, becauſe it is neceſſary to advance as faſt as they can.

At laſt, after a great many hindrances, I was happy in an opportunity of ſhaking off buſineſs and the world, and withdrawing into a religious ſolitude; where I recollect all the accidents of my life, the hazards and dangers I have got over, and bleſs and thank God every day, for the ſignal and unuſual favour of preſerving theſe little remains of life, for the bewailing and atoning for my former miſcarriages. One of the greateſt advantages of my retreat was, the more free enjoyment of Monſieur *d' Andilly*'s converſation, and the particular friendſhip he honoured me with. He was the fitteſt perſon that could be to take off all reliſh of worldly pleaſure from me, for no body better knew the vanity of it. He was there at the ſame time, but after a very different manner. For in the midſt of all that vaſt eſteem due to his great worth, he had kept a mind lifted above ambition, ſuch as would never ſuffer him to devote himſelf to any Maſter leſs than God, and always ſhewed a generous contempt of the world, even when moſt loved and courted by it. But for my part, I muſt own, I had been a Slave to it all along, had undergone real evils in hopes of an imaginary happineſs; had purſued a falſe and treacherous fortune that always fled from me, and the vain ſatisfaction which I ſought, would have made me but more unhappy ſtill in the poſſeſſion of it.

This ſingle pattern of Monſieur *Andilly*'s life both paſt and preſent was a continual leſſon to me. I often admired his management of himſelf at Court; and knew, that having ſeveral times diſcourſed the King in private upon very nice points, and once particularly concerning Duels, he delivered his opinion to him with ſo much freedom, and at the ſame time with ſo much prudence and caution too; that his Majeſty heard him with great ſatisfaction. And, after telling him that he did ſo, commanded, that when ever he had any advice of that kind to offer, he ſhould deſire a private and particular audience, and ſhould be ſure to have it.

It is with great pleaſure that I call to mind ſo wiſe and good a temper in my Maſter, the late King, which though very neceſſary, is not yet very common in Princes. For they are beſet with a company of people, who generally make it their buſineſs only to pleaſe and flatter them. And if ſome one by chance, out of a ſincere zeal and reſpect, hath the boldneſs to tell honeſt truth, it is very ſeldom that this advantage is made uſe of, or the perſon eſteemed, as he really deſerves.

I have frequently diſcourſed Monſieur *Andilly*, about the excellent qualities of this Prince, which he was a witneſs of as well as I, and among others, of one piece of good nature peculiar to him; and that was, when any Mother applyed to him in behalf of her Son, or any Wife for her Husband, though their paſſion ſometimes ſhewed it ſelf in their expreſſions, and carryed them beyond the reſpect due to him, he never took notice of it, but received all they ſaid with great ſweetneſs and compaſſion. And if any of thoſe about him were offended at ſuch diſreſpectful behaviour, he would preſently ſay, *Alas! You muſt conſider, it is a Mother or a Wife that ſpeaks, and the concern of a Husband or a Child is ſo tender, that if we cannot relieve them, yet the leaſt we can do, is to hear and to pity them.*

I am obliged to Monſieur *Andilly* for one thing particularly, which I cannot omit mentioning in this place, and I value it the more, becauſe I hope to find it a great comfort at my laſt hour, and an earneſt of Gods mercy to me in another world.

I had the Government of a ſmall place in *Dauphine*, which I had a mind to quit, and could get but a very ſmall conſideration for it. But a *Hugonot* Gentleman having adviſed with ſome of his own perſwaſion, and conſidering, that in caſe of any Civil War, if they were Maſters of this Town, they might by vertue of that, command all the Valley in which it ſtood, (which would be of great conſequence too, in regard of all the Country thereabouts) he deſired me to part with this Government to no body but him, promiſing to give me my own price for it. I ſhould have thought ſeven or eight thouſand Livres a pretty good bargain, but upon diſcourſe he told me at laſt, that rather than go without it, he would give fifty thouſand.

I confeſs this was ſome temptation to me: The remembrance of my paſt loſſes, the years I was now grown into; an age, when a man is always too fond of what he hath, and too fearful of loſing it, and too greedy of what one hath not, made me of opinion, that nothing could be more natural, than to accept ſuch a propoſal, eſpecially when it offered it ſelf without my ſeeking, and was ſo very convenient for me.

As to any caſe of Conſcience in it, I was ſatisfy'd, that if I were diſpoſed to conſult thoſe who give rules in ſuch matters, I ſhould find enough who would determine it in favour of my own opinion; and tell me, that as long as there was no preſent viſible inconvenience in the Sale, and that I lookt at nothing farther than a good valuable conſideration, which was freely offer'd to me, I need only take care of the Money, and leave the event to God, without troubling my ſelf with ſcruples about things, which perhaps might never come to paſs.

But upon conferring with Monſieur *Andilly* upon the matter, I was ſo affected with the generous and Chriſtian notions, that his pious diſcourſe infuſed into me, as to make me inflexible by any other conſiderations. For he convinced me plainly, that the chief rule for deciding Caſes of Conſcience, is to conſult the integrity of a mans own heart above any thing elſe, and do nothing but what one can fairly anſwer to ones own Conſcience. And if I aim'd at this only, I ſhould eaſily ſee, that ſince the *Hugonots* proffer'd more for this place by forty thouſand Livres than it was really worth, this muſt be done upon a proſpect, that at one time or other it might be of ſome ſervice to them againſt the Catholick party; and then it was plain, I could not put it into their hands, without betraying the intereſt of my Religion, and the Crown, for the ſake of my own private advantage. And that, if I would ſhew my ſelf as true to God, as I had done to the late King, I ſhould expreſs my fidelity upon this occaſion, and take a pleaſure in preferring his glory before any thing elſe.

I yielded preſently to theſe reaſons, which I found agreeable to the ſenſe of ſeveral very learned perſons beſides: Poſſibly the infinite mercy of God may remember me one day for this action. Tho I look upon it as meer chaff and nothing, in compariſon of the miſdemeanours of ſix and fifty years ſpent in the Wars, and at Court, which I ought to dread, as vaſt Mountains capable of overwhelming me at the day of Judgment; and ſhould do ſo, if he had not given us his own word, that when we have ſincerely endeavoured to give him ſatisfaction in this Life, his Mercy ſhall ſet us above his Juſtice in the next.

In this ſolitude I feel daily the pleaſure of living in a holy quiet, and remote from the clutter and vanity of the world, without any other buſineſs than to prepare for death, to make ſatisfaction to God for my ſins, and in ſome meaſure make up the loſs of ſo many paſt years. Now my own experience hath taught me, how much more eaſie and gentle the yoke of my Saviour is, than that of the World; how many charms Retirement hath more than Buſineſs; and how much even that bitterneſs and hardſhip undergone by me, in the different employments of a laborious life, contributes to the recommending the ſeveral exerciſes of a ſolitary and religious life. And now, when I compare the ſervice I have paid to ſeveral Kings, with that which I endeavour to pay at preſent to the King of Kings; and conſider the infinite diſtance between Him and the greateſt Princes; and the ineſtimable happineſs, which beyond all humane appearance, I have attained, to know the greatneſs and Glory of God, I could employ my ſelf continually in repeating that Hymn in the daily Prayers of the Church; *Now to the King Eternal, the immortal, inviſible, and only wiſe God, be honour and glory for ever and ever, Amen.* And ſince (as I ſaid) the thoughts of death at preſent wholly entertain my thoughts, I have taken for my Motto in this retirement, the following Verſes, given me by a friend of mine.

From Courts and Camps, to peaceful ſhades retire,
My Soul; ſcorn vain, and to true Joys aſpire:
Hence to thy Heaven, wing'd with devotion, fly;
Who would for ever live, muſt learn betimes to dye.

This gallant Souldier after his retirement liv'd with wonderful ſimplicity, and renounc'd all the notions of his own judgment, tho that were very great; ſubmitting himſelf entirely to the directions of a perſon, whom he choſe to guide him in the methods of this new life, upon which he had now entred. He was ſenſible what difference there is between God and the World; and wiſely concluded, that his experience of the one might be a prejudice and hinderance to him in the ſervice of the other. Therefore looking upon himſelf as one that ſtood in need of a Governour, he ſhew'd himſelf ſo eaſie and ſo tractable, as plainly proved, he had brought his mind into a perfect and abſolute ſubjection to God.

After

After his retreat, he had ſeveral tryals, and particularly in point of loſſes, as himſelf hinted, which did but teach him better to diſengage his affections from the riches of this world. Particularly the loſs of fourſcore thouſand Livres at once, by the breaking of one, who had his Money in his hands. This muſt needs be the more ſenſible affliction, becauſe it was the greateſt part of what he had drudged for ſix and fifty years together: And all the world values that more, that is of their own getting, than that which coſt them no pains, or deſcends to them by inheritance. And beſides, his generous nature always made him dread the being burdenſome to his friends, (as ſeveral paſſages in his *Memoirs* ſhew) and this very temper it was, that kept him back from the higheſt preferments. But, which is a further commendation of his worth in this reſpect, this very fear, which this loſs, and ſome others that threatned him, gave ſo juſt occaſion for, could not prevail with him to accept a conſiderable ſumm for his Government in *Dauphine*, when he was told it could not be taken without injuring his Conſcience. From whence we may well conclude, that tho he expreſt ſome diſſatisfaction upon occaſions concerning his Eſtate, and the wants he was reduced to, yet he at laſt ſubmitted all that worldly Wiſdom, to the ſtricteſt rules of Religion, and diſintereſted Piety.

In the beginning of his retreat, he happen'd into a very dangerous buſineſs; by which Providence ſure intended to ſhew what he was, to ſuch as did not yet know him throughly; that after having been Eye-witneſſes of his great courage, preſence of mind, and wiſe conduct, they might be the more edified by that great change, which they ſaw had brought down ſo great a Soul, and prevailed with ſo much Wiſdom to be govern'd by the directions of another. A perſon of quality being upon a Journey into the Country, in the time of the ſecond *Paris* War, deſir'd him and ſome other friends to bear him company, becauſe the Countrey was full of Troops, and parties of Souldiers. One of the company, with more heat than diſcretion, and utterly unskilful in all matters relating to War, ſeeing ſome Horſe-men upon the Road a good way off, ſpurr'd on, and without ſaying one word to any of his own company, rode full ſpeed up to them, crying, *Who are you for? Who are you for?* A Cornet of Horſe that was there, who underſtood the trade a great deal better, preſented his Muſquetoon, and cry'd, *Nay, who are you for? Come on, alight, and down with your arms.* The Gentleman, much confounded, that he had advanc'd too far, and left thoſe at a diſtance that ſhould have born him out, and not uſed to fire and fighting, was lighting from his Horſe; but both being in a paſſion, the quarrel grew ſo hot, that the Cornet was juſt going to let fly his Muſquetoon at him.

The Sieur *de Pontis*, who aſſoon as ever he ſaw this Gentleman ride off from his company ſo madly, gueſt what would happen, and ſaid to a perſon of quality that rode near him, *Yonder is one going to make both us and himſelf more trouble than he is aware of.* And immediately he, and the perſon to whom he ſpoke ſpurred on. He found the Cornet juſt ready to ſhoot, and bore up ſo briskly to him, that before he could diſcover him, or defend himſelf, with fire in his eyes he cryed out all on the ſudden, *Down with your arms, you Sir.* This Cornet, as much ſurprized then, as the Gentleman was before, preſently lower'd his Muſquetoon, and ſaid, *Ay Sir, with all my heart; I ſee you underſtand your buſineſs; but this Gentleman thinks to ſwagger, and knows nothing of the matter.* All this was over in an inſtant, by reaſon of the mighty haſte the Sieur *de Pontis* made, who by this means ſav'd the lives of ſeveral perſons; for if the Cornet had ſhot, no doubt a great deal of miſchief had follow'd; whereas now, all the diſorder was quieted, and preſently the Sieur *de Pontis* found a friend of his, among thoſe that were in company with the Cornet, and went and embrac'd him, asking a thouſand pardons for the Gentleman, that had begun the quarrel ſo indiſcreetly. And the two acquaintance, after ſeveral compliments and expreſſions of kindneſs on both ſides, drew off their company, and went each his own way; and had after this a very quiet and proſperous Journey.

From this ſingle action, when he was threeſcore and ten or twelve years old, worn with the hardſhips of War, and full of wounds and ſcars, one may make a judgment how vigorous he was in the youth and flower of his age; and what reaſon Cardinal *Richelieu* had to court ſo gallant a man over to his party, conſidering the continual fears he had of his Enemies, which all the world knows were very many, and very powerful.

Beſides, the Sieur *de Pontis* had ſo great a reputation in the world, not only for Courage, but for Wiſdom and Experience in all matters, and punctilio's relating to War,

War, that ſeveral years after his retirement, there happening a great quarrel to ariſe in the Regiment of Guards, between the Lieutenants and the Captains, upon ſome diſpute concerning their particular Commands, the former came in a body, and begg'd Monſieur *Pontis*, as a man whoſe great knowledge and experience they were content to abide by, to mediate, and decide the Controverſie between them. And tho the retired life he had now engaged in, made him a ſtranger at preſent to all buſineſs of this nature, yet the poſture of their affairs would not allow him to refuſe it, and he applyed himſelf to this accommodation with ſo much greater ſucceſs, in regard that his integrity, and religious life, and his great age and experience, added weight to all his determinations, and procured him more authority and eſteem. So after a prudent management of this diſpute, and frequent conferences with the Officers principally concerned, he inclined both ſides to agree upon reaſonable terms, and ſettled a very good correſpondence between them all again.

Whoever hath read theſe *Memoirs*, no doubt will be very well ſatisfied, that the Sieur *de Pontis* was not only a perſon of great valour and conduct, and capable of taking up quarrels by his prudence, but alſo of fitting young Gentlemen for the world, and giving them good inſtructions for the behaving themſelves wiſely and honourably, which people of quality commonly learn too late, at their own coſt, and after having made abundance of falſe ſteps. Nor can it ſeem ſtrange, if after a long experience of the hardſhips and pleaſures of the world, and both by his own, and a great many other peoples example, having diſcerned the excellencies and the defects of the different ages of man, the vices moſt peculiar to their ſeveral conditions, and the dangers incident to their ſeveral ſtations both in Courts and Camps, he was able to teach others, who had ſeen leſs of the world than himſelf had done. This induced a Gentleman of his acquaintance, who had the care of two young Noblemen at Court, to conſult him in his retirement, and beg the aſſiſtance of his advice for the diſcharge of that employment. And though his modeſty made him think himſelf leſs qualified to graitfy this requeſt, eſpecially when he was now in a manner quite out of the world, and above fourſcore years old, and being a man, that had made arms more his buſineſs, than writing or ſtudy; yet there appear ſeveral excellent ſtrokes in his anſwer, many very uſeful and wiſe obſervations, which I ſuppoſe the Reader would be well pleaſed to ſee in his own words, and therefore I have thought fit here to inſert this Letter at large, as he wrote it to his Friend.

The Sieur *de Pontis* his Letter to a Governour of two young Noblemen at Court.

SIR,

IF I were in any degree leſs your Servant, than I really am, it were very eaſy to have excuſed my ſelf, from that proof of being ſo, which you now deſire of me; for I ſhould have made no ſcruple to own to ſo good a friend as you, that my great age hath put it out of my power to give you ſatisfaction, ſince even my Experience is almoſt quite loſt and gone, and all that is left of that, is only the few Ideas of what hath paſt over moſt frequently, and made the deepeſt impreſſion upon my memory. This is all I am able to preſent you with, and ſhall think my ſelf very happy, if any part of it may be of uſe to you; Tho it were too great a preſumption to hope this, in me, who knows with what wiſdom and diſcretion you educate the young Gentlemen committed to your care; and therefore I have great reaſon to look upon your deſires of my advice, rather as a complement, and an effect of your great civility to me, than any argument that you really ſtand in need of any ſuch thing.

However, in obedience to your commands, I ſhall take my uſual freedom in declaring my opinion ſincerely, ſince you profeſs ſome want of directions, how to carry your ſelf to theſe Gentlemen, with regard to the age they are growing into, in an eaſy and gentle way, according as you find their temper and inclinations; to moderate their paſſions and deſires, without rigorous and rough

rough methods; ſo as that you may keep up a fair character and continue acceptable, both with them, and my Lord their Father, and all their Relations of quality, that are but too fond, and ſeem to adore them. In good earneſt, I do not only lament, but bear a part my ſelf in your difficulty and trouble; for indeed you have a great many people to ſatisfy, a great many faults and defects to amend, and a great many different parts to act, in order to the diſcharging this truſt with credit and ſucceſs.

And firſt of all, I muſt freely confeſs to you, that I never could approve the opinion of thoſe people, that are againſt their Childrens having any more Learning, than juſt ſo much as is neceſſary for a Gentleman (as they are pleaſed to expreſs it) For ſince Knowledge is the beſt finiſher of humane nature, that which teaches men to reaſon right, and to ſpeak gracefully in publick; what can be neceſſary, if this be not, to thoſe perſons whoſe Birth and Employments, and Station in the world put them in ſuch circumſtances, as have moſt frequent occaſions to exert theſe accompliſhments?

I know ſome are of opinion too, that the converſation of vertuous and witty Ladies, polliſhes the mind of a young Gentleman, and gives it a finer turn, than the company of a Man of Learning. But I muſt beg leave to diſſent in this particular too, and dare not adviſe to ſuch converſation, for fear of the many miſchievous conſequences that often attend it, and that Youth finds it ſelf inſenſibly engaged in.

Not but that there ought a great difference to be made, betwixt one who is deſigned to make the Gown his profeſſion, and one that is to be educated to make a Gentleman and a Souldier. The former ought to make ſtudy the buſineſs of his whole Life; the other need only follow it, till ſome fifteen or ſixteen years old, ſo as to get ſome knowledge of Philoſophy, of ancient and modern Hiſtory, and the main rules of Politicks, and ſo as to manage himſelf regularly, and converſe with people of ſeveral qualities, as becomes him.

When this is over, it were fit he went into the Academy to learn to ride, and ſhoot, and vault, and dance; theſe exerciſes will give him a genteel and good behaviour, they will teach him to carry his body ſtraight, to walk gracefully, with a manly and noble mein; to hold up his head, have a ſteady look, a pleaſing countenance, full of civility, always obliging, but without any affectation or conſtraint. There too he will learn Mathematicks, ſo far as may ſerve to qualify him for Fortification, the attacking or defending of Towns, the diſcovering where Works are defective, and how they may be amended; all which (with the addition of your help) may be learnt ſufficiently in two or three years time. In my opinion, their failings in theſe exerciſes that are of leſs conſequence, ſhould be left to the correction of the Maſter, whoſe buſineſs it is to teach them. But if they contract any ill habit beſides, you will do well to make them ſenſible of it in private. For by dealing thus tenderly with them, their love and reſpect for you will be the better preſerved and increaſed.

After they leave the Academy, I ſhould adviſe their going abroad into forreign Kingdoms to learn their Languages, obſerve their different Cuſtoms and Governments, and entertain themſelves with a ſight of the moſt remarkable Curioſities to be met with abroad; and, as a help to their memory in all theſe things, it were fit they made a Diary of their Travels. But pray be ſure you never entertain them with any thing, but what is becoming a man of honour and a Chriſtian; that you may excite in them ſtrong deſires to practice and imitate ſuch actions as theſe, and may create an irreconcileable averſion to every thing that is baſe and low, and diſhonourable. But the main point of all, is to make them ſenſible, that the trueſt and beſt way of ſecuring honour to one's ſelf, is the paying Almighty God the honour due to him; who always diſtributes

his mercies largely, to those that live in his fear and love. To preserve this opinion in them, you must use great dexterity, in keeping them from all kinds of bad company, but especially from the conversation of lewd and profane wretches, who are the bane of young men, that are setting up for some credit in the world. But this is a very nice and tender, and will require a great deal of good management, so as at once to gain your point, and yet to lose no ground in their kindness and esteem for you.

You must take special care never to check their passions by authority, and too magisterial a way, nor by correcting them too sharply; but be sure to shew the reasons why you reprove them, chide them with modesty and civility, and satisfie your self with soft methods to bring them into temper. For you are to consider, that some passions are not faulty, nay some are convenient for a man of Quality; such is Ambition in particular, when it puts them forward to follow the Example of my Lord Marcschal their Grand-father; a person that signalized himself upon so many eminent occasions and brave exploits, while he was General to the Kings Armies for many years both at home and abroad; that the King had so high a value for him, and the world so great an opinian of his Courage, that he hath at this very time among most forreigners, the general reputation of one of the greatest and best Commanders of this age.

Some other passions there are so furious and violent, that it is impossible to compose them in a trice, as we see in the case of Anger, and sudden sallies of the Soul. But these are a sort of madness for the time, too strong to last long; and all that can be done in such cases, is to calm and cool them by degrees: For opposition does not abate, but increase their fury, and inclines men to be peremptory and restiff; which by degrees would lessen your credit with them, and lose all the regard they have for you.

You must find a mean for them between a bold indifference, and a timorous bashfulness; and teach them the just differences both between persons and things; what respects are due to persons of quality, and worth, and how they ought to be addressed to; a formal excessive Complement being no less ridiculous an extreme on the one hand, than a Clownish roughness is offensive on the other.

If any sudden misfortune bring them into the inconveniences and hazards so common to Gentlemen now adays, your wisdom must shew it self in taking up the quarrel speedily, by endeavouring to reconcile them through the mediation of Friends, and fetching them honourably off from the ill consequences that attend such quarrels. Your care and good management upon such occasions as these, will above any thing in the world secure you a great deal of honour and reputation, both from my Lord their Father, and all the Families to whom they are related.

Sir, I could enlarge yet more, were I not sensible, that by this time I must needs have convinced you, by what I have taken the liberty to say already, that it is not possible for me to advise any thing, which you do not know much better your self. However, I beg you would look upon this Letter, as a proof of the inclination I have to serve you; and my wishes, that I were capable of doing it; and of my readiness to express to you, that I am most sincerely

Yours, &c.

I do not pretend here to any Encomium of the Sieur *de Pontis* his piety, who was so modest after his leaving the world, as never to account himself any better than an old sinner, to whom silence, and solitude, and a life that shut him up from Conversation, were given as his portion; and therefore I shall so far comply with his disposition in this particular, as to add only one thing, which he would often say to an intimate friend of his; That the thing he most dreaded in the service he endeavoured to pay Almighty God, was lest he should insensibly grow fond, and take up with this

life,

life, and not ſufficiently contemplate the greatneſs of Him he had the honour to ſerve. And theſe apprehenſions were the more reaſonable in him, becauſe upon continual remembrances of that extraordinary zeal, ſhewn in all his long hard ſervice to his Maſter the late King, he might find ſome ground to ſuſpect himſelf leſs zealous, where yet the ſervice was infinitely better, and the Maſter incomparably greater. He lived about eighteen or twenty years after his Retirement, and at laſt fell into a very weak and languiſhing condition; and Nature was ſo far decayed, that after his firſt voluntary retreat from the Court and company, he fell into a more ſtrict one the two laſt years of his life, being loſt to all converſation with men, by his extreme deafneſs; and ſo finding himſelf under ſome neceſſity of entertaining himſelf chiefly with Almighty God.

He dyed in the year of our Lord 1670, and of his own age the ninety ſecond; when Nature could laſt no longer, but was forced to ſink under ſo many years, and ſo many hardſhips and ſhocks, which he had undergone in ſeveral Wars, for a long time together. I cannot ſuffer my ſelf to doubt, but upon the peruſal of theſe *Memoirs*, and conſidering the many dangers, the croſs accidents, and uncommon events, which he was exerciſed with, every body will be of opinion, that there are ſome things very ſurprizing and wonderful, and the marks of a particular providence with regard to him; and that the publiſhing this account may be of great uſe, ſince ſo many things are contained in it, capable of doing good to thoſe that are about engaging in the affairs of the world, to them that are already engaged, and to them too who have diſengaged themſelves from it. For all theſe may learn from this Example of a Souldier, one that had long experience of all the different conditions that could happen to him, both in the Court, and in the Camp, that nothing was ever more true than that obſervation of the wiſeſt Prince that ever lived; *Vanity of vanities, all is vanity, except the fear of God, and the keeping of his Commandments.*

FINIS.

BOOKS Sold by *James Knapton* at the *Crown* in *St. Paul's* Church-yard.

THE Memoirs of Monſieur *de Pontis*, who ſerved in the *French* Army 56 years, under *Henry* IV. *Lewis* XIII. and *Lewis* XIV. Kings of *France*, containing many remarkable Paſſages relating to the War, the Court, and the Government of thoſe Princes. Faithfully engliſhed at the Requeſt of his Grace the Duke of *Ormond*. By *Charles Cotton* Eſq; *Fol.*

Lord *Bacon's* Eſſays. *Octavo.*

Scrivener's Directions to a holy Life. *Oct.*

Dr. *Barrow* of Contentment, *&c. Oct.*

Sir *William Temple's* Memoirs of what paſt in *Chriſtendom* from the War in 1672. to the Peace concluded 1679. *Octavo, Second Edition.*

——His Obſervations upon *Holland.*

——His Miſcellanies. *Two Parts.*

Dr. *Tillotſon's* Sermons. *Three Volumes.*

——Four Sermons againſt the *Socinians.*

The Unreaſonableneſs of Mens Contentions for the preſent Enjoyments, in a Poem on *Eccleſiaſtes.*

The Hiſtory of the Inquiſition, as it is exercis'd at *Goa.* Written by Mr. *Dellon*, who labour'd five years under its Severities, with an account of his deliverance.

Quadraenium Jacobi, or the Hiſtory of the Reign of King *James* II. from his coming to the Crown, to his Deſertion *The ſecond Edition. Twelves.*

Plutarch's Lives. Tranſlated by ſeveral Hands. 5 *Vol.*

——His Morals. 5 *Vol.*

The Life of the Emperour *Theodoſius.* Done into *Engliſh*, from the *French* of Monſieur *Flechier*, by *Fr. Manning. Octav.*

Kilburn's Preſidents. *Twelves.*

Seneca's Morals. By Sir *R. L'Eſtrange.*

Norris's Diſcourſes. 3 *Vol.*

Reform'd Devotions.

Caſar in uſum Delphini.

Proceſſus integri in Morbis fere omnibus curandis a D°. Tho. Sydenham *conſcripti.*

A learned Treatiſe of the Situation of the Terreſtrial Paradiſe. Written in *French* by *Huetius*, and tranſlated into *Engliſh* by direction of Dr. *Gale.*

Cole's Engliſh and *Latin* Dictionary.

Robertſon's, or the *Cambridge* Phraſe, being the beſt and largeſt Phraſe-Book extant.

Scarron's Novels.

The Governour of *Cyprus.*

The wanton Fryar. *Two Parts.*

Victoriæ Anglicanæ, or an Account of ſeveral Victories obtain'd by the *Engliſh* againſt the *French.*

POETRY

POETRY and PLAYS.

BEN *Johnſon's* Works newly reprinted.
Sir *Robert Howard's* Plays.
Milton's Paradiſe loſt, with Cuts.
Dryden's Juvenal.
——— Miſcellany Poems. *Three Parts.*
Ovid's Epiſtles. By ſeveral Hands.
Waller's Poems. *Oldham's* Poems.
Cleveland's Poems. *Dennis's* Poems.
Hudibras, Three Parts, compleat.

Mr. *Dryden's* Plays bound or ſingle, *viz.*

1 Dramatick Eſſay
1 Wild Gallant
3 Rival Ladies
4 *Indian* Emperour
5 Maiden Queen
6 *Sir Martin Marr-all*
7 Tempeſt.
8 Mock-Aſtrologer
9 Tyrannick Love
10 Conq. of *Granada*
11 Marriage Alam.
12 Love in a Nunn.
13 *Amboyna*
14 State of Innocen.
15 *Aurang-Zebe*
16 All for Love
17 *Limberham*
18 *Oedipus*
19 *Troilus* and *Creſſida*
20 *Spaniſh* Fryar
21 Duke of *Guiſe*
22 *Albion* & *Albanius*
23 *Don Sebaſtian*
24 *Amphytrion*
25 King *Arthur*
26 *Cleomenes*

Mr. *Shadwell's* Plays bound or ſingle, *viz.*

1 Sullen Lovers
2 Humouriſt
3 Royal Shepherdeſs
4 *Virtuoſo*
5 *Pſycho*
6 Libertine
7 *Epſom* Wells
8 *Timon* of *Athens*
9 Miſer
10 True Widow
11 *Lancaſhire* Witch.
12 Woman Captain
13 Squire of *Alſatia*
14 *Bury* Fair
15 Amorous Biggot
16 Scowrers
17 Volunteers

Alſo his Odes to the King and Queen.

Mr. *Lee's* Tragedies bound or ſingle, *viz.*

1 *Sophonisba*
2 *Nero*
3 *Gloriana*
4 *Alexand.* the Great
5 *Mithridates*
6 *Theodoſius*
7 *Cæſar Borgia*
8 *Lucius Junius Brutus*
9 *Conſtantine*
10 *Oedipus*
11 Duke of *Guiſe*
12 Maſſacre of *Paris*
13 Princeſs of *Cleve*

Mr. *Otways* Plays bound or ſingle, *viz.*

1 *Alcibiades*
2 Friendſh. in faſh.
3 Orphan
4 Souldiers Fortune
5 Second Part of the Souldiers Fortune
6 *Titus* and *Berenice*
7 *Venice* preſer'vd
8 *Don Carlos*
9 *Caius Marius*
10 *Windſor* Caſtle, a Poem.

Alſo theſe, and moſt other Modern Plays.

Mr. *Anthony*
Abdelazer
Bellamira
Country Wit
Circe
Chances
Cambyſes
Country Wife
Cheats
City Politiques
Deſtruct. of *Jeruſalem*
Duke and no Duke
Devil of a Wife
Diſtreſſed Innocence
Empreſs of *Morocco*
Earl of *Eſſex*
Engliſh Monarch
Engliſh Fryar
Edward the third
Emper. of the Moon
Fond Husband
Feign'd Courtizans
Forc't Marriage
Female *Virtuoſo*
Gentlem. danc. Maſt.
Henry V. and *Muſtaph.*
Heir of *Morocco*
Fortune Hunters
Ibrahim
Iſland Princeſs
Ingratit. of a Commonwealth.
Julius Cæſar
Injur'd Lovers
Innocent Impoſtor
Innocent Uſurper
King and No King
King *Lear*
Love in a Tub
London Cuckolds
Love for Money
Man of Mode
Mulberry Garden
Macbeth
Madam Fickle
Maids Tragedy
Marriage-Hater
Maids laſt Prayer
Othello
Old Batchelor
Plain-Dealer
Philaſter
Pope *Joan*
Regulus
Rehearſal
Richmond Heireſs
Scornful Lady
She woud if ſhe coud
Siege of *Babylon*
Sir Solomon
Squire Oldſap
Succeſsful Strangers
Sir Courtly Nice
Sir Patient Fancy
Triumphant Widow
Titus Andronicus
Treacherous Broth.
Traytor
Vertuous Wife
Very good Wife
Widow Ranter
Woman's Conqueſt
Woman Bully
Wife's Excuſe.

FINIS.

664 de PONTIS, LOUIS. Memoirs of the Sieur De Pontis; who served in the Army Six and fifty Years under King Henry IV, Lewis the XIII and Lewis the XIV. Containing many remarkable passages relating to the War, the Court, and the Governement of those Princes. Faithfully Englished by Charles Cotton. I-II. London, F Leach, 1694. Folio. (8), 288 pp. Title in red and black. Contemporary full calf binding, back mended at bottom. Graesse V: 409. Lowndes 1912.

LOUIS de PONTIS (1583-1670), French nobleman, who brillantly served in the army. As a reward for his cleverness and courage he was appointed General Commissioner in Switzerland but had to renounce, owing to Richelieu, who hindered him. His memoirs, edited by Du Fosse after his own narratives, are rather curious, but many times reprinted, first time in Paris 1676.

complete
1950
£ 150